



Gc  
974.401  
P74t  
v.1  
1146093

M.

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

✓



GEW

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 00084 1798

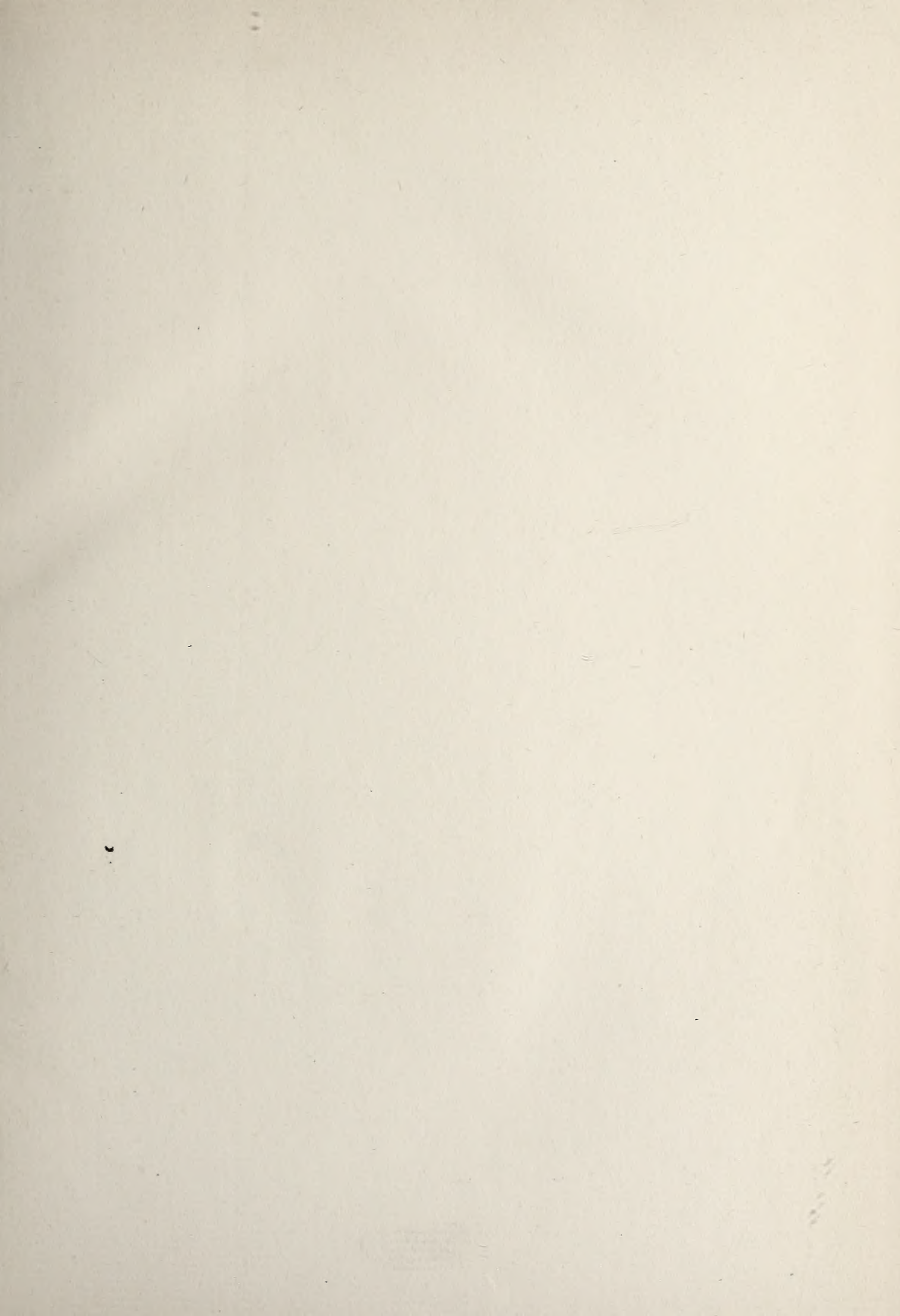
Ann  
22 50


3 Vols











Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2019

<https://archive.org/details/historyofplymout01thom>







*Ebroy S. Thompson.*



HISTORY  
OF  
Plymouth, Norfolk and  
Barnstable Counties  
MASSACHUSETTS

---

*Author*

ELROY S. THOMPSON

*Special Correspondent for Metropolitan Newspapers;  
Ex-Secretary Brockton Chamber of Commerce;  
City Editor Brockton "Enterprise" for years.*

---

VOLUME I

---

LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, INC.  
NEW YORK  
1928

THE PUBLIC LIBRARY  
OF  
FORT WAYNE AND ALLEN COUNTY, IND.

COPYRIGHT  
LEWIS HISTORICAL PUBLISHING COMPANY, INC.  
1928

THE PUBLIC LIBRARY

3001 AVENUE W. UICEN COMMERCE



# CONTENTS

1146093

## PART I

### PLYMOUTH COUNTY

	Page
Chapter I—Region of Romance and Fable.....	3
Chapter II—Snorri or Peregrine?.....	15
Chapter III—From Scrooby to Plymouth.....	29
Chapter IV—Indian Names in Plymouth County.....	43
Chapter V—Confederation, Slavery and Philip's War.....	59
Chapter VI—"Lo! The Poor Indian".....	85
Chapter VII—Pioneers, Patriots and Practitioners.....	107
Chapter VIII—Launching of Three Counties.....	153
Chapter IX—"Mayflower" Was Not Filled With Clocks.....	167
Chapter X—Interesting Records of "The Good Old Days".....	177
Chapter XI—History Amusingly Related by McFingal.....	189
Chapter XII—Choice Between War and Slavery.....	197
Chapter XIII—Earthquakes, Comets, Thunder and Lightning.....	205
Chapter XIV—In the Beginning Was the Meeting-House.....	215
Chapter XV—Town Meetings, Town Criers and Curfews.....	221
Chapter XVI—Old Taverns, Turnpikes and Stagecoaches.....	228
Chapter XVII—Rise of More Liberal Churches.....	235
Chapter XVIII—From Colonial Period to the Civil War.....	251
Chapter XIX—Becomes County of Abolitionists.....	261
Chapter XX—New England Conscience Rampant.....	285
Chapter XXI—Contributions by Latter Day Pilgrims.....	303
Chapter XXII—When the Cruel War Was Over.....	317
Chapter XXIII—Agriculture in the Old Colony.....	325
Chapter XXIV—From Days of '49 to Civil War.....	345
Chapter XXV—Legal Practice and Practitioners.....	365
Chapter XXVI—The Fourth Estate.....	400
Chapter XXVII—Home of the Shoe Industry.....	449
Chapter XXVIII—Fairs, Health and a Normal School.....	485
Chapter XXIX—Suburban Life at its Best.....	507
Chapter XXX—Plymouth County Honor Roll.....	653

## CONTENTS

### PART II

#### BARNSTABLE COUNTY

	Page
Chapter XXXI—Aphrodite of American Jurisprudence.....	691
Chapter XXXII—Gangplanks to Cape Cod.....	703
Chapter XXXIII—"A Small Chimney Easily Heated".....	715
Chapter XXXIV—Characters in the Drama of Freedom.....	723
Chapter XXXV—When the Cape Cod Canal Was a Dream.....	735
Chapter XXXVI—Youth Took to the Sea and Education.....	745
Chapter XXXVII—Codfish the Totem of Massachusetts.....	767
Chapter XXXVIII—Customs in "The Good Old Days".....	785
Chapter XXXIX—English Spoken by the Indians.....	807
Chapter XL—Paradise of Lakes and Streams.....	819
Chapter XLI—As Thoreau, Dwight and Webster Saw It.....	835
Chapter XLII—Agriculture and Patriotic Sacrifices.....	847
Chapter XLIII—Remember the S-4 and Its Martyred Crew.....	865
Chapter XLIV—Cape Cod as it is Today.....	871
Chapter XLV—Fought on Land, Sea and in the Air.....	883
Chapter XLVI—Outposts of the Commonwealth.....	891

### PART III

#### NORFOLK COUNTY

Chapter XLVII—"Stern to Inflict; Stubborn to Endure".....	901
Chapter XLVIII—Pilgrims' Good Will Visit to Squantum.....	915
Chapter XLIX—"Only Citizens Because Saints".....	933
Chapter L—"The Three Learned Professions".....	949
Chapter LI—Genesis of Norfolk County.....	971
Chapter LII—Industrial Rise and Development.....	995
Chapter LIII—Slavery and Public Welfare.....	1019
Chapter LIV—Progress in Transportation.....	1033
Chapter LV—Defense and Learning Universally Guarded.....	1049
Chapter LVI—"Birthplace of American Liberty".....	1071



# INTRODUCTION

---

*Southern Book Co. - #22-50 (3/16/18)*

MANY MEN and just as many women have written a history of the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay Colonies—the landing of the Pilgrims on the shortest day in the year and the landing of the Puritans on the longest—and some have done it well. It seems as if someone was always writing such a history and it cannot be done without writing substantially the history of Plymouth, Barnstable, Norfolk and the island counties of Massachusetts. Time has passed as the clock ticks, orthodoxy has changed to golf and skirts have had several ups and downs since anyone has seriously labored and brought forth a history of the counties mentioned, in a county-conscious way. Therefore, it is excusable, if not necessary, to permit local expansionists to build an addition to the traditional five-foot book shelf, or to ask some of the older volumes to move over. Every dog has his day, every autoist has his day in court and the public is always ready to receive a set of new books, even though they are volumes of history.

Very fortunate are those who care to know about the pioneer days of America that the Bradford manuscript was so providentially preserved and the Commonwealth of Massachusetts sufficiently wise to have it printed. Any reader of Bradford may live the atmosphere and collect the facts, set down by the wisest of all the Pilgrims, from the days of the Separatists in Holland until many years after the landing of the Pilgrims at Provincetown and Plymouth and the landing of the Puritans at Weymouth. It can truthfully be said of William Bradford, as Rev. Dr. Edward Everett Hale said of Dr. Cotton Mather: "He preserved many important facts from oblivion."

It would be easy to fill the introduction of this history with expressions of gratitude and acknowledgments of assistance and somewhere else, in the last volume, or elsewhere, to include a bibliography sufficiently lengthy to be absolutely insulated against danger of reading. If such were to be the case, in detail and extensively, it would be well to begin with the Bradford history or diary, sometimes erroneously called "the log of the 'Mayflower'," and include the "Magnalia" and the three hundred and eighty other books and manuscripts of Cotton Mather. Then only two of hundreds, or thousands, whose wisdom and, let us hope, conscientious accuracy, of the writings which helped furnish material for this history, would be mentioned. An attempt has

## INTRODUCTION

been made to give credit where credit was due, in the locations in the volumes where the borrowed material was used. If there are sins of omission, they have been unintentional.

Glancing over our shoulder at Colonial days, and adding our mite, we feel that it is either too late or too early to get the right perspective. It was just the other day that the Cape Cod Canal was turned over to the United States Government to finish. It was a dream of Governor William Bradford and Captain Myles Standish three hundred years ago. It is still in the making, or at least in the experimental stage.

We are still too much like the Pilgrims and Puritans to size them up with unprejudiced vision. It is too late to obtain first-hand information or indulge in personal recollections. On the other hand it was in this present year, 1928, that Thaddeus Faunce of Plymouth, hale and hearty, observed his ninetieth birthday, and it was his great-grandfather, Thomas Faunce, the last ruling elder of the original Plymouth church, who, in 1741, identified Plymouth Rock as the landing of the first party on board the "Mayflower" in Plymouth harbor. We are only a few generations from the "Mayflower." The ribs of that historic vessel are still doing duty, holding up the roof of the meeting-house of a congregation of Quakers in England.

The two cities and many towns of which these volumes treat are the most New Englandish of all New England. Of New England considerable has been said and written as though it were backward, decadent, run down at the heel and peopled with Yankees idle and effete. In contrast to this impolite type of criticism, Herbert Hoover has said: "New England is a reservoir of the most skilled labor, the most skilled direction, and the highest intelligence in the United States."

Someone else has said that the happiest people in the world live within a moderate distance of the Massachusetts seaboard, of which Plymouth, Barnstable and Norfolk counties are the tenderloin. With considerable earnestness and determination and without much ballyhoo, the typical descendants of first-comers or late-comers, have been doing business three centuries. As for those who descended from a few people who came over in a certain boat, they can be sure the Pilgrim father was a he-man, in the language of today, and the Pilgrim mother was not much of a flapper. The Pilgrim fathers endured much and the Pilgrim mothers, as some one has said, endured more, because they had to endure all that the Pilgrim fathers endured and, in addition, had to endure the Pilgrim fathers.

It was people from this section who helped colonize Kansas and took their pilgrimage in the covered wagon as bravely as the Separatists took theirs in the "Mayflower." The second generation from those who went over in the covered wagon became the native sons



## INTRODUCTION

of somewhere farther West. After three hundred years of American occupation by white men it seems to have dawned upon some of them that it doesn't make so much difference what vehicle one came over in as where he is going and that he is on his way.

Recently one of my fellow descendants of John and Priscilla Alden said that a family tree was not everything; many family trees were in need of spraying. It were well that he waited about three hundred years after that worthy couple set up housekeeping and a long genealogical line before making the statement, or the traditional type of historians would have changed his name from Alden to Anathema.

The writer of these volumes of local haps and mishaps has had the conviction that he has been keeping step all along the path of the years with unusual men and unusual women, who were moved to do whatever their environment and enlightenment might reasonably have prompted them to do under unusual circumstances. The circumstances were unusual most of the time and so were the people. The Pilgrims and Puritans were as hard on Quakers and Baptists as summers in Kansas are on women and horses. Superstition was rife in those days. The Separatists lost much of it coming over, but not all.

The Indians were the one hundred per cent Americans of their time and inclined to frown upon those of their breed who associated with the "foreigners," especially after the influence of the royal favor of Massasoit became non-existent by his exit to the happy hunting ground. The Indians had everything to lose and they lost it. The sentiment in the hymn "America,"

"Land where our fathers died,  
Land of the Pilgrim's pride"

was especially true of the Indians.

It has not been the purpose of the writer to make of this history a directory of clubs, churches or fraternal organizations or exhibit other features more adapted to a directory. There has been a departure from the usual method of writing county history—telling the story of each town, presenting them in group formation under a county label. On the other hand, each county has been written as a county unit, in matters which had county or wider significance. Each town has its individual appearance only in those things which relate especially to its municipal and not its county or district life.

All the way from the days of the austere settlers with their funny hats who took their guns to church, to the present days of flaming youth with funny knickers who take their golf clubs afield, interesting lights and shadows have flickered on the screen until the fade-out. The distinctive emblem, once the cod fish, might now be changed to

## INTRODUCTION

the bean pot, the shoe or the little red hen, as expressive of the industrial and social life and commonweal, but as Daniel Webster said of Massachusetts, so we say of the district covered in this compilation of anecdotes and facts: "There she stands—behold her, and judge for yourselves. There is her history—the world knows it by heart! And, sir, where American Liberty raised its first voice, and where its youth was nurtured and sustained, there it still lives, in the strength of its manhood, and full of its original spirit."

In a few instances biographical sketches of pioneers in the learned professions, so called, have been presented but in most cases the incident has been given predominance over the individual. The writer has not been associated in the preparation of the biographical sketches in the volume devoted to that interesting array of neighbors who are having a part in the present-day historic movements. The matter included in the historical sections has been obtained from hundreds of historical works, innumerable newspaper files, pamphlets, letters and clippings. The Honor Roll of the World War is a valuable feature and the assistance in its preparation is given grateful credit in its proper place.

If, in some instances, vibrations of two hundred or three hundred years ago have been detected by the funny bone, rather than the bump of reverence, no flippancy, enmity nor lack of appreciation of worthy ancestry or pioneer service has been intended. Presumably none will be suspected. The author does not anticipate any nomination to membership in the ranks of those considered undesirable by a great ancestry-perpetuation organization. Surely no harm will result to past, present or future generations by recognition of all three as composed of men and women of qualities, not peculiar to demi-gods, but to "even as you or I."

ELROY S. THOMPSON.



PLYMOUTH, NORFOLK  
AND  
BARNSTABLE





## CHAPTER I

### REGION OF ROMANCE AND FABLE.

**Birth of Freedom and Its Initial Footsteps—The Natural Setting, Topography and Geology—Climate—Waterways—Harbors—Early Industries Came About Naturally—Some Providential Indications—First Encounter With the Indians on Cape Cod—The Camp of “Yankee Doodle.”**

There is considerable truth in the statement credited to Saltonstall: “We have an advantage over all nations in being able to trace our history from the beginning. We have no fabulous age, but it has more romance than any which has ever been written.”

**Birth of Freedom and Its Initial Footsteps—**Some might question whether we have a “fabulous age,” in considering the sagas of the Norsemen, which contribute not a little to the romance which may or may not have been mixed up with the vicinity which we called Plymouth County, in the days before the landing of the Pilgrims and before Captain John Smith sailed past these coasts and drew maps which were remarkably accurate, all things considered. But, laying aside all disputations, historic Plymouth County and adjacent waters figured in the birth of freedom and from this beginning the history of all the elsewheres in this country took initial footsteps.

**The Natural Setting, Topography and Geology—**The southern part of Plymouth County, particularly the town of Plymouth, geologically considered, consists of sand, gravel, and clay of the drift formation, with peculiarities no better developed anywhere in the country. Underneath this drift formation, from forty to two hundred feet from the surface, are the ledges, except in Kingston, where there is a wonderful exhibit of granite, intersected by narrow trapdykes, exposed in the cutting of the Old Colony Railroad. This granite formation extends further south, beneath the drift, but there are no ledges on the surface through the Plymouth woods and on down Cape Cod. The class of drift deposits known as lenticular hills or drumlins is practically wanting in the southeastern portion of Massachusetts. The Cretaceous and Tertiary deposits so extensively developed in the southern portion of the Atlantic States are continued in an interrupted belt lying to the east of the more ancient rocks as far north as southeastern Massachusetts, the Cretaceous extending up to deposits on Martha's Vineyard and the Miocene Tertiary reaching to Marshfield in Plymouth County.

The true character of the underlying deposits is effectively masked all through this section by a surface covering, either by the extensive moraines or by the deposits of sand and gravel, noticeably exposed at Truro in Barnstable County. North of Plymouth the curious table land known as Egypt Heights, in Scituate, is composed of beds much like those at Truro. In Plymouth County are to be found a number of pre-Glacial channels which evidently were at the time of their excavation the beds of streams discharging into the sea.

The appearance of the "floor" of Plymouth County indicates that it was fashioned by surface powers rather than deep-seated action, and the hills and valleys are picturesque, the depressions being filled with attractive lakes and ponds, upon the shores of which the multiplicity of summer residences and camps testifies to the growing appreciation of the beauties of this pleasant land. There are numerous streams of various sizes, some of them turning water wheels which make their contributions to the industry of this section, and most of them valuable in the early history and, indeed, today as the natural course taken by alewives to seek their spawning shelters.

Dr. Hitchcock, in his survey of Massachusetts, said: "The most elegant variety of porphyritic sienite that I have met with in the State occurs in North Bridgewater (now Brockton) and Abington, and in other parts of Plymouth County. Its base consists of quartz and feldspar, with an abundance of epidote, disseminated and in veins. This rock, if polished, would form, it seems to me, the most ornamental stone in the State. The feldspar and crystal, that constitute it a porphyry, are of a flesh color. There is a dark colored mineral diffused throughout the mass, which may be hornblende or mica."

Where mica is found plentiful in the compound it is called seinite granite.

In past days considerable peat was cut in the swamps and meadows and used for fuel. A generation ago there was quite a flurry of excitement when it was announced that peat was to be harvested in large quantities in the Halifax and Hanson swamps and, by means of a process which was unrevealed, made into fuel to rival the anthracite coal which had become, compared with prices in former years, decidedly expensive. This rumor, however, was never substantiated by successful manifestations, although considerable money was spent in experimental work.

**Climate**—The soil of Plymouth County, generally considered, has not greatly encouraged agriculture. The predominant growth of forest trees is *Pinus Taeda*, designating a soil of third rate quality. Around many of the lakes are pitch pine and scrubby oak woods.



Some sections of Plymouth County are, however, well adapted to agriculture, and not long ago it was estimated that 2,400 small farms were being profitably tilled within its borders. Some of the most productive soil is in West Bridgewater. This town is level and well watered. The farms have a clayey substratum in some localities.

**Waterways** — There are numerous fresh water ponds in the county and it was early discovered that these ponds and bogs yielded an abundant supply of iron ore. As early as 1628 special encouragement was given from England for searching for mineral wealth. Furnaces and forges for smelting and working up the iron ore were profitably utilized, and, especially in Bridgewater, Abington and Middleboro iron working was an important industry. Early history of the town of Halifax shows that the taking of iron ore from the Monponsett ponds was an important matter frequently before the town meetings, when various guardians were appointed to see that the taking of the ore was encouraged on one hand and the proper share from its sale for the town was safeguarded on the other hand.

While the rivers in Plymouth County are not large they have been useful in years past in the shipbuilding industry, important in the earlier days of the Old Colony, and concerning which much will be printed in the more intimate history of the various towns as this work proceeds.

One of the ponds in Pembroke, Furnace Pond, gets its name from the fact that it is supposed to have been the location for the first furnace in this country. About 1700 a furnace was built at the outlet of this pond and traces of it can still be found. It was run by the early Barker and Little families. In 1701 the town of Pembroke gave Lambert Despard consent to purchase about fourteen acres of land from an Indian named Jeremiah. Mr. Despard sold a portion of it to Robert Barker, Samuel Barker, Francis Barker, Joshua Barker, and Josiah Barker, all of Duxbury; and Robert Barker, Jr., and William Wanton of Scituate, with the privilege of erecting iron works.

**Early Industries Came About Naturally**—The making of nails, tacks and rivets has been an important industry in the county from early times and still continues. In the earliest days nails were hand-forged and some of those specimens are still holding together the honest-to-goodness buildings erected in the morning days of the Old Colony, which have continued to resist the devastating hand of time. In 1818, Jesse Reed of Marshfield invented a machine for making nails, and among other towns in which the making of cut nails by this process became a substantial town industry was Wareham, where it continued to be the leading industry more than one hundred years. John

Washburn of Kingston invented cut nails and tacks, but the blanks were cut in one machine, and a workman picked them up and placed them in another machine to be headed. Jesse Reed made the invention a commercial success by making an improvement upon the Washburn invention.

The making of salt by evaporation, by boiling sea water, was an industry of no small mention, in several of the county towns bordering on the coast, until a few years previous to the Civil War. Several towns had coopers who were kept busy making buckets and tubs. Anchor-making, together with shipbuilding, was an important industry in Kingston. That town, East Bridgewater, Bridgewater, and others furnished employment for many in iron working. Lemuel Bonney who died in 1803 has it stated on his gravestone in Hanson that he was "One of the greatest iron founders in America."

The change from water power to steam still has its monuments in the county. On the Indian Head River in Hanover the remains of a stack can be pointed out to those familiar with the territory, showing that Curtis Forge, as it was known for a century or more, which was erected in 1704 as an iron works by a Mr. Bardin, used both motive powers while it engaged in manufacturing anchors, and other useful products.

**The Camp of "Yankee Doodle"**—Carver was the town in which was located the "Federal furnace" erected in 1794 by Dr. Thatcher and Dr. Hayward of Plymouth. Soon the firm was increased by the addition of Major-General Nathaniel Goodwin, also of Plymouth. He served as an officer in the patriot army in the Revolution, and is the one referred to in the lines of the famous song "Yankee Doodle" as follows:

Father and I went down to camp  
Along with Captain Goodwin,  
Where we see the boys and girls  
As thick as hasty pudding.

The first iron tea kettle ever cast in America was made in Carver.

There was a time when hats and caps were made in several Plymouth County towns. Cotton mills furnished employment for a large number and were noted for the excellence of their product. Brockton, formerly North Bridgewater, has long been engaged in the manufacture of shoes to such an extent that it has been referred to as a city of one industry, but it has manufactured many things besides shoes, and does at present, although shoemaking very largely predominates. A generation ago many musical instruments were made in Brockton, also brushes, chairs, and cabinet ware.



The first paper manufacturing plant in Plymouth County was established at Bridgewater, in 1823, by Joseph Hooper. He manufactured a superior quality of paper of all grades of finish. The site of the paper mill has been used for manufacturing by water power and steam since 1792. There was a grist-mill built there two years after building the original dam. In 1798 there was a fulling mill and a dressing and dye house.

Piano frames were for many years manufactured at the Perkins Foundry in Bridgewater, which was established some seventy years ago by Henry Perkins.

Perhaps one of the most noted manufacturing plants in the county is the Carver Cotton Gin Works at East Bridgewater, and the question is often asked how it came about that cotton gins were manufactured for so many years so far from the cotton fields, and in East Bridgewater in particular.

Eleazer Carver was a native of Bridgewater and learned the trade of millwright. When a young man he was employed in Natchez in repairing sugar mills, cotton gins and presses and became greatly interested in cotton gins, as he believed he could make important improvements. He studied the machines painstakingly and, in 1838, obtained a patent on a device which prevented the machines from clogging. He had made less important improvements in the machines invented by Eli Whitney, a native of Westborough, Massachusetts, since 1807. The making of cotton gins in East Bridgewater by Mr. Carver dates from 1843. Two years later he secured another patent for another important improvement, a cylinder brush with fans, by means of which the cotton ginned became greatly enhanced in value. In 1853 the government of India awarded a prize of two thousand, five hundred rupees and a gold medal to Mr. Carver's company for their excellent machine for cleansing cotton from the seed.

Soon after the ancient town of Bridgewater was first settled the first mill in that large township was erected in what is now West Bridgewater, on Town River. This was where the first shovels were made by the noted Ames family of Easton.

One of the first blast furnaces erected in Massachusetts was in Middleborough, upon the dam at Muttock. Iron ore taken from the bottom of ponds in Middleborough and vicinity was used but it was not found suitable for all the uses intended, one of which was to provide warlike material for the prosecution of the French and Indian War. Peter Oliver, owner of the mill at that time, wrote a letter under date of March 1, 1756, addressed to "The Honorable Committee of War," saying:

Gentlemen: Your favor of 27th Febr relating to supplying you with two Howbitzers I received on Saturday Night, and now send a Messenger to acquaint you that had I known of your having occasion for them 10 Days ago, I could have supplied you, but I finished my Blast 3 or 4 Days since; which I am sorry for, as I had been at a great Deal of Trouble & Charge to procure Mountain Ore to make warlike Stores, of which ore is of a far better Quality than any we have in these Parts, especially for Guns and Mortars. I have sent for more Mountain Ore & expect to blow again this month, & if you should then want any Stores, I believe I can supply you with those of as good as Quality as can be made, for I am sensible of the Risque of making Guns and Mortars from Bog Ore that I shall not attempt them again with that.

I am, Gentlemen, your very humble servant,

Peter Oliver.

This letter and other correspondence between Peter Oliver and those prosecuting the French and Indian War have been carefully preserved in the office of the Secretary of State in Boston.

There was for many years a successful braided straw bonnet and hat business carried on in Lakeville, then a part of Middleborough, established in 1828, by Ebeneazer Briggs, Jr.

Cannon and cannon balls were manufactured at various places in Plymouth County during the Revolutionary War, among them at the furnace erected in 1713 in Plympton. Iron ore found in the ponds in the neighborhood was used to a large extent. Plympton had a rolling mill, shovel works, grist-mills, cotton and woolen factories, nail factory and one for the manufacture of shoe strings for many years, as well as taking its part in shoe manufacturing, for which Brockton and the South Shore District are noted. This predominating industry, as well as the agricultural interests of the county, will, of necessity, be given special chapters in this volume.

Coupling the geological and topographical character of the county with a mention of some of the distinguishing industries carried on in different towns is for the purpose of showing that the peculiarities and influences of the barren soil, the extensive swamps and lakes, the rivers and the ocean have determined the choice of livelihood for many of the sons of Plymouth County. Many of them have followed the sea, especially those who lived in the towns immediately on the coast, such as Plymouth, Kingston, Duxbury, Marshfield, Scituate, Hingham and Hull. On sea or land, most of them have given a good account of themselves and the memory of their good deeds remains to praise them.

**Some Providential Indications**—When one harks back to the beginning of those things which are commonly accepted as historical facts about Massachusetts, more especially those southeastern counties, Plymouth, Barnstable and Dukes, the words of William Cowper, familiar



to most of us in various hymn books, appropriately come to mind:

God moves in a mysterious way  
His wonders to perform;  
He plants his footsteps in the sea  
And rides upon the storm.

Each one of the above-mentioned counties in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts has a claim to the distinction of being first in planting the seeds of English colonization in the New World. The Compact was signed in the cabin of the "Mayflower," November 11th, Old Style; November 21st, New Style, 1620, while that famous ship was riding at anchor in Provincetown Harbor, and Provincetown is in Barnstable County. This was before the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth and, it is presumed, they had no intention of landing at Plymouth or anywhere else in what is now Plymouth County when they signed that Compact. The document itself speaks of their desire to plant "the first colonie in the Northerne parts of Virginia." Captain Jones of the "Mayflower," however, had had quite enough of his bargain to land those 102 resolute men and women at the mouth of the Hudson or the Delaware, and it has been intimated by many historical writers that he purposely steered the "Mayflower" away from either of those objective points and into what is known today as Cape Cod Bay.

The "Mayflower" was not a large ship and, since the Pilgrims were unable to afford the cost of chartering a ship for the expedition, the journey was "financed" by the Merchant Adventurers, who expected to pick up merchandise from the colonists in after years. It was not a profitable company, in the opinion of Captain Jones. The voyage had taken much longer than he expected and life on board a ship about ninety feet long, some twenty-four feet wide, with a crew of fifteen or twenty men occupying the quarters fore, and the 102 passengers aft "in bunks and cabins," with their furniture and other personal belongings, can well be imagined.

It is difficult to understand how existence could have been maintained in this vessel, described by historians as "broad of beam, short in the waist, low between decks, and not tight in her upper works," during the long voyage from Southampton in England to Cape Cod Bay. It is not difficult to believe that William Bradford recorded the truth when he wrote in the famous Bradford manuscript, concerning the first wash day, on Clark's Island, in Plymouth Harbor, that this service was sorely needed.

The Pilgrims in Cape Cod Harbor wanted to land in the right place and Captain Jones wanted them to land somewhere. The charter under which the settlement was to be made was to be within the domain of

the Virginia Company, according to the understanding when the "Mayflower" left England. An entirely different company had New England under its jurisdiction. Some of the Pilgrims believed that their way to New England had been Providential. Captain Jones seems to have had considerable patience and to have lent commendable coöperation, under the circumstances, as it is recorded that for a month the coast of Cape Cod Bay was explored by the leaders of the Pilgrims, using the shallop of the "Mayflower" and accompanied by members of the "Mayflower's" crew.

Parties from the "Mayflower" had been cruising about the bay, finding out what they could about the coves and inlets, and even on December 21, 1620, set forth as the day of the "Landing of the Pilgrims," it was not the full body which landed but an exploring party which had cruised about the shores of what is now called Plymouth Harbor. It is recorded in "Mourt's Relation" that this exploring party consisted of Captain Myles Standish, Governor John Carver who had been elected to that position on the day the Compact was signed in Provincetown Harbor, William Bradford, Edward Winslow, John Tilley, Edward Tilley, John Howland, from Leyden; also two of the Pilgrim seamen, John Allerton and Thomas English. They were accompanied by six of the crew of the "Mayflower," including a mate, the pilot, a master gunner and three seamen.

The circumstances of this landing are described in "Mourt's Relation," which says they "marched also into the land and found divers cornfields and little running brooks a place very good for situation. So we returned to our ship again with good news to the rest of the people, which did much comfort their hearts."

It can easily be surmised that the "good news" also "did much comfort" to the heart of Captain Jones, anxious to return to England. Five days later, December 26, 1620, the exact spot having been agreed upon, the "Mayflower" sailed into Plymouth Harbor, through the narrow passage made by the miles of sandy beach now called Duxbury Beach, on one hand, and the long stretch of what is now called Plymouth Beach on the other. The "Mayflower" dropped anchor not far from the shore, remaining in that position the rest of the winter and until she weighed anchor April 5, Old Style, or April 16, New Style, and the Pilgrims who remained alive watched her leave, bound for England, not one of them yielding to the invitation of Captain Jones to return with him, if such were their choice. The return voyage took until May 6th. In spite of his impatience to return—he was a seafaring man, not a pioneer or colonizer—Captain Jones had been forced to remain through the first winter with his Pilgrim passengers. According to Bradford's "History," contrary to his desire or intentions "to hasten



the ship away, which tarried so long by reason of the necessity and danger that lay on them, because so many died, both of themselves and the ship's company likewise; by which they became so few that the master durst not put to sea until those that lived recovered of their sickness, and the winter was over."

How important a part was played by Captain Jones and his crew and the "Mayflower" by being forced, through circumstances, to remain through the first winter, we can only imagine. The name of Captain Jones has been given to the river which flows from Silver Lake (from which Brockton, the only city in Plymouth County, secures its water supply) and empties into Kingston Bay. This river is about five miles long and on its banks, in Kingston, was built the first naval vessel which was launched in the name of "Liberty," at the opening of the Revolutionary War. It is peculiarly fitting that on the river named for the captain of the vessel which brought to these shores the Pilgrim Fathers and Mothers, seeking freedom, should have been constructed the first formidable instrument to fire a shot in the later quest for that freedom in practically the same watery path through which the "Mayflower" was providentially guided, and in the cabin of which was signed the Compact "which speculative philosophers have imagined as the only legitimate source of government."

While, in the harbor of Plymouth, the "Mayflower" was riding at anchor, perhaps representing to the Indians on shore something like a mysterious navy guarding the newcomers, it is recorded "in the morning, after we had called on God for direction, we came to this resolution, to go presently ashore againe; and to take a better view of two places which we thought most fitting for us; for we could not now take time for further search or consideration, our victuals being much spent, especially our beer, and it being now the 19th of December (Old Style). After our landing and visiting the places, so well as we could, we came to a conclusion, by most voices, to set on a high ground where there is a great deal of land cleared, and hath been planted with corn three or four years ago; and there is a very sweet brook round under the hillside, and many delicate springs of as good water as could be drunk, and where we could harbor our shallops and boats exceedingly well; and in this brook fish in their season; on the further side of the river also much corn ground cleared. In one field is a great hill on which we point to make a platform, and plant our ordnance, which will command all around about. From there we may see into the bay, and far into the sea, and we may see thence Cape Cod. Our greatest labor will be the fetching of our wood, which is half a quarter of an English mile; but there is enough so far off. What people inhabit here we yet know not, for as yet we have seen none. So there

we made our rendezvous and a place for some of our people about twenty, resolving in the morning to come all ashore and to build houses."

Plymouth is not so changed in three hundred years that it is difficult to pick out the sites of the Old Fort, the home of Governor Bradford, the Store House, homes of Peter Browne, John Goodman, William Brewster, John Billington, Isaac Allerton, Francis Cooke, Edward Winslow, and many of those worthies whose log cabins were arranged in a row on the slope of the hill, guarded by the Old Fort. Pictures of the landing of the Pilgrims, one by Henry Sargent and given by him in 1834; another given by Robert G. Shaw of Boston, hang in Pilgrim Hall, Plymouth, a museum for relics of the Pilgrims, and the date is usually given as that on which the exploring party already mentioned came ashore. Many people, believe, however, it was after the "Mayflower" came to her final anchorage in the harbor on December 26, 1620, that some such scene as the artists imagined took place. Mary Chilton has been credited as being the first to step on Plymouth Rock. It seems fair to presume from historical data that John Alden was the first man to use the now famous boulder as a temporary wharf, and, since legend credits him with being the Sir Walter Raleigh of the Pilgrim company, it is related that he then assisted Mary Chilton to plant her foot upon the same substantial foundation. There are those who believe the shallop rubbed its bow against the gray boulder while "The breaking waves dashed high," and they cannot conceive that he would have allowed Mary Chilton to have taken the step unaided. There are other students of the character of John Alden who believe that neither would he have permitted Mary Chilton or anyone else to have beaten him to it. Perchance, had he been permitted to make his own selection and with a glance into the future, he would have arranged the honor for the fair Priscilla, whom Longfellow credits with instructing Alden in the desirability of playing a leading hand in a new country.

**First Encounter With the Indians On Cape Cod**—While we recall the earlier landing of exploring parties on Cape Cod, in the vicinity of Truro; their first encounter with the Indians—although in describing this landing at Plymouth the historian says "What people inhabit here we know not, for as yet we have seen none,"—the election of John Carver as governor to enforce the provisions and the spirit of the Compact signed on the "Mayflower" in Provincetown Harbor; let us also remember that there was a history far anterior to these events. There were landings and efforts at colonization in Dukes County—the county of the small islands belonging to Massachusetts—before the Pilgrims ever saw either Plymouth or Barnstable counties, and the leader



of one of these efforts at English colonization in Massachusetts had already named Cape Cod.

Recalling the poetic lines by William Cowper, in an early paragraph of this chapter, had it not been for a quarrel among the members of the crew under Bartholomew Gosnold, the first English colony would have been planted on the island of Cuttyhunk and started by those who, according to historical records, did not possess the lofty standards of those who arrived on the "Mayflower." Of this man Gosnold and his contributions to history we shall tell more later. His story can more appropriately be contained within that part of our history relating to Dukes County.

Still keeping in mind the lines by Cowper let us recall that history did not begin with Gosnold. Pilgrim history seems to present a well authenticated story that there was an Indian named Squanto who was friendly to the Pilgrims and that he greeted them in English when he first came in contact with them, and his knowledge of English had been obtained from a previous experience with white men. This is also another story and is told in its rightful place.

But before Squanto, before Captain John Smith had established in 1617 certain fishing and fur interests and drawn a map of this section, nearer to the time when, according to Winthrop Packard in his delightful "Old Plymouth Trails," "Plymouth Rock itself came joy-riding from some ledge up Boston way, alighting from this first and greatest New England Transportation System only a few hundred thousand years before Mary Chilton arrived to set foot upon it," there was history in the making, preparing the way for the experiment of democracy, "a church without a bishop and a state without a king," onward and upward forever, approaching the recognition, through America, the melting pot, of "the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man."

Off the shores of Plymouth and Barnstable counties the peculiar construction of Cape Cod stretches like a protecting arm, within the shelter of which the "Mayflower" sailed from off its intended course, finding a haven in which to repose while the Pilgrims were inspired to compose and ratify that Compact which expressed the principle which is "the foundation of all the democratic institutions of America and is the basis of the republic."

Fortified by that "big idea," and buffeted by the elements and hardships which nature had forced upon them, they refused the invitation to return in the "Mayflower," although half their number had perished the first winter, and found, in that inner shelter made by the overlapping stretches of Duxbury and Plymouth beaches, a shelter which saved the "Mayflower" from being dashed to pieces on an unfriendly

coast, within the protection of which the little shallop was able to find the obvious spot for the "first house for common use, to receive them and their goods." It is interesting to trace, in the history of the Forefathers, the apparent providential leadership and how earlier history had laid the foundation for the first step in freedom.



## CHAPTER II

### SNORRI OR PEREGRINE?

**First Child of European Parentage Born on New England Soil May Have Been the Son of Gudrida, Mentioned in the Sagas of the Norsemen—Stirring Story of a Battling Amazon Six Hundred Years Before the Pilgrims—Freydisa the First Woman Commander of Armed Forces in America—Early Adventurers and Discoverers—Captain John Smith—Bartholomew Gosnold—Pring, Weymouth, Dermer, Hudson and Others—Attempt to Plant English Colony on Cuttyhunk Before Virginia.**

Tradition has it that the arena in which was enacted the drama of the Pilgrims and early settlers of Plymouth and Barnstable counties was a part of the stage set centuries before for scenes and activities as important and compelling in their day as those governing those more intimate ancestors of ours. We recall that an exploring party from the "Mayflower," of which the pilot, Robert Coppin, was one, was on December 9, 1620, forced by bad weather to take refuge on Clark's Island; on returning to the "Mayflower," they found in their absence, Peregrine White had been added to the number on the ship, and was the first child born of English parents in New England; and we call that going back to the beginning of things. But, if we trace back to the first person of European parentage born on American soil of whom history makes mention, we learn of Snorri, child of Gudrida, and, concerning Snorri, history relates the possibility that we are still dealing with events in Plymouth County, at least with persons whose adventures and valors were staged in the location of which we are writing.

A wealth of books have been written about the forefathers and their immediate descendants and much less about the events in the same territory within the present century. Comparatively little has commonly been taught concerning the history before the Pilgrims which was enacted on the same ground and, to a certain extent, prepared the way for what was to follow. Since much of this history is well authenticated and that of it which is legendary is interesting and obviously contains much truth, a chapter given to it is not out of place in this volume. We cannot deal fairly with American history and ignore certain picturesque and romantic legends, even when not credited as exact histories. They have a standing as epics, founded on facts, some of them are written in the sagas, or Scandinavian legends, and "it was considered a grave offense to public morality to tell a saga untruthfully."

It is claimed that all the sagas relating to discoveries and settlements in America had been put in writing by the beginning of the thirteenth century. The sagas were first told by eye-witnesses of the events narrated, and then passed along from father to son, that the record of every event of interest might be preserved, and handed down faithfully from generation to generation through the centuries. When written language was introduced the same care was taken in having them sought and saved.

Professor Rafn took from "Reliques," written between 1385 and 1400, found centuries later in a monastery on the island of Flato, off the western coast of Iceland, sagas filling a large volume called *Antiquitates Americanae*. This book created a sensation when published as there were detailed accounts of the discovery of America and extracts from eighteen ancient authorities, principally Icelandic and undoubtedly pre-Columbian. The authenticity of the sagas, in the main facts related, have been corroborated by recognized authorities.

The Scandinavian vikings were piratical chieftains. About 982, Thorwald, a Norwegian jarl, exiled for murder, withdrew to Iceland, with his son, Eric the Red. The latter subsequently went to Greenland, and gave it that inappropriate name to induce others to colonize there. He was accompanied by Herjulf Bardson, who had a son Bjarni or Biarne. Bjarni, on one of his voyages of adventure, sighted the American coast and sailed along the shores of Newfoundland and Labrador to Greenland.

King Olaf of Norway accepted the Christian religion near the end of the century and sent word that all the Norsemen inhabiting Iceland must become Christians at once or he would kill every one he could lay his hands upon. Leif Ericson, son of Eric, became one of these sudden converts, returned to Greenland, "made it a Christian land," and, of the churches which were built, the ruins of one of them, known as the Katortok church, still remains.

The land seen by Bjarni was a topic of conversation in Greenland and about the year 1000 Leif Ericson, with thirty-five companions, sailing southward, presumably landed at Newfoundland and Nova Scotia. They then sailed before a northeast wind for two days and landed on an island north of the mainland. According to the "inspired identifiers of localities," they were somewhere on the New England coast. They sailed between the island and the mainland, went up a river that came through a lake, cast anchor, went ashore, pitched their tents, built huts, spent the winter there, the "adventurous pioneers of American discovery."

About 1002, Thorwald, younger brother of Leif, who had succeeded Eric the Red as earl, sailed southward with a crew of thirty men, found



the huts built by Leif still standing and went into winter quarters. In the spring of 1004, Thorwald and his party were exploring the country in a northward direction, when the ship was driven ashore near a cape, which they called Kjalarness or Keel Cape, as it was there they put a new keel into their damaged ship. They set up the old keel in the sand to mark the spot.

Some historical writers state as a fact, and others surmise, that this Kjarlarness was on the shore of Cape Cod, in the neighborhood of Provincetown or Truro.

Leaving Kjalarness, Thorwald and his men came to "a point of land which stretched out and was covered with wood." Thorwald said: "This place is beautiful and here I would like to raise my dwelling." About that time he came upon a party of nine natives whom he called Skraellings (dwarfs or Eskimos.) He killed all but one and that one became the Paul Revere of his time among his fellow Eskimos. While the Norsemen slept the American aborigines visited swift retribution upon them. Thorwald was mortally wounded and told his men who survived the attack: "Now counsel I ye, that ye get ready instantly to depart. But ye shall bear me to that cape where I thought it best to dwell. There shall ye bury me and set up crosses at my head and feet, and call the place Krossaness forever, in all time to come." If Kjalarness is at the extremity of Cape Cod, so those who locate there aver, Krossaness is off the shore of Plymouth County, and there Thorwald was buried and all things were done as he said, but no one seems to be sure of the location.

An expedition was fitted out in the summer of 1005 to take Thorwald's body to Greenland. Thorstein, another son of Eric the Red, was in command. His wife was Gudrida, and she accompanied him, but they were unable to find Krossaness and returned. Thorstein and many of his crew died and there were strange manifestations. Thorstein informed his widow after his death—page Conan Doyle—that she would have another husband and a good posterity. As for him he had "come to a good resting place."

The prophecy was fulfilled, inasmuch as she married Thorfin Karlsefne, an Icelandic merchant of distinguished lineage, and with him visited Vinland, as the vicinity of Kjalarness and Krossaness was called. They were accompanied by three Icelandic merchants, Snorri Thorbrandson, Bjarni Grimolfson and Thorhall Gamlason. Thorwald, who had married Freydisa, a daughter of Eric the Red, was to go with them in a ship of his own. There were three ships and one hundred and forty persons in the expedition and plans were made for a permanent settlement. Tools, provisions, livestock and other necessities were taken along. There were a number of women in the party, mar-

ried and single, and one of those who has given us an account of subsequent troubles lays the blame to the female contingent, saying "the women were the cause of it, for those who were unmarried would injure those who were married, and hence arouse great disturbance."

The ships touched, in the spring of 1007 at Helluland, which has been identified with Newfoundland; at Markland, supposed to be Nova Scotia; and at Kjalarness, supposedly Cape Cod. At the latter place they found the keel which had been set up three years before by Thorwald. Beyond Kjalarness extended a sandy shore of such length that it was called Furthustrand, after which the coast was much indented with coves and inlets. Further along the coast, in a sheltered bay, Karlsefne and his companies spent the first winter and had a bad time of it. With the coming of warmer weather they sailed "a long time" and arrived at a place where a river ran out from the land and through a lake to the sea. Here they started their settlement and called it Hop. From Hop they made explorations, trafficked with the natives, "fierce-looking but friendly, dark and grim-visaged, with filthy heads of hair, great eyes and broad cheeks."

Karsefne carried on a profitable barter with the Skraellings, exchanging red cloth for valuable furs on his own terms, but when the natives wished for European weapons, he refused to give them this opportunity to become armed. The saga says "Now this was the way the Skraellings traded: they bore off their wares in their bellies, but Karlsefne and his companions had their bags and skin-wares, and so they parted." While the Iceland merchant was trading with them, his bull rushed from a thicket. The Skraellings, terrified by the sight and bellowing of the enraged beast, fled to their skin-boats and paddled off with the best speed they could make in their fright.

Some months later the Skraellings returned, supposedly on account of one of their number having been killed by the settlers. They made battle upon the Norsemen with the fury of desperation, until the fight became a panic.

It was at this point, according to the saga, that Freydisa rushed among the fleeing Norsemen, seized the sword of one of those who had been killed, and turned to meet the oncoming natives, crying out to her Norse companions: "Why do ye run, stout men, before these miserable caitiffs whom I thought ye would knock down like cattle? I ween I could fight better than any of you."

The natives regarded her as some powerful priestess, turning loose upon them the fury of the gods, as her cries and aspect were those of a fury, uttering strange incantations and fierce imprecations. The rout was stopped and the settlers were victorious.



About this time Snorri, the first person of European parentage to see the light on American soil, was born to Gudrida.

In the third winter the Norsemen abandoned the settlement, leaving the record that "although the land had many good qualities, still would they be always exposed there to the fear of hostilities from the earlier inhabitants." They voyaged to Norway with a rich cargo of timber and in 1015 Karlsefne bought a great estate in Iceland, so that Snorri grew up there and his children after him. Gudrida died in an Icelandic cloister founded by her son. Among her distinguished descendants were Thorwaldsen, the Danish sculptor. Thorlak, the grandson of Snorri, compiled a still existing code of Icelandic ecclesiastical law, while he was a bishop, and probably committed to writing the sagas which constitute the most valuable of the records. Finn Magnusen was a descendant of the same Snorri, and rendered valuable coöperation to Professor Charles Christian Rafn who was instrumental in preparing *Antiquitates Americanae*."

That there was some democracy in those early days, the saga gives testimony to the effect that Bjarni Grimolfson set out on the return trip from Vinland with Karlsefne but his ship became reduced to a sinking condition by reason of the teredo or ship worm. "They had a boat which was smeared with seal oil, for the sea-worms do not attack that." Bjarni commanded: "Since the boat cannot give room to more than half of our men, it is my counsel that lots should be drawn for those to go in the boat, for it shall not be according to rank." In this regard the decision of Bjarni was more just than is commonly practiced at the present day in an emergency. "Lots were drawn, and it fell upon Bjarni to go in the boat, and the half of his men with him."

One of those who, according to lot was to be left behind, found fault with the arrangements and Bjarni replied: "Go thou down into the boat, and I will go up into the ship, since I see that thou art so desirous to live." Places were exchanged and "it is most people's belief that Bjarni and his companions were lost in the worm-sea, for nothing was heard of them since that time."

**Freydisa the First Woman Commander of Armed Forces in America**—Freydisa, who had turned the tide of battle in Vinland, the first woman commander of armed forces in America, planned to return to Vinland, and induced two of her brothers, Helgi and Finnbogi, each to take thirty fighting men, and she an equal number, including her husband, Thorwald. The two brothers had the faster boats and reached Vinland in advance, storing their goods in Leif's booths. Upon her arrival she demanded that the goods be moved and enforced her command by producing thirty-five fighting men, five more than the num-

ber agreed upon for each of the trio. There were some altercations and one night, after Helgi and Finnbogi and their followers had called it a day and lain down to sleep, they were attacked by the woman and her thirty-five guards. All the men were put to death but the five women who had accompanied them from Iceland were spared by the guards who refused to obey the orders of Freydisa to despatch them. So Freydisa seized an axe and "did not stop till they were all dead." Speaking to her men, she said: "If it be permitted us to come again to Greenland, I will take the life of that man who tells of this business." In the following spring they returned to Greenland.

Other voyages to Vinland took place, and it is supposed that there were regular settlements, and even regular trade with Greenland and Iceland; but in time all knowledge of the new country was lost.

It would be especially interesting locally if we knew whether the claim that Kjalarness was Cape Cod and Krossaness, Gurnet Point or Allerton, were true, and whether Snorri was born so near the birth-place of Peregrine White, and whether Plymouth or Barnstable County, as we know them, was the setting for the strenuous performances of the fighting Freydisa.

Krossaness, the place of Thorwald's death and grave, has been associated with Point Allerton by Rafn, although he leans more towards Gurnet Point, at the end of Duxbury Beach, as does Dr. Kohl in his "Discovery of Maine;" and Bryant in his "Popular History of the United States." The French translation of Wheaton's "History of the Northmen," made by Paul Guillot, and sanctioned by Mr. Wheaton, leans also toward this view.

The essential facts are that the discovery and brief occupation of America by the Norsemen have not been discredited, and the more the subject is illuminated, the stronger becomes the corroboration of the general trustworthiness of the sagas. Some investigators have regarded seriously the similarity of Indian and Norse names of places, evidence furnished by supposed remains of the Norsemen still extant in this vicinity. Perhaps it is more conservative to agree with those who say no vestiges of the visits of the Norsemen remain. The Old Mill at Newport has often been cited as a true Norse memorial. The idea of a Norse origin for the Dighton Rock inscriptions was accepted by many scholars as positive proofs but, since the finding of numerous rock inscriptions of undoubted Indian origin, the idea has been generally given up. Much study leads to much confusion along this line, as in many other historical paths, and one might as well try to scatter all doubts as to whether there was a William Tell, or try to prove who struck Billy Patterson, or how old is Ann.

Since the Old Mill at Newport has been put in evidence, we recall



that Benedict Arnold who succeeded Roger Williams as governor of Rhode Island in 1657 and died in 1678, in his will, made the year of his death, speaks of the monument in question as "my stone-built wind-mill." Governor Arnold's family came from Warwickshire, England, in which Leamington is located. He had a Rhode Island farm which he called Leamington Farm. Three miles from the English Leamington in Chesterton is a round stone windmill, which much resembles the one in Newport. It is believed that the Newport mill was copied from the one in Chesterton which Governor Arnold had seen many times in his boyhood.

As for Dighton Rock, lying on the bank of Taunton River, in Berkley, Massachusetts, learned Danes easily read on its surface "Thorfin" and "CXXXI." It was claimed that this inscription proclaimed that Thorfin and one hundred and thirty-one men occupied this vicinity. Others, not possessed of Scandinavian fervor, see in the rude human figures and those of animals on the rock figures carved by the Indians.

Parts of a well-preserved skeleton were found with armor, consisting of a breastplate and a belt of brass tubes linked together in a peculiar manner, in 1831, near Fall River, Massachusetts. Armlets and anklets made in the same manner and brass arrowheads were also found. Longfellow found in the discovery, the story of "The Skeleton in Armor," and he linked it with the Old Stone Mill or Round Tower at Newport.

Three weeks we westward bore,  
And when the storm was o'er,  
Cloud-like we saw the shore  
Stretching to leeward;

There for my lady's bower  
Built I the lofty tower  
Which to this very hour,  
Stands looking seaward.

Even the genius of Longfellow could not perpetuate the fancy. The skeleton was evidently neither that of an Indian nor a Norseman and probably Benedict Arnold, governor of Rhode Island, not the Revolutionary war general of unsavory fame, and not a Viking erected the Old Mill at Newport, as the language in his will indicates.

The Norsemen might, however, have been early settlers in Plymouth County on Cape Cod and still not have built the Old Mill, written inscriptions on Dighton Rock or left a skeleton in armor. The value of various things offered in evidence neither proves nor denies the identifications of the sagas. Professor Rafn had no hesitation in naming the island of Nantucket as the one on which Leif the Lucky landed, or in identifying Vinland with Massachusetts and Rhode Island. The site of Leif's booths he places at Bristol, Rhode Island, and speaks of "the

precise spot where the ancient Northmen held their intercourse." M. Gravier gives no information about the skeleton in armor, found near Fall River, placed in a museum there and subsequently destroyed by fire, but he concluded that other skeletons found near by were those of the victims of Freydisa!

The sagas themselves do not settle the question whether we are treading the historical sands of Vinland. We may never be able to prove, beyond a reasonable doubt, that any distinct spot was settled by the Norsemen. Years ago, when the Boston statue to Leif Ericson was projected, the members of the Massachusetts Historical Society discouraged it on the ground that there was only questionable testimony that the Norsemen ever came to New England. There are various other statues of Leif Ericson in the United States, models of heroic grace and beauty, looking every inch the explorer and navigator whose ship coasted down the shores of Newfoundland long before Columbus raised the flag of Spain on San Salvador. One such statue is in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, more than a thousand miles from the one in Boston. The student is prone to believe, in trying to follow in the footsteps of the Norsemen, that not for nothing did they name one of their settlements Hop, and is inclined to leave the mystery of the location of Vinland as he found it, lest he "out of too much learning become mad."

**Early Adventurers and Discoverers**—Whether Rafn's map of Vinland, boldly placing the name Kjalarness at the tip of Cape Cod, Krosaness on Gurnet Point, Furthustrand on the outer shore, somewhere between Orleans and Truro, Hop near Bristol, Rhode Island, and giving other definite locations to Leifsbudir and Furdustrand and Straumsey, other places mentioned in the saga, is correct, does not make it less interesting to try to find out what manner of people were among these hills and valleys and navigating the numerous lakes and streams before the Pilgrims landed. When pre-Pilgrim history is inquired about it is popularly disposed of in the word "Indians," as if the copper-colored people of the forests dated back to the time when "The morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy." We submit that it is in no way a reflection upon the glory of the Pilgrims that they were not the first mortals to inhabit the land into which they breathed the spirit of liberty. Neither does it in any way dim the lustre of the diadem of Christopher Columbus to tell the stories of the discoverers before him, even though there is much of maze and myth in the narratives. A brief reference to such claims as have not been proven false but are accepted by respected authorities has its legitimate place in a work of the nature of this one.



Ante-Columbian discoveries and the giving of a new world to the Old have been claimed by almost every race of eastern Asia, by the Normans, Welsh and Irish as well as the Scandinavians and Italians, and they offer evidence of varying worth. With all such claims, unless they have some reference to the little grain of the earth's surface constituting the southeastern counties of Massachusetts, we have nothing to do. We easily believe that there was something going on hereabouts before the Indian war-whoop awoke the echoes, and a natural curiosity asks what it was. Were they a superior and mysterious race that vanished before the occupancy of the land by the red men whom Columbus found at San Salvador and Myles Standish found on Cape Cod and at Plymouth? We do not know and, as an eminent historian has said, "no longer does anyone try to write a complete history of America from the sources, and each man now assumes that he may begin on the foundations laid by somebody else."

We know that there was a time when there were no Great Lakes, no Niagara Falls, and Mount Washington was wholly or mostly submerged beneath the Titanic labors of the mighty glacial rivers which came down from "Greenland's Icy Mountains," or some other place equally as cold and forlorn. There is evidence that the Mohawk Valley was filled nearly to the height of the Catskills and some of the geological formations were moved 600 miles or more in the upheaval. Possibly some of the stone relics which were found in this territory were borne from far away by the glacial drift, but from these relics are deduced some knowledge of the arts and culture of those who made them and the reasons for which they were made.

Among the early European voyagers in Massachusetts Bay was probably Jean Allefonsce, and some historians give to him the honor of being its discoverer.

**Captain John Smith**—It is not clear when the name Massachusetts was first applied to the bay. It was in 1614 that Captain John Smith sailed along the Massachusetts coast and Smith's map was the first to show the outline so as to be recognized. The headlands of Cape Cod had attracted attention from the beginning of explorations.

**Bartholomew Gosnold**—Bartholomew Gosnold and his crew were the first English positively known to have landed on Massachusetts soil. It was he that named Cape Cod, having been surprised at a large catch of fish made by his crew. Gosnold's landing was in 1602.

**Pring, Weymouth, Dermer, Hudson, and Others**—Captain Pring the next year, 1603, landed somewhere in the bay and, according to De-Costa, at Plymouth.

Another English captain, Weymouth, struck the coast of Cape Cod

in 1605, having sailed from England in May of that year, under the patronage of the Earl of Southampton.

The French records come in at this point. Henry IV gave to DeMont in 1603, a patent of LaCadie, in a country lying between forty and forty-six degrees north latitude. Plymouth County is in latitude forty-two degrees. DeMont made an expedition for exploration in 1605, with Champlain as pilot. After landing at Cape Ann and Boston, they skirted the shore past Brant Rock in Marshfield, and Plymouth, and rounded Cape Cod. They had a skirmish with the natives and turned back.

The next year Champlain came back with Poutrincourt, entered the harbor of Barnstable, proceeded around Cape Cod to the entrance of Vineyard Sound, returned and never again visited these shores. A narrative of his explorations was published in 1613, accompanied by two maps.

In 1609 Henry Hudson landed at Cape Cod on his way to explore the river which bears his name.

In March, 1614, Captain Smith left England on a trading expedition, landed near the Penobscot River in Maine, left his vessels to fish and trade, and, accompanied by eight men, started to map out the bay. He reported that he "sounded about twenty-five excellent good harbors." He also made a draft of Cape Cod and then rejoined his vessels. He next engaged in a project for settling the country which he gave the name New England. Of it he said: "Of all the parts of the world I have yet seen not inhabited, I would rather live here than anywhere." To further his colonization scheme, Captain Smith set sail from England in March, 1615, with two ships, one commanded by Thomas Dermer. The latter reached the coast but Smith's ship was disabled in a storm and forced to return. After refitting he again set sail in June, but was captured by a French cruiser and for a time held as a prisoner. While thus held, he wrote a narrative of his first voyage which was published in London in 1616 as "A Description of New England; or the Observations and Discoveries of Captain John Smith." It was accompanied by a folding map of New England, from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod, and, with this publication of eighty pages, he sought to organize a company of colonists. He met with no immediate success but his book served to pave the way for the establishment of the English permanently in Massachusetts. Smith in the text of his book referred to "the high mountaine of Massachusetts," which he called "Massachusetts Mount," and which is Big Blue Hill in Milton, on the top of which the weather observatory is located.

Five years after Henry Hudson came upon Cape Cod and after the settlements of the Dutch at Manhattan, in the spring of 1614, Adrian



Block sailed in the yacht "Restless" for an exploration of the shore and rivers of Connecticut, passed Martha's Vineyard, Nantucket, the southern point of the Cape Cod peninsula, the easterly highlands on the back of the cape, rounded the cape itself, named it Cape Bevechier, passed into the bay, passed by Barnstable, stopped at Plymouth, which he called Crane Bay, and made the northerly limit of the Dutch claim at Nahant.

The map shows a passage near where the present Cape Cod Canal is located and Captain Cyprian Southach, in his chart of the "Sea of New England" also cuts off Cape Cod from the mainland and in his text says: "The place where I came through with a whale boat, being ordered by ye government to look after ye Pirate Ship Whido Bellame, command, cast away ye 26 of April, 1717, where I buried one hundred and two men drowned." There is a similar passage shown in "The English Pilot," published in London in 1794.

Thomas Dermer who sailed from England with Captain John Smith a few years before, was on the coast again in 1620, five or six months before the Pilgrims landed. The Pilgrims had declined, while in Holland, to accept the offers of the Dutch and settle in New Netherland. It is believed they knew Smith's map and, although exiles, had English sympathies. Among them were some men who had previously been on the coast in fishing vessels and, when they sighted the highlands of Cape Cod may have known they were in what Hudson had called New Holland.

**Attempt to Plant English Colony in Cuttyhunk Before Virginia—**  
The events narrated in the foregoing chapters preceded the coming of the Pilgrims, and furnish a background for the more familiar historical stories which have been taught in all the school histories since the school system was inaugurated in this country. How long before the coming of the Pilgrims the outstretched arm of Cape Cod was placed there as a haven of safety and the overlapping stretches of land forming Duxbury Beach from the north and Plymouth Beach from the south created an inner harbor of refuge, no one knows. The stage was set for the Pilgrims on "a stern and rock-bound coast" but it was not the same formation, with granite ledges and massive boulders such as make up the North Shore of Massachusetts and the coast of Maine. Rather were the rocks themselves wrapped about with sand which seemed to soften the shock of contact and make the landing a matter of safer negotiation. There was a time when gigantic animals, great flying beasts, high hulks of flesh like overgrown elephants or hideous rhinoceros, colossal lizards and all kinds of uncanny breathing and crawling things roamed over the territory to the north of us and, perhaps, over what is now Plymouth County. But these things had

their day and passed away. The temperature of the polar regions experienced a change. Melting snows changed to solid masses of ice. The huge animals were driven southward and plants died. The snow and ice became hundreds, perhaps thousands of feet thick and crept slowly southward like a white shadow from Greenland, from which legendary evidence is to the effect that the Norsemen came at a later period. Great rocks were torn from the cliffs and carried along or ground to powder. The rocks and detritus heaped up in ridges along the sides or traveled the whole distance and became the terminal moraines with which we are familiar. The stone walls which enclose the farms and fields in Plymouth County are mostly composed of relics of the glaciers, waifs of the ice age left on our doorstep. Numerous are the jumbled rock fragments stolen from the north which help form the rock-ribbed hills which greeted the Pilgrims, and over which traveled the Indians of the early seventeenth century.

Following upon the heels of Bartholomew Gosnold, one of Sir Walter Raleigh's old captains, who sailed from England with thirty-two persons, cast anchor off the end of Cape Cod, which he named, coasted in the track of Leif the Lucky, if you please, landed on Cuttyhunk, one of the Elizabeth Islands, came Captain Jones of the "Mayflower." It was in May, 1602, that Gosnold made the first English footprints on the New England. He had left England in March with the definite intention of planting a colony in the New World. His old master, Walter Raleigh, was a prisoner in the Tower of London. He built a fort or storehouse on a little island in a little lake on the island of Cuttyhunk, and the site of this little fort is marked today with a monument to his memory. When the time came to return to England, the supplies were so scant, with winter coming on, that none of the party were willing to remain behind and keep house while the others returned to England for more provisions and more colonists. So all returned and the plan of colonizing was sold to the English people but not the climate and hazards of New England. So Gosnold's colonizing was done beneath the kinder skies of Virginia. Plymouth Rock, instead of the little island in the little lake of Cuttyhunk, was destined to become the American shrine of liberty.

Gosnold had been in such a hurry to start his colony that, on his voyage to Cuttyhunk, he passed by Massachusetts Bay and the sheltering side of Cape Cod; otherwise possibly the protection of the strange formation might have caused him to have become the founder of Plymouth County, and less high standards and less worthy reasons for colonization might have entered into the warp and woof from which was spun the mantle of New England civilization.

The Virginia Founders believed, according to Seagull in "Eastward



Hoe," a comedy written in 1605, that they would find in the New World that "golde is more plentiful there than copper is with us . . . . Why man, all . . . the chains with which they chaine up their streets are massie gold; and for rubies and diamonds they go forth in Hylydayes and gather them by the seashore." It is said that the fleet carried to Virginia forty or fifty sailors and "six score male emigrants, including fifty-two gentlemen and—a barber. A gentleman of that time was unused to manual labor."

The adventurers went under sealed orders which they opened on Sunday night, April 26, 1607, when they entered the Chesapeake Bay, and found that the councillors named were Edward-Maria Wingfield, Bartholomew Gosnold, John Smith, Christopher Newport, John Ratcliffe, John Martin and George Kendall. Five took the oath of office and chose Wingfield as president. Captain John Smith was under arrest at the time and was excluded from his seat until the following June. Newport gave a farewell supper and sailed for England, June 22. By September fifty of the one hundred and four colonists banqueted by Christopher Newton were dead, and among them, Gosnold. Kendall was removed from the council, for the good of the service, tried for mutiny and shot. Wingfield was deposed from the presidency and imprisoned on the "Discovery," one of the ships which brought them from England. Smith was specially delegated to secure supplies and, in doing so, was seized by Indians led by Opechancanough, brother of Powhatan, and it was while he was a prisoner of the Indians that the romantic incident of Pocahontas saving his life took place, if at all. Powhatan sent him back to Jamestown.

Upon his return he was arrested, indicted under the Levitical law for allowing the death of two of his men, and sentenced to be hanged. The colony then consisted of forty half-starved persons. Just as Captain John Smith was to be executed, Christopher Newport arrived with more colonists and provisions, liberated Smith, and he later became president and prosecuted his desire to explore and rule. He finally was the only member of the council and made no attempt to fill the vacancies.

In September, 1609, Smith returned to England. He never revisited Virginia, but in 1614, with Thomas Hunt, sailed from England and fished, hunted for furs and explored the coast from the Penobscot River in Maine to Cape Cod. They returned to England with fish, furs, a map which Smith had made, and some Indians whom Hunt had taken prisoner. Hunt sold the Indians in Spain. One of them subsequently returned to America and was the friendly Squanto who greeted the Pilgrims at Plymouth. Smith died in London in 1631, at the age of fifty-one.





On the 6<sup>th</sup> of September, 1620, in the Mayoralty of Thomas Towner, after being kindly entertained and courteously used by sincere Friends there dwelling, the Pilgrim Fathers sailed from Plymouth in the *Mayflower*, in the Providence of God to settle in **NEW PLYMOUTH** and to lay the Foundation of the **NEW ENGLAND STATES**. The ancient Quay whence they embarked was destroyed not many Years afterwards, but the Site of their Embarkation is marked by the Stone bearing the name of the **MAYFLOWER** in the pavement of the adjacent Pier. This Tablet was erected in the Mayoralty of J. T. Bond 1891, to commemorate their Departure, and the visit to Plymouth in July of that Year of a number of their Descendants and Representatives.



Engd. by Campbell, N.Y.

COMMEMORATIVE STONE AND TABLET ON THE BARBICAN,  
PLYMOUTH, ENGLAND





### CHAPTER III

#### FROM SCROOBY TO PLYMOUTH.

Early Education and Life of the Pilgrims and Parting Advice of Rev. John Robinson—Debt of Humanity to Governor Bradford for His Authentic History—Its Remarkable Preservation—The "Mayflower" Census and Early Vital Statistics—Descent Proved from Fifty-four "Mayflower" Passengers—How Roger Williams and Other "Heretics" Were Dealt With—Punishment for the First Offense in Plymouth—First Dairy Cattle Arrived on the "Charity"—Beginning of Public Schools—Punishments for Quakers.

When the island of Cuttyhunk in Dukes County, Massachusetts, was occupied, in 1602, by Bartholomew Gosnold and his crew of would-be colonists, at Scrooby, one hundred and forty miles from London, there was a congregation of the Protestant Reformation "whom neither king nor priest could force again to submit to tyranny." The postmaster of Scrooby was William Brewster, a native of the village, who had studied at Cambridge, spent some time at court as assistant to William Davidson, Queen Elizabeth's Puritan secretary, accompanied the latter as secretary when he went as ambassador to the Netherlands, and, when Davidson fell from power, became the Scrooby postmaster. It was his custom on the Lord's Day to offer the manor-house in which he lived as a tenant of Sir Samuel Sandys, to the Separatists constituting the congregation already mentioned, "and with great love he entertained them when they came, making provision for them to his great charge."

Richard Clifton was pastor of the congregation and John Robinson was assistant pastor. Brewster was chief layman and afterwards ruling elder. Soon political displeasure which his identification with the Separatists invoked, caused him to lose his office as postmaster, and the manor-house, which had belonged to the archbishops of York from the days of William the Conqueror had another tenant. Some of the congregation found themselves in prison, others found refuge in flight, and some got on board a ship at Boston, fifty miles from Scrooby. The captain of the ship betrayed them and their goods were confiscated. Other attempts were made to get away and to some place "where they heard was freedom of religion for all men."

At Leyden, Brewster became a teacher, publisher and printer of books that it would not have been safe to print in England. Bradford became a silk-weaver and a student. He was later the leading member of the Plymouth Colony as "nature and opportunity equally fitted him to be its chronicler from the beginning." He wrote the first

American book. His manuscript was for a quarter of a century safely kept in a house still standing on the banks of the Jones River in Kingston.

Bradford became a citizen of Leyden and a student of its municipal government, preparing himself for the work which was before him, although he knew it not.

Robinson became pastor and trained his congregation to follow the counsel given to the insurgent peasants of Germany nearly a hundred years before, by Martin Luther: "The gospel is not tied to place, but moves freely through the world, like the star which beamed on the wizards, and, as they journeyed from the East, guided them where the Saviour lay. We have power to change our country, and elsewhere pursue truth. Do not dispute with the sovereign for place, but emigrate in company. Let the people elect a pastor, and support him at their own charge. If the magistrate interferes, let the pastor, whom the people have chosen, take to flight, and let them that will, go with him."

Under Robinson the congregation increased, a church and houses for the people were built. Among the recruits were John Carver, Myles Standish and Edward Winslow. Brewster began printing books which eventually led to his outfit being confiscated, and it soon became very evident that the Separatists were not safe in Holland or England. John Carver and Robert Cushman were delegated to go to England and seek lands in Northern Virginia. The Virginia company granted a charter to the Pilgrims but the patent was in the name of John Winneb who intended to go with them. The charter was not used. Eventually Thomas Weston, a London merchant, and about seventy other merchant adventurers planned an emigration scheme. The Pilgrims, if they accepted the terms offered, would practically be servants. "Hard terms indeed; but it was this or nothing and, after all, civil and religious liberty were not covered by mortgage." If a majority went Robinson was to go with them but, since the majority remained in Leyden, Elder Brewster became the leader. Pastor Robinson preached a farewell sermon in which he said "Before God and His blessed angels, follow me no farther than you have seen me follow the Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord has more truth yet to break forth out of His holy word. I beseech you, remember it—'tis an article of your church covenant—that you be ready to receive whatever truth shall be made known to you from the written word of God."

Twenty-four miles from Leyden was Delfshaven, and from this place they embarked in the "Speedwell" for Southampton, from which she was to act as transport to the "Mayflower," a vessel of one hundred and eighty tons. At Southampton, Stephen Hopkins, a man with a



well developed commercial tendency, had his family of eight ready to go. William Mullens with his wife and daughter, Priscilla, were also waiting to go, and John Alden was hired as a cooper.

On the voyage of nine weeks, one passenger died, Oceanus was born to Stephen and Elizabeth Hopkins and so the number remained the same when, on November 10, the shores of Cape Cod were seen. Although the Pilgrims' patent was for Virginia, they were led to accept the shelter of "the only windward port within two hundred miles where the ship could have laid at anchor for the next month, unvexed by the storms which usher in a New England winter."

They were sore in need of a landing place and sanitary conditions better than could be provided on the "Mayflower." The names of those who signed the Compact in the cabin of the "Mayflower," by means of which "humanity recovered its rights and instituted government on the basis of equal laws enacted by all the people for the general good" are well known. It is not so well known that there were forty-eight grown men on board and only forty-one signed the Compact. Perhaps the other seven were too ill to sign their names. At all events they died shortly after. The make-up of the "Mayflower" company was thirty-four men passengers, eighteen wives, twenty boys, eight girls, three maid-servants, and nineteen men-servants, five of whom were not more than half-grown. Their clothing was filthy, or, as William Bradford tells the story: the women went ashore to do "the homely Monday work of washing clothes as they had great need." Most of them were weakened by their confinement in cramped and unsanitary quarters and they landed at the worst possible time for comfort or safety, but "Freedom's ark had reached its Ararat."

**Debt of Humanity to Governor Bradford for His Authentic "History"**—Presumably every student of history has attempted to picture the people who came over in the "Mayflower" and has obtained cold comfort from reading a list of names, copied from the monument to the Forefathers, at Plymouth, or from some other memorial or historical volume. Just what each family group consisted of and what became of the different members has not appeared in most of the histories and, where some attempt has been made to tell the "human interest" story there have been variations, so the reader has wondered whether anyone really knows. Fortunately there is a manuscript, written in the legible hand of Governor Bradford, now carefully preserved in the Massachusetts State House, which gives us first-hand information.

**Its Remarkable Preservation**—From the time that Governor Bradford died until 1728, this precious manuscript was carefully hidden away

in the old house in Kingston, now owned by the Jones River Village Club of that town. It had been loaned to Reverend Thomas Prince, by Major John Bradford, to enable Prince to write his "Chronological History of New England." Dr. Prince eventually deposited it in the library of the Old South Church in Boston. Hutchinson and Mather had access to it and it was valuable to them in writing their histories.

The Old South Church was looted at the time of the Revolutionary War and the manuscript disappeared, with many other valuable things. Half a century later, it was discovered in the Library of Fulham Palace in London. In 1897 it was returned to Boston and copies of it printed by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. This literary treasure enables the student to satisfy his curiosity concerning the fate of the passengers on the "Mayflower," written by one of them as late as 1650, and with additional information in another handwriting as late as 1698. The story as it appears in Bradford's manuscript is not easy reading from the fact that the spelling is in Old English and the lower case *u* is used where we of the present time employ the lower case *v*, and there are other peculiarities, now out of date. Those who wish to read it as Bradford wrote it, may examine the original manuscript in the State House or seek one of the copies printed by the Commonwealth. It is here presented in twentieth century United States instead of seventeenth century English, the wording the same, the spelling altered, with the exception of the names:

#### **The "Mayflower" Census and Vital Statistics:**

The names of those which came over first, in the year 1620 and were (by the blessing of God) the first beginners and (in a sort) the foundation, of all the plantations, and colonies, in New England, and their families.

Mr John Carver, Kathrine his wife. Desire Minter; and two man servants, John Howland, Roger Wilder, William Latham, a boy, and a maidservant. and a child that was put to him called Jasper More.

Mr William Brewster, Mary, his wife, with two sons, whose names were Love and Wrasling, and a boy was put to him called Richard More; and another of his brothers; the rest of his children were left behind and came over afterwards.

Mr Edward Winslow, Elizabeth, his wife, and two men servants, called Georg Sowle and Elias Story; also a little girl was put to him called Ellen, the sister of Richard More.

William Bradford and Dorothy his wife, having but one child, a son left behind who came afterward.

Mr Isack Allerton, and Mary his wife; with three children, Bartholomew, Remember and Mary, and a servant boy, John Hooke.

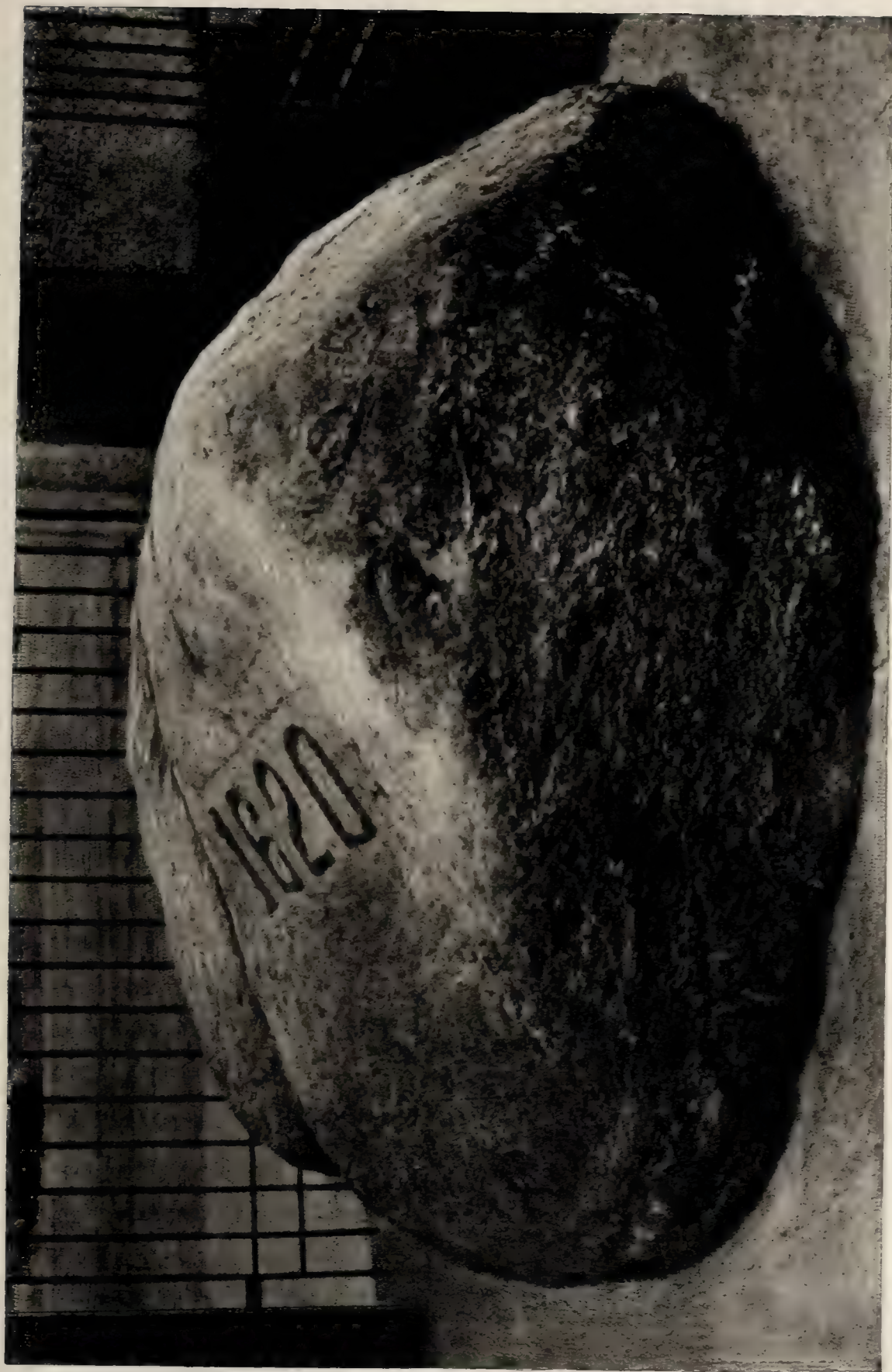
Mr Samuel Fuller; and a servant called William Batten. His wife was behind and a child, which came afterwards.

John Cradston, and his son John Cradston.

Captain Myles Standish and Rose, his wife.

Mr Christopher Martin and his wife; and two children Joseph and Priscilla; and a servant Robart Carter.





PLYMOUTH ROCK





Mr William White and Susana his wife; and one son called Resolved, and one born a shipboard called Peregrine, and two servants, named William Holbeck and Edward Thomson.

Mr Steven Hopkins, and Elizabeth his wife; and two children called Giles and Constanta a daughter, both by a former wife. And two more by this wife called Damaris and Oceanus, the last was born at sea. And two servants called Edward Doty and Edward Litster.

Mr Richard Warren, but his wife and children were left behind and came afterwards.

John Billinton, and Elen his wife; and two sons John and Francis.

Edward Tillie and his wife; and Eelizabeth their daughter.

Francis Cooke and his son John; But his wife and other children came afterwards.

Thomas Rogers and Joseph his son: his other children came afterwards.

Thomas Tinker, and his wife, and a son.

John Ridgdale and Alice his wife.

James Chilton and his wife and Mary their daughter; they had another daughter that was married came afterward.

Edward Fuller, and his wife; and Samuell their son.

John Turner, and two sons; he had a daughter came some years after to Salem, where she is now living.

Francis Eaton and Sarah his wife, and Samuell their son, a young child.

Moyses Fletcher, John Goodman, Thomas Williams, Digorie Preist, Edmond Margeson, Peter Browne, Richard Britterige, Richard Clarke, Richard Gardenar, Gilbert Winslow.

John Alden was hired for a cooper at South-Hampton where the ship victualled; and being a hopeful young man was much desired, but left to his own liking to go, or stay when he came here, but he stayed, and married here.

John Allerton, and Thomas Enlish were both hired, the latter to go master of a shallop here, and the other was reputed as one of the company but was to go back (being a seaman) for the help of others behind. But they both died here, before the ship returned.

There were also other two seamen hired to stay a year here in the country, William Trevore; and one Ely. But when their time was out they both returned.

These being about a hundred souls came over in this first ship; and began their work, which God of his goodness hath hitherto blessed; let his Holy Name have the praise. And seeing it hath pleased Him to give me to see thirty years completed since these beginnings. And that the great works of his Providence are to be observed, I have thought it not unworthy my pains, to take a view of the decreasings and increasings of these persons, and such changes as hath passed over them, and theirs, in this thirty years. It may be of some use to such as come after; but however, I shall rest in my own benefits.

I will therefore take them in order as they lie.

Mr Carver and his wife died the first year, he in the spring, she in the summer; also his man Roger, and the little boy Jasper died before either of them, of the common infection.

Desire Minter, returned to her friend and proved not very well and died in England. His servant boy Latham, after more than twenty years stay in the country, went into England; and from thence to the Bahama Islands in the West Indies; and there with some others was starved for want of food. His maid servant married, and died a year or two after here in this place. His servant John Howland married the daughter of John Tillie, Elizabeth, and they

are both now living; and have ten children now all living, and their eldest daughter have four children. And their two daughters, one all living and other of their children marriagable, so fifteen are come of them.

Mr Brewster lived to a very old age; about eighty years he was when he died, having lived some twenty-three or twenty-four years here in the country, and though his wife died long before yet she died aged. His son Wrastle died a young man unmarried; his son Love lived till this year 1650, and died and left four children, now living. His daughters which came over after him, are dead, but have left sundry children alive; his eldest son is still living, and hath nine or ten children, one married who hath a child or two. Richard More, his brother, died the first winter; but his son is married, and hath four or five children all living.

Mr Edward Winslow, his wife died the first winter, and he married with the widow of Mr White, and hath two children living by her marriagable, besides sundry that are dead. One of his servants died, as also the little girl soon after the ships arrived. But his man Georg Sowle, is still living and hath eight children.

William Bradford, his wife died soon after their arrival, and he married again; and hath four children, three whereof are married (who died 9th of May 1658).

Mr Allerton his wife died with the first, and his servant John Hooke, his son Bartle is married in England, but I know not how many children he hath. His daughter Remember is married at Salem, and hath three or four children living. And his daughter Mary is married here and hath four children. Himself married again with the daughter of Mr. Brewster and hath one son living by her, but she is long since dead. And he is married again, and hath left this place long ago. So I account his increase to be eight beside his son in England.

Mr Fuller, his servant died at sea; and after his wife came over, he had two children by her; which are living and grown up to years. But he died some fifteen years ago. John Crakstone died in the first mortality; and about some five or six years after his son died, having lost himself in the woods, his feet became frozen, which put him into a fever, of which he died.

Captain Standish, his wife died in the first sickness; and he married again, and hath four sons living, and some are dead. (who died 3d of October 1655.)

Mr Martin, he, and all his, died in the first infection; not long after the arrival.

Mr. Molines, and his wife, his son, and his servant, died the first winter. Only his daughter Priscilla survived, and married with John Alden, who are both living, and have eleven children. And their eldest daughter is married and hath five children.

Mr White and his two servants died soon after their landing. His wife married with Mr Winslow (as is before noted). His two sons are married, and Resolved hath five children; Peregrine two, all living, so their increase are seven.

Mr Hopkins, and his wife are now both dead; but they lived above twenty years in this place, and had one son, and four daughters born here. Their son became a seaman, and died at Barbadoes, one daughter died here, and two are married, one of them hath two children, and one is yet to marry. So their increase, which still survive are five. But his son Giles is married, and hath four children. His daughter Constanta, is also married, and hath twelve children, all of them living, and one of them married.

Mr Richard Warren lived some four or five years, and had his wife come over to him. By whom he had two sons before he died; and one of them is married, and hath two children, so his increase is four. But he had five daughters more come over with his wife, who are all married; and living, and have many children.



John Billinton after he had been here ten years, was executed, for killing a man; and his eldest son died before him; but his second son is alive, and married, and hath eight children. Edward Tillie and his wife died soon after their arrival, and the girl Humility their cousin, was sent for into England and died there, But the youth Henry Samson is still living, and is married, and hath seven children.

John Tillie, and his wife both died a little after they came ashore, and their daughter Elizabeth married with John Howland, and hath issue as is before noted.

Francis Cooke is still living, a very old man, and hath seen his children's children, have children; after his wife came over (with other of his children) he hath three still living by her all married, and have five children, so their increase is eight. And his son John which came over with him, is married and hath four children living.

Thomas Rogers died in the first sickness. But his son Joseph is still living, and is married and hath six children. The rest of Thomas Rogers came over, and are married and have many children.

Thomas Tinker and his wife and son all died in the first sickness. And so did John Rigdale and his wife.

James Chilton, and his wife also died in the first infection, but their daughter Mary is still living, and hath nine children; and one daughter is married, and hath a child; so their increase is ten.

Edward Fuller, and his wife died soon after they came ashore; But their son Samuell is still living and married, and hath four children or more.

John Turner and his two sons all died in the first sickness; But he hath a daughter still living at Salem, well married and approved of.

Francis Eaton, his first wife died in the general sickness; and he married again, and his second wife died, and he married the third, and had by her three children, one of them is married, and hath a child; the others are living, but one of them is an idiot. His son Samuell, who came over a sucking child is also married and hath a child. He died about sixteen years ago.

Moyses Fletcher, Thomas Williams, Digorie Preist, John Goodman, Edmond Margeson, Richard Brittarige, Richard Clarke. All of these died soon after their arrival in the general sickness that befell. But Digorie Preist had his wife and children sent hither afterwards, she being Mr Allerton's sister. But the rest left no posterity here.

Richard Gardiner, became a seaman, and died in England, or at sea.

Gilbert Winslow, after divers years aboard here, returned into England and died there.

Peter Browne married twice; By his first wife he had two children, who are living and both of them married, and the one of them hath two children. By his second wife, he had two more; he died about sixteen years since.

Thomas English; and John Allerton, died in the general sickness. John Alden married with Priscilla, Mr. Mollines his daughter, and had issue by her as is before related.

Edward Doty and Edward Litster the servants of Mr Hopkins. Litster after he was at Liberty, went to Virginia and there died. But Edward Doty, by a second wife, hath seven children and both he and they are living.

Of these one hundred persons which came first over in this first ship together; the greater half died in the general mortality; and most of them in two or three months time. And for those which survived, though some were ancient and past procreation; and others left the place and country, yet of those few remaining are sprung up about one hundred and sixty persons in this thirty years. And are

now living in this present year 1650. Besides many of their children which are dead, and come not within this account. And of the old stock (of one and other) there are yet living this present year 1650 near thirty persons. Let the Lord have the praise; who is the High Preserver of men.

Two persons living that came over in the first ship 1620, this present year 1690. Resolved White and Mary Chusman the daughter of Mr. Alderton.

And John Cooke the son of Francis Cooke that came in the first ship is still living in this present year 1694.

And Mary Cushman is still living this present year 1698.\*

**Descent Proved from Fifty-Four "Mayflower" Passengers**—There are fifty-four "Mayflower" passengers from whom descent can be proved.

Some idea is obtained of what the "Mayflower" people did in the early days from references made by Bradford in his diary. It was on December 25, Christmas Day, in 1620, that they began to erect the first house, about twenty feet square, for their common use. The first public worship ashore was January 31, 1621. The first offense against the law of the settlers was committed March 24, 1621, by John Billington, adjudged to have his neck and heels tied together for contempt to obey a command of Captain Myles Standish. The second offense was on June 18, when Edward Doty and Edward Litster, servants of Mr. Hopkins, attempted to settle a dispute by a duel with sword and dagger. One was wounded in the hand and the other in the thigh. Both these offenders were pardoned by the governor, upon promise by the offenders to mend their conduct.

The first corn was planted April 5, under instructions by Squanto.

In November the "Fortune" arrived with thirty-five additional colonists, twenty-seven of them adult males. In that month the partnership with the London "Merchant Adventurers" terminated by buying them out.

In 1627 a trading post was established on Buzzards Bay.

In 1628 a representation system of government was adopted.

The New England Confederation began in 1647.

The Provincial Charter of Massachusetts, in October, 1691, put an end to separate existence of New England.

**Coming of Samoset and Squanto**—We have the record that there was no communication with the Indians until the middle of March when an Indian, simply clad, marched straight into the settlement and uttered the English word "Welcome." This was Samoset. He is supposed to have learned the word from English fishermen on the coast of Maine, also a sufficient number of other English words to enable him to inform the Pilgrims that the territory about them was

---

\* The last three paragraphs are not in the same handwriting as the rest and were added.



governed by Massasoit, chief sachem of the Wampanoags, and that his headquarters were thirty miles southwest, on Narragansett Bay.

After partaking liberally of the "strong water, biscuit, butter and cheese and pudding," which the Pilgrims furnished, Samoset went away, to return within two days with five companions, and, in the language of the present day "a good time was had by all," the Indians "did eat liberally of our English vituals. They sang and danced after their manner, like antics."

Later in the week, Samoset again appeared, bringing with him Squanto, who had been kidnapped and taken to England in 1614. He came back in 1619 and found himself the only survivor of his tribe. A pestilence had swept away the red men of the Plymouth territory and that of Cape Cod. Being without a tribe Squanto was much with the Pilgrim settlers and proved friendly and of great benefit to them. Samoset eventually returned to his tribe in Maine.

**Punishment for the First Offense in Plymouth**—The first offense in the Plymouth Colony which has come down in history was perpetrated by John Billington who offended Captain Myles Standish and was sentenced to "have his neck and heels tied together," but "he humbled himself and begged pardon" and the penalty was remitted.

Planting time came and Squanto instructed the Pilgrims how to plant corn with a dead herring buried frequently with the seed, in lieu of better fertilizer. The harvest was abundant and a day was set apart which became the first Thanksgiving Day, "now kept with gladness in the homes, and with worship in the churches, all the way from Plymouth to the Golden Gate." There was additional reason for Thanksgiving a few days later when the "Fortune" arrived, bringing Robert Cushman, thirty-five additional recruits and much needed supplies. Cushman also brought a new patent, the first granted by the council for New England, which superseded the unused patent issued in the name of Wincob. It conveyed a tract of land to be selected by the planters, a hundred acres for each emigrant, fifteen hundred acres for public buildings, and conferred self-governing powers.

About this time a new fort was completed on what is now called "Burial Hill." Bradford's "History of Plymouth" says of 1622: "This somer they builte a fort with good timber, both strong & comly, which was of good defence, made with a flate roof & batllments, on which their ordnance were mounted, and wher they kepthe constante watch, espetially in time of danger. It served them allso for a meeting house, and was fitted accordingly for that use." That was the same year of the coming of the profligates sent over by Thomas Weston, who had been one of the London Adventurers. They nearly ate the Pilgrims

out of house and home and were "so base in condition, for the most part, as in all appearance not fit for honest man's company." They later set up a separate colony at Wessagussett (Weymouth) but left their sick and dependents to be cared for at Plymouth. Later there was an alleged plot for their extermination by Indians whom they had offended and Myles Standish and eight men went to their aid. A battle was fought and both Englishmen and Indians killed.

**First Dairy Cattle Arrived on the "Charity"**—Other recruits arrived in the "Anne" and the "Little James," and later the "Charity." The latter brought a bull and three heifers, the first cattle to make the pilgrimage, although dogs, swine and poultry were earlier on the scene.

Already has been described the manner of punishment meted out for small offenses, when John Billington was sentenced to have his heels and neck tied together. A later offender was John Oldham, influenced by John Lyford, a Puritan preacher who came over in the "Charity," for the good of the souls of the Pilgrims, but later left Salem for the good of his own. The youthful Oldham, according to Bradford, was committed "till he was tamer." Then the Pilgrims appointed "a gard of musketeers, which he was to pass throw, and every one was ordered to give him a thump on the brich with the but end of his musket, and then was conveyed to the water side, wher a boat was ready to carry him away. Then they bid him goe and mande his maners."

There was much of the spirit of adventure and love of exploration among the Pilgrims. People of the present generation, with their policemen, burglar alarms, telephones, and all manner of provisions for protection, sometimes wonder why the Pilgrims, subjected as they were to many dangers, did not reside near one another and combine for self defense in a "safety first" program. Perhaps it was the pioneer spirit which induced even the passengers on the "Mayflower" to scatter, until many miles separated them. John Alden and Priscilla Mullens, after the romantic wooing which Longfellow describes at length in "The Courtship of Myles Standish," and their subsequent marriage, lived in Duxbury, ten or twelve miles from the fort. Captain Myles Standish lived at South Duxbury, halfway between the two. Bradford lived in Kingston. John Thompson who came over in the "Ann" and married the daughter of Francis Cooke, built the first frame house in Plymouth, at what is now called "Cold Spring," where the railroad bridge of the Plymouth and Middleboro Railroad crosses the main highway out of Plymouth toward the north, but later he took up lands in Halifax. His home in that town was thirteen miles from the Plymouth meeting-house, but his numerous family started before daylight on Sunday mornings and followed the Indian trails to and from



church, arriving home late the following night. So it was with many of the early settlers. They possessed much land at a time when land was of little value, but they worked desperately to possess it.

In 1628 the Council for New England granted lands in Maine to William Bradford, and the Pilgrims began a settlement on the Kennebec River, near the site of Augusta.

John Billington, guilty of the first offense under the Pilgrim law, whose penalty, that of having his heels and neck tied together, was remitted because it was the first offense, was, in September, 1630, executed for the murder of one Newcomen. The record is that Billington "shote him with a gune, whereof he died." It was decided, after a trial and the evidence reviewed by Governor Winthrop, that Billington "ought to die and the land be purged from blood."

George Bancroft says in his history: "The colonists of Plymouth had exercised self-government without the sanction of a royal patent. It was therefore in the virtues of the colonists themselves, that their institutions found a guaranty."

Bancroft also said: "Posterity repeats the consolation, offered from England to the Pilgrims in the season of their greatest sufferings, 'Let it not be grievous to you, that you have been instruments to break the ice for others. The honor shall be yours to the world's end'."

Bradford wrote: "Out of small beginnings, great things have been produced, and as one small candle may light a thousand, so the light here kindled hath shone to many, yea, in some sort, to our whole nation."

It is well to remember that the Pilgrims came to these shores seeking religious liberty for themselves. They had no convictions of a refuge for the oppressed of all lands, and they were not especially liberal in their treatment of those not of their communion, as was shown on numerous occasions in the early days, and is by no means uncommon among their descendants in these latter days. Yet they never entered into the excesses of religious persecution, and their record shines brightly in contrast with that of the Puritans of Massachusetts Bay.

**How Roger Williams and Other "Heretics" Were Dealt With—**  
Roger Williams, a young minister, arrived from England at Nantasket, a fugitive from English persecution. Evidently he thought the church in Boston would subscribe to his convictions concerning the sanctity of conscience. Finding his views unwelcome in Boston he became a teacher in Salem but was exiled from there and for a time sought refuge at Plymouth, where a kinder spirit prevailed and greater tolerance. It has been said of Williams that he was the first person in modern Christendom "to assert, in its plentitude, the doctrine of the liberty of conscience, the equality of opinions before the

law." John Quincy Adams said that Roger Williams was "a conscientious, contentious man."

It was while living at Plymouth that Williams wrote a tract, holding that a royal grant of lands must be defective unless the grantee "compound with the natives." For this offense he was cited before the Massachusetts General Court. This offense was treated with leniency but Williams soon made another assertion to the effect that "no one should be bound to worship or to maintain a worship against his own consent." James Bryce called him "the first apostle in New England of the theory of absolute freedom for the individual in matters of religion." Roger Williams, like William Lloyd Garrison in the days of abolition, "was in earnest, would not equivocate, would not excuse, would not retreat a single inch, and would be heard."

In October, 1635, it was voted by the General Court that "Whereas, Mr. Roger Williams, one of the elders of the church of Salem, hath broached & dyvulged dyvers newe & dangerous opinions against the autchoritie of magistraites, as also writt letters of defamation, both of the magistrates & churches here, and that before any conviction, & yet mainetaineth the same without retraction, it is therefore ordered that the said Mr. Williams shall departe out of his jurisdiction within sixe weeks nowe nexte ensueing, which is hee neglect to perform, it shalbe lawful for the gouvernor & two of the magistraites to send him to some place out of this jurisdiction, not to returne any more without licence from the Court."

Williams was in ill health and was granted permission to remain at Salem until spring. While Williams was living at Plymouth he became the friend of Massasoit and it is supposed that the sachem of the Wampanoags gave him aid and comfort which prevented him from perishing in the wilderness, the red men being, in that instance, more merciful than the white man.

In 1676, Governor Winthrop advised the court to recall Roger Williams but the request was tabled. Massachusetts made a conditional offer of temporary shelter for the exile during King Philip's War. Two hundred years later an attempt was made to reverse the act of banishment and even in 1900, when Roger Williams would have been within seven years of 300 years of age, had he lived as long as the controversy concerning him a bill was presented in the General Court for his recall, but the petitioners were given leave to withdraw on the ground that Roger Williams had not sanctioned the request and made no such proposition in his own behalf.

Roger Williams was by no means the only victim of Massachusetts religious intolerance upon whom were visited violent penalties. Something of the treatment accorded the Quakers appears in the history of



Barnstable County as well as in later pages of this volume devoted to the county of Plymouth.

There is a record of "A Quarter Court held at Boston on the First Day of the 10th Month, 1640," when "the jury found Hugh Buets to bee guilty of heresy, & that his person and errors are dangerous for infection of others. It was ordered that the said Hugh Buets should bee gone out of our jurisdiction by the 24th present upon the paine of death, & not to returne, upon paine of being hanged. The court granted the iury 12s for their servise."

**Punishment for Quakers**—The persecution of heretics, so called, including the Quakers, by Puritan Massachusetts is not pleasing reading and, inasmuch as it was not duplicated in this county, is only mentioned as showing something of the spirit of the times and the atmosphere which was somewhat better clarified in the vicinity of Plymouth. Henry C. Lea reminds us that in the tremendous struggle of the Reformation "each side was equally sure that it alone possessed the true faith, which was to be vindicated with fire and sword," and he declared that the Massachusetts law of 1658, under which Quakers were put to death on Boston Common, "was the inevitable result of the deplorable doctrine of exclusive salvation, which rendered the extinction of heresy a duty to God and Man," and so the Puritan authorities engaged in their orgies about the gallows-tree, ordered that the young daughter of Lawrence Southwick be sold into white slavery, flogged through the streets women bared to their waists and ordered Anne Austin and Mary Fisher stripped naked for examination.

In contrast to such miscarriages of common humanity in the name of religion, it is refreshing to chronicle some other happenings in Massachusetts during the same period of which every son and daughter of Massachusetts may always be proud, and in which the people of Plymouth County participated.

Militia companies began to train and orders were issued to fortify Castle Island in Boston Harbor and the heights of Charlestown and Dorchester against any unrighteous attacks. Thus work began one hundred and four years ahead of the necessity.

**Beginning of Public Schools**—On October 28, 1636, the Massachusetts General Court agreed to give four hundred pounds for a public school, "the first body in which the people, by their representatives, ever gave their own money to found a place of education." Remember, this was only sixteen years after the landing of the Pilgrims.

In 1638 John Harvard left his library and fortune for a school which took the name of Harvard College.

The same year the first fonts of type were sent to Boston and in

January, 1639, Stephen Daye printed on a printing press which he had brought from England "The Freeman's Oath," which was the first issue of the colonial press. This Massachusetts document, approved by the General Court, had as its closing obligation: "Moreover, I do solemnly bind myself, in the sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice touching any such matter of the state, wherein freemen are to deal, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce and tend to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons or favor of any man. So help me God, in the Lord, Jesus Christ." The oath made no allusion to England, king or parliament but the freemen swore "by the great and dreadful name of the ever-living God." The lack of allusion to England and its authorities was an absence which was conspicuous.

In 1642 there was a law that "none of the bretheren shall suffer so much barbarism in their families as not to teach their children and apprentices so much learning as may enable them perfectly to read the English tongue."

In 1647 it was law that "every township, after the Lord hath increased them to the number of fifty households, shall appoint one to teach all children to read and write, and when any town shall increase to the number of one hundred families, they shall set up a grammar school, the master thereof being able to instruct youth so far as they may be fitted for the university."

The accounts of Harvard College show that for many years bills for tuition were paid in produce, livestock, meat and articles of barter. In 1649, a student, Rawson by name, settled his bill with "an old cow," and the steward made separate credits for her hide and for her "Suet and inwards."

In 1644, the Massachusetts General Court made provision for "the Indians residing in the several shires instructed in the knowledge and worship of God." John Eliot, "the Indian apostle," in 1646, began to preach to the Indians in their own tongue. Eliot's Indian translation of the Bible was the first Bible printed in the New World, at Cambridge, in 1663.

Rough and "Godless" as the sea captains were in those days, according to report, there was not a sea captain in the port of Boston who would turn slave dealer and carry out the order of the General Court in 1659, to sell the children of Lawrence Southwick at Virginia or Barbadoes to answer fines imposed upon them for being Quakers.

Pile my ship with bars of silver—pack with coins of Spanish Gold,  
From keel-piece up to deck-plank, the roomage of her hold,  
By the living God who made me!—I would sooner in your bay  
Sink ship and crew and cargo, than bear this child away!



## CHAPTER IV

### INDIAN NAMES IN PLYMOUTH COUNTY.

**Pilgrims Landed at Accomac or Patuxet, Sailing Past Saquish Which Means "Plenty of Clams"—White Island Pond in Those Days Was Called Sanqutagnappiepanquash—Lord's Prayer in the Indian Language and Its Literal Interpretation—Days When Cod-Fishing Was Leading Industry of Two Counties—Schools Began in Marshfield—Historic Trees Still Defying the East Winds.**

When the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth it was a wilderness from the European standpoint, with plenty of "free raw material" at hand but nothing finished. Yet, when Captain Myles Standish and his friend, John Alden, Mary Chilton, the first to step on Plymouth Rock, we are told, and the others walked up the street which was afterward called Leyden, the town had a name, the streets were named, the hills and rivers and lakes and all about them had long since had conferred upon them names, more euphonious, more characteristic of natural descriptions, having more originality and signification than most of the names by which they have since been called—except in the rare instances in which the English and late comers have let the names remain as they were.

The Pilgrims landed at Accomac, the Indian name for Plymouth, which means "land on the other side, or beyond the water," as it was from Provincetown. The Indians had no written language and it was convenient, if not necessary, to have names for the places which would be sufficiently descriptive to act as guides to those who traversed the narrow trails on their journeys. This characteristic abounds as to names of places. Where this signification did not so much matter, the Indian occasionally used his imagination, of which he possessed a great deal. To him the constellation of Orion above his head was Shwishacuttowwaoug, "the wigwam of three fires." The name for the sunset was Wayont, "when he lost his way." It is easy to use a little of our own imagination and see why the name appealed to the red man.

The town of Carver the English named for the first governor of the colony, John Carver, who was elected the same day the Compact was signed on the "Mayflower," but the locality had long been known to the Indians as Mohootset, "the place of the owl." Abington was called Manamooskeagin because it was the place of "much or many beavers." There is a stream which separates that town from Brockton, called Beaver Brook, so in this instance the English observed

the same preponderance of busy beavers as had been noted by the aborigines. Bridgewater was Saughtuckquett, "at the mouth of the stream," which surely means as much as the English name and identifies it while all that the name "Bridgewater" does is to cause people to ask why and receive no satisfactory answer.

The Indians were familiar with Duxbury as a good fishing location, so they called it Namaskeeset, "at the small fishing place." Middleborough was a better fishing place and so it was called "Namasket," "at the fishing place," the limiting adjective disappearing in the fewer number of syllables. Halifax and Hanson were "Monponsett," "near the deep pond." The twin lakes in Halifax today bear that name. Plympton was to the Indians "Winnetuxet," "near the good stream," and that stream is now called Winnetuxet, the spelling varying at different times as it has appeared in history, but it is still a good stream from the point of view of followers of Izaak Walton. Hull was sometimes called Passataquack, "at the divided stream," more frequently as "Nantasket," "place of low-ebb tide."

King Philip was familiar with the territory which we call Lakeville, but a place by that name would not carry a sufficient description to be useful in naming it as a rendezvous. There are too many lakes in the territory once occupied by the Wampanoags, so, to him, Lakeville was "Assawampsett," "at the half-way rock." To the Indians, the distinguishing mark of Marshfield was the large rock on the shore which we call Brant Rock, called by them Sagoquash, "hard rock." Perhaps a more descriptive name was Missaukatucket, "at the large mouth of the river." Mattapoissett, still retaining its Indian name, means "a sitting down or resting place after portage."

The Indian Samoset told the Pilgrims that the name for Plymouth was Patuxet, "at the little falls." Some historians say the early name for Plymouth was Umpame but do not tell why and others use the name Appaum and leave the reader equally in the dark. Rochester was called Sippican, because it was situated on "a long river." Scituate was Satuit, "cold brook," Wareham was Agawaam, "unloading place for fish," or, sometimes, Wewewantett, "crooked river."

There is an Indian name in West Bridgewater which still serves for the stream which courses through that town to the Taunton River and thence to the sea. It is called Nuncketettest, to use the Indian spelling usually approved, but usually spelled a little easier for the English scholar. By this name West Bridgewater was known to the Wampanoags but no one seems to be sure what the name conveyed to them.

To return to Plymouth, the name of Accomac, already referred to,



was known in the days of Captain John Smith but, so far as known, it was a name given to the site by those who lived farther north, and not by those who occupied it. By the latter it was called Patuxet, as Samoset said. In "Mourt's Relation" we are told: "On the sixteenth of March, 1621, Samoset suddenly appeared at Plymouth and greeted our Pilgrim Fathers with the words, 'Welcome, Englishmen.' He told us the place where we now live is called Patuxet."

Again referring to the name Agawam, the purchase of the plantation of Agawam from the Indians in 1666, included a part of the town of Wareham, "unloading place for fish." Lemoine, in Montagnaise Dictionary of his compilation, gives the definition of Agwanus as "an unloading place." This is supposed to have been the same word although the spelling is different, as was the case with most words and names in that period, when Queen Elizabeth and those after her period themselves upon not being held down to any arbitrary way of spelling. One who has attempted to follow some of the family names of the first-comers easily comes to that conclusion. Take the Tomsons, for instance, and juggle the spelling as you will, with or without an *h* or *p*, one used and the other unused, either way, or back to the way in which John Tomson signed his will (as last given) and you are talking about the same family.

The Manomet Hills, the southern part of Plymouth, bring back a name which is found in Bradford's "History." The following is an extract from Bradford's diary, July, 1621: "One John Billington lost himselfe in ye woods and wandered up and downe some five days. At length he light on an Indian plantation 20 miles south of this place, called Manamet." The name is spelled slightly different today and is applied to the hills, a few miles south of the center of Plymouth and not twenty miles. It is possible that the place now called Monument is what Bradford referred to in his diary and both names have the same origin, which one writer believes to be the Indian word Mainayeumauet, a free translation of which, according to Lincoln Newton Kinnicutt, would be "The burden pathway." He believes this refers to the Monument River, across which the Pilgrims erected a rude bridge about 1627.

A tract of land of about four acres at the top of Watson's Hill in Plymouth is still referred to as Hobbamak's Ground. This was a grant to Hobbamak, a friendly Indian who frequently served the Pilgrims as an interpreter. Squanto was another, and of him it is said that Caunbitant, one of the chiefs, made the remark: "If he were dead the English had lost their tongue."

South Pond, in Plymouth, was known to the Indians as Kamesit, also the surrounding territory.

According to an Indian deed of 1664, there was an area in the southeastern part of Plymouth called Kawamasuhkakamid, which Hon. Nathaniel Freeman in 1792 suggested was probably the vicinity of Herring Pond.

Another Indian deed, given in 1678, uses the name Kowpiscowonkonnnett as a boundary. It signifies a place where squaws and papooses were secreted in time of danger, presumably a swamp near Bartlett's Marsh in Plymouth and Wareham.

Plymouth County is the cranberry-producing county of the world, exceeding Barnstable County in that line, although Cape Cod and cranberries are synonymous in the public mind, and Barnstable, rather than Plymouth County is Cape Cod. Evidently cranberry growing, in their wild state, was something of sufficient importance in the time of the Indians to be the distinguishing sign of an area in the vicinity of Herring Pond in Plymouth because the Wampanoags gave it the name of Massassoomineuk, which means "much cranberries."

Near Agawam River or Red Brook there was a vicinity called in an Indian deed recorded in Volume 1, on Page 231 of Plymouth Colony records, Meshmuskuchtekutt which is interpreted as "at the great grass brook," evidently "great grass" being the name for bulrushes for which the Indians had no word in their language.

The Massachusetts Historical Society has an Indian name for a locality in the southeastern part of Plymouth, near the ocean, called Monechchan, sometimes called Breakheart Hill in English but the Indian signification of Monechchan is "place of darkness, or black bank." This name appears in a deed given in 1674. Paukopunnakuk was another name for Breakheart Hill, "where the path is narrow."

According to Bradford's "History" there was a path from Naumskachett to Manamoyack Bay, a distance of two miles, and it was on this path that Squanto died. The latter word means "the path where they carry on their shoulders," referring doubtless to canoes and other burdens.

There is a swamp near Agawam River or Red Brook, referred to in Indian deeds and other records by both the names Muchquachema and Mauthquohkoma. It is believed these words meant to the Indians "where it is difficult to paddle a canoe." Longfellow uses the name chemaun as the word for canoe in his poem "Hiawatha." The Indians had a verb moosqhean which means "it troubles."

In the northeastern part of Plymouth there are a number of hills and a pond, the latter being called "Clear Pond." The former name, Narragansett Pond, was given that body of water because on its shores was fought a battle between the Narragansett Indians and the Pokonokets. A large number of the Narragansetts were killed and their



bodies thrown into this pond. The Narragansetts were so called because they at one time occupied the territory about Point Judith and the name means "people of the point."

Saquish, the point of land past which the Pilgrims sailed in the "Mayflower" from Provincetown to Plymouth, is interpreted by some writers as "plenty of clams." William T. Davis in many of his historical writings gives the meaning as "small creek." It is said the present-day Saquish was once a small island, with a small creek between it and the long arm of Plymouth Beach. The Indian word sohquussuog means "they squirt," a noticeable characteristic of a clam.

**White Island Pond in Those Days Was Called Sanqutagnappiepanquash**—There is an Indian deed in the Plymouth Colony Records on Page 231 of Volume 1 which gives as a part of the boundary of the land conveyed "to a pond called Sanqutagnappiepanquash." This was probably White Island Pond in Plymouth. It is said to mean "the fording place where the stream comes out of the ponds," and this might be a description of that shallow pond.

Massasoit was sachem at the time the Pilgrims landed, and for many later years of the Wampanoags. This was according to Drake the tribe of third importance among the Indians of New England at that time. The name means "where the daylight is, or the Eastern God," and was probably given to the Indians by those who lived farther west.

Other Indian names of places in Plymouth County, with their interpretations, with no attempt to give the locations, include Assinippi, "rocky water;" Cochesett, "place of small pine trees;" Massachusetts, "at or about the great hill;" Massaugatucket River, Marshfield, "great outlet of tidal water;" Titicut (North Middleborough), "at the great river;" Wecketuket brook, flows into Jones River, Kingston, "little wading place;" Asnemsussett, in Middleborough, "rapid brook which flows over stones;" Chippopoquet, now Pocksha Pond in Lakeville, "the pond that is separated from another;" Muttock, in Middleborough, "a swift river running between hills;" Tihonet, that small part of Plymouth which, in 1827, was annexed to Wareham, "place where cranes are plenty."

One might go on interminably with these Indian place names and find the spelling different, as they are given by different writers and as they are spelled today, where the original names are supposed to be still in use. There has been no attempt to give anything like an exhaustive list of these names, in Plymouth County, but the few mentioned serve to suggest, at least, the impossibility of the old-time spelling enabling the inhabitants of the present day to pronounce some of them, or agree upon their pronunciation, and show why the spelling

employed today has been simplified. Indian names furnish an interesting study and there are several books which have been produced, with great labor and after faithful research, invaluable for that purpose.

**Lord's Prayer in the Indian Language and Its Literal Interpretation**—Aside from the words which were used as names of places, it is valuable to furnish something in the dialect of the Indians who occupied Plymouth County in the days of the "First comers," (the Wampanoags) with which we are supposed to be familiar. Eliot's "Indian Bible" printed the Lord's Prayer in Wampanoag as follows:

Nooshun kasukqut quttianatamunach koosewuonk. Peyaumooouto peyaumoooutch kukketaffootamoonk kuttentamoonk ne n nach ohkeit neane kesukqut. Nummeet-sunogash asceksukokish assamainnean yeuyeu kesukok. Kah ahkuoantamaunnean nummatcheseongash neane matchenenukqueagig nutaquontamounnonog. Ahquc sagkompagunnaunnean en gutchhuaouganit, webe pohquokwussinnean wutch matchitut. Newutche kutahtaunnketassootamoonk, kah menunkesuonk, kah sohsumoonk mickeme, Amen.

Lest anyone should be unable to translate this literally, it is as follows:

Father, ours above in Heaven. Admired in highest manner be Thy name. Like done thy will on earth as like in Heaven. Let us be forgiven evil doings of ours, as we would forgive wrong doers to us. Not guide us into snares, but help us to escape from evil. Thine Thy Powerful kingdom, thine the strength, thine the greatest glory. Always, always we wish so.

**Days When Cod-Fishing Was Leading Industry of Two Counties—**It is interesting to find that the earliest English name attached to the coast of Massachusetts should later describe one of the chief industries from which can directly be traced the support of the earliest schools, in a country and in a particular section of that country, whose name has been synonymous with culture and learning.

Concerning cod fish Morton wrote as follows: "The coast aboundeth with such multitudes of Codd, that the inhabitants of New England doe dunge their grounds with Codd; and it is a commodity better than the golden mines of the Spanish Indies."

There was a time when the principal industry of Plymouth and Barnstable counties in Massachusetts was cod-fishing. The first English navigator to land on these shores in an attempt to found an English colony, was Bartholomew Gosnold and he it was who gave the name to Cape Cod, after having been delighted and surprised at the large number of cod fish which his men took from Cape Cod Bay in a time of necessity. Someone, so far back in the history of Massachusetts that no one knows who it was or when it was, caused to be placed in the primitive House of Assembly in Boston the figure of a cod fish.



The House of Assembly was burned December 9, 1747, and presumably the cod fish with it. The Old State House, standing today at the head of State Street in Boston, was erected the following year. How long after the successor to the original cod fish was given a place of honor in that building, no one knows, but there was a bill presented in 1773, by Thomas Crafts, Jr., to the Province of Massachusetts Bay, calling for 15 Shillings "for painting cod fish." Later it disappeared but the following entry appears in the Journal of the House of Representatives of Wednesday, March 17, 1784:

"Mr. Rowe moved the House that leave might be given to hang up the representation of a Cod Fish in the room where the House sit, as a memorial of the importance of the Cod-Fishery to the welfare of this Commonwealth, as had been usual formerly. The said motion having been seconded, the question was put, and leave given for the purpose aforesaid."

Ever since that time, and no one knows how long before, such an emblem has been suspended above the heads of the representatives of the People in the General Court of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. "The lessons that may be learned of it are nobler than any to be drawn from what is only beautiful; for this sedate and solitary fish is instinct with memories and prophecy, like an oracle. It swims symbolic in that wider sea whose confines are the limits set to the activities of human thought. It typifies to the citizens of the Commonwealth and of the world the founding of a State. It commemorates Democracy. It celebrates the rise of free institutions. It emphasizes progress. It epitomizes Massachusetts."

John Rowe, maker of the motion quoted above, is said to have been the instigator of the famous "Boston Tea party." In an address at the Old South Church he said: "Who knows how tea will mingle with salt water?"

Thirty years ago a writer truly said: "If Massachusetts ever had a tutelary genius among the brute creation it was the cod fish.

"They were to us what wool was to England or tobacco to Virginia,—the great staple which became the basis of power and wealth," said Adams, concerning the cod fish.

The first product of American industry exported from Massachusetts was a cargo of cod fish.

When the present State House was erected there was a question whether the historic cod fish should have a place in the new capitol. Representative Richard W. Irwin of Northampton, the town from which President Calvin Coolidge went to become president of the United States, closed a notable address as follows:

Is this emblem said to be too common and plain to accord with the painted splendors of this place? It is no more common, simple and plain than the fathers who founded our State. It tells how the lowliest may rise and win and rule; how the fishermen may be the peer of the marshals of France and the admirals of England. Are there those who laugh at it? It speaks of pathetic deaths for many years in lowly but honorable livelihood. Do you say it is unimportant? The ablest of statesmen have contended about it at the council of kings. Do you cavil or deride it? It tells you of victories on sea and land which history crowns with lustrous and unfading glory, which our proud State tells over as among her priceless jewels, which children and children yet unborn shall learn and tell to others, with heightening cheeks and brightened eyes.

Let us not say—we, sons of the weaver, the carpenter and the fishermen—that the day of small things is to be despised; that the lowly and plain condition of our fathers is to be forgotten or that anything for which they cared or which they preferred is not worthy of us. Let us take it in reverence and honor, and place it on high as one of the proudest decorations of this great hall; and let it remain there so long as this State House shall stand, a memorial of the Pilgrim, his privations and simplicity; an emblem significant of the hardiness, courage and faith of those who dare and defy the seas, and daily telling of the great and surpassing glories of Massachusetts and her sons.

A colonial stamp in 1775 figured a cod as “the staple of Massachusetts.”

**Schools Began in Marshfield**—It is believed that to Marshfield belongs the honor and distinction of taking the first steps in the Plymouth Colony toward a public school. Without the coercion of colonial law, impelled by no other motive than a desire for “further light” for the new generation and those yet to come, under date of August, 1645, the records of the town of Marshfield contain the following:

On motion being made for one to teach school, we, whose names are under-written, are willing to pay yearly, besides paying for our children we shall send, vis.:

	s.	d.
Edward Winslow	20	0
Thomas Bourne	10	0
John Bourne	10	0
Robert Carver	10	0
Thomas Chillingsworth	10	0
John Russell	5	0
Edward Buckley	13	4
Robert Waterman	10	0
Kenelm Winslow	10	0
Joseph <i>Beadle</i>	—	—
Josiah <i>Winslow</i>	10	0
Edward <i>Bumpus</i>	—	—

The last names of the final three and the sums subscribed by Joseph and Edward are illegible in the town records but are given in italics as they are believed to be.

There was a Plymouth Colonial law passed in 1670 which provided



"all such profits as may or shall accrue annually to the colony from fishing with nets or seines at Cape Cod for mackerel, bass or herring, to be improved for and towards a free school in some town in this jurisdiction, for the training up of youth in literature for the good and benefit of posterity, provided a beginning were made within one year after the said grant." The school was soon established at Plymouth.

In 1677 Duxbury had a grammar school kept by Ichabod Wiswell, which he continued till 1700.

Most of the early schools were movable, having sessions in one part of the town for a while and then moving to another part, so the same children would not always have the long or the short distances to walk, according to the location of their homes. Duxbury in 1741, voted that their "school should be kept in course as to the quarterly placing of it, to go round with the sun as it has been kept ever since the said town were provided with a grammar school, till two full years were completed and expired, and then to begin in that part of the town that they ordered that it should first be kept, when the said town divided themselves into four parts concerning their school." Later in the same year Duxbury voted "that the said town shall continue to stand divided into four parts or quarters . . . for the term of twenty years next ensuing." It was also voted: "That the said school shall be a free school for the whole town, for any of the said inhabitants to send their children into any of the above-mentioned quarters where the school may be kept."

In 1716, Plymouth voted that: "Three free schools be set up and erected in the town, one at each end to teach and instruct in reading and writing, and one to be kept in the middle of the town to be a grammar school . . . and the said schools shall be for the term of five years."

The three-school plan was not popular, however, and later a town meeting discussed the school question with such confusion that it was impossible to know how the individuals voted by the usual methods; so all went out of the building and re-entered, the clerk recording as each one came in whether he was in favor of one or three schools. The majority favored one school and the meeting broke up in confusion. At an adjourned meeting a grammar school was established in the middle of the town and it was voted: "that each end of the town that for two years past had a woman's school among them, be allowed to deduct out of the town's treasury what they are annually voted or taxed for the grammar school, and no more, towards maintaining a school among themselves."

As a result of this vote the north part of the town applied for permission to be incorporated into a separate town, which was granted, and Kingston was formed.

In 1721, Cohasset, then a part of Hingham, requested its share of the school tax, and there is a record that a committee of three was chosen by that precinct "to take the money from the town of Hingham and dispose of it as followeth; one-third part of it to be paid to a school dame for teaching the children to read; and two-thirds of money to be disposed of to teach the children to write and cipher." Cohasset and Hingham precincts made amicable agreements, much more so than different villages of other towns, and Cohasset did not become a separate town until 1773.

Schoolmaster material was decidedly lacking in the early days, otherwise, perhaps, the school movement would have received an earlier start. Bradford, in his "History," written as early as 1624, said: "Indeed we have no common school for want of a fit person or hitherto means to maintain one." Most of the early schoolmasters were clergymen who took the young men into their homes and fitted them for Harvard College which had been established in 1635. Some towns, in which someone other than a clergyman was considered sufficiently well-educated to instruct the youth, still required the approval of the clergyman before engaging a schoolmaster. This was the case in Boston.

The pay of the schoolmasters was small because the towns were unable to give adequate compensation. They occupied places of high regard in the community, received the best sittings in the churches, were often exempted from military duties, had their taxes remitted and sometimes received grants of town lands, the same as the clergy. Most of them were graduates of Harvard College. Plymouth in the hundred years ending 1771 had twenty-eight schoolmasters and all but two were Harvard graduates. The selectmen were often empowered to engage a schoolmaster "as cheap as they can." In 1690, the town of Hingham so instructed its selectmen and added: "Provided they shall hire a single man and not a man that hath a family."

Before the Revolutionary War the average schoolmaster received the equivalent of one dollar and a half a week in addition to his board. In Milton in 1702, a schoolmaster was engaged to set copy for writing, "and the same selectmen do engage in behalf of the town, that he shall be paid for so doing, one penny for each copy in quarto, he bringing his account to the selectmen."

The first schoolhouse in Plymouth was built by private subscription in 1705 and purchased from the proprietors the following year by vote of the town.



Girls were not admitted to the schools as a rule, unless for short lengths of time, but in Hingham, in 1761, it was voted to build a schoolhouse for a female school. Plymouth, in 1793, accepted a report from a committee in favor of a female school.

At Hanover it is stated that "Girls carried their samplers to be wrought and their knitting and sewing. It sometimes taxed the patience of our worthy pedagogues severely to have the little misses come up and ask questions about their knitting. Luke Stetson, it is said, told one of his pupils to "widen, widen, until she had knit her stocking as wide as a meal bag." Private schools for girls were commonly advertised.

**Historic Trees Still Defying the East Winds**—The early settlers missed the familiar flowering trees that make the countryside of England beautiful in springtime, but, perhaps no other tree appealed to the Englishmen more than the oak, and those they found here in abundance. As soon as there was communication between the old country and the new, except for barest necessities, seedlings and cuttings were brought over to this country, and some of them took root as sturdily as the Pilgrims themselves. The Indians made their canoe paddles from the ash tree, and even today oars are made of this tough, elastic wood. Plymouth County is noted for its magnificent elms, which live to a great age of graceful beauty.

Since the oldest living thing in the world is said to be a tree and the literature which has been written concerning trees has included prose and poetry of the gayest and gravest, the simplest and most profound, it is thought fitting not to leave out of the history of Plymouth and Barnstable counties some reference to remarkable trees which still exist in several of the towns and have a story connected with them well worth considering.

What is more beautiful than an apple tree in full bloom? There is in Marshfield, on the estate of Mr. George Livermore, an apple tree which has been buffeted by the east winds from the Atlantic Ocean more than one hundred years. Its trunk is fourteen and one-half feet in circumference and its branches spread thirty feet on every side. It was planted by Stephen Sherman who was a resident of Marshfield nearly ninety years. It is described in a book entitled "The Historic Trees of Massachusetts," written by James Raymond Simmons. Some of the other trees mentioned in this chapter are also mentioned in that interesting book which was dedicated to the late Judge Robert Orr Harris of East Bridgewater and Brockton.

The beautiful old apple tree in Marshfield has been the delight of generations when it has appeared in full bloom in the early summer,

decked out like a bride for her bridegroom. Bearing the sweet-scented veil of June, with some of its branches nearly six feet in girth, it has surely grown old gracefully. To gaze upon its beauties one is reminded of how persistently Nature, by beauty, scent and fruit, has striven to force upon the people of New England the fact that nowhere in the world do the soil, air and sunshine conspire more successfully to produce this pomonological gift at its best.

In Pembroke on the brow of a hill commanding a magnificent view of the Herring Brook which figures so prominently in the history of that town, is the estate of Deacon Seth Whitman. In front of the old manison is a row of buttonwoods, planted by Joanna, the bride of Thomas Turner, on her wedding day in 1765. The estate had been transferred to Thomas Turner just before his marriage to Joanna, the eldest daughter of Captain Nathaniel Phillips of Marshfield. These names figure prominently and romantically in the history of Plymouth County towns and will again be referred to with stories of scenes enacted when the graceful buttonwoods were first climbing toward the skies, dreaming of the hoary beauty which they attained and have retained for a century.

On the shore of Oldham Pond in Pembroke are remnants of a magnificent grove of white pines, on the Indian Field where John Oldham, the miller, and his brother, General Oldham, sowed the first seeds from pine cones. The mighty survivors and their descendants still whisper to the breeze the legends of the Indian ponds and the early encounters in this sylvan scene, "a woody theatre of stateliest view."

In the earliest days of the Old Colony two buttonwood trees stood like sentinels in front of the tavern in Halifax kept by Daniel Dunbar, the Tory. Within that historic house many famous persons enjoyed the hospitality of the times. The sign of the tavern stood beneath the shade of these trees which towered to a height of a full hundred feet above the lawn in the days, a generation ago, when the old tavern and the trees simultaneously gave way to modern changes. The trees were of goodly size when the late Ira L. Sturtevant, a respected citizen of Halifax and the county of Plymouth, went there to live at the age of eight years and they were there seventy-five years later when he sold the house and farm to J. Levering Jones of Philadelphia, whose boyhood was spent within sight of the trees from the opposite side of the highway.

The beautiful Emily Marshall was married in the old tavern and came forth a bride to enjoy the cooling shade of the twin buttonwoods on her wedding day. Beneath these trees the people of Halifax gathered one night and informed the Tory inn-keeper that his days in Halifax were ended, and showed him where to sign his name after he had written a confession in his own hand-writing of his Tory convictions and



attempts to injure the chances of the colonists for independence.

These buttonwoods were held in great esteem by the dignified, scholarly gentleman who owned the place threescore years and ten. Great was his indignation when a passing bill poster would occasionally tack an auction poster or other advertisement upon one of them. Their color and mottled effect stood out conspicuously against the background and they were plainly visible as landmarks from a long distance.

Beneath the lordly white pine trees which form Island Grove in Abington the abolitionists were wont to gather in the days previous to the Civil War. Beneath the same trees sleep early residents of the town at the time of the Revolution, as one part of the grove was a private burial ground. Floating from one of the graves, marked by a dark headstone bearing a date shortly after the Revolution, is one of the flags which mark the resting place of a soldier. A huge boulder marks the spot where the abolitionists were accustomed to stand when they instructed their hearers in the cause which at that time was most unpopular, in a spot where they could not be surprised or interrupted by those not yet converted to the cause of liberty. The inscription on this boulder reads:

MEETINGS IN THE CAUSE OF ABOLITION  
OF SLAVERY WERE HELD IN THIS GROVE  
YEARLY FROM 1846 TO 1865. ON THIS SPOT  
WILLIAM LLOYD GARRISON  
WENDELL PHILLIPS, EDMUND QUINCY,  
THEO PARKER, FRANCIS JACKSON,  
PARKER PILLSBURY, GEORGE THOMPSON,  
ABBY KELLY FOSTER, LUCY STONE,  
AND OTHERS ADDRESSED THE PEOPLE.  
SUFFERING ALL MANNER OF ABUSE  
THE ABOLITIONISTS STOOD STEADFAST UNTIL  
THE SLAVE WAS MADE FREE.

Reader, take heed, stand for the right,  
though power and wealth and all your  
fellows turn against you and persecute you.

I am in earnest—I will not equivocate  
I will not excuse—I will not retreat  
A single inch — and I will be heard.

Garrison.

ERECTED BY AN ABINGTON SOLDIER  
WHO SERVED AND WAS WOUNDED  
IN THE WAR WHICH ENDED SLAVERY

This memorial was presented by Moses N. Arnold, a shoe manufacturer of Abington who was also an Abington soldier, as stated on the boulder.

Abington Grove sheltered the abolitionists. It was also filled with the voice of Daniel Webster on at least one occasion. The people of Abington have gathered in the grove on occasions such as anniversaries, observances of patriotic holidays, a celebration in 1862 in commemoration of the incorporation of the town. In 1865 there was a reception to the returned soldiers and sailors of Abington.

A beautiful memorial bridge and gateway leading to the grove from the bridge approach were dedicated on June 10, 1912, on the occasion of the two hundredth anniversary of the founding of the town.

The wonderful old pines forming the grove tower aloft in solemn majesty, swaying in the gentle breezes above the graves of the dead who passed away at the time of the struggle for freedom from Old World Tyranny, whispering over the spot historic by reason of the eloquency of Phillips, Garrison, Thompson and others when the idea of liberty was new and Garrison had had a rope placed around his neck and was dragged through the street in Boston, Phillips had been ostracized by his wealthy, aristocratic family, and Thompson had a price upon his head. Some of the trees look unbelievably old. They have been dedicated as a public shelter for gatherings for all worthy public purposes. "The groves were God's first temples" and this one in Abington has been a worthy successor.

Go to historic Plymouth and travel in the footsteps of Captain Myles Standish, Governor Bradford and those other worthies of the early seventeenth century and you will, perhaps, have pointed out to you eight linden trees, standing in a row, beautiful to behold. At either end of the group is an inscription:

LINDEN TREES  
PLANTED BY  
COL. GEORGE WATSON  
1760

Your first reaction, after admiring the graceful beauty of the Plymouth Lindens, is to know who was Colonel George Watson. You may be taken to his grave and find on his tombstone this epitaph:

With honest fame and sober plenty crowned,  
He lived and spread his cheering influence round.

Some of his influence has been spread around ever since his death at the age of eighty-three, more than one hundred and twenty-six years ago, by the lindens which he imported from London. He planted them in the garden behind the house which he built about 1745 on the site of the Hathaway house. Some of the original trees remain. Others, taken from them were set out fifteen years after



Captain Cameron, a Boston sea-captain, delivered the originals to Colonel Watson.

There is a wide-spreading linden on Cole's Hill, towering over Plymouth Rock, which probably sprang from one of the original tree immigrants. This tree has a romance connected with it which is related by William T. Davis in his "Memoirs of an Octogenarian" as follows: "The tree was planted by a youthful couple as a memorial of their engagement, and when not long afterwards, in 1809, the engagement was discontinued, and the memorial was no longer prized by the lady in whose garden it had been planted, she one day pulled it up and threw it into the street. My father, who happened to be passing at the time, picked it up and planted it where it now stands. He lived in the house now known as the Plymouth Rock House, where he died in 1824, and under his careful nursing it survived its treatment, and has grown into the beautiful tree, now blessing so many with its grateful shade."

Thomas Davis, the great-grandfather of the William T. Davis already mentioned, planted the fine old elms in Town Square, Plymouth.

There is a handsome old English oak near the Jackson homestead, formerly Governor Winslow's house. In this house Lydia Jackson, the wife of Ralph Waldo Emerson, was born, and played in the shade of this elm.

There is a lone elm of ancient history in front of the courthouse as stately and uncompromising as a constant witness in the atmosphere of the palace of justice should be. There is another huge elm on North Street, near the lindens, which defies the blasts of the long stretch across the ocean, growing more sturdy on the side facing the ocean, as do all the elms on the seaboard.

There are some magnificent linden trees on Linden Street in Kingston, in front of the historic Sever House, one of the oldest houses in the old town. The lindens were brought over from Europe with some others which were planted on the grounds of the Winslow House at Marshfield, and those already referred to in Plymouth. The families of the three towns are closely related by blood and marriage.

The Sever House was built about 1760 by "Squire" William Sever, who was prominent in both town and national affairs. He was a member of the Provincial Congress, was president of the Council in 1779 and acting governor. He was the first president of the Plymouth Savings Bank. Martha Sever, a member of the family, served as a nurse in the Civil War. Martha Sever Post, No. 154, Department of Massachusetts, Grand Army of the Republic, is named in her honor. She is the only woman for whom a Grand Army post is named. The post is still in existence in Kingston, her native town, and continues

its regular meetings, although its membership consists of only two comrades.

Among the historic trees in Plymouth County which have an inscription upon them, testifying to their historic associations, is the Cushing elm in Hingham, near the Cohasset line. Hingham Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, placed upon this tree the following:

UNDER THIS TREE IN 1775  
PASTOR JOHN BROWN PREACHED  
TO A COMPANY OF COHASSET SOLDIERS  
OF COL. GREATON'S REGIMENT WHICH  
SERVED IN THE SIEGE OF BOSTON

Colonel Greaton was in command of colonial forces at Roxbury in 1775. Pastor John Brown was pastor of the Second Parish in Hingham. He was a Harvard graduate and was ordained pastor of the Hingham church September 2, 1747. He died in 1791 at the age of sixty-seven years.

The Cushing elm stands on the opposite side of the highway, leading from Cohasset to Plymouth and the Cape, from the old colonial mansion owned by Samuel Cushing. The tree was planted by his ancestor, Stephen Cushing, in 1729. The house itself had been built in 1678 by his father, Peter Cushing. The time has nearly come for the tree to observe its two hundredth birthday and the suggestion is made that the Daughters of the American Revolution, the organization which gave its tablets and inscriptions observe the day with appropriate exercises as an example to other organizations which might mark historic trees still standing, neglected and viewed with indifference. The tree is a living monument to the patriotic men of Cohasset and Hingham. It has immense roots extending three or four feet above the surface of the ground, which have helped brace it against the winds of two centuries. The girth of the tree, above the roots is seventeen feet, and the spread of the branches over one hundred feet.

In the center of the historic training ground for the soldiers who went from Middleborough and Lakeville in the Civil War stands a group of trees known as the Lakeville Elms. They are wine glass elms, seventy-five feet apart, and stand as two sentinels in a vast expanse of field having no other trees to relieve the scene.



## CHAPTER V

### CONFEDERATION, SLAVERY AND PHILIP'S WAR.

**United Colonies of New England Had Eight Towns and 3,000 Inhabitants—Massachusetts' Attitude Toward Slavery Unique—Unwritten Romance of "The Underground Railroad"—Opening of King Philip's War a Decade Before Plymouth County Was So Designated—Arrest of Alexander at Monponsett and His Subsequent Death Aroused Hatred of Metacomet or Philip—Conferences With the Indians—Murder of Sassamon and What Colonel Church Learned at a Dance—Philip An Elusive Warrior Who Never Surrendered—His Widow and Son Sold Into Slavery—Statement by Indian Princess Now Living—Witchcraft.**

For twelve years following the death of John Carver, the governor had been William Bradford, but, in 1633, he was retired at his own request and Edward Winslow became his successor. There were at that time approximately 300 people in the Plymouth settlement, things were none too prosperous but negotiations were made with the Indians in Maine regarding traffic, dealings with the Massachusetts Bay colonists had proved beneficial, and when Edward Winslow became governor the tax list contained the names of eighty-six men and three women.

Winslow was sent to England to defend the Massachusetts charter and Thomas Prince was chosen governor. Winslow was thrown into prison in Fleet for officiating in magisterial marrying and religious ministrations, contrary to the English law. He remained in prison four months.

**United Colonies of New England Had Eight Towns and 3,000 Inhabitants—**In August, 1643, Plymouth ratified the articles of confederation of the united colonies of New England. There were eight towns and about 3,000 inhabitants in the colony. William Brewster died in April of that year and several of the Pilgrim Fathers soon followed—Winslow in 1655, Myles Standish in 1656, William Bradford, the scholar, historian, and for thirty-seven years the first citizen, in 1657. Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New Haven were from this time on for forty years in a league with Plymouth and the latter lost much of its independence and distinction. According to John Quincy Adams, the forming of this league brought about a "record of incessant discord and of encroachments by the most powerful upon the weaker members." The more liberal spirit which had prevailed in Plymouth became dulled by association with more bigoted and stern associates. On

the other hand industrial progress was fostered by the association, also greater security. One of the principal powers entrusted to the eight commissioners, under the articles of confederation, was the regulation of Indian affairs. Fugitives from service, or slaves, were to be delivered up on demand. There had been slaves in Massachusetts since May 20, 1638, when the "Desire," a slave ship, which was built in Marblehead two years before, brought a small cargo of African slaves who were eagerly purchased by many of the prominent men. In the Pequod War which broke out in 1636, many of the women and children were taken prisoners by the Puritans and sold as slaves for life to West Indian planters.

The most conspicuous example where leading men in the part of Massachusetts now Plymouth County gave their voice in favor of slavery was in the disposition of the wife and little son of King Philip, at the close of the terrible war carried on by that son of Massasoit. In order to understand the spirit which prevailed at that time it is well to remember the times and the suffering which had been endured as well as the condition which prevailed after that life or death struggle. The decision to sell the Indian queen and the prince into West Indian slavery was not by unanimous consent, however. Rev. James Keith of Bridgewater disagreed with the other ministers in the colony and presumably his voice was representative of the humane convictions of many others. More about this incident will be told elsewhere.

There was a feeling that an Indian could be bound by no treaty, although the experience with Massasoit had not justified that conviction. The only safety for the colonists was, therefore, in putting them to death, or in jails, or in some situation which made it impossible for them to engage in war. The first method seemed too barbarous, except in extreme cases; the second was too expensive and ineffectual, and the third was justified in self-defense. Selling Indians as slaves was for reasons of safety to the colony instead of a commercial transaction. As early as 1712 there was a law which prohibited the importation of Indian servants into the colony, and sentiment was against it and practically prevented it in previous years.

Among the instances of sales for the punishment of crime was one in Sandwich in 1678 when three Indians were sold for having broken into a house and stolen goods. Being unable to make recompense to the owner, the court authorized him to sell them into bondage.

The highest courts of Massachusetts have repeatedly held that no child born here since 1641 was ever, by law, a slave.

**Massachusetts Attitude Toward Slavery Unique**—It may be of interest to present here additional facts concerning slavery in Massa-



chusetts, in which Plymouth County had a part, because, imbued by the Pilgrim spirit and influence, to a certain extent, the attitude of Massachusetts toward slavery was unique among the States. There were many instances in which slave owners in Massachusetts voluntarily emancipated their slaves, but this was of doubtful value, either to the slaves in question or the communities, however conscientious may have been the reason for the emancipation. Accordingly, in 1703, an act was passed by the General Court that no one should emancipate his slave, without giving bond to hold the town harmless from the burden of his support. This made it impossible to turn loose those no longer of service to their masters and thereby make them public charges.

There is a significant circumstance in the proceedings of the courts in Massachusetts in the fact that, contrary to the uniform usage of other States in which slavery has prevailed, slaves were here permitted to testify against white men, even in capital cases.

A large proportion of the slaves in Plymouth County, and indeed throughout the State, were held as household servants. There is no record of a slave woman ever being worked in the fields, "as a field hand," in this State. Marriages between slaves were performed by clergymen and such marriages carried with them the legal incidents of such a relation.

Before the Revolutionary War slavery was not uncommon in the larger towns, and as late as 1774 the public press contained notices of black slaves for sale.

In June, 1781, in the county of Worcester, an action was commanded against the master and owner of a slave, Quork Walker, for an assault and battery made by the master, Jennison. The defense was set up that the person on whom the assault was alleged to have been made, being a slave, the owner might beat him at his pleasure, and was therefore not amenable to the law. The decision of the court was: "that the man assaulted or beaten was not a slave," and was founded on the opinion that slavery was not authorized by law or statute, and though it had been permitted to keep negroes in such a condition, the principle could not be legally recognized and sanctioned, and that the plea of the master in defense of the beating could not be justified. This was on the great constitutional principle that "all men are born free and equal." The "slave" was given fifty pounds damages.

Those who continued in service after this decision remained so voluntarily. Many of them continued members of their master's families by preference as long as they lived. John Lowell, a celebrated lawyer, took an active part in favor of the colored people held in bondage and offered them his professional aid without fees.

**Unwritten Romance of "The Underground Railroad"**—The passion for freedom pervades the air one breathes in Plymouth County, the scene of the early struggles for that God-given quality sought by the Pilgrims and recognized in the Declaration of Independence as "the inalienable rights of man." It is not strange, therefore, that, in Plymouth County, were many of those activities carried on by anti-slavery enthusiasts in what was known as the Underground Railroad. No formal organization ever existed in this county, it is believed, and, in fact, there were few communities in the United States really organized, with officers and the division of labor called for in definition of offices. But in Plymouth County the Underground Railroad had its station-agents and conductors, notably among them being Edward E. Bennett.

This gentleman conducted a livery stable on High Street in Brockton (formerly North Bridgewater), and this stable was one of the "stations" to which conductors from other towns in Plymouth County and elsewhere brought runaway slaves. The fugitives were secreted by Mr. Bennett until a favorable time, usually late at night, when he furnished transportation for them, by means of his horses and carriages, to the next "station" on the way to Canada. Through the fearless activities of Mr. Bennett hundreds of negroes found their way to freedom. Edward E. Bennett Lodge, G. U. O. O. F., of Brockton, is named in his honor.

The anti-slavery movement did not become popular in North Bridgewater as early as it did in some other Plymouth County towns, but Mr. Bennett was thoroughly in accord with the sentiments which he heard at the abolition meetings in Island Grove, Abington, at Halifax and in other towns in the county. When such men as William Lloyd Garrison, Wendell Phillips, and Charles Sumner were speakers at these meetings, Mr. Bennett and other residents of the county were sure to be there and it is probable that the influence of the eloquence of these men spurred them on to the work in which John Brown and others were engaged. Among Mr. Bennett's neighbors in North Bridgewater in 1860, were thirty-two colored persons. Some of them undoubtedly engaged with him in the Underground movement from its inception in 1838 to the issuance of the Proclamation of Emancipation.

It is a strange fact that even to this day some of the people whose grandfathers were engaged in the Underground Railroad work, "law breakers on principle," are reluctant to relate anything they know about the occurrences or even admit that they were ever told the stories. It is a matter of common knowledge, however, that there were much-respected citizens of towns in the county, about 1850, who



reacted to the Fugitive Slave Law in a way which makes interesting reading. Some of them were present at the rendition of Anthony Burns in Boston, May 24, 1858, and took part in the attempt to take him from the Court House and prevent his being placed aboard the United States revenue cutter by which he was carried back to Virginia. Among them was Elbridge Sprague, of North Abington.

Not all of Plymouth County agreed with their neighbor, Daniel Webster, of Marshfield, in his famous seventh of March speech, when he declared that the complaints of the South in regard to the non-rendition of fugitive slaves were just, and that the North had fallen short of her duty. Rather were they inclined to sympathize with that forerunner of liberation, John Brown, of Massachusetts stock, who organized at Springfield, Massachusetts, the League of Gileadites, to resist systematically the enforcement of the Fugitive Slave Law. In the "Agreement and Rules" that John Brown drafted for the order, adopted January 15, 1851, appeared the following direction for action: "Should one of your number be arrested, you must collect together as quickly as possible, so as to outnumber your adversaries . . . Let no able-bodied man appear on the ground unequipped, or with his weapons exposed to view . . . Your plans must be known only to yourselves and with the understanding that all traitors must die, wherever caught and proven to be guilty . . . Let the first blow be the signal for all to engage, . . . make clean work with your enemies, and be sure you meddle not with any others . . . After effecting a rescue, if you are assailed, go into the houses of your most prominent and influential white friends with your wives, and that will effectually fasten upon them the suspicion of being connected with you, and will compel them to make a common cause with you . . . You may make a tumult in the court room where a trial is going on by burning gunpowder freely in paper packages. . . But in such case the prisoner will need to take the hint at once and bestir himself; and so should his friends improve the opportunity for a general rush . . . Stand by one another, and by your friends, while a drop of blood remains; and be hanged, if you must, but tell no tales out of school. Make no confession."

There were people in Plymouth County who knew what it meant when they received some such message as the following:

"Uncle Tom says if the roads are not too bad you can look for those fleeces of wool by tomorrow."

It would be interesting to know on how many walls of Plymouth County houses the owner heard combinations of knocks or raps at night, or the shrill tremolo call like that of an owl and planned action according to instructions over this "grape-vine telegraph." One county resident who was a small boy at the time, has related his wonder

why his mother arose, after being hours in bed, fried doughnuts or did other cooking, the odors of which permeated to his sleeping room, and, when asked about it in the morning, was put off with the remark: "You must have been dreaming."

Even though most of the population in North Bridgewater agreed with Daniel Webster rather than Edward E. Bennett, it occasioned no great surprise to see one of Mr. Bennett's livery stable teams returning to the stable at all hours of the night. One of his vehicles was a counterpart of Daniel Webster's buggy which is now owned by the Brockton Agricultural Society. Not many years ago there were people living who could easily recall seeing Mr. Bennett driving in this vehicle, his knees covered with one of the buffalo robes so much in vogue, and there were times when, under this buffalo robe, was concealed a dusky fugitive who had occasion to return "thanks for the buggy ride."

Fall River and New Bedford, in an adjoining county, gave shelter to many fugitives as they journeyed northward. Elizabeth Buffum Chace in her book, "Anti-Slavery Reminiscences," says on Page 27: "From the time of the arrival of James Curry at Fall River, and his departure for Canada, in 1839, that town became an important station on the so-called Underground Railroad." Plymouth County conductors had communications with New Bedford and Fall River observing lightly the penalties of the law, the contempt of smug, conservative neighbors and the espionage of persons interested in returning fugitives to bondage. The strange and romantic character of the movement undoubtedly had a fascination all its own. Vigilance committees were formed in various towns, among them being Kingston, Halifax, Wareham, Pembroke, Scituate, Abington, and Middleboro. It has been claimed that there was at least one Plymouth County man on the vigilance committee in Boston, serving with A. Bronson Alcott, John A. Andrew, William Lloyd Garrison, Theodore Parker, Wendell Phillips, Elizur Wright, and many others of glorious memory. Among the "conductors" in Bristol County, which include Fall River and New Bedford, were Robert Adams, John Bailey, and Rev. Charles T. Torrey.

The convictions of those who engaged in the Underground Railroad activities in this section were expressed by Theodore Parker when he said, in 1850: "It is known to you that the fugitive slave bill has become a law . . . to law framed of such iniquity I owe no allegiance. Humanity, Christianity, manhood revolt against it . . . For myself, I say it solemnly, I will shelter, I will help, and I will defend the fugitive with all my humble means and power. I will act with any body of decent and serious men, as the head or the foot, or the hand,



in any mode not involving the use of deadly weapons, to nullify and defeat the operation of this law."

One of the old anti-slavery songs, heard beneath the historic pine trees in Abington Grove and elsewhere in the county, expressed the determination and faith of the abolitionists:

'Tis the law of God in the human soul,  
 'Tis the law in the Word Divine;  
 It shall live while the earth in its course shall roll  
 It shall live in this soul of mine.  
 Let the law of the land forge its bonds of wrong,  
 I shall help when the self-freed crave;  
 For the law in my soul, bright, beaming, and strong,  
 Bids me succor the fleeing slave.

**King Philip's War of Extermination**—Many volumes have been written concerning King Philip's War and some of them undoubtedly contain the truth. Our difficulty lies in finding out which ones they are, as eye-witnesses and participants in that war have long since passed to the happy hunting ground or through the golden gates. It seems to have been hard for the English to make friends with the Indians—much more so than the French. The Reverend Cotton Mather observed, having reference to the pestilence that had swept away the red men just before the landing of the Pilgrims, that "the woods were almost cleared of those pernicious creatures to make room for a better growth." Perhaps others shared his views, as some of the colonists offered rewards for Indian scalps.

Palfrey, the historian, does not believe that Philip's war was a wide-spread, premeditated effort to expel the colonists, as other writers claim. John Easton, a Rhode Island Quaker, wrote a "Narrative of the Causes Which Led to King Philip's War," which was printed in 1858, and is well worthy the perusal of those who like to form their own opinions after hearing testimony on both sides. Easton did not think all the faults were on the side of the Indians. Regardless of whose fault it was, the King Philip War was a terrible experience in the upbuilding of the country and was the origin of the horror with which for more than a century men regarded the Indians.

It was ten years after the opening of Philip's war that Plymouth County had the county designation, but the territory which was set apart as Plymouth County in 1685, contained residents who had a prominent part in that life and death struggle. The hero of the war was Colonel Benjamin Church of Plymouth Colony who had command of the forces in this vicinity. His sword is preserved in the cabinet of the Massachusetts Historical Society. There is also a portrait, so-called, of Colonel Church, which was engraved by Paul Revere.

In an editorial note in the "Memorial History of Boston," published

in 1881, it is stated that this portrait is really a likeness of Charles Churchill, the English poet, with a powder horn slung over his shoulder. The note further states that Paul Revere also engraved "a picture of 'Philip, King of Mount Hope'." "Colonel Church's son, Thomas Church, wrote, for his father, an account of the war, 'Entertaining Passages Relating to Philip's War,' which were published long afterwards in Boston."

An express started from Marshfield—much later the home of Daniel Webster—June 21, 1765, which delivered to Governor John Leverett of Massachusetts, at Boston, a letter from Governor Winslow of the Plymouth Colony. This letter informed Governor Leverett, as was stated in his own letter later to the Government of Connecticut:

Upon the 21st instant, about three o'clock, came an express to me from the Governor of Plymouth, signifying that upon the Lord's Day before, an armed body of Philip's men attacked to houses not far from Swansea, and drove the people out of them, who fled to the town and gave intelligence thereof; and accordingly Swansea men sent a post to the Governor of Plymouth to acquaint him of their needs—with all intimating that the Indians were marching to Swansea. The Governor thereupon ordered some relief to be sent to Swansea, as he informed us. The armed Indians marched up to the bridge at Swansea, but forty of the English at Swansea being posted at the bridge the Indians retreated to Mount Hope again; but since have made several excursions in small parties, and have plundered several houses not far from Swansea. And, afterwards, about the 24th and 25th and 26th day of this instant, have killed about five or six persons in all in a skulking way, and barbarously taken the head, scalpe and hands of two persons, and some within sight of a Court of Guard,—others they have wounded about twenty; and a house they have fired, and daily we hear of the increase of trouble. The Governor of that colony has frequently solicited us for aid, which as soon as we could possibly raise we have sent to them. It is certified from Plymouth and Swansea that both Narragansetts and Nipmucks have sent aid to Philip; we sent messengers to Narragansetts and Nipmucks to warn and caution them not to help Philip, and if they were gone to command to return. Our messengers are returned from both these places. The Nipmucks speak fair, and say they are faithful to their engagements, and will not assist Philip. The Narragansetts say they will not meddle; but there is more reason to suspect the latter, and we believe they are not unconcerned in this matter. All our intelligence gives us ground to believe that the poor people in these parts are in a very distressed condition in many respects. Their houses burned, their people killed and wounded, and they not able to make any attempt upon the Indians, wanting for victuals, ammunition and arms. We have occasion to send greater force for their relief. We have sent about three hundred foot and eighty horse, besides several carts laden with munition, provisions and armes. Moreover we are sending two vessels with provisions and munition to supply their forces, the vessels to serve as there shall be cause. We sent Captain Savage and Mr. Brattle four days since to speak with Philip, who are returned, but could not obtain speech with him. The Council has appointed a fast tomorrow to seek God in this matter for a blessing upon our forces. How far this trouble may speed, it is with the Lord to order. There is reason to conceive that if Philip be not soone suppressed he and his confederates may skulk into the woods and



greatly annoy the English, and that the confederacy of the Indians be larger than yet we see. Major-General Denison was chosen for the general of these forces, but he being taken ill Captain Savage is sent Commander in Chief. Captain Prentice is Commander of the Horse, and Captain Henchman and Captain Mosley Captain of the Foot. Our eyes are unto the Lord for his presence with them, and hope you will not be wanting in your prayers and watchfulness over the Indians, and particularly request you to use your utmost authority to restrain the Mohegans and Pequods.

Winslow had not asked for military assistance, but the larger colony recognized the need and gave swift assurance of assistance and substantial testimony, as recorded in the document quoted above. The forces referred to marched June 26 as far as the Neponset River, when there was a total eclipse of the moon. This was even before the day that Robert B. Thomas began publishing the "Old Farmer's Almanac," which has been a New England institution long before the memory of any present-day New Englander, and this may account for the fact that the eclipse evidently came as a surprise to both Philip's red men and the colonists. Evidently both were much given to regarding the sudden darkness as an omen. William Hubbard says that some fancied that they could see in the center of the moon an Indian scalp. What the Indians saw there has not been made known.

It is not within the province of this history to trace the details of the movements in King Philip's War, only so far as Plymouth County towns were concerned in it, and such other historical references as are necessary to explain them.

Winslow informed Governor Leverett that the men of Plymouth Colony would give a good account of themselves in a few days, but urged that efforts be made to prevent the Narragansetts and Nipmucks becoming Philip's allies. He declared that precautions had been taken in the Plymouth Colony not to injure or arouse the ill will of the Indians.

Just as the killing of a Serbian prince in 1914 was the signal for the World War, so the killing of Wausaman or Wussausman, one of the disciples of John Eliot, which led to the execution of the murderers, precipitated the King Philip struggle. One of those executed testified before his death that his father, a counsellor and friend of Philip, had a hand in the murder, which was supposed to have political significance.

The Plymouth forces marched to the vicinity of Swansea, where Philip was directing his forces, and two messengers were sent to Mount Hope, Philip's headquarters, in the hope of some negotiation with him. The war had already begun. The Indians were driven back from Swansea to Mount Hope. The next day the attack was made on Mount Hope and Philip's own wigwam was included in the destruc-

tion, but Philip and his followers had gone to Pocasset. Colonel Benjamin Church held him at bay there.

If Colonel Church had had an ordinary foe to deal with, it might soon have been over, but the crafty Philip abandoned his women and children, crossed the Taunton River at low tide and got into the forest, with about seven hundred desperate warriors goaded to frenzy by the stories told them of their threatened extermination by the well-armed colonists. The Indians knew every nook and hiding place in the thicket and, in their natural defenses, could hope to long continue the struggle. The forces from Boston had arrived to help Colonel Church put a swift end to Philip. Captain Daniel HENCHMAN, who had been an assistant teacher in the Latin school in Boston, was in command. He overestimated the desperate condition of Philip and his inability to escape, and ordered all the Massachusetts companies, except his own company on foot, to return. Captain THOMAS PRENTICE, in command of the horse, was ordered to Mendon, in Norfolk County. A day later he learned that Philip was marching northwest. Captain HENCHMAN secured the one hundred women and children whom Philip had left behind and they were, at first, assigned to such families as would receive them, but, before the war ended, they were sold into West Indian slavery.

No one knew the extent of the hostility of the savage tribes, or how many allies Philip had gained; nor when or where the next attack would take place. Some of the colonists began to give way to superstitious fears. The eclipse of the moon was but the beginning. They now heard troops of phantom horsemen dashing through the air. The howling of the wolves was fiercer than ever and the superstitious declared they were to be punished for their sins, such as profane swearing, the wearing of long hair by the men and of gay apparel by the women. The more extreme declared they were about to be "judged" for not exterminating the Quakers.

Philip carried the war into the Connecticut Valley. Captain HUTCHINSON and twenty men, sent to treat with him, were ambushed and murdered in Brookfield, the town itself was burned. So was the town of Deerfield. Hadfield was attacked while the people were gathered in the church.

There is a historic romance connected with the story of King Philip's War which has been given, in some form, by most historians since 1764, concerning what some of them term the "guardian angel of Hadley." In August, 1675, the war was turned for a time from the vicinity of Plymouth toward the exposed towns on the Connecticut River. On the first day of September the inhabitants of Hadley were observing a fast and most of the garrison was absent. The Indians'



diabolical cries were suddenly heard in the "meeting-house" and it seemed as if the inhabitants had put themselves into a trap which was to mean their annihilation, or a fate worse than death.

In the midst of them appeared an aged man in the garb of a previous generation, who assumed command, as if he were accustomed to being obeyed. No one knew who he was or questioned his right to lead. With his sword in hand, he advanced at the head of the little company, given new heart by his appearance, and soon the Indians were in flight. The English pursued them to the woods and looked around for their strange leader in Cromwellian habiliments whose appearance and leadership had saved them from a fate too horrible to contemplate. No one had seen him come and no one had seen him go.

The explanation is that Colonel Goffe, the regicide judge, was concealed in the house of Rev. Mr. Russell, their minister. While they were observing their fast, he had seen the approach of the stealthy savages and once more obeyed the impulse to sacrifice himself, if need be, in the cause of humanity. So far as has been recorded it was his final appearance, as no historian has recorded any emergence from his retirement. It is one of those stories which are entertaining and has enough of truth in it to give it a strong appeal, and can do no harm, while everyone has the privilege of rejecting as much of it as he chooses.

**Alexander Arrested at Monponsett**—The Pilgrim fathers and their immediate descendants had known Philip "from his youth up." His father was the faithful Massasoit, sachem of the Wampanoags, or Pokanokets. They were the third nation in importance among the New England Indians at the coming of the Pilgrim settlers. Their territory included Bristol County, Rhode Island, and the entire southern portion of the Plymouth Colony, with Tiverton and Little Compton. Mount Hope, now a part of Bristol, Rhode Island, was the tribal seat of the Pokanokets and Pokanoket was the tribal designation.

Massasoit had a wigwam at Middleborough (using the present-day name for Namasket) and it was there he received Captain Myles Standish and others of the Pilgrims on various occasions. Standish, with Constant Southworth, John Alden and others, had bargained with Massasoit, one bright May morning, for what is now Bridgewater and some adjoining towns. A few coats, hatchets and other things were given the old sachem.

Samoset had first brought Massasoit and the Pilgrims together, and had Massasoit and his warriors any desire to wipe out the English settlers at that time he would have scarcely had to do anything more than refuse them the provisions which they needed to prevent starvation. Moreover, he entered into a league of peace with them which

was never violated as long as he lived. He allowed them to increase their possessions without suspicion or jealousy and knew none of the restraints to civilization, so-called.

The red men, breathing the aroma of the pine boughs and with it their strength and healing, paddling along his streams of silver in summer, and in mid-winter tramping over his snowy fields on his home-made shoes of hoop-bent ash with the network of interwoven green-hide cut from the skin of some fleet-footed deer, drinking at every breath the sinew-strengthening wine of his northern winds, was a true child of Nature.

One day, Massasoit, the friend of the Pilgrims, moccasined into Plymouth, accompanied by his two sons, asking the Pilgrims to stand God-father to these boys, to whom the colonists gave the names of Alexander and Philip. Their Indian names were Mooanum and Wamsutta, for Alexander; and Metacomet or Pometacom for Philip. The English names were given by the governor in open court about the year 1656.

About ten years after the occurrence just described Massasoit died and was succeeded by Alexander. He married Namumpum, afterwards known as Weetamo, the squaw-sachem of Pocasset.

The Plymouth men had been informed that Alexander had looked upon the invasion of the English into the country of the Pequots and its results, their enslaving, as possibly a prophecy of the fate of his own people. They therefore requested that he come to Plymouth for a conference and, when he failed to appear, the governor ordered Major Winslow to fetch him. Major Winslow took ten armed men from Marshfield and, on the way to Mount Hope, stopped at a hunting wigwam of the Indians at Monponsett Pond in Halifax. There they found Alexander and some of his braves, about eighty, according to the tradition, well-armed and evidently having some business on their minds rather than hunting and fishing.

Major Winslow's men possessed the arms of the Indians and the major requested Alexander and an interpreter to withdraw a little distance, where the sachem was informed of the errand of the squad and, placing a pistol at the sachem's breast, Winslow demanded that he accompany them at once to Plymouth. This Alexander consented to, with the proviso that he be allowed to proceed thither as a sachem, with his men attending him. The major offered him a horse to ride upon but the gallant sachem refused to ride, inasmuch as his squaw and other Indian women were of the party and he could walk as well as they. Deeming it advisable to proceed to Marshfield, rather than Plymouth, and have the governor come there for a conference, Major Winslow entertained Alexander and his retinue at his own house courteously. While there, however, the proud spirit of Alexander



fretted and he had a raging fever. Dr. Samuel Fuller, the physician at Plymouth was sent for and administered to him. Alexander gave his promise that he would appear at the court in Plymouth later, and was carried upon the shoulders of his men to Tethquet River, and thence, in a canoe, home, where, two or three days later, he died. There is a story that the English demanded of Alexander his son as a hostage.

Regardless of how their treatment of the sachem affected the Wampanoags and whether the accusation that Alexander had mischief toward the white men in his mind when he went to Monponsett, also what effect the carrying of him, a violently sick man, to his home before he had a chance to recover—in all of which different writers find different conclusions—it is fair to presume that the English took as unhappy a course as they could have conceived to offend the descendants of Massasoit and their braves.

**Philip Accused of Conspiracy**—Philip sat upon the throne of the Wampanoags and there came a startling rumor to Plymouth that “the Indians are grinding their hatchets and fixing their muskets.” Another investigating committee was sent from Plymouth and one from the Massachusetts government. They met at Taunton, sent a summons to Philip and received from him word that he awaited them at Three Mile River, not far away. The governor returned an answer that Philip must come to him, but the proud sachem considered his dignity as much entitled to respect as that of the white chief, and refused to approach nearer than John Crossman’s grist-mill.

Shortly afterwards Philip and his warriors appeared on a hill above the mill stream, armed and decorated. The English were also armed and in considerable numbers. One writer says of this situation:

“Some of the delegates were for attacking the Indians at once on the spot where they halted. The Massachusetts delegates were apprehensive of the results. All agreed, however, that a governor ought not to condescend to go to an Indian.” Another writer says the investigating committees were sent to prevent, if possible, an open war but the Plymouth people intimated they “would be obliged to begin if they could not otherwise bring the Indians to reason.” Pierce in his *Indian History*, Page 58, makes this point: “The English charged King Philip with plotting rebellion against their government, but the question is pertinent, how King Philip, an Independent prince and ruler of another nation, could thus rebel.” Perhaps it was another instance of an unwise “foreign policy” on the part of the Pilgrims.

Stubborn and proud as he was, King Philip was the one to yield when terms of the conference were proposed, requiring, however, that his men might accompany him as a sachem’s retinue and should occupy one side of the meeting-house while the English occupied the

other. In this setting the governor and the sachem held their parley, sober-visaged Englishmen in slouched hats with broad brims, bandoleers, cuirasses, long swords and towering muskets; red men, dressed in native simplicity, relieved by decorations calculated to command respect and betoken attendance upon a member of the ruling house, long bows and quivers of arrows slung across swarthy shoulders daubed with colored clay, here and there a stray musket, such as had been taken from Alexander's men of the same tribe at Monponsett.

At this meeting Philip was charged with making war-like preparations which he explained by saying he was protecting himself against a threatened invasion by the Narragansetts. In return, he complained that the English injured the planted lands of his people. According to Drake this claim was brushed aside "as a pretense and fabrication." To his story that he dreaded an invasion by the Narragansetts, "they gave him the lie direct."

According to all accounts, Philip saw that he was "out of order" in the white man's court and, furthermore, had no choice but submit to whatever it imposed upon him. They drew up a "Submission" which he signed, witnessed by three of his men. This "Submission" contained the quotation "that it was the Naughtiness of his own Heart that put him upon that Rebellion, and Nothing of any Provocation from the English." While they had him undergoing the "third degree," the English demanded that Philip deliver into the hands of the government at Plymouth all the guns in possession of himself or his people, which were "to be kept for their security so long as they shall see Reason."

Herbert Milton Sylvester, in his "Indian Wars of New England," says: "With the Indian the day of the bow and arrow had passed; he had become dependent upon the musket as a means of procuring such of his living as was contributed by the hunt; nor were they able to understand the reasons upon which the English founded this act, which to them seemed based upon injustice and oppression."

There could be but one result of this conference, resentment and suspicion on the part of the Indians and a conviction that submission to the white men meant starvation and death.

There was a squaw-sachem in charge of Sogkonate, a point of land below Pocasset, now Compton, Rhode Island, commonly known as Seconet, whose name was Awashonks. She was commanded to appear in court at Plymouth, surrender all the arms in the possession of her men and acknowledge submission to the Plymouth government. She did not appear as promptly as the men of Plymouth desired and they went to her domains, led by Major Josiah Winslow, to seize the muskets but found they had been secreted. Amnesty was promised to



such of the Indians as would bring in their arms and the promise carried with it a covert threat greatly disturbing to Awashonks and her braves. The Plymouth court also passed an order, inasmuch as King Philip's men had not brought in all their muskets "that all the guns that had belonged to Philip now in our Hands, are justly forfeited." This was followed by an order that the muskets were to be distributed among the English in the several towns as weapons of defense.

The Massachusetts government informed the Plymouth governor that, in their opinion, the Plymouth authorities had gone too far. According to Drake in "Indian Chronicles," they said: "We do not understand how far he hath subjected himself to you, but the treatment you have given him and your proceedings toward him do not render him such a subject as that if there be not a present answering to summons there should be presently proceedings to hostilities. The sword once drawn and dipped in blood may make him (Philip) as independent on you as you are on him."

Instead of heeding this advice, a council of war was held at Plymouth and there was talk of "Reducement by Force," to be at once prosecuted. Barry says: "Mr. Morton, secretary of the Colony, wrote the governments of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, informing them of the conduct of Philip, and a new Summons for his appearance on the 13th of September, 1671, which, if refused, they were resolved to enforce at the point of the sword." Another writer says that Morton intimated that the government regarded it as "a common cause, and would be glad to accept assistance, although if aid were denied, they would engage alone." The Massachusetts government in its reply urged that the differences between the Plymouth people and Philip be referred to the commissioners to be appointed by the Connecticut and Massachusetts governments, jointly. This suggestion Plymouth declined, insisting upon the appearance of Philip as demanded. The final reply of the Massachusetts government was that "There does not appear sufficient ground for commencing hostilities." The reply of Rhode Island was more favorable, as they shared with Plymouth the belief that Philip was preparing for war.

The time was extended to six days, but the conference was held September 24. Commissioners from Massachusetts and Rhode Island were present by invitation. Philip was on hand and there was a five days' session, which resulted in articles of peace and friendship agreed upon, approved by the commissioners. The first article was: "We, Philip and my Council and my subjects, do acknowledge ourselves subjects to his majesty the King of England, and to the government

of New Plymouth, and to their laws." He also promised to pay to the government of Plymouth as soon as he was able one hundred pounds in such things as he had, also five wolf heads, make no war nor dispose of any lands without the approval of Plymouth. How much of it he understood no one knows but, to the document written by the English, were the marks of Philip, Uncompan, Wolokom and Samkana, when the court was over. Even Awashonks had become reconciled to the Plymouth government, if the fact that she signed a letter written by Samuel Baker, can be taken as submission. She promised to send in all her arms, "being six in number."

**Murder, a Dance and a Fire**—The murder of Sassamon, referred to by many writers as precipitating the war, took place in January, 1674. It was he who informed the Plymouth government that King Philip intended to make war. His father and mother had been "praying Indians," under the teachings of John Eliot. He could read and write English and had acted as an interpreter to Alexander and, in turn, to Philip. A few days after he betrayed Philip to the men at Plymouth, his musket and hat were found on the ice of Assawampsett Pond in Middleborough, which led to an investigation. His body, on which were a number of wounds, was found under the ice. Three Indians were indicted for the murder, tried before a jury, made up in part of Indians, two of those accused hanged and the other shot.

Some days following the execution of the murderers of Sassamon Colonel Benjamin Church, who had settled upon the Sogkonate peninsula, not far from the residence of the squaw-sachem Awashonks, was invited by her to a great dance. Colonel Church took along with him Charles Hazelton, the son of one of Church's tenants, who was versed in the language of the Indians. They found hundreds of Indians gathered from all parts of the domain of Awashonks. She informed Colonel Church that Philip had sent six of his men to her, to induce her to enter into a plot for the destruction of the English. He advised Awashonks to knock the messengers on the head and shelter herself under the protection of the English. Colonel Church started for Plymouth and was on his way, June 7, 1675, when he met the husband of Alexander's widow, who confirmed Awashonks' story. Before Church had completed his affairs at Plymouth the massacres had taken place at Swanzey. Church was destined to become the most famous leader against Philip.

There is a very interesting piece of furniture still in existence and owned by Duncan A. Hazard of Providence, Rhode Island, which has come down from King Philip's War at this period. It is called "King Philip's Chair" and is among the rarest of early American pieces of



furniture. It is a Carver chair dating about 1625, and was originally the property of Preserved Abell of Seekonk, Rhode Island. It remained in the family for succeeding generations until purchased by Dr. Mason of Providence. At his death it was sold at auction to Rev. L. S. Woodworth, whose family held it until 1920, when it was sold to Mr. Hazard. The present owner found papers concealed in the seat of the chair, which told the story that on March 28, 1676, a party of Indians, with King Philip at their head, crossed the river and laid the town of Seekonk in ashes, burning forty houses and thirty barns. One of these houses was that of Preserved Abell on "Seekonk Common." As the flames mounted, the Indians seated themselves on the ground and enjoyed the warmth of the conflagration in the frosty spring air. One of the warriors brought out of the burning house a large, heavy arm chair, for their chieftain, King Philip, and the king sat on a throne viewing, with his braves, the destruction of the property of the pale faces.

The chair itself became ignited, after the royal presence had quitted it, the rush seat being consumed and the huge frame being charred. In some places the wood is burned to the depth of half an inch.

While on good terms with the colonists, Philip was often entertained at the Abell house and, on such occasions, was given the big arm chair of the family as a mark of courtesy to a distinguished guest. It is possible it was at his solicitation that he sat on the same chair to derive savage satisfaction in the fact that he was witnessing what he evidently believed was a scene in the extermination of the English.

**Philip's Death Ends War**—It was a little later in the spring that the Indians again made their appearance at the Plymouth settlement, where several houses and barns were burned. Other attacks took place in Halifax and Middleborough. In July an attack was made on Bridgewater. Scituate had been attacked some time before, the Indians approaching from the direction of Hingham, burning the saw-mill of Cornet Stetson, located on Third Herring Brook, the houses of Captain Joseph Sylvester, William Blackmore and a man named Nicholas.

Cornet Stetson was an aged man but fought valiantly in defense of Hingham. Twenty-two dwellings and barns were destroyed in that town, while the heads of six families and several others were killed.

Many of Philip's braves were ill and had fallen upon hard times. Philip was practically deserted by his allies. Church was commissioned by a captain of Governor Winslow and was given a roving commission. The savage scouts were everywhere in the woods. He was so successful that whenever he returned to Plymouth he had a

string of slaves in his train. He captured a number of savages at Monponsett ponds, in Halifax and from one of his captives learned that Tispaquin was at Assawampsett Neck. He went in quest and captured 136 of the force without the loss of a man of his own.

Philip laid an ambush for Church but it was unsuccessful. In August, 1676, Church came to a huge tree, felled across a brook near Bridgewater. At the further end sat a savage. Church raised his musket but his Indian scout, thinking the savage to be one of his own men, shouted to him not to fire. The Indian on the stump turned his face and Church at once recognized Philip. He fired but Philip slipped down the river bank and the bullet went wild. Church crossed on the fallen tree and, with his usual success, captured many of Philip's people, among them his wife and nine-year old son. Philip's wife was Wootonekanuske, sister of one of the three wives of Quinnapin, one of his allies.

Church crossed the river on the trail of the Indians but they eluded him. He determined, if possible, to find Philip and next time not to let him escape. A little later his party came upon the Wampanoag women and children but Philip was somewhere in advance, not accommodating his advance to their slower pace. At nightfall they located the camp of Philip and, without building fires, sat down to watch his movements, until early dawn presented a better opportunity for an attack. Two of Philip's sentries discovering two of Church's scouts, made an outcry which alarmed Philip, who fled to a nearby swamp on Mattapoissett Neck in Swanzeey.

An attempt was made to surround the camp, Church taking one side with half the men and Isaac Howland the other. Just before they came together, the enemy emerged, greatly surprised. Church hailed them: "If a single gun was fired they were dead men, for he would have them know he had them hemmed in with a force sufficient to command them; but if they peaceably surrendered, they should have good quarter."

They submitted to the inevitable, gave up their arms, but Philip was not of the number. The elusive savage had escaped with the loss of one hundred and fifty-three men, according to Hubbard. Church drove the Indians before him and confined them in the pound on the north bank of Town River in West Bridgewater for the night. The next morning, August 4, 1676, they were taken to Plymouth.

Philip was now in a desperate situation in the country in which he was born, every inch of which was familiar to him but with the knowledge that the fact would merely, perhaps, prolong his life as a hunted wild beast. His family had been captured, his people turned



against him—such as had not perished. Church was informed he was at Mount Hope Neck and, guided by a renegade Wampanoag, halted at the end of a swamp about midnight and Captain Golding was ordered to take some men with him and creep into the swamp as silently as possible, the rest of the party to watch the edge of the swamp, with muskets in readiness. A prowling Wampanoag made his appearance and was shot but the noise served to arouse the sleeping followers of the desperate sachem. The savages made for the open side of the swamp, with Philip at their head. He ran, half dressed, to fall face downward into the mire of the swamp, killed by a bullet fired by one of the subjects of the squaw-sachem Awashonks, at that time an ally of the English. This was August 12, 1676. The Indian who shot Philip was given his head and hand, after being allowed to mutilate the body, and the latter was displayed at Plymouth.

Shortly after Annawan, one of Massasoit's chiefs, one of the oldest warriors under Philip, who was with his sachem in the swamp, was captured by Church near the Squannakonk Swamp in Rehoboth. He was taken to Plymouth and executed. All his men were captured with him.

Tispaquin, sachem of Assawampsett, who led the attack on Scituate, later surrendered to Church. He was taken to Plymouth and beheaded. He was the last of the war chiefs of King Philip. Tyask who Church says, was "next to Philip" died alone in his wigwam on Mount Hope Neck shortly after the death of Philip. The English had taken his wife and son.

**Queen and Prince Sold as Slaves**—When Wootonekanuske, wife of Philip, and their little son were captured and taken to Plymouth, the court consulted with the elders of churches in the vicinity concerning what should be done with the nine-year old boy. Their replies show the "quality of mercy" which animated Rev. Samuel Arnold, pastor of the church in Marshfield; and Rev. John Cotton of Plymouth, as under date of September 7, 1676, they replied: "Upon serious consideration, we humbly conceive that the children of notorious traitors, rebels and murderers, especially of such as have bin principal leaders and actors in such horrid villanies, and that against a whole nation, yea the whole Israel of God, may be involved in the guilt of their parents, and may, *Salva republica*, be adjudged to death, as to us evident by the Scripture instances of Saul, Acan, Haman, the children of whom were cut off by the sword of Justice for the transgressions of their parents, although, concerning some of these children, it is manifest that they were not capable of being coactors therein."

Reverend Increase Mather of Boston wrote to Mr. Cotton, October 30, 1676: "It is necessary that some effectual course should be taken

about him. (The son of King Philip.) He makes me think of Hadad, who was a little child when his father, the chief sachem of the Edomites, was killed by Joab; and, had not others fled away with him, I am apt to think, that David would have taken a course, that Hadad should never have proved a scourge to the next generation."

Reverend James Keith, the first minister of Bridgewater, of whom Joshua E. Crane has written "a man of marked ability and to the colony an example of rare Christian traits and sound learning," however, took an opposite attitude to that of his fellow-clergymen. He wrote to Mr. Cotton: "I long to hear what becomes of Philip's wife and son. I know there is some difficulty in that Psalm CXXXVII: 8, 9, though I think it may be considered whether there be not some specialty and somewhat extraordinary in it. That law, Deut. XXIV: 16, compared with the commended example of Amaziah, 2 Chron.: 4, doth sway much with me in the case under consideration. I hope God will direct those whom it doth concern to a good issue, &c, &c."

The answer is contained in a letter from Mr. Cotton to Dr. Mather dated March 20, 1677, which includes this passing remark: "Philip's boy goes now to be sold."

Concerning the unhappy Indian woman and child, Rev. Dr. Edward Everett Hale wrote for "The Memorial History of Boston":

What was the fate of Philip's wife and child? She is a woman; he is a lad. They surely did not hang them? No. That would have been mercy. They were sold into slavery: West Indian slavery. An Indian princess and her child sold from the cool breezes of Mount Hope, from the wild freedom of a New England forest, to gasp under the lash beneath the blazing sun of the tropics! Bitter as death! Ay, bitter as hell! These are Mr. Everett's indignant words in his Bloody Brook address. Dear old John Eliot of Roxbury made his protest against this barbarity at the moment. A thousand pities that it was unheeded.

The protest of John Eliot is in the archives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in the original manuscript. It was addressed "To the Honorable Council sitting at Boston this 13th 6th 1675." In it appear these words:

The design of Christ in these last days is not to extirpate nations but to gospelize them . . . To send into a place a slave away from spiritual direction, to the eternal ruin of their souls, is as I apprehend to act contrary to the mind of Christ . . . . To sell souls for money seemeth to me a dangerous merchandise. If they deserve to die, it is far better to be put to death under godly persons who will take religious care that means may be used that they may die penitently . . . . Leave to reason and religion their liberty in this great case of conscience.

It would be intensely interesting to know what would be the opinion of a descendant of King Philip concerning the merits of Philip's war, after the lapse of 250 years, with the softening influences of the long term, should there be such a person of intelligence and



given to thoughtful consideration of the affairs of the original red men. To Philip, no opportunity had been given to understand the white race, save a few years of observations in which the men of Plymouth had taken measures which the aborigines could hardly be expected to comprehend, much less endorse. We are able, however, to present a witness—a lineal descendant—who has lived three-score years and ten among the white men, taken advantage of the opportunities of education and whose testimony and opinion is well worthy of consideration.

**Statement of Royal Disfavor**—This living witness—this is written in 1927—is Princess Wontonskanuske whose grandfather, eight times removed, was Massasoit. Her English name is Charlotte L. Mitchell and she is a respected resident of Lakeville, occupying some of the ancestral acres over which roamed the Wampanoags, of which she is the last of the tribe, as a full-caste member. Her own story explains what is meant by that last remark.

On Labor Day in 1921, there was unveiled on Cole's Hill in Plymouth a memorial to Massasoit, presented by the Improved Order of Red Men to the Pilgrim Society of Plymouth. It was one of the events in the Tercentenary observances of the landing of the Pilgrims and among those present on that occasion, when Plymouth was crowded with people from all over this country and many home from abroad, was the late President Warren G. Harding. President Calvin Coolidge was there in his capacity, at that time, as vice-president of the United States. Princess Wontonskanuske unveiled the memorial, which is a monument designed by Cyrus Dallin, the noted sculptor, of Arlington.

The monument is a figure of an Indian and, with the rock pedestal, a nine-ton boulder of the glacial drift found on the Manomet Hills, five miles south of Cole's Hill, stands fifteen feet from the ground to the tip of the eagle feather, which is a part of the headdress of the heroic figure. The statue is cast of bronze, weighs 1,500 pounds, and is secured to the boulder by bronze bolts. The rock pedestal has on one side a bronze tablet, on which is a representation of the sacred calumet, or pipe of peace, such as Massasoit smoked with the forefathers when he signed his peace compact. The statue represents Massasoit, the great sachem of the Wampanoags, at the moment when he descried the "Mayflower" entering Plymouth Harbor in 1620. The strong Indian face is looking out to sea and bears an expression of alert interest, inquisitiveness, kindly firmness, perhaps, "watchful waiting."

The inscription on the bronze tablet reads: "Massasoit, Great Sachem of the Wampanoags, Protector and Preserver of the Pilgrims, 1621.

Erected by Improved Order of Red Men as a Grateful Tribute 1921."

On September 5, 1921, Labor Day, it was unveiled by Princess Wontonskanuske, following a grand parade of the Improved Order of Red Men. Past Great Sachem Alvin G. Weeks, president of the Massasoit Memorial Association, was in charge of the unveiling program, the central figure of which was the princess. She, garbed in full ceremonial dress, gave a vigorous tug which released the American flag which, up to that time, had concealed the statue. The memorial was formally presented by Past Great Sachem Alexander Gilmore and accepted, in behalf of the Pilgrim Society, by Hon. Arthur Lord of Plymouth. There were appropriate speeches, singing of "The Star Spangled Banner," and it was all most impressive. This is the white man's version of the affair. After the celebration had passed into history, Miss Charlotte L. Mitchell (Princess Wontonskanuske) made the following statement to a correspondent of the Boston "Globe."

The fandangoes at Plymouth this summer were a farce. It was a celebration of the anniversary of the killing of owners of the New England hills and plains,—the Indians.

Why should I have been dragged to Plymouth to celebrate such an event? Massasoit, my grandfather, eight times removed, should have killed the so-called Pilgrims instead of helping them. Then my people would not have been killed and have died out, so that now there is but me, the princess of the Wampanoags, to live out my life alone, on the ground hallowed as the living place of my ancestors.

I took part in the parade at Plymouth and also the unveiling of the monument to Massasoit, only because some of my loyal friends persuaded me to. Why should I have any joy in helping to celebrate the landing of the men who wiped out my people?

The way Germany went through Belgium was nothing compared to what the Pilgrims did to the Indians in New England. The Germans were simply trying to get through—the Pilgrims were attempting to stamp out all of the Indian blood, so they could have our lands for their own.

An Indian is always loyal to a friend and so, when Mrs. Holmes of Middleboro, vice-regent of the Daughters of the American Revolution, pleaded with me to go to Plymouth, I went. They rode me up the street in a monkey cart and then left me. I met a friend who took me to see the president, but I didn't feel right toward the white men and was glad to get home again.

I told the president I came to meet him and not to celebrate the wiping out of the Indians by the white men. Why, the Pilgrims burned the squaws, the old men and papooses, right in the wigwams. Why should I celebrate such a thing?

King Philip was a real man. He did his best to stamp out the white men from these shores, and I honor him for it. He was my uncle, seven times removed, and a real prince of royal blood. He, as well as Massasoit, hunted and fished in these lands, just as I have done all my life, until lately.

I do not know of a person with Pilgrim blood in his veins who has to this day any respect for an Indian. The people who have come from countries other than England respect us and treat us right, but the original Mayflower blood still cries for our extinction.



Why, my ancestors, my uncle seven times removed, King Philip, a son of Massasoit, was drawn and quartered by these very people at Mount Hope, in what is now Rhode Island, and up to not over fifty years ago, his hand was preserved in Pilgrim Hall in Plymouth for palefaces to gloat over. Massasoit made a great mistake when he signed a treaty with white men. He signed the doom of his people right there, and although King Philip tried to right our wrongs, by that time the white men were too strong for us and, as a result, I am the only full caste representative of our tribe now alive.

I am the only titled descendant of Massasoit. I have never married. When a woman of our tribe marries other than an Indian, she loses caste and no longer belongs to the tribe.

Princess Wontonskanuske was born in North Abington, November 2, 1848, the daughter of Thomas and Zervia (Gould) Mitchell, and was one of a family of eleven children. Her father, a full-blooded Cherokee Indian, died in Fall River in 1859. During the later years of his life he followed the sea on a Boston merchantman in the Chinese trade. Through her mother, the princess, Charlotte L. Mitchell, traces her ancestry to Amie, daughter of Massasoit. Her maternal grandmother was Phoebe Tuspaquin, daughter of Tuspaquin, the Black Sachem, who held all the lands about the lakes in Lakeville, which she claims were unjustly taken from her by white men. She was educated in the public schools of Abington and in the Harvard Street Grammar School in Cambridge. Some half century ago she returned to the original lands of the Wampanoags, with her mother and sister, Princess Teeweeleema, who died a few years ago.

Princess Wontonskanuske receives a pension of \$300 a year from the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.

**How Treaty of Peace Read**—The treaty of peace between the Plymouth Colonists and Massasoit, the Great Sachem of the Wampanoags, made on Watson's Hill, was substantially as follows:

1. That neither he nor any of his should injure or do hurt to any of our people.
2. That if any of his did hurt to any of ours, he should send the offender, that we might punish him.
3. That if any of our tools were taken away, when our people were at work, he would cause them to be restored; and if ours did any harm to any of his, we would do the like to them.
4. If any did unjustly war against him, we would aid him; if any did war against us, he should aid us.
5. He should send to his neighbor confederates to certify them of this, that they might not wrong us, but might be likewise comprised in the conditions of peace.
6. That when their men came to us, they should leave their bows and arrows behind them, as we should do our pieces when we came to them.

Lastly, that doing thus King James would esteem of him as his friend and ally. All which the King seemed to like well, and it was applauded of his followers. All the while he sat by the governor he trembled with fear. In his person he is

a very lusty man, in his best years, an able body, grave of countenance and spare of speech; in his attire little or nothing different from the rest of his followers, only in a great chain of white bone beads about his neck; and at it, behind his neck, hangs a little bag of tobacco, which he drank, and gave us to drink. His face was painted with a sad red like murrey, and oiled both head and face, they looked greasily. All his followers likewise were in their faces, in part or in whole painted, some black, some red, some yellow, and some white, some with crosses, and other antic works; some had skins on them, and some naked; all strong, tall men in appearance.

So after all was done, the governor conducted him to the brook, and there they embraced each other, and he departed; we diligently keeping our hostages.

This visit of the great sachem was returned by Edward Winslow and Stephen Hopkins and the story goes: "They slept the first night at Namasket, now Middleborough, and arrived at Pockanoket the next day. The king was short of provision, but procured a couple of fish, of which he gave them part. They lodged upon a bed of plank, raised a foot from the ground, with a mat upon them; and upon the same lay also Massasoit, his wife, and two of his men, and so crowded them that they were more weary of their lodging than their journey. They set out for home the next day, fearing lest fasting, hard lodging, lice, fleas and moschetoës, would render them unable to return."

It is said that the brother of the Indian who had betrayed Philip to the whites had advised the sachem to submit to the English, as further flight and resistance would be of no avail and that he had been killed for his counsel. July 30, Philip's uncle had been killed and his sister captured. The next day his wife and son and one hundred and fifty of his followers were taken. Three days later his band was further decreased by death and the loss of forty men taken as prisoners, but Philip well knew his death would come in the open or through legal execution and he resolved to go to the Happy Hunting Ground as an unconquered sachem of the Wampanoags, regardless of how few of them remained. With his death the Indian war in this section was at an end. As a rebel against Charles II, in which class the Plymouth Colony authorities chose to place him, consistent with his "Submission" document, his body was quartered as the English penalty for treason. The head was cut off and exposed upon a pole at Plymouth, and his wife and son sold as slaves, presumably in Bermuda.

In Philip's War half the towns in Plymouth County were partly or wholly destroyed and there was a debt upon the inhabitants larger than the intrinsic values of all their possessions, which took years of industry and frugality to pay, but the debt was finally extinguished.

From the English king came no expressions of sympathy and no assistance, but "divers Christians in Ireland" sent nearly a thousand pounds. It was at this time of Plymouth's worst extremity since the



first winter after the arrival of the "Mayflower" that England added an attack upon the chartered rights of the people and there came the dispute between Massachusetts and the mother country in regard to New Hampshire and Maine, and later King Charles II entered upon the execution of a purpose to annul all the New England colonial charters. James II appointed Joseph Dudley to take charge of the government of Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine, Plymouth, Rhode Island and Connecticut. Then came the infamous Sir Edmund Andros and the incident of the "charter oak."

The overthrow of James II and the succession of William and Mary brought news of great joy to New England. In Plymouth Colony, Clark, agent for Andros, was put in prison, and Thomas Hinckley, former governor, was restored to office. In 1691 a new charter was granted to the colonies of Massachusetts and Plymouth and they became incorporated into one, Pilgrim and Puritan united. At that time the population of Plymouth was approximately seven thousand and that of Massachusetts about forty thousand. The district of Maine was also embraced in the same charter.

Plymouth Colony had its share in the witchcraft frenzy; the great snowstorm of February 24, 1717, when, according to Cotton Mather the snow was in some places sixteen feet deep "covering many cottages over the tops of their chimneys;" the first display of the *aurora borealis*, or northern lights, ever witnessed in the colony since the landing of the Pilgrims, December 11, 1719; the great earthquake, October 29, 1727, and other upheavals, political and seismic.

The only indictments in Plymouth County for witchcraft were against two persons of Scituate and in both instances the persons accused were found not guilty. Dinah Sylvester, in 1660, accused Mrs. William Holmes of having bewitched her, saying she "saw a beare about a stone's throw from the path," intimating that Mrs. Holmes had turned herself into a bear for purposes disastrous to the accuser. Just such absurd accusations made elsewhere had brought death or ducking to those accused, but in this case it was evidently only given the consideration which it deserved as Mrs. Holmes was discharged. At the next session of the court, as shown by the records: "Dinah Sylvester was summoned before the court and sentenced to be whipt or to make publicke acknowledgement (paying costs of prosecution) for false accusation against William Holmes' wife." She chose the latter.

Mary Ingham, in March, 1676, was charged with having "maliciously procured much hurt, mischieff and paine unto the body of Mehitabel Woodworth" of Scituate. Twelve good men and true brought in a verdict of not guilty.





## CHAPTER VI

### "LO! THE POOR INDIAN."

**John Eliot and Roger Williams Were His Friends, For Which They Were Hated by Red Men and White Men Alike—Struggle of Civilization Against Savagery With No Quarter From Either Side—Indian a Deist With No Idolatry in His Religion—Natural Lover of Liberty With No Fear of Death—Opechanganough's Massacre Matched by Atrocities by White Men at Pequot Fort and in Narragansett Village—French and English Both Incited Savages to Scalp Colonists—Nobleman Who Had Six Indian Wives.**

The history of Plymouth County and this whole section has been so interlinked with that of the Indian tribes, that the story of the Indians and some effort to arrive, so far as white men can, at the Indians' point of view, is desirable, if not absolutely necessary. Most histories, early and late, have entered into minute details concerning the Pilgrims and the Puritans and the ancient background, and have referred to the Indians merely as presenting obstacles to progress of civilization.

Plymouth and vicinity was covered with a dense growth of pines, oaks and other forest trees, and lurking in this wilderness were savages. And so the tale runs, to the effect that the forests had to yield to the settlers' axes and the savages to their firearms and swords. Comparatively little attempt was made, by otherwise fair-minded writers, to chronicle how death and annihilation was visited upon the Indians by the stronger race, in return for having been saved from starvation by this inferior race, in the colony's earliest days. Most people have read that there were Indians in this section at the landing of the Pilgrims and that they were, from the European standpoint, a menace; but how the Indians were concerned in subsequent history, the Revolutionary War, the War of 1812, and so long as there were any considerable number of Indians hereabouts, most histories give merely negligible mention. This volume will attempt to include some facts concerning the Indians gleaned from apparently unprejudiced authorities.

It is undoubtedly true that the Indians were offended at the introduction of civilization and the Gospel, because of their tendency to subvert Indian society.

The Indians were half hunters and half ictyophagi. Before the days of the Pilgrims, when, for instance, the scholar Herriot showed the Virginia Indians the Bible and explained to them its contents, as well as he could, they imagined

it to be some great talisman, and fondled, hugged and kissed it with great reverence, rubbing it against their heads and breasts, as they would any relic for which they had great veneration or from which they hoped to receive some benefit. They were not impressed with its doctrines as the embodiment of its virtues because this was something they did not understand.

It is true that the efforts of the Pilgrims seemed to have a decided effect in what was considered the conversion of the Indians. We are informed by the record of Cotton Mather that within thirty years from the time organized efforts were made to preach the Gospel to the Indians, there were six churches and eighteen assemblies of catechumens, or converted natives, within the boundaries of the colonies. John Eliot translated the Bible into the Indian language in 1682. This was a stupendous and perhaps as brave and unselfish an undertaking toward the Indians as was ever attempted in America.

John Eliot emigrated from England in 1631, and was chosen minister at Dorchester, where his attention was directed to the Indian tribes. He was a graduate of Cambridge, a student of considerable education, and the Indian language was a challenge to him. He began its study and found therein, it is inferred, some elements of the Hebrew. He realized, three hundred years before many people in this country, that the best way to live peaceably with a people is to understand them, get their point of view. He also realized that it was quite as important for the Indians to understand the new settlers as vice versa, and believed they would be impressed with the ability to find the white man's Bible was something for them as well as for the pale-faces.

There was at that time an Indian of the Massachusetts stock named Nasutan, whom Cotton Mather called "a pregnant-witted young man," whatever that might mean. Nasutan had learned to speak the English language and became Eliot's principal aid. Eliot invited the Indians to meet him October 28, 1646, at a place which was afterward called Nonantum (God's word displayed). On that occasion Eliot preached to the Indians from the text, "Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind: thus saith the Lord God; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live." (Ezekiel XXXVII-9.)

Two weeks later they met again at the same place and, on this occasion, Eliot addressed the Indians in their own language, which greatly impressed them. The Indians who attended agreed to settle at that place, to adopt the rules, observe the practices of civilization, and faithfully adhere to the precepts of Christianity. This established the first settlement of "praying Indians."

Of course the Indians had promised far beyond their understanding,



but they were regularly catechised and instructed, they labored diligently in agricultural pursuits and there was a promising congregation of converts to encourage their learned apostle. Meetings were held at Neponset, in John Eliot's parish; at Pawtucket, at Concord and on Cape Cod. This spread of the Gospel and use of agricultural implements and the arts of peace and husbandry found favor in the sight of the Association of Colonial Ministers, who gave Eliot the endorsement and comfort of resolutions adopted and, possibly, some other assistance.

But the reaction to this missionary work, so far as the native priests and pow-wows were concerned, was not as favorable. It was the same sort of reaction which has always come to any new religious movement, on the part of a people with an established religion, white, red or any other hue. The Indian pow-wows were exasperated. They saw their ancient power over their less crafty brethren about to depart, and they struck their necromantic drums, at their secret meetings, with the great energy which they wished to beat upon the head of the newcomer in religious teachings with a tomahawk.

It has been said that John Eliot was brave and unselfish. He realized that his philanthropic labors were so hateful to these Indians who adhered to their own teachers, as well as the teachers themselves, that his life might be the forfeit, but he hoped, at least, that his labors would obtain a certain impetus before the fatal visitation came. He was aware that Father Legard was burned at the stake by the Hurons, and his colleague, together with his son, were hurled from a canoe into the seething waters of the rapids below Lachine on the St. Lawrence River, for interfering with the established superstitious systems. The same was true of every phase in the establishment of civilization. The Indians detested a life of labor and the stern virtues and personal responsibility which went with the new doctrine, as much as they were wedded to their necromancy, their magic ceremonies and forest rites.

In spite of the opposition and the dangers involved, Eliot published a translation of the Old Testament in the dialect of Massachusetts, called by him the Natic, because he deemed that to be the generic language, from his inquiry into the affinities of nations, a research far in advance of the age in which he lived. This was in 1661. Much later it was followed by a translation of the Gospels. In 1684, the two parts were published in one volume at Cambridge, in coöperation with the London Society for Propagating the Gospel. It still retains its position as the most considerable and important monument of our Indian philology. The years which Eliot and his Indian assistant, Nasutan, spent upon it were years filled with great labor and much danger.

Concerning this labor Eliot wrote to a friend in 1659: "Pity for the

poor Indian and the desire to make the name of Christ chief in these dark ends of the earth, and not the rewards of men, were the very first and chief movers, if I know what did first and chiefly move in my heart, when God was pleased to put upon me that work of preaching to them."

It was his maxim that the Indians must be civilized in order to be Christianized. He drew up for them a simple code of laws, urged the necessity for industry, cleanliness, good order, good government and a feeling of personal responsibility toward the Great Spirit, newly interpreted by his teachings. In his frequent journeyings in the wilderness to meet his engagements with the "praying Indians," at various places all the way from Dorchester to the country of the Nipmucs in northern Connecticut, he experienced many dangers and privations. He wrote of one of these expeditions: "It pleased God to exercise us with such tedious rains and bad weather that we were extremely wet, insomuch that I was not dry, day or night, from the third day of the week to the sixth, but so travelled and at night pull off my boots, wring my stockings, and on with them again." It was not an easy task to keep the Indians industrious. One season of hunting, he said, undid all his missionary work.

Following the Bible in the Indian dialect, Eliot translated or wrote new primers, grammars, psalters, catechisms, Baxter's "Call," and other books in the Indian tongue. The New England version of the Psalms, known as the "Bay Psalm Book," remained in use more than a century. The efforts to teach the Indians to read and write were zealously pursued, and in 1673 six Indian churches had been established and 1,100 apparently converted.

It is true that some of the "praying Indians" joined with King Philip in his war and this so exasperated the colonists that a "praying Indian" was from that time on under suspicion, as much as those who had never professed conversion. In all charity, however, it is well to remember that there were other "praying Indians," and a large proportion of them who were friendly Indians during that life and death struggle, and they were of great assistance to the colonists. Perhaps Eliot's converts remained as true of the faith in as commendable proportions as the converts among white people, aroused by latter-day evangelists, a conspicuous leader of them being Rev. William Sunday. The Eliot converts, however, who hit the warpath after hitting the "sawdust trail," as "Billy" Sunday calls it, created a breach between them and the colonists which never healed.

In addition to being the friend and instructor to the Indians, Eliot was the first to befriend the Negro in New England and to offer to teach as many of them as would be sent to him once a week. After the



King Philip War, when other clergymen were so zealous to have the widow and little son of Philip put to death, Eliot's voice was raised in their behalf. In this attitude he was opposed by Cotton Mather who quoted Scripture abundantly in his efforts to make the mother and child victims of the white man's vengeance, although Mather wrote of Eliot: "He that would write of Eliot must write of charity or say nothing."

Eliot died May 20, 1690, at the age of eighty-six.

**Little Journey to the Aborigines**—Before judging too harshly the Indians of Eastern Massachusetts for not flocking to the Christian standard and remaining faithful to their confessions of faith; before agreeing too well with Cotton Mather, a quaint historian of that period, that they were "the veriest ruins of mankind," let us see what they had that they were expected to give up, and whether their beliefs were so "heathenish" as we have been led to believe. Moreover, let us contemplate the family life and community affiliations of the Indians with whom the Pilgrims became acquainted and see how hard it was for an Indian to become a white man in his convictions and actions.

While Cotton Mather would not be selected impartially as the fairest witness for the Indians, we have his description as worthy of study, in which he says: "Their wigwams consist of poles, lined with mats, where a good fire supplies the warmth of bed-clothes in cold seasons. The skins of animals furnish exclusively their clothing. Sharp stones are used for knives and tools. Wampum, a kind of bead made from sea shells, is a substitute for money. Indian corn constitutes their staple of vegetable food; the forest supplies them precariously with meat. Fish are taken in their streams. The hot-house is their catholicon for a large class of their diseases. Their religion is a confused and contradictory theism, under the rule of a class of priests called pow-wows, who offer incense by the fumes of tobacco."

From their historians, who wrote contemporaneously with the Indians, we know of their skill in manufacturing bows and arrows, war-clubs, bowls, pipes, fishing rods and nets, clay pots, tempered with siliceous stones; mats of flags, baskets of split cortical layers of wood, and nets for various uses fashioned from native hemp. Wood was used in making some utensils such as onagons, or bowls. Canoes were made from trunks of trees, hollowed by being burned over a fire and finished with a rude axe, made of stone.

The forests provided a supply of deer and other meat for the skillful hunter. Fish were abundant in the numerous lakes and purling streams, also in the salt water of the bay, easy for the Indians to negotiate by

means of a canoe. Twice in twenty-four hours the flats were laid bare and oysters and clams were in abundance on those tables spread before them. Clam shells were often used as spoons and oyster shells had their uses in various ways. When the hunters returned with a supply of meat, the squaws boiled or roasted it over a camp fire, using three poles tied together at the top and spread out around the fire as a tripod, a plan which the white men have never been able to improve upon when, in these days, they go camping. When the hunt was not successful, there was always the cawheek and succotash from pounded corn and beans. Birds and animals were skillfully caught by means of snares. These were some of the things which he was expected to abandon, to a certain extent, and assume the harder work of sowing and reaping.

So far as his religion is concerned, the white man was unable to understand it because he was a white man, and the Indian was equally as unable to understand the white man's religion, because he was a red man. Each one thought his own the best, at least sufficient for his needs, but the Pilgrims determined that one platform of religious freedom should serve for both the red and the white men, and they intended to build that platform. When the Indians smoked tobacco, in addition to the solace of the smoke, they offered it as incense to the Great Spirit. They saw the Pilgrims use tobacco and naturally thought that something of the same feeling possessed the whites but they could not understand why the newcomers did not make use of the dances to express their religious feelings.

It was the conviction of the Pilgrims and Puritans, as it was, and is, of civilized people in general, that man was created "not a savage, a hunter or warrior, but a horticulturist and a raiser of grain, and a keeper of cattle, a smith, a musician; a worshipper, not of the sun, moon and stars, but of God. The savage condition is a declension from this high type; Greece and Rome were in error on this point. The civil and social state was the original type of society for man, and it was just, therefore, to require a return to it."

#### **Indians' Belief in the Great I Am—It has also been written:**

The Indians having produced no historian, have never had the advantage of stating their side of the question. The native-born philosopher of the woods averred that God had made him exactly as he ought, and had given him arts and knowledge suited to his sphere. He was prone to refer to his past history as a golden age. The Great Spirit in his view was exclusively a God of kindness, not of holiness.

All the red man's cogitations were of the past. His sages represented the future as a sphere of rewards, not of punishments; deeming this life to be a scene of such vicissitude, that the future was designed to be a theatre of com-



pensations. It never entered into the Indian theory that justice was an attribute of the Deity. He did not fear, but rather loved death, and he sang his funeral song at the stake, with an assurance that he was on the eve of departing to a land of bliss. It is necessary to comprehend the Indian before we declare him to be void of reason. The Christian philosophy stood counter to all this. He hated Christianity, because he neither understood nor believed it. He denied that he had worshipped stocks and stones, the sun, moon and stars, but affirmed that he had employed them merely to exhibit his offerings to a higher power. He avowed his belief in the Great I AM—the Great IAU, (the Algonquin verb "to be").

Resting in the conviction that his state was, in every respect, precisely that which the Overruling Power had designed, he turned a deaf ear to other theories, and modes of life and obligations. He did not believe that his forefathers were not wise, and had not worshipped the Great Spirit aright. He could not comprehend that he himself was a savage. There is no word in the Indian language which means savage. They had no use for such a word. Christian philosophy taught that he lived in a state of very great declension from his original state; and that knowledge and ignorance, instead of being prejudged or fated conditions of men, as he believed, were but the mere results of human exertion, under the benign and universal law of original mental freedom of act and thought.

Gall and sweetness could not be more opposite than these two theories. A war of conditions was the consequence. In this conflict the parties never more than half comprehended each other. Misunderstandings and dissatisfactions continued through centuries. Both parties were suspicious of each other to the last degree. The Indians were often cruel and treacherous. Arms were appealed to, when reason would have been better. But the teacher and the philanthropist, the humanitarian and the Christian, plied their cases with renewed vigor whenever the pauses in the contest rendered it practicable. For centuries together, councils and treaties, war and peace, succeeded each other with fitful and uncertain periods.

If we call into testimony Apaumet, a Mohican scholar, who was carefully educated at Princeton University, where he acquired the knowledge of classical and English literature which rendered him an authority to command respect, we get a little of the Indian point of view. "Why," asked Apaumet, "do you believe letters and arts superior to the pursuits of the bow and arrow? Do they more truly fulfill the ambitions of the human heart, according to the measure of light and knowledge, which determine the actual conditions of the different races of men?"

Apaumet returned to his tribe in Western New York. He said that his knowledge, gained in a white man's university, was useless to him because he had no letters to write, and no accounts to keep; and that his study of history had taught him that his people were savages, and he himself a lettered savage, alike unfit for Indian or civilized life. He was disappointed with civilization and discouraged with life. He attempted frequently to drown his sorrows with intoxicating liquors, which were first given to the Indians at the first peace conference with Massasoit at Plymouth. While inebriated, he would recite passages

from Homer, and quote some of the finest passages in literature which appealed to him, as he had a very retentive memory.

Without the white man's instruction which gave them an inferiority complex, as in the case of Apaumet, or aroused their inherent feeling of animosity, the Indians regarded themselves as having once been the peculiar favorites of the Great Spirit, and they looked back to that period as a sort of golden age, when every want was supplied. Bravery and endurance were the chief objects of human attainment. They never suspected themselves to be savages and they revered the council of their old men and were a unit in convictions, one common thought pervading the whole tribe.

Dr. Samuel Johnson depicted the traits of the aborigines and wrote: "Whether more enlightened nations ought to look upon them with pity, as less happy than themselves, some skeptics have made, very unnecessarily, a difficulty of determining. More, they say, is lost by the perplexities than gained by the instruction of science; we enlarge our vices with our knowledge, and multiply our wants with our attainments, and the happiness of life is better secured by the ignorance of vice, than by the knowledge of virtue." Perhaps the Indians had some such point of view. The argument is not unlike that made in defense of slavery before the Civil War. Some of the slaves may have been happier in a condition of slavery with all their physical wants supplied, so long as their desires were largely confined to the physical. The Indian philosophy was that "the chase was the poetry of their existence, war the true path to honor, and the traditions and reminiscences of their forefathers the proper intellectual food of the Indian mind. Books were for scholars, and labor for slaves."

Indians constitute an anomalous feature in history. Where they came from we do not know and the white people never agreed with them where they were going to, zealous as they seem to have been to set them on their way. They appear to be a branch, or branches of Oriental stock, who lapsed into the nomadic state at some primeval period, but we know they had an inherent love of liberty, as marked as any immigrants who ever came to these shores. In the breast of the Indian the passion for independence subdued every other and he might well have cried aloud, as did Patrick Henry: "Give me liberty or give me death."

"The aborigines roamed over domains which monarchs might be proud to own, and satraps and rajahs covet. They made voluntary offerings to gods of the elements, which they regarded as subject to the rule of a cosmic Great Spirit. Horrific idols, there were none, from the capes of Florida to the St. Lawrence, from the Atlantic to the Rocky Mountains. Neither a Brahma nor a Siva, a Gunga or a Juggernaut



received the knee-worship of millions. No victim of superstition plunged himself into a sacred stream; no widow sacrificed herself on the funeral pyre of her husband; no mother was the cruel murderess of her own female infant. The Great Spirit was adored as the giver and taker of life. Such were the Indians. They neither raised costly temples to false gods, nor paid taxes to man." When the white men came, Powhatan and Massasoit were but the presiding chiefs of sachemdoms and bashabaries, the people of which were living in their primeval state. Power and custom had not then degenerated into tyranny; religion required no human sacrifice. The prescriptive laws of war left to each tribe and clan the choice of its own totemic banner of skin or feathers, and, by leaving the hunter tribes untrammelled in their actions, secured to them the power of effectively refusing their assent to wars and conquests not approved. Even their demigods, Manabo and Hiawatha, were the impersonations of kindness and benevolence.

Thomas Harriot, a noted mathematician and scholar, was sent with the second expedition to Virginia by Sir Walter Raleigh for the purpose of describing the character of the Indians who inhabited the eastern shore of the new country. From him we can get another good description of the customs, rites, creed and opinions of the Indians, which they were expected by the white men to give up for what, to them, was a new religion, filled with fears and anticipations of punishments in the future life, which they did not have in theirs. According to Harriot's report:

They believe in one God who is self-existent and eternal, and the creator of the world. After this, he created an order of inferior gods, to carry out His government. That then the sun, moon and stars were created as instruments of the secondary gods. The waters were then made, becoming the vital principle of all creatures. He next created a woman, who, by the congress of one of the gods, brought forth children, and thence mankind had their beginnings. They thought the gods were all of human shape, and worshipped them, by their images, dancing, singing and praying, with offerings. They believed in the immortality of the soul, which was destined to future happiness, or to inhabit Popagussa, a pit, or place of torment, where the sun sets; and this doctrine they based on the assertion of persons who had returned after death.

Such a people possessed noble elements in their character. Fearless of death, brave in war, and eloquent in council, they were exemplifications of the highest perfection of the foresters' estate; and when, at the commencement of the sixteenth century, they endeavored to oppose the growth and spread of European colonization, their efforts were but attempts to cement more closely the links which had bound them together for unnumbered centuries. The hunter state was symbolically the Golden Age, which it was deemed essential to guard with jealous vigilance.

**Massasoit Was a Peaceful King**—Bartholomew Gosnold in 1602 discovered Cape Cod, Martha's Vineyard and the Elizabeth Islands. The following year Captain Pring and Mr. Saltern followed nearly the same track as that followed by Gosnold. Two years later George Weymouth visited a part of the eastern coast and is supposed to have entered Narragansett Bay. On every side were found tribes of the Algonquin lineage, speaking their language and having identical manners and customs. They were mild, affable and fond of trading, but suspicious. Their chiefs were called sagamores and there was a higher class of rulers called Bashabas. Indian tribes roved over large areas after deer and in pursuit of war and the hunt, rather than occupying the country. Massasoit in Massachusetts and Powhatan in Virginia, noted Indians who are prominent in history at the time of the early colonial period, were more like kings. Powhatan had raised himself to his kingly eminence by his bravery, energy and wisdom in council. Then there was the claim of hereditary right which the Indians recognized. He was surrounded by numerous kindred, lineal and collateral, by virtue of the practice of polygamy. The confederacy of which he was the ruler when he was approximately sixty years of age, numbered 24,000, including about 1,500 warriors within sixty miles of Jamestown.

Massasoit was probably a few years older than Powhatan at the time the Pilgrims landed. The Pokanoket Tribe, or Wampanoags, which he governed were regarded by surrounding tribes as the most powerful organization on the coast, from the Narragansett to the Massachusetts Bay, which was probably the fact. The Wampanoags were from early times, it appears, the custodians of the imperial shell, or medal. They were brave and warlike.

Referring to Massasoit, at the age mentioned (seventy years or less) Henry Rowe Schoolcraft, LL. D., has written: "Though the fire of youth had departed from his eye, yet his step was firm and dignified, and he bore himself with an air that betokened he not only had a vivid remembrance of the achievements of his tribe, but also deemed himself the true monarch of the land. The colonists found the vicinity of their location unoccupied; old cornfields, deserted lodges, and graves hastily covered, denoting the ravages of the pestilence which had depopulated this region. They made it their early endeavor to seek an interview with Massasoit, and establish friendly relations with him, the conference being managed carefully, with a view to effect; musicians and soldiers, armed with muskets, accompanied the English governor, and the negotiations afforded a fair specimen of both Indian and colonistic diplomacy. It was characterized, also, by the introduction to the Indians of that element, which has since proved a source



of so much injury to the race. Here the Indians first learned to drink intoxicating liquors.

"Neither the fact that the Narragansetts nor the Pequots in the west, nor the Penacooks in the north, having made grants in the territory of Massachusetts, is conclusive proof that the authority of Massasoit was supreme.

"It was not until both Powhatan in Virginia and Massasoit in Massachusetts had gone on to the happy hunting ground that the colonists of Jamestown and Plymouth had serious conflict with the Indians. At any time the colonists might have been annihilated by those 'kings,' and it is possible that Powhatan might have cherished some such idea, as it is recorded that 'when the first ship returned to England from Virginia, leaving barely one hundred men in the colony, there were thirty tribes and 5,000 warriors under the control of Powhatan and, at that time, the Indians, who at first appeared to be friendly, now assumed a hostile attitude, and attacked the town. No more corn being delivered, speedy ruin impended; and, had it not been for John Smith, who stepped forward in this emergency, utter destruction to the colony must have resulted.'"

**Opechanganough and Metacomet Cruel Plotters**—Just how much influence Pocahontas had in saving the life of John Smith and incidentally the life of the colony, in the time of Powhatan, her father, it is difficult to estimate, without, perhaps, detracting from the romantic story so familiar to every reader of history. She, however, lived only eight years after the foundation of Jamestown, and Powhatan but ten.

At the age of seventy, the terror of the coast tribes and the colonists was no more, but one of his brothers, Opechanganough, an unflinching enemy of the colonists, reigned in his place. He plotted the destruction of the colony, laid his plans carefully and secretly, and was ready to strike March 22, 1622, four years after the death of his distinguished brother. On that date the massacre took place, under orders from Opechanganough to spare no one with an English face, neither man, woman nor child. Three hundred and forty-seven men, women and children fell that morning, among them being six of the colonial council. The slaughter would have been much greater, had not an Indian convert, named Chanco, revealed the plot of the Indians to fly to arms at an appointed hour. The revelation came the night before and the colonists were thus able to take some precautions for personal safety of a part of the community.

According to Prince, the news of the massacre in Virginia, March 22, 1622, reached Plymouth in May, and made the colonists more fearful of Indian treachery, realizing the fate which might be theirs if

the natives should take a notion to wipe them out. Massasoit, however, faithfully kept the agreement which he had made with the colonists, even though, in all fairness, it does not appear from the records of the white men themselves that they were equally scrupulous in keeping their word.

It was not until the successor to Powhatan reigned that Jamestown colonists were up against the Indians in their savage and vindictive mood, and not until King Philip, succeeding Massasoit, sat upon the throne of the Wampanoags that the Plymouth colonists faced an annihilation plot, engineered by a warrior who never surrendered.

Dr. Mather was notorious in his hatred of the Indians. In his "Magnalia" he says: "The natives of the country had been forlorn and wretched heathen ever since their first landing here; and though we know not when or how they first became inhabitants of this mighty continent, yet we may guess that probably the devil decoyed these miserable savages hither, in hopes that the gospel should never come here to destroy or disturb his absolute empire over them. But our Eliot was on such ill terms with the devil as to alarm him with sounding the silver trumpets of heaven in his territories, and make some noble and zealous attempts toward ousting him of his ancient possessions here. There were, I think, twenty-seven nations of Indians upon this spot of ground, and our Eliot was willing to rescue as many of them as he could from the old usurping landlord of America."

The ministrations of Rev. John Eliot evidently found favor in the eyes of Mather but the magistrates were greatly displeased with him for censuring their treatment of the Indians. Rev. John Eliot and Gookin were "threatened and dared not for some time leave their houses or go into the street. Bancroft and other historians say that such was the rage of the people that the governor of Massachusetts gratified them with a victim; an Indian was executed."

**Indian Dreams and Superstitions**—The Algonquin Indians, of which the Wampanoags under Massasoit, were a division, have two terms to express the word "dream." Both are important to the Indians, as it is their conviction that dreams exert a marked influence on the religious opinions and acts. *Inabundum* refers to that panorama of sensations presented to the mental vision during sleep. A vision or sacred dream is called an *apowa*. Dreams are regarded as revelations and therefore to be sought by abstinence and fasts.

Some of the Indians believed in duplicate souls, one of which remains with the body while the person sleeps. The other is free to roam on excursions. After the death of the body, the soul departs for the Indian elysium, at which time a fire is lighted on the newly-



made grave and rekindled for four nights in succession, the period allowed for the departed to reach the Land of the Dead. It is believed that this practice was common to all the Algonquins, and was of a very impressive nature.

Among the mythological subjects was Weeng, the god of sleep, represented as having small emissaries at his command.

In the superstitious rites of the Indians, the symbol of the sun is frequently seen in their pictograph scrolls, or, from an earlier period, in their rock inscriptions. Chingwalk, the Algonquin pictographist, recognizes the symbol of it in the inscription on the Dighton Rock, on the Taunton River. Chingwalk was versed in this species of the peculiar knowledge of his people, and pronounced the Dighton Rock inscription one of their ancient muzzinabiks, made when their internal wars were rife. Taking it, figure by figure, he readily explained it to be the record of a victory gained by the chief of the tribe, over enemies, probably, of the ancestors of the Pokanokets.

**Uncas Leads Against Sassacus**—When, in 1636, the Pequots formed a conspiracy to slay all the English in their territory, they asked Canonicus and Miantonomah, leaders of the Narragansetts, old enemies, to make a treaty of peace with them and join in the war against the settlements. The inclination of the Narragansetts was to make common cause against the white men. Roger Williams was living among the Narragansetts and he used all his persuasive powers to prevent Canonicus joining the alliance, and was successful, much to the disgust of some of the Narragansetts.

The Pequots entered upon the campaign alone. The Pequots at that time had the prestige of being a powerful and warlike people. They had escaped the great pestilence which had desolated the Massachusetts coast, about the year 1617. They had 600 fighting men and a population of something like 3,000. They were expert bowmen and possessed sixteen guns which they had obtained in barter with the traders. The military strength of Connecticut was at that time estimated as 200 men. If the Pequots had gone against them in an offensive warfare, the existence of the colony would have been settled forever.

The war on the part of the settlers was conducted by John Mason, a veteran soldier who, with Myles Standish and Underhill, had learned the art of war under that renowned military tactician, William, Prince of Orange. The Pequots were bent on destroying the colonists. Shocking murders had been perpetrated in the settlements. Energetic and prompt action was required and this leader of unflinching nerve went forth with ninety men, half the militia strength of the colony, relying on assistance which had been promised by the Plymouth colony and from other sources, and that of Uncas. The latter had been born a

Pequot and in one of their quarrels had rebelled against his sachem and became the leader of a strong schism. He had a confirmed jealousy against Miantonomah, or Miontonimo, who wished to become ruler of all the New England Indians. Uncas brought into the force against the Pequots, seventy Mohigans.

Sassacus, with whom a contest had been waged by Uncas, for the Indian sovereignty, was leader of the Pequots and was personally in command of a Pequot fort situated on the Mystic River. John Mason pushed forward energetically as he believed everything depended upon striking against Sassacus before the latter had time to mature his plans. Uncas was impatient to meet his former contestant and had 500 Indians under his command. Mason did not place much reliance upon them and asked Uncas how many of them would run away when the battle commenced. "Everyone but myself," was the reply, and this proved to be the fact.

They made forced marches through the wilderness, not stopping for food. It was in May and unusually warm for that month. The men were weary, hungry and footsore, and the Indians with them became terror-stricken as they neared the Pequot fort, situated on an eminence, two hours before dawn, on a moonlight night.

**Atrocities Perpetrated by White Troops**—Mason and his men were within a rod of the northeast sally port before they were seen by the Pequots, who were aroused by the barking of a dog inside the walls of the fortifications. Mason entered the fort at one end with sixteen men, while Underhill, his second in command, entered at the opposite end with the balance of the followers. The Pequots were enraged at being thus surprised and ran about in frenzy. Fire-arms and swords were used against arrows and clubs in a hand-to-hand struggle. There were about seventy lodges, constructed of thick matting, inside the enclosure and many of the Indians took shelter in these wigwams, covering themselves with thick mats, from which it was impossible to dislodge them, and from which they fired their arrows as opportunity presented. Mason and Underhill applied firebrands to the windward side of the enclosure and soon it was an area of roaring flames, fed by the combustible material. One authority says:

The living and the dead together were roasted in heaps. The English, being themselves expelled by the furious flames, formed a circle outside the palisades, to prevent any of the enemy from effecting their escape. Their Indian auxiliaries, having recovered their courage now came up, and completed the work. Forty of the Pequots, who attempted to scale the palisades, were shot as they emerged from their flaming prison. How many hundred men, women and children were roasted on this gigantic funeral pyre, has never been estimated.

Though the Pequots had, with dreadful cruelty, massacred the unsuspecting Oldham and Sleeping Stone and his companions, though they had invaded the



sanctity of dearly-loved homes with the fury of the tiger and the hyena, yet this was a dreadful retribution, the severity of which could not have been premeditated, and for which we have not a word to offer in palliation. Having inflicted this terrible blow upon the Pequots, Mason deemed his position to be a perilous one. He anticipated the speedy vengeance of Sassacus, who was but a few miles distant, at the upper fort, and many of his men were wounded, although but two had been killed in the conflict. It was necessary to carry the wounded on biers, and the soldiers were unprovided with either food or ammunition.

The capture and burning of the Pequot fort on the Mystic exercised a controlling influence on the future prosecution of the war. It was a blow more terrible, even, than at first appeared. The night previous to the attack, the post had been reinforced by one hundred and fifty warriors from the upper fort, as Sassacus was conscious of the perils of this position. More than half of his available force had certainly been destroyed. Sassacus, realizing his hazardous position, determined to abandon his country, and fly westward. The allies, having resolved to pursue Sassacus, Uncas accompanied them, with an effective force of Mohicans, this species of warfare requiring the exercise of that peculiar skill in following a trail for which the minute observation and knowledge of Indian habits has so admirably adapted the aborigines.

**Last of the Pequots**—Sassacus having been at variance with the race residing in New England, it is not improbable that the sympathies of the Mohicans of the Hudson leaned towards Uncas. However this may be, the Mohicans of the Hudson, from its head waters to its mouth, were the vassals of the Mohawks. The fugitive chief was no sooner recognized by them, than an arrow was driven through his heart. With him fell the Pequots; the power, once the terror of the New England colonies, was destroyed, and from this time forth, they ceased to be known as a tribe.

With Sassacus fell his brother, and Mononotto, his second in command, who, at first, only wounded, was finally killed, together with five other sachems, all of whom were scalped, and the reeking trophies sent to the English, with the hope of receiving a reward. From the statement of the Indians it being apparent that there were nearly two hundred Pequots dispersed among the various tribes, a price was set upon their heads. They were hunted throughout the country in all directions, anyone being not only permitted, but encouraged, to shoot them down at sight. This remnant of the tribe at last having offered to surrender themselves as vassals to the English, the proposition was considered and accepted.

A few of the prisoners were sold in the West Indies as slaves, others distributed among the Mohicans or as household servants to the English. But the alliance into which the whites had entered in order to divide their savage foes was the occasion of future entanglements in a tortuous policy, and of later bloody struggles of an appalling character.

**Whites Consented to Murder of Miontonimo**—Following the defeat of Sassacus and the end of the Pequots as a tribe the most potent tribes in this vicinity were the Pokanokets, or Wampanoags, of which Massasoit was the sachem; and the Narragansetts. The latter were ruled by Miontonimo, who succeeded his father, Canonicus, and were of greater numerical strength than any other New England tribe. Mion-

tonimo was desirous of defeating Uncas, who had arrived at considerable distinction and was regarded as a power, with his Mohicans, on account of his having championed the cause of the whites in their warfare against Sassacus. They had been held in check when they were asked to join the Pequots in the attempt to exterminate the colonists, by Roger Williams, to whom they had sold Aquidneck, now Rhode Island. They entered into an agreement with the colonists at Boston, Plymouth and Hartford not to engage in hostilities against Uncas, without apprising the then united colonists.

After several years of mutual distrust, the Narragansetts, in 1644, marched nine hundred warriors into the territory occupied by Uncas and his Mohican followers. In order to save his village, Uncas marched out several miles to meet the adversary, with five or six hundred warriors, an inferior force. He was evidently convinced that, if he made a sufficiently sudden attack to cause confusion among the Narragansetts, he could drive them before him and thus overcome the disadvantage of fewer numbers. Consequently, he challenged Miontonimo, who was personally in command, saying:

"You have a good many brave warriors. So have I. It is unjust that so many of these brave men should lose their lives because of a personal quarrel between you and me. If you are as much of a warrior as you pretend to be, you will come forward and we will fight it out between ourselves. If you kill me, my men shall be yours. If I slay you, your men shall be mine."

Uncas was of unusual size, and would have had a marked advantage if the challenge had been accepted, but Miontonimo answered: "My men have come a long way to fight. They shall not go home without a fight."

Uncas was ready for just such an answer. He dropped swiftly to the ground, which was the signal agreed upon for his warriors to shoot their arrows and rush over him against the Narragansetts. The invaders were thrown into a panic and were cut down without mercy. Some of the swift Mohican runners caught Miontonimo and held him until Uncas had him at his mercy and gave the whoop of victory.

Uncas asked his enemy to beg that his life be spared but the proud Narragansett chieftain was speechless. Uncas, however, wanted the whites to have a hand in settling the fate of this Indian who, while a personal enemy to Uncas, had violated an agreement with the English, and he fancied he could force them to take the position of being his executioner and at the same time he would make a show of serving the English.

The English were embarrassed by the situation, but side-stepped it cleverly by deciding that, inasmuch as the territory was Indian,



aboriginal customs and laws must be allowed to take their course.

Miontonimo was remanded to the spot of his capture and, on his way there, was struck by a tomahawk by one of Uncas' war captains and fell dead at the spot which is now called Sachem's Plain, and so referred to in Trumbull's "History of Connecticut."

Historians have never agreed as to the real character of Uncas. He was of great assistance to the whites in their desperate struggle against the Pequots, but there was personal animosity which prompted him. It was a personal matter with him in dealing with Miontonimo. Of the latter, Stephen Hopkins, one of the signers of the Declaration of Independence, governor of Rhode Island nine years, says: "This was the end of Miontonimo, the most potent Indian prince the people of New England had ever any concern with, and this was the reward he received for assisting them seven years before, in their war with the Pequots." The name is given as Miantonomah by some historians.

**Another Inhuman Holocaust**—The terrible tales of inhuman tortures and atrocities in the contests between the white and red men were by no means confined to one side. The burning alive of the Indians in the fort on the Mystic, in the Pequot War, under command of John Mason, was duplicated in King Philip's War.

In the special expedition against the Narragansetts, under command of Josiah Winslow, the Indians were discovered in a swamp, where they had six hundred wigwams. It was winter and the Narragansetts had conveyed their women and children there for shelter. Some of the English captains are said to have been former sea captains and possibly buccaneers. The wigwams containing the aged, the wounded who were unable to escape, and about 300 women and children were set on fire. The victims ran about, shrieking in fear and agony, but there was no way of escape and they were consumed in this inhuman holocaust. This was a barbarous and mistaken policy on the part of General Winslow. The survivors cherished the most intense hatred against the English.

It was afterward asserted by the Narragansetts that they lost 700 warriors in the fight and 300 who died afterward from wounds. The entire number was approximately 4,000, about 800 families.

**French Nobleman Assisted King Philip**—King Philip may be regarded as the true representative of the Indian hunter. He possessed great resolution, activity and power of endurance. He loved the independence of savage life and rule, was enamored of the demonology, magic and soothsaying of the prophets, sagamores and pow-wows, regarding it as the religion of his fathers. He was proud of his ancestry and retained in his service a numerous priesthood. He detested

civilization which despoiled the rivers and forests and placed fences, which, to him, were so many symbols of destruction of freedom and preparation for servitude. At the head of his Bashabary, he ruled both civil and priestly chiefs. His name is printed in histories, as are most other names, with numerous spellings. Good authorities write of him as Metakom and Metacomit. According to the researches of Drake he appears, in Drake's "Book of the Indians," as Pometakom. His brother Alexander is referred to by the Indian name of Popquit.

When Philip prepared for his war, he supplied himself with firearms and ammunition from the commercial depot of the Baron de Castine. The latter was a French nobleman of distinction, a colonel in the king's bodyguard, who formed an alliance with the Indians to impede the progress of the colonies at Plymouth and other parts of New England. He had married and living with him, at one time, six Indian wives. He acquired a vast influence over the Indians and not only furnished them with firearms but taught them how to use them. According to Hoyt, at the time of King Philip's War the knowledge of the use of gunpowder and firearms was universal among the Indians. Castine maintained a sort of aboriginal court in the location where Castine, Maine, now is.

If the same thoroughness of preparations and alliances had been made by Sassacus, the hopes of the colonies in this section would have been extinguished in blood.

It is estimated that in 1673 the entire white population of New England was 120,000. Of this number, 16,000 were capable of bearing arms. Massachusetts alone mustered twelve troops of cavalry, comprising sixty men each, who were armed and stationed at various points for purposes of defense. The white population had spread from Plymouth, in forty years, about one hundred miles northward and the same distance westward. There were exposed points between settlements, subject to depredations of hostile Indians.

**Damnation of White Men's Fire Water**—One who was commissioned by the United States Government to make a study of the Indians of North America and report on their present status and progress, has made frequent mention of the blighting effect which ardent spirits has had on the red race since the time that the Indian "took his first drink" with Governor Bradford and Myles Standish at the conference in March, 1621, at Plymouth. In a history published by order of Congress many years ago it was stated: "The Indian abandons himself to the degrading indulgence, and may then be said to forego the means of securing prosperity and of perpetuating his race, by poisoning the very source of life. Of all the European luxuries introduced among the Indians, nothing has been more injurious to them than the use of



ardent spirits. Far in the interior of the continent, it has been observed that the taste of liquor was, at first, repulsive to the natives; but the appetite for it, once excited, became rapidly diffused. When under the influence of alcohol, the Indian appears to enjoy a state of beatitude, in which he would seem to realize the fanciful theories of his mythology, in the creation of the world of happy spirits, and of the human race."

**English Hired Indians to Scalp Their Own Colonists**—It was of tremendous importance to secure the Indians as allies when there was a war. In the first place it prevented the Indians from fighting on the opposite side. They were almost sure, whenever there was bloodshed, to have a hand in it. Their method of warfare made it possible for the side on which they fought to break down the morale of the opposing side, inasmuch as an Indian attack was likely to occur at any time, more especially at night or in the early morning, and men, women and children would be pounced upon, murdered in the most revolting manner, scalped, perhaps burned at the stake.

There is no military arm which can cope with the guerilla form of warfare carried on by the Indians. The clumsy infantry and dragoon soldiers sent into the woods after them in colonial days were little more than targets for the savages. The Indians were not encumbered by baggage and could charge and disperse with great alacrity and in an almost unbelievably short time be many miles away. An Indian considers 100 miles a short distance to travel through the wilderness, which is his natural home. To camp in the woods brings as much content to the Indian as to be at home, for he is not much attached to his own fireside. He is never wearied by traveling and never afraid of death but in a receptive attitude toward it.

The Indians were enlisted on the side of the English against the colonists in the Revolutionary War. The savage had been encouraged to deeds too horrible to relate by the French in their struggle for supremacy against the English, but they had been won over to the English for the Revolution, because they believed that the struggle would wipe out the colonists and they wanted to be on the winning side. It was estimated that there were 770 tomahawks and a like number of scalping knives which the English could have at their command, and the savages were incited to greater activity in their bloody deeds by rewards paid for the scalps of the unfortunate victims.

General Burgoyne came with his expedition in 1777 with a threat to march through the country and crush it at a blow. He had an army of 10,000 men, fully equipped with every means of offense which ships could bring, and this army was opposed by a handful of undis-

ciplined militia, which knew only too well that the skulking savages would visit the homes and murder old men, women and children so far as they were able, while the able-bodied men were in the army. It seemed reasonable to suppose that Burgoyne's threat might be carried out and his disposition to turn loose his savage allies was shown conclusively in the fate of Miss Jane McCrea.

It has been well said by Schoolcraft: "The policy of employing savages at all in war admits of no defense. The act of scalping and the indiscriminate slaughter of both sexes, are the most horrid traits of savage life. None but a weak and bigoted prince, counselled by a short-sighted and narrow-minded premier, would have adopted this system as a part of the extraneous means of reducing the colonies to subjection."

Schoolcraft's assertion against King George and Lord North did not seem to be correct. Rather did he give too great credit to the British mind for mercy in time of war, as in the War of 1812 Great Britain had made the same unjustifiable use of the Indians as she had previously done in 1776. They were her cruel and atrocious allies, and this time Tecumseh led in the tortures. The Indians had been made to believe that, in the War of 1812, they had an opportunity to regain possession of the western country. This is shown in the speech made by Tecumseh to General Proctor at Amherstburg in 1813. "When the war was declared, our Father stood up and gave us the tomahawk and told us that he was now ready to strike the Americans; that he wanted our assistance; and that he would certainly get us our lands back, which the Americans had taken from us," were his words.

In the great struggle for supremacy between the French and English, the French succeeded in arraying the numerous and scattered tribes of the Algonquins, of which the Wampanoags about Plymouth were a branch, against the English colonies. The Indian tribes had, undoubtedly, been given the idea that they had the power to crush the English colonies and had been urged to do so by every hint which could be given them to cause hatred. Students of history know that the red men could easily have annihilated the colonists at any period, if they had been able to forego their own quarrels between tribes and combine against the English. They were good fighters but poor organizers, and to this fact the colonists owe their lives and the colony its start. The Indians felt the need of a European leadership and the French were able to get closer to them than the English, because they required little of them, so far as giving up their own customs and habits were concerned, and were content to eat and lodge with the Indians, which the more fastidious English colonists could not bring



themselves to do. The Indians preferred to be allies, rather than principals in any war of annihilation.

**Boys or Wigs Caused Philip's War?**—At the close of the King Philip War it was solemnly asserted from at least one pulpit that the war had been caused by the behavior of boys in the meeting-houses. The war was the punishment of the Plymouth Colony for the "disorder and rudeness of youth in many congregations in time of the worship of God, whereby sin and profaneness is greatly increased."

Rev. John Eliot, the apostle to the Indians and a kind-hearted individual, not so much disposed to look with jaundiced eyes on trifling displays of bubbling spirits in youth in an austere age, expressed the opinion that boys had not displeased God to that extent but that wars and disturbances in the meeting-houses and other untoward happenings were a judgment on the people for wearing wigs. Whether the beloved apostle made this utterance in the light of humor is a matter of conjecture.





## CHAPTER VII

### PIONEERS, PATRIOTS AND PRACTITIONERS.

**How John Tomson Went Out to Found a New Town, Which Had the First Sunday School in America—Halifax, a Small Town in the County, Taken as a Typical Example of Life in Early Colonial Days—Plympton Furnished the Most Distinguished Heroine of the Revolutionary War—Commendation from George Washington—"Mayflower" Physician First in Long Line of Eminent Medical Practitioners—Adventures and Side Lines—Plymouth District Medical Society—Discovery of Ether—Educational Work and Sanitation—Dr. Giles Heale on the "Mayflower"—Ordeal by Touch—Lunar Influence.**

The first framed meeting-house in Plymouth was built by John Tomson and Richard Church. The latter was a brother of Colonel Benjamin Church, the noted Indian fighter who performed such conspicuous service in King Philip's War.

John Tomson was one of the "First Comers," a name given to those who came over in the "Mayflower," "Fortune" and "Anne." As he was a man of prominence in the community, performed notable military service, was a skilled artisan, helped found one of the towns which sprang from Plymouth, and left a worthy posterity, he becomes a fitting example to take as a type and show how the "First Comers" proceeded to take advantage of the rights and privileges "to which nature and nature's God entitled them," under the rules of the colony.

One of the first settlers of Halifax was John Tomson who arrived at Plymouth in August, 1623, on "The Little James and Anne," with fifty-nine other passengers. Some writers say that a Mr. Sturtevant had already settled in the town and it is possible that there were a few others who were seized with that wanderlust which seems to have inspired many of the "First Comers" in Plymouth to take up land sufficiently far from the meeting-house in Plymouth to make it very inconvenient, to say the least, for them to participate in the services and meetings.

We of the present day wonder why, when the woods were filled with Indians, from whom all kinds of evil was expected and sometimes received, that the early settlers of Plymouth did not form a community for common defense, with houses near enough together to enable them to act as a body at short notice. But Winslow's home was a dozen miles from Plymouth in Marshfield; John Alden, after his marriage to Priscilla Mullens, lived in Duxbury, some ten miles

from Plymouth Rock; Captain Myles Standish, the leader of the Pilgrim Army, in South Duxbury; Elder Brewster, Governor Bradford and Francis Cooke in Kingston, and others were equally scattered. John Tomson (the spelling is the same as he used in signing his will, although he is said to have employed other ways on other occasions) lived two miles from the center of Plymouth. He had married the daughter of Francis Cooke, one of the "Mayflower" passengers.

Halifax was, in the days of John Tomson, a part of Plymouth, as were most of the towns in Plymouth County now bearing separate names. It was incorporated as a town July 4, 1734. The previous year a meeting-house had been built. The first settlers were, in most instances, direct descendants of the first Plymouth settlers, and the names of most prominence were Thompson, Waterman, Bosworth, Briggs and Sturtevant.

As the name Thompson, the most common spelling at present, occurs so many times, it is well to explain that John Thompson was born in the northern part of Wales in 1616. In the southwestern part of England the name was spelled Tompson. Rev. John Tompson, who settled in the ministry at Berwick, on the Piscataqua River, was descended from this family. In Ireland the spelling was Thompson. In the south of Scotland it was Thomson, and of this family was James Thomson, the poet, and Charles Thomson, secretary of the Continental Congress in the days of the American Revolution. Since the early settler of Halifax was born in the northern part of Wales, in the vicinity of Scotland, he is usually considered a descendant of the Scottish family, although in his will he spelled his name differently from any of the branches which have been mentioned. The letter *p* was not introduced into the spelling by any of his descendants until a century and a half had passed. Rev. John Cotton, the first minister in Halifax, spelled the name Thomson in some of his writings which have been handed down since his ministry in the meeting-house erected when George Washington was one year old. The tombstones of Thompsons of the fourth generation usually have the *h* and *p*.

Rev. John Cotton served as first minister in Halifax until 1756. He died in civil office in Plymouth, his native town, in 1789. He was succeeded by Rev. William Patten, Rev. Ephriam Briggs and Rev. Abel Richmond, in the order named, the ministers who served up to 1800 and a few years beyond. It is said that the first Sunday school in America was established in the Halifax church. The town has had, from earliest times, a proud record as a religious and patriotic community. It is the only town in Plymouth County which was incorporated on July 4, a significant date, but the July 4th which saw the beginning



of Halifax was forty-two years before the liberty bell rang out the tidings in Philadelphia.

In the court records it appears that John Tompson and Mary Cooke were married December 26, 1645. He was at one time one of the selectmen of Barnstable, constable and highway surveyor of Barnstable, constable at Plymouth and held civil offices in Barnstable, Plymouth and Halifax at various times. His name is found with five others who refused to serve on the Grand Enquest June 3, 1657, but there is a record dated June 8, 1664, when he and twenty others were sworn as "the Grand Enquest."

When the court at Plymouth declared war against the Dutch, among those who bestowed a halberd was Sergeant Tompson. The pay of a sergeant was three shillings per day.

In an exact list of all names of the Freemen of the jurisdiction of New Plymouth, there were forty-three in Barnstable, including John Tompson, under date of May 29, 1670. Under various dates he appears referred to as one of the selectmen of Middleborough. This does not mean that he resided in that town as at present located, but he was selectman during a part of the time that the Halifax farm was included in the territory of Middleborough.

John Tomson made a will dated July 8, 1696, which was executed before Judge William Bradford, from which it appears that he was a carpenter and had not only built his own house, half of which he bequeathed to his wife to use "during her widowhood," but he built houses for his sons John and Jacob and bequeathed to the latter the house he built for him. He built, with Richard Church, brother of Colonel Benjamin Church, the Indian fighter, the first framed meeting-house in Plymouth, in 1637. For a few years he lived as a farmer in Sandwich. The land in Halifax he purchased from William Wetispaquin, sachem of the Neponsets, and the purchase was approved by the court at Plymouth. It is recorded in the Registry of Deeds at Plymouth, Book 4, Page 41. His farm consisted of about six thousand acres of land, commencing at the Herring brook in the northern part of Halifax, and extending south into Middleborough nearly five miles. His first house in Halifax was built of logs and was burned by the Indians. It was located near a spring of water on the farm now owned by Jabez P. Thompson, one of the Halifax town officials for many years.

Shortly after building this log house, Tomson and Jabez Soule, who lived about three miles away over the Indian trail, induced Pringle Peter, a young Indian to live with them and learn to work like the English. The Indian divided his time, two weeks with each one.

When the Indians plotted war against the white men this Indian would steal away and join them and when peace was made he would return, so his disappearance was equivalent to a warning, and the Tomsons and Soules would take refuge in the garrison house at Middleborough. There is a tradition that one day Tomson said to Pringle Peter: "I wonder the Indians never tried to kill me."

"Master," said the Indian, "I have cocked my gun many times to shoot you, but I loved you so well I could not."

One day when Mrs. Tomson was alone some Indians came into the house, pulled a fish which she was cooking from the kettle, and upset the rude furniture. She reprimanded them and one of Indians brandished a knife in a threatening manner. She drove them out of the house with a splint broom. This occurrence and many others convinced her husband that "There is trouble ahead; we must pack up immediately and go to the garrison."

A portion of their furniture was loaded on wagons, and valuables secreted in the swamp near at hand. They started about nightfall and had not proceeded more than two miles when they saw the light of their burning house. They passed the house of William Danson in Middleborough and urged him to accompany them, but he decided to wait until morning. His decision cost him his life as he was shot while watering his horse at a stream, which has since been called Danson's brook.

John Tomson was chosen to command the garrison. There were sixteen men with him capable of bearing arms. He applied to the governor and council for a commission and was given a general commission as Lieutenant Commandant of the garrison and its sixteen men, and in the field and at all posts of danger. This was a sort of roving commission, such as was later given to Colonel Benjamin Church, who was destined to put an end to the King Philip War by bringing about the death of the sachem.

Tomson's arms consisted of a long gun, brass pistol, sword and halberd. The length of the gun, including stock and barrel, is seven feet, four and one-half inches. It is of 12 caliber, and weighs twenty pounds and twelve ounces. The sword is also a formidable weapon.

There were thirty-five families in the old fort at Middleborough at the beginning of King Philip's War. The Indians would appear on the south side of the Nemasket River, opposite the fort and make insulting gestures and perform antics of defiance. Lieutenant Tomson ordered Isaac Howland to take the old Tomson gun and shoot one of the insulting Indians as a warning to the others. The distance was nearly half a mile away but the bullet from the long gun found its mark.



At the close of the war in 1677, John Tomson built a frame house near where the former house of logs was burned by the Indians. In it he lived the remainder of his life and it was occupied by members of the family one hundred and sixty years, until it was taken down in 1838. The land where the house stood has never been out of the Thompson family ownership.

The John Tomson Gun just referred to was the subject of a story printed in Robert B. Thomas' "Old Farmer's Almanac" in 1844, as follows:

Zadock Thompson, Esq., of Halifax, Plymouth County, Massachusetts, has now, or lately had, in his possession an old gun, which has descended to him from his ancestors, who came from Plymouth, in the third embarkation from England, in the month of May, 1622. The gun was brought to this country at that time. It is of the following description: The whole length of the stock and barrel, seven feet four and a half inches—the length of the barrel, six feet, one inch and a half—the size of the caliber will carry twelve balls to the pound; the length of the face of the lock, ten inches; the whole weight of the gun, twenty pounds and twelve ounces. At the commencement of Philip's War, the Indians became so morose, the people, in the month of June, fled for safety to the fort, which was built near what was called the Four Corners in Middleborough. The Indians would daily appear on the southeasterly side of the river, and ascend what is called the hand rock, because there was the impression of man's hand indented on it. There they would be in fair sight of the fort. Here, according to an antiquarian author, the Indians would show themselves to the people in the fort, and make their insulting gestures. The people became tired of daily insults.

Lieutenant Thompson, the commander-in-chief, ordered Isaac Howland, a distinguished marksman, to take his gun and shoot the Indian, while he was insulting them. This he did, and gave the Indian a mortal wound. Filled with revenge for their wounded companion, the Indians took to the woods—running down the hill to the mill just below the fort, where the miller was at work; he discovered them, and seized his coat and fled. Placing his coat and hat on the end of a stick, as he ran through the brush to the fort, and holding his coat over his head, the coat was perforated by several balls.

The Indians dragged their wounded companion two miles and three-quarters, to the deserted house of William Nelson, on the farm now occupied by Major Thomas Bennett. The Indian died that night and was buried with the accustomed ceremonies, and the house was burnt.

In the year 1821, nearly one hundred and fifty years after the In-

dian had been buried, Major Bennett, in ploughing the land, disinterred some of his bones, a pipe, a stone jug, and a knife, all much decayed by the slow but all-destroying hand of time. Major Bennett a few years since, measured the distance from the fort to the rock where the Indian was, and made the astonishing distance of 155 rods—nearly half a mile.

It is believed the life lived by John Tomson fairly represents that of many of the "First Comers." A few more words are appropriate about the early history of the town which he founded.

Halifax borders on Silver Lake, the largest single body of fresh water in Plymouth County. The Monponsett Lakes, called West Lake, and East Lake, are in the northern part of the town and among the prettiest lakes in this vicinity of lakes and ponds. They are twin lakes, a narrow road passing between them, and the waters mingle through a bridge over which crosses the forty-second parallel of latitude. It was on the shore of one of these lakes that Massasoit, the sachem of the Wampanoags, had one of his fishing wigwams. In this wigwam his son and successor, Alexander or Wamsutta, one of his Indian names, and his followers were surprised one morning by a committee from Plymouth and forced to accompany the white men to Marshfield to explain some alleged irregularities to the governor, an experience which so angered the proud spirit of the son of Massasoit that he became violently ill, and, shortly after being permitted to return to his headquarters, died. This experience, in Halifax, was one of the causes of the horrible King Philip War, as it was the first occasion for ill-feeling between the Plymouth colonists and the Wampanoags since the treaty made with Massasoit which he kept faithfully until his death.

The lakes in Halifax cover 1,700 acres. One of the attractive ponds, on the shores of which appear many homes of summer residents, as has for many years been the case with the Monponsett Lakes, is Robbin's Pond, near the East Bridgewater and Hanson lines. The principal stream in Halifax is the Winnetuxet River which, after passing Plympton, crosses the southwestern section of Halifax, about two miles, to its junction with the Taunton River. Small vessels were built on the Winnetuxet in early days, as far back as 1754, when Mr. Drew attempted to float one to the sea and was able to do so, taking advantage of freshets.

Taking iron ore from Monponsett was one of the early industries of the town. Ship timber was carted from Halifax to Kingston and Duxbury and became a part of the vessels which represented those towns in the fisheries to the Grand Banks. It is possible that the



sturdy timbers which framed the "Constitution," the first war vessel of the Revolution, built on the Jones River in Kingston, came from the forests of Halifax, for even in those days, hauling ship-timber to Kingston was a regular business. Lumbering has continued in the town ever since, decreasing in the same ratio as the forests have been cut off. Sawmills still furnish employment in the winter. The gate-posts for the Old Fort at Saquish were sawed by the late John T. Thompson when a lad of sixteen, in the sawmill owned by the late Ephraim B. Thompson, on the farm originally owned by John Tomson, the early settler. The raceway from this mill spilled into the Winnetuxet.

In 1837 there were a cotton-mill and woolen-mill, which were destroyed by fire. They furnished employment for about fifty people. In the year referred to 103,250 yards of cloth were manufactured, valued at \$82,600. At that time about forty were employed in shoe-making in the little dooryard shops which abounded in the county. In 1837, 30,600 pairs of shoes, valued at \$27,540 were made. The population at that time was greater than it is today, 781.

**Plympton Furnished the Most Distinguished Heroine of the Revolutionary War**—To Plympton, one of the smaller towns in Plymouth County, belongs the proud distinction of having furnished the most distinguished heroine of the Revolutionary War, Deborah Sampson. She was born in Plympton, December 17, 1760, of poor parents. She was a descendant of some of the most illustrious people of the Plymouth Colony, among them being Captain Myles Standish, Governor William Bradford, John Alden and Abraham Sampson.

Owing to the poverty of the family Deborah was "bound out" to a farmer's family as a domestic servant until she was eighteen years of age. Used to hard work and breathing the atmosphere of freedom, she wished she were a boy, that she might enlist in the service of the colonists in their quest for political liberty. She was ambitious to get an education and accomplish some real service in the world. Borrowing such books as she could she gave her time to learning all she could from them, attended a school for a time and also taught one of the early schools in the neighborhood.

Her scant earnings served to enable her to purchase some fustian cloth secretly, and with this material she made a suit of boy's clothes and hid it in a hay stack, taking no one into her confidence. When her preparations had been made she informed her friends in the neighborhood that it was her purpose to seek employment elsewhere, as she believed she could better herself and obtain a broader education, which, as they knew, she earnestly desired.

One evening she took the suit of fustian from the hay-stack, sought the privacy of the darkness beneath a low-spreading tree, and, in her excellent disguise, made her way to Worcester, fifty miles away. There she enlisted under the name of Robert Shurtleff and was assigned to Captain Webb's company of the Fourth Massachusetts Regiment. She went with the company to West Point. This was in 1778. She was accustomed to hard work, was tall, straight, with hands denoting rough use, and found herself easily accepted as a young man among the other Revolutionary soldiers. There were times, however, when some of the young men poked fun at Robert Shurtleff, because he was never known to shave and had no appearance of a beard, nick-naming him "Molly." This banter was taken in good part and responded to with wit and good nature of similar kind.

Robert Shurtleff was wounded in an engagement at Tarrytown, New York. She made light of the injury, dressed it herself and refused to go to the hospital, fearing that, in that event, her sex would be discovered and she would be obliged to retire from the service. She discharged the duties of a common soldier with fidelity and had the confidence of the officers, who always found her brave, resourceful and alert, cheerfully bearing her share in the campaigns and inspiring others. At Yorktown she served with a battery which was in active operation but came out unhurt. She was later detailed as a personal attendant of General Patterson.

About this time she had an attack of brain fever and was taken to a hospital in Philadelphia but took advantage of an opportunity to undress and get into one of the cots without assistance, where she tossed in great distress, in terror lest her sex should be discovered. One day Dr. Binney, one of the surgeons, inquired of the nurses, "How is Robert?" He was distressed to receive the answer, "Poor Bob is dead."

The doctor felt the pulse of the young soldier who was unconscious but there was a feeble pulsation. He placed his ear over the heart and was surprised to find a tight bandage around the breast. This bandage he cut away, revived the patient, and said nothing of his discovery that the bed contained a female patient. He gave the young soldier his personal attention during the time "Robert Shurtleff" remained in the hospital and arranged to give further care at his own house during convalescence.

Deborah Sampson probably was not a handsome girl but tall and straight, with fair skin, and presumably made a good-looking young soldier. While "Robert Shurtleff" was convalescing in the home of the considerate doctor, a young lady of the neighborhood often took the



patient to ride and it was easy to see was smitten with him. The doctor saw that the wooing was all on one side and was amused rather than troubled about it. Deborah Sampson has been quoted as saying that she experienced great sympathy for the young lady when, in an outburst of frankness, the soldier was told of the affection with which he was regarded. The situation was saved, however, by the soldier reminding his frank confidante that a soldier in the service could not indulge in matrimonial preparations but that possibly he would see her after the war.

**Commendation From George Washington**—When Robert Shurtleff was finally discharged from the hospital, the doctor had confided to no one excepting General Patterson the sex of the latter's personal attendant. Deborah Sampson did not know that her secret had been discovered. General Patterson placed in her hand a letter, commanding her to deliver it to General Washington.

With great embarrassment she made her way to headquarters of the commander-in-chief, although she was tempted to run away, rather than deliver the communication. The habit of discipline and realizing that not to obey the command was equivalent to desertion nerved her to sufficiently overcome her anticipation of discovery to go into his presence.

General Washington, noticing the soldier's evident distress, bade an orderly give the young man refreshment while he perused the document. When the general summoned Robert Shurtleff into his presence he in no way gave a sign what the document was about but gave the soldier an honorable discharge from the army and with it a personal letter. Opening the latter, after being dismissed by General Washington, Deborah Sampson, then a young lady not quite twenty-three years of age, found a letter expressing appreciation for her services, giving her kindly advice and an enclosure of sufficient money to enable her to return home or a considerable distance if she chose to take up civil life elsewhere. No greater consideration could have been given a young lady under circumstances such as her's than was shown by the kindly surgeon at the hospital and by the father of his country.

She returned to Massachusetts and became the wife of Benjamin Robert Gannett, a Sharon farmer. She lived in that town until her death, April 29, 1827, and reared a family of three children, Earl Bradford, Mary and Patience. Mary Gannett became the wife of Judson Gilbert and Patience Gannett of Seth Gay.

During Washington's administration, Deborah Sampson received from Congress a grant of land. She also received a pension from January 1, 1803, of four dollars per month. This was increased in

1816 to \$6.40 per month. From 1819 she drew a pension of eight dollars per month for the remainder of her life.

The Massachusetts Legislature, in 1792, in recognition of her military service, granted her thirty-four pounds. The resolve recites: "that the said Deborah exhibited an extraordinary instance of female heroism by discharging the duties of a faithful, gallant soldier, and at the same time preserving the virtue and chastity of her sex unsuspected and unblemished, and was discharged from the service with a fair and honorable character."

In 1838, Congress passed a special act directing the secretary of the treasury to pay the heirs of Deborah Sampson the sum of \$466.66. The committee which reported the bill stated: "As there cannot be a parallel case in all time to come, the committee do not hesitate to grant relief." The act (Statutes at Large, Vol. 6, page 735) reads as follows:

**Be it enacted, etc.,** That the Secretary of the Treasury be, and is hereby, directed to pay, out of the money in the treasury, not otherwise appropriated, to the heirs of Deborah Sampson, a revolutionary soldier, and late the wife of Benjamin Gannett, of Sharon, in the State of Massachusetts now deceased, the sum of four hundred and sixty-six dollars and sixty-six cents, being an equivalent for a full pension of eighty dollars per annum, from the fourth day of March, eighteen hundred and thirty-one, to the decease of Benjamin Gannett in January, eighteen hundred and thirty-seven, as granted in certain cases to the widows of revolutionary soldiers by the act passed the fourth day of July, eighteen hundred and thirty-six, entitled: "An act granting half pay to widows or orphans where their husbands or fathers have died of wounds received in the military service of the United States in certain cases, and for other purposes."

Approved July 7, 1838.

The home of Benjamin and Deborah Sampson Gannett was on East Street, Sharon, about a mile from the center of the town. Her grave is in Rockridge Cemetery, on the same street, and is decorated on Memorial Day each year by Deborah Sampson Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, of Brockton, one of the largest chapters of that organization. A tribute to her memory appears on the soldiers' monument in Sharon, placed there as directed in the will of her grandson, George Washington Gay, in which document he said: "I further request to have the name of Deborah Sampson Gannett, with proper reference to her service in the war of the revolution, inscribed on the same memorial stone." The testator was the son of Seth and Patience Gay, the latter being the youngest daughter of the heroine.

At the age of forty-two years, Mrs. Gannett consented to make a lecture tour, telling her story and some of her patriotic convictions. This lecture was given four nights in succession at the Federal Street



Theatre in Boston, at the Court House in Albany, New York, and in various other places in Massachusetts, Rhode Island and New York. The tour was a pleasure to Mrs. Gannett. She spoke before large audiences and received considerable financial profit which she sent to her family in Sharon. Moreover, during her tour she visited Captain George Webb at his home in Holden, Massachusetts. He was the captain of the company to which she was assigned upon her enlistment at Worcester. She also spent several weeks at the home of General John Patterson in Lisle, New York, in whose service she served as personal attendant and to whom the discovery of her sex was told by the hospital surgeon, which led to her being sent to George Washington and, by him, discharged. General Patterson was a member of Congress the two years following and recalled her lecture tour to his colleagues when the act pensioning her came before the House.

Mrs. Gannett said in her address that she would narrate "Facts, which, though I once experienced, and of which memory has ever been painfully retentive, I cannot now make you feel, nor paint to the life."

"I became an actor in that important drama, with an inflexible resolution to persevere through the last scene; when we might be permitted and acknowledged to enjoy what we had so nobly declared we would possess, or lose with our lives—Freedom and Independence!"

The young lady so attentive to "Robert Shurtleff" while the latter was convalescing after the experience in the Philadelphia hospital, was a niece of Dr. Binney, the surgeon who had discovered the sex of his military patient. The family of Deborah Sampson still cherishes a shirt and vest which, with other clothing, was presented to the soldier by the young lady when "Robert Shurtleff" left with the letter to George Washington. Recalling the experience of the generous offer to pay for educational advantages and later a union in marriage from the young niece of Dr. Binney, Deborah Sampson said some years before her death: "The keenest anguish I ever experienced was when she told me of her affection. I told her I ardently desired education but could not avail myself of such generosity."

She also recalled her feelings when she knew George Washington had been informed of her secret, and said: "How thankful was I to that great and good man who so kindly spared my feelings. One word from him at that moment would have crushed me to the earth. But he spoke no word and I blessed him for it."

**"Mayflower" Physician First in Long Line of Eminent Medical Practitioners**—Not only did the Pilgrims bring their historian with them but also provided themselves with the first physician, Samuel Fuller.

His parents, Mr. and Mrs. Edward Fuller, died soon after they landed but Dr. Fuller lived until 1633 and left two children.

In the early days of the Plymouth Colony, and the same was true after it became Plymouth County, the minister was the most important personage in town. No town could be incorporated, according to the Plymouth Court, unless it had a church and settled minister and could show reasonable ability and disposition to support the minister. He not only ministered to the souls but the bodies of the people. There were always plenty who "did not believe in doctors," and they rather trusted to the prayers of the pastor and the deacons, as they had Scriptural authority for doing. As early as 1623, however, Dr. Samuel Fuller of Plymouth was looked upon as the medical practitioner. This was in the days of Massasoit, great sachem of Wampanoags, faithful keeper of the faith with the Pilgrims, and when his son and successor, Alexander, was taken violently ill in Marshfield, following a controversy with a committee from Plymouth which waited upon him in his wigwam at Monponsett Pond, in Halifax, Dr. Fuller was called into the case, instead of the Indian medicine man.

Early medical practitioners were usually paid for their services with butter, "taller," cider, spinning and rum, or other articles of barter, a custom which is not wholly discontinued to this day.

In cases of illness the stock of dried herbs hanging from the rafters were steeped and administered by a member of the family or a neighbor and the minister was called in. If the doctor was called, he galloped to the door, with his remedies and surgical instruments in his saddlebags. The lancet was always ready at hand and most of the items in the early bills, when any were made out, were for "visit and venesection."

The first physician in the Plymouth Colony, incidentally the first physician in New England, was Dr. Samuel Fuller whose home was in that part of the present town of Kingston known as Rocky Nook. So far as known he never possessed the degree of Doctor of Medicine, but that was a rare distinction in the early days. His remedies included many of the homely herbs which were believed to possess curative properties. His wife was of great assistance to him in his professional practice, especially acting as midwife. Governor Bradford refers to him in his history as "a man Godly, and forward to do good, being much missed after his death." In 1629, soon after the settlement of Salem, Governor Bradford received a request from Governor Endicott, for Dr. Fuller to come to Salem and help check an epidemic which was prevailing at that time among the Puritans. The request was acceded to and afterward Dr. Fuller practiced for a



time in Charlestown. He died in 1633, much lamented by the colonists from Cape Cod to Cape Ann.

A nephew of Dr. Fuller came over from England in 1640, practiced in Plymouth for a time, removed to Barnstable in 1652, and in 1673 was appointed surgeon-general to the Provincial forces raised in the vicinity. He died in 1678.

Among the early physicians was Dr. Francis LeBaron, a skillful surgeon and medical practitioner, whose coming to Plymouth was occasioned by the wreck of a French privateer in Buzzards Bay. The crew were made prisoners and taken to Boston, charged with cruising on the American coast with piratical intent. The inhabitants of Plymouth asked for the release of Dr. LeBaron that he might practice as physician in that town. The request was granted and he and his descendants performed exceedingly good service in the colony. Rev. Samuel LeBaron, who settled in Mattapoisett in 1772, when it was a part of Rochester, was one of his greatly beloved descendants.

Dr. Francis LeBaron came to Plymouth in 1694. He married the following year Mary, daughter of Edward Wilder of Hingham. Their oldest son was Dr. Lazarus LeBaron, who was one of the selectmen of the town of Plymouth from 1735 to 1756, inclusive, and from 1766 to 1769, inclusive. During those years he presided at many of the town meetings. It appears from the records of Plymouth that Dr. Francis LeBaron bequeathed to the town of Plymouth in his last will about ninety acres of woodland in Carver, not far from the Middleborough line, and, at a town meeting held in the courthouse at Plymouth November 3, 1773, a committee was chosen to make a demand upon the executors of the will of Dr. Lazarus LeBaron of the donation.

Dr. Lazarus LeBaron was born in Plymouth, December 26, 1698, and died in 1773, aged seventy-five years. Two sons, Joseph and Lazarus, became physicians.

There is on Burial Hill in Plymouth a dark slate tombstone, about eighteen inches above the ground on which appears "Here lyes ye body of Francis LeBararran phytitian who departed this life Aug ye 8th 1704 in ye 36 year of his age." His name has been immortalized by Mrs. Jane G. Austin in her book, "A Nameless Nobleman."

Opposite is a large thick stone, four feet tall and about the same width, of gray slate on which appears the dates of his birth and death and the following epitaph:

My flesh shall slumber in the ground  
Till the last trumpet's joyful sound  
Then burst the chains with sweet surprise  
And in my Saviour's image rise.

Dr. Samuel Seabury was an early physician in Duxbury. Baas' "History of Medicine" refers to him as having died in 1680, leaving an estate as follows:

Nicholas Culpeppier Practice of Physic	1.4 s. o p
Nicholas Culpeppier Anatomy	3 s
Reed's Practice of Surgery	1 s. 6 p
Physician's Practice	1 s
Latin Herbal	1.10 s
Art of Distillation, by Jno. French	2 s
Surgical Instruments	12 s
Antimonial Cup	5 s

There is a record of Dr. James Thatcher, a native of Barnstable, who became a surgeon in the Revolutionary War, and afterwards was author of several books. Among them were: "Revolutionary Journal," "Medical Biography," "History of Plymouth," "American Orchardist," and "Medical Dispensary." He had studied medicine with Dr. Abner Hersey. After serving seven and a half years as an army surgeon he settled in Plymouth and there is this testimony recorded as coming from his quill: "I have seen public offices courting competent men to fill them; and I have seen them filled by men who with a religious conscientiousness acquitted themselves of the duty: but this now seems an antiquated morality."

Dr. Thatcher in his "Military Journal of the Revolutionary War," refers to an occurrence in Barnstable in 1774: "A body of men assembled and obstructed the passage of the court-house door. The leader of this assemblage was Dr. Nathaniel Freeman of Sandwich, a bold Son of Liberty. Col. James Otis, the venerable chief justice, preceded by the sheriff, approached and demanded admission. Dr. Freeman replied that it was the intention of the people to prevent the court being opened to exercise those unconstitutional powers with which Parliament had invested them. The chief justice, in his majesty's name, commanded them to disperse and permit the court to enter and proceed to business. But his majesty's name had lost its power. It can have no charms with the "Sons of Liberty." The judge then said he had acquitted himself of duty, and retired. The proceedings had been discussed and concerted prior to the court term, and Col. Otis, himself a staunch whig, was, it is believed, not only apprised of, but actually acquiesced in their bold measure.

Dr. Abner Hersey, to whom Dr. Thatcher had been apprenticed when he was eighteen years of age, was one of three sons of James Hersey of Hingham who became physicians. Ezekiel was graduated from Harvard College in 1728 and practiced in Hingham. Dr. James Hersey practiced in Barnstable and it was from him that Dr. Abner Hersey



obtained his early knowledge of medicine, studying in his office. While thus engaged Dr. James died and Dr. Abner carried on the practice.

**A Vegetarian and Wore Red Flannel**—The latter was eccentric, wore large, loose-fitting garments, his overcoat consisting of seven calfskins lined with flannel and, as red flannel was supposed to have peculiarly effective remedial qualities at that time, it is presumed that the lining was of that lurid hue. Dr. Hersey ate principally fruit, milk and vegetables, was a vegetarian and total abstainer from alcoholic beverages, which was, in itself, sufficient in those days to give him a reputation for being decidedly "queer." He was, however, a studious, skillful and much-liked physician and one of the early members of the Massachusetts Medical Society, the parent society in New England. He accumulated an ample estate, the chief part of which he bequeathed to the churches in Barnstable. He left five hundred pounds to establish a professorship of anatomy and surgery at Harvard College. He died January 9, 1787, aged sixty-six.

To return to Dr. James Thatcher, during his long term as a physician and surgeon in the Revolutionary War, he first served as surgeon's mate under Dr. John Warren. He was later, in a different regiment, in the expedition of Ticonderoga, was at the siege of Yorktown, witnessed the surrender of Cornwallis and the execution of Major André. He retired from army service in 1783, and settled in Plymouth. Through his efforts the canopy was erected over Plymouth Rock, a picture of which for generations appeared in most of the geographies studied throughout the United States. The canopy had built into it the bones of some of the Pilgrim Fathers. It was torn down and replaced by another canopy previous to the celebration of the Tercentenary of the Pilgrims in 1920.

Dr. Thatcher and his brother-in-law, Dr. Nathan Hayward, established the first stage line between Plymouth and Boston, in 1796. He heard of the burning of anthracite coal in Pennsylvania and was the first to use that fuel in Plymouth. He introduced the tomato plant in Plymouth. It was in those days called "love apple," and by most people not considered suitable for food.

Many books on medical subjects were written by Dr. Thatcher. In one of these books on "Observations on Hydrophobia," published in 1812, he expressed the opinion that there might be methods of prevention or cure and that study along that line should be encouraged. He had been a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society at that time nearly a decade and his inclination to adopt new ideas and his thoughts in advance of his generation attracted much attention among his fellow-members. Among the students whom he instructed in his

office was Dr. Benjamin Shurtleff, of Carver, an ancestor of Dr. W. D. Shurtleff of Kingston. He received the honorary degrees of Master of Arts and Doctor of Medicine from Harvard College and from Dartmouth College in 1810 and was made a Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He died in 1844, one of the most progressive citizens of Massachusetts.

The Massachusetts Medical Society to which reference has already been made, was the parent organization of the Plymouth District Medical Society, to which most of the eminent physicians of Plymouth County at present belong. The Massachusetts society was incorporated November 1, 1871. The charter was signed by John Hancock, governor of the Commonwealth; and Samuel Adams, president of the Massachusetts Senate. To that organization most Plymouth County physicians belonged until the Plymouth District Medical Society was established October 2, 1850.

Among those early members, in addition to those already mentioned in that connection, was Dr. Jonathan Leonard, who was born in Bridgewater, February 17, 1763. His ancestor, Solomon Leonard, was one of the original proprietors of Bridgewater, moving to that place from Duxbury.

Dr. Leonard attended Harvard College and two years after his graduation from that institution in 1786, settled in Sandwich. Harvard College conferred upon him the honorary degree of Doctor of Medicine in 1824. It has been said of him "He had the confidence and respect of his associates and was held in esteem as far as his name was known." His death occurred January 25, 1849, aged eighty-six years.

Another of the early physicians, conspicuous in walks of honor and service to their fellow-men, aside from their professional requirements, included Dr. Charles T. Jackson, who was born in Plymouth in 1805, graduated from Harvard Medical School in 1829, studied later in Paris and was made a Fellow of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, in recognition of his scientific labor and research. He served as geologist of Maine, New Hampshire and Rhode Island, explored the southern shores of Lake Superior and opened a copper mine. It is said that he suggested the possibility of communication by means of electricity and made important discoveries before Professor Samuel F. B. Morse secured a patent for the telegraph in 1840.

**Discovery and Application of Ether**—A memorial was presented to Congress in 1852, signed by 143 physicians of Boston, ascribing the discovery of anesthesia exclusively to Dr. Jackson. A contradictory claim was made in behalf of Dr. W. T. G. Morton and scientific and



general opinion have been divided whether one or the other should receive credit for this great advance in saving of human life by surgery. The French Academy of Science decreed a prize of 2,500 francs to Dr. Jackson for the discovery of etherization and the same amount to Dr. Morton for the application. Dr. Jackson received decorations from the governments of France, Prussia, Sweden, Turkey and Sardinia, his recognition as a man of broad and scientific learning extending into many countries. He died in 1880.

Dr. Gridley Thaxter, one of the Revolutionary War surgeons, was born in Hingham, April 9, 1756. He engaged as a surgeon on the privateer "Speedwell" and sailed from Boston in 1776, under Captain Jonathan Greeley. He continued on her during the taking of several prizes until 1778. He served with Captain David Ropes of Salem in the brig "Wildcat," which was a schooner of fourteen tons, in the harbor of Halifax, which subsequently was recaptured by a schooner, brig and two sloops. The frigate "Surprise" proved truly named to them and the following day they were upon her deck as prisoners. Dr. Thaxter remained on the prison ship about three months. He was exchanged from Halifax a month later.

He was on the brig "Warrior," fourteen guns, Captain William Patten, Jr., in May, 1780, when that brig was captured by the sloop-of-war "Captain Ingalls." He was kept aboard a prison ship three weeks in New York. After his release he shipped on the State ship "Mars," Captain Simeon Sampson, and remained as surgeon until 1781.

Dr. Thaxter had bought a set of dishes in Paris which, strangely enough, he was able to retain in his possession during several of his Revolutionary adventures. He intended them as a gift to his bride when he should be married at the close of the war. The dishes were still intact when he was discharged from the service and he stored them in his father's barn in Hingham until his approaching wedding. This took place, the bride being the daughter of General Benjamin Lincoln of Hingham, who also served in the Revolutionary War.

Dr. Thaxter got the girl but she never got the dishes, as the Thaxter barn was burned and only two dishes were saved. Those two, however, have come down with the story from Revolutionary times and are still cherished possessions. One of them was exhibited at the observance of the sixtieth anniversary of the organization of the Plymouth District Medical Society at Abington, May 27, 1911, by Dr. Gilman Osgood, at that time historian of the society.

Dr. Thaxter moved from Hingham to Abington in 1783. He died in that town in 1845, aged eighty-nine years.

Dr. Ezekiel Thaxter, son of Dr. Gridley Thaxter, was a physician in

Abington, beginning before the death of his father, and succeeding him until his death October 11, 1856. He was sixty-nine years of age. The last three years of his life he suffered from paralysis. He held the office of town clerk of Abington from 1821 to 1832.

One of the most noted men in the colony was Dr. John Clark. He early took a scientific interest in promoting agriculture and especially in the introduction of improved breeds of horses, cattle and other domestic animals.

One of the founders of the Pilgrim Society, which has done so much to preserve sites and locations of early history, was Dr. Zaccheus Bartlett. He was graduated from Harvard in 1789 and was orator of the day at the observance of the Pilgrim anniversary in 1798.

Among the early physicians of note who served in the Revolutionary War was Dr. Harvey N. Preston.

Governor Winthrop has left us a record of Dr. Robert Child who settled in Hingham in 1644, saying he was "a man of quality, a gentleman and a scholar."

Dr. David Jones of Abington settled in that town about 1750. He was a scientific man and one of fine distinctions. Cole brook courses through the farm which he occupied and various reasons have been given for the name, many supposing that it was named in honor of some person of that name. Others have said that Cold brook was the correct name and it took the other name from the prevailing habit of Yankees to neglect sounding the final *d*. Dr. Jones, however, observed that along the banks of this stream cole, a kind of kale or cabbage which does not form a head, grew luxuriantly and he named the brook in various references as deserving of this distinction.

He was one of the selectmen of Abington six years, was chosen by the town to purchase a bell of about 600 pounds weight for the First Church. In 1774, he was chosen a delegate from the town to a county congress held in Plympton. At that convention he was chosen one of the committee to report resolves on the oppressive acts of the British Parliament and the rights of the Colonies. He was a delegate to the first Provincial Congress at Salem, October 5, 1774, and also at the third at Watertown, July 31, 1775. He was a delegate to the convention at Cambridge in September, 1779, to form a State Constitution. His son, Dr. David Jones, Jr., was a surgeon in the Revolutionary War. He had a hospital for smallpox patients in Abington for a year or two. He moved to Yarmouth, Maine, where he practiced over thirty years.

Dr. Jeremiah Hall of Hanover settled in that town in 1749, was surgeon in Captain Joseph Thatcher's company in 1757, during the



French and Indian War, moved to Pembroke in 1764. While a practicing physician in Pembroke he was chosen a delegate to the Provincial Congresses of 1774-75.

Dr. Lemuel Cushing succeeded him as practitioner in Hanover. During the Revolution he served as surgeon in the army, by appointment of the Provincial Congress.

Another Hanover physician of distinction in the Revolutionary times was Dr. Peter Hobart. He was an apprentice to Jeremiah Lincoln as an iron smith but was ambitious to receive an education and entered Harvard College with savings which he had earned as an iron worker. He was graduated from Harvard in 1775, settled in Hanover at the age of twenty-five, and was a useful citizen and skillful practitioner. On his tombstone in Center Hanover Cemetery appears the following epitaph:

Thousands of journeys, night and day,  
I've travelled weary on the way  
To heal the sick—but now I am gone  
A journey never to return.

Dr. Joseph Bossuet came from Paris, France, his native city, and joined forces with the American colonists about the same time as Lafayette. He was a physician and surgeon in the Washington army, was captured by the British and suffered heavy property losses, which is supposed to have determined his decision to remain in this country and continue his practice. He practiced in Hanover and Hingham, in the former town in 1799 and 1800 and possibly longer.

Dr. Pierre Cartier, a Frenchman of scholarly attainments but eccentric, came to Plymouth from the Island of Martinique about this time and was a physician in Hanover seven years. He practiced for a time in Hanson and returned to Martinique.

Dr. Richard Briggs practiced in Abington about 1780. He was a surgeon on board a public ship in the Revolutionary War. His practice in Abington covered thirty years and he then moved to Chesterfield in Hampshire County. He left numerous children, some of whom moved to the West.

**Grandfather of a Poet**—Dr. Philip Bryant, a native of Middleborough, early became a resident of North Bridgewater, to which town (now Brockton) his father moved at a time when, as Dr. Bryant has been quoted as saying: "a greater part of it was thought unfit for the purpose of settlement."

There was, at the same time, a Dr. Abiel Howard in West Bridgewater, an older physician, to whom Dr. Bryant became an apprentice. Dr. Howard had a daughter who later became the wife of Dr. Philip

Bryant and, in time, the grandmother of William Cullen Bryant, the noted poet. Dr. Bryant practiced medicine in North Bridgewater until his death, at the age of eighty-five years, in 1817.

One of his sons, Dr. Peter Bryant, was born in North Bridgewater August 12, 1767. He was a pronounced student, gaining much knowledge and inspiration from his visits to his grandfather, Dr. Abiel Howard, in West Bridgewater, who was the possessor of an unusually good library for those times. From both his grandfather and father he obtained a knowledge of medicine, supplemented by study under Dr. Louis Leprilite of Norton, Massachusetts, a French physician and surgeon of eminence.

He moved to Cummington, Massachusetts, married a daughter of Ebenezer Snell, also a native of North Bridgewater. Present at the wedding was the grandmother of the bride, Mrs. Abigail Snell, who lived to see seven generations of descendants and was nearly one hundred years of age at her death.

For several years, Dr. Peter Bryant represented the fast-growing town of Cummington in the General Court of Massachusetts, serving in both the House and Senate. He took a prominent part in legislation to raise the standard of medical education in the Commonwealth. He was a careful and successful practitioner, using every opportunity to improve himself in his profession and as a citizen. He traveled to ports in the Indian Ocean, spent a time on the Isle of France perfecting himself in the French language, wrote occasional poems and was a man of attainments unusual in his day. In politics he served with zeal as a member of the Federal party and some of his satirical verses, printed in the "Hampshire Gazette," showed alike his scholarship and uncompromising convictions.

The foregoing is by no means a complete list of the eminent physicians in the early days but those mentioned were typical of all who were conscientious practitioners of the healing art, through popular medicine. The list may be taken as mentioning some of those, at least, who were not only faithful in their ministrations to the sick, but in their full duties as citizens and builders of the republic which began on the "Mayflower," and brings us up to the time of the organization of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1781. Most of the prominent physicians throughout the Commonwealth were members of that society until district societies were set apart, among them the Plymouth District Medical Society.

Concerning those early practitioners, from Dr. Samuel Fuller who came in the "Mayflower," to the time of the organization of the State society, it is well to echo the words of Dr. Ebenezer Alden: "Let us



cherish the memory of such men. As we drop a tear of sympathy over their graves, we can scarcely fail to grow wiser and better. A thought of their sufferings will lighten our own; and should any of us perish as they did in the conscientious discharge of our duty, it may console us in the hour of our departure to reflect that after our decease we shall still live not only in the grateful recollections but also in the worthy deeds of some who, emulating our example, may be led by it to practice some of the virtues which they admire."

Among the early members of the Massachusetts Medical Society in Plymouth County, as we know it, was Dr. Isaachar Snell of North Bridgewater, graduated from Harvard College in 1797. He gave special attention to surgery and had performed the operation of lithotomy with great success. He moved from North Bridgewater to Winthrop, Maine, and later to Augusta, Maine, dying in the latter city in 1847, aged seventy-two years.

In 1844, two brothers, Dr. Silas L. Loomis, and Dr. Lafayette Charles Loomis, came from their native town, North Coventry, Connecticut, to North Bridgewater, Massachusetts, and established the Adelpian Academy. Both were graduated Doctors of Medicine from Georgetown College, but neither of them practiced medicine in this county. They were writers of books, teachers in colleges and academies, and men of unusual attainments. Dr. Silas L. Loomis was a soldier in the Civil War. More of their career will be found in the history of Brockton (North Bridgewater), in its proper place in this volume.

Dr. ——— Richards was a practicing physician in Whitman, formerly South Abington, commencing about 1806. In addition to his practice he, in 1812, manufactured cloth, associated with Mr. Tirrell of Boston. He removed to Cummington, Massachusetts.

Dr. John Champney was a physician in Abington, following his service in the War of 1812.

Dr. Gideon Barstow was an early member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, having been admitted in 1808. He was a member of the convention for revising the Constitution of Massachusetts in 1820, and the two following years a member of Congress from Massachusetts. He was a graduate from Brown University and had practiced medicine in Salem before locating in Hanover. Still later he moved to Brookline, Massachusetts, and died in St. Augustine, Florida, in 1852, where he had gone for his health.

Dr. Calvin Tilden lived in the Gad Hitchcock house in Hanson and practiced in that town and in Hanover. Gad Hitchcock, the first minister in Hanson, was a clergyman of sterling character, patriotic and

fearless, and an ancestor of Dr. Tilden. The latter was admitted to the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1810. He died in 1832, aged fifty-seven years. The historic house in Hanson where he resided is still standing.

In 1810 the Legislature directed towns to appoint committees and defray the expense of vaccinating people against smallpox. Each town had its "Pest House." Eleven years before Edward Jenner, a physician of Berkeley, England, discovered vaccination. The first person in the United States to be vaccinated with matter procured from England, was a son of Dr. Benjamin Waterhouse of Boston.

There is a record quoted in Thatcher's "History of Plymouth" of 1816: "The town voted to employ Dr. Sylvanus Fancher to inoculate the inhabitants with the kine pox, at the expense of the town, which was done, and 2,800, chiefly of the young inhabitants, were vaccinated."

As has already been stated, the Massachusetts Medical Society was incorporated in 1781. The membership increased so rapidly from all parts of the Commonwealth that, in 1850, by act of the Legislature, district societies were allowed to elect councillors and censors. Each branch society took the name of the location or county in which its membership was located. The first meeting of the Plymouth District Medical Society was held at the King House in Abington, May 27, 1851, the district consisting of Plymouth County, with the exception of Middleborough, Rochester and Wareham, which are not included. The original officers elected were: President, Dr. Paul L. Nichols, of Kingston; secretary, Dr. Winslow Warren, of Plymouth; and treasurer, Dr. Alfred C. Garrett, of Abington; librarian, Dr. J. M. Underwood, of East Abington, now Rockland; councillors, Dr. Ezekiel Thaxter, of Abington, and Dr. Timothy Gordon, of Plymouth; censors, Dr. Timothy Gordon and Dr. Josiah S. Hammond of Plympton. Other physicians who signed the roll that day were Dr. Hector Orr, of East Bridgewater; Dr. Samuel Orr, of East Bridgewater; Dr. Benjamin Hubbard, of Plymouth; Dr. Charles A. King, of Abington, and Dr. Francis Collamore, of Pembroke.

By the organization of Norfolk South District in 1884, Hingham and Hull were lost to the older organization.

The society holds meetings every three months and the annual elections take place in April. At each meeting an essay is read by some member, cases are reported, there are discussions and a dinner. All who are admitted as members, after recommendation by the censors, are also members of the Massachusetts Medical Society. In 1906 for the first time, the so-called Homœopathists were admitted to membership in the parent society.



**Plymouth District Medical Society**—The first president of the Plymouth District Medical Society, Dr. Paul Louis Nichols of Kingston—which, by the way, was the home of the first physician in what is now Plymouth County, Dr. Samuel Fuller of the “Mayflower”—was born in Cohasset, September 24, 1788. He remained president of the society until 1867. He practiced in Kingston more than fifty-five years and during that time never left his practice, except to attend the Massachusetts Medical Society’s annual meetings and one visit of a week in New York. His death came after he had attained the age of an octogenarian.

Dr. Garrett, the first treasurer, was an author of several works on electricity as a therapeutical agent.

The presidents of the Plymouth District Medical Society, in the order of their election and service, have been as follows.

1. Dr. Paul L. Nichols, Kingston, 1851-67.
2. Dr. Asa Millet, East Bridgewater, 1868-69.
3. Dr. Josiah Sturtevant Hammond, Plympton, 1870-71.
4. Dr. Benjamin Hubbard, Plymouth, 1872-73.
5. Dr. Nelson Briggs Tanner, North Abington, 1874-75.
6. Dr. Henry Newell Jones, Kingston, 1876-77.
7. Dr. Henry Watson Dudley, Abington, 1878-79.
8. Dr. Woodbridge Ruggles Howes, Hanover, 1880-81.
9. Dr. Benjamin Franklin Hastings, Whitman, 1882-83.
10. Dr. Henry Francis Borden, Bridgewater, 1884-86-87.
11. Dr. Francis Collamore, Pembroke, 1885.
12. Dr. James Bartlett Brewster, Plymouth, 1888-89.
13. Dr. Jubal Converse Gleason, Rockland, 1890.
14. Dr. Amasa Elliot Paine, Brockton, 1891-93.
15. Dr. Eli Ayer Chase, Brockton, 1893-95.
16. Dr. Jonas Edward Bacon, Brockton, 1895-97.
17. Dr. Horatio Franklin Copeland, Whitman, 1897-99.
18. Dr. Edgar Dwight Hill, Plymouth, 1899-1900.
19. Dr. Alfred Atwater MacKeen, Whitman, 1900-1902.
20. Dr. Jesse Howes Averhill, Brockton, 1902-1904.
21. Dr. William Palmer Chisholm, Brockton, 1904-1906.
22. Dr. Frank George Wheatley, North Abington, 1906-1908.
23. Dr. Fred Jerome Ripley, Brockton, 1908-1910.
24. Dr. Wallace Cushing Keith, Brockton, 1911.
25. Dr. Wilfred G. Brown, Plymouth, 1912.
26. Dr. Charles Edward Lovell, Whitman, 1913.
27. Dr. Charles Edward Lovell, Whitman, 1914.
28. Dr. Nathaniel Clark King, Brockton, 1915.

29. Dr. Nathaniel K. Noyes, Duxbury, 1916.
30. Dr. Nathaniel K. Noyes, Duxbury, 1917.
31. Dr. Gilman Osgood, Rockland, 1918.
32. Dr. Joseph Frame, Rockland, 1919.
33. Dr. Francis J. Hanley, Whitman, 1920.
34. Dr. Richard Baxter Rand, Whitman, 1921.
35. Dr. Arthur Loring Beals, Brockton, 1922.
36. Dr. Frank H. Burnett, Brockton, 1923.
37. Dr. Joseph Henry Lawrence, Brockton, 1924.
38. Dr. James Henry Drohan, Brockton, 1925.
39. Dr. Alfred Charles Smith, Brockton, 1926.
40. Dr. John P. Shaw, Brockton, 1927.

Dr. Frank George Wheatley of Abington, an honored member of the society, passed away in 1926. The annal town report of that year was printed with a good likeness of the doctor as a frontispiece, inasmuch as every family in Abington wanted a picture of their friend and townsman. He had acted as moderator at the town meetings since 1891. In the same town report the library trustees had a memorial tribute printed as a part of their report. It was as follows:

"In the passing of Frank G. Wheatley, chairman since 1911 and member from 1896, the Board of Library Trustees met the heaviest loss it could sustain. For thirty years, during a public life of exceptional distinction, he gave generously of his time and interest to the library. The Trustees desire to place on record their deep appreciation of the value of this service, to do honor to the qualities that made Dr. Wheatley a great figure in this community, and to offer to his memory the tribute of their lasting gratitude."

Dr. Wheatley was born in Woodbury, Vermont, in 1851. He was educated at the Vermont Seminary, Dartmouth College, and at the Vermont State Normal School. He was employed for a time as a teacher, but took his degree of Doctor of Medicine from Dartmouth in 1883. He practiced in Norwich, Vermont, before coming to North Abington. He had served as a trustee of the Massachusetts School for Feeble Minded, as a United States Pensioner Examiner, as associate medical examiner of the Second Plymouth District, professor of *materia medica* at Tufts College Medical School; was a member of the American Medical Association, Massachusetts Medical Society, American Therapeutic Society, Massachusetts Association of Boards of Health, John Cutler Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons; Pilgrim Royal Arch Chapter, Old Colony Commandery, Knights Templar; Winthrop Lodge, Independent Order of Odd Fellows; member of the Abington School Committee; served in the Massachusetts General Court as a representative in 1904 and 1905 and in the Senate in 1907 and 1908.



**Death of Dr. Wallace C. Keith**—The society lost one of its most popular and devoted members in June, 1927, by the death of Dr. Wallace C. Keith, of Brockton, after a long illness. He had held several positions in the community life of Brockton, having served on the school committee with especial distinction several terms.

Dr. Wallace Cushing Keith was born in West Bridgewater November 25, 1858. He married Helen Richmond Ford, of Brockton, January 14, 1885. He was educated at the North Bridgewater High School, Adams Academy, Quincy; Amherst College; and Harvard Medical School. He had practiced in Brockton since 1885 and was associated with the staffs of the Boston City Hospital and Brockton Hospital. He was a member of the Boylston Medical Society, Massachusetts Medical Society since 1884, Brockton Medical Society, Brockton Board of United States Pension Examining Surgeons, Association State Inspectors of Health, Loyal Legion, Masonic bodies of Brockton and Scottish Rite bodies of Boston.

Dr. Keith was president of the Plymouth District Medical Society at the time it observed its sixtieth anniversary in 1911. In his address of introduction, on that occasion, he said: "I find that Dr. Samuel Fuller, one of the company who landed in Plymouth in 1620, was the first physician in New England. History tells us that for twelve years he went in and out among the people, like a guardian angel, making all happy with whom he was associated." The same words, uttered by Dr. Keith, might truthfully be said of Dr. Keith, "he went in and out among the people, like a guardian angel, making all happy with whom he was associated."

**Medical Society Officers**—The officers of the society in 1927 were: President, Dr. John F. Shaw, of Plymouth; vice-president, Dr. Thomas H. McCarthy, Brockton; secretary-treasurer, Dr. Loring B. Packard, Brockton; councillors, Dr. Nathaniel K. Noyes, Duxbury, nominating; Dr. Alfred C. Smith, alternate, Brockton; Dr. John J. McNamara, Brockton; Dr. George A. Moore, Brockton; Dr. C. H. Colgate, Rockland; Dr. James H. Drohan, Brockton; censors, Dr. Nathaniel K. Noyes, supervisor; Dr. Walter H. Pulsifer, Whitman; Dr. W. G. Brown, Plymouth; Dr. David B. Tuholski, Brockton; Dr. R. B. Rand, North Abington; orator, Dr. David Bridgewood, for 1928, Brockton; librarian, Dr. John H. Weller, State Farm, Bridgewater; commissioner of trials, Dr. Laurence B. Reed, Plymouth.

**Medical Examiner Nearly Fifty Years**—Dr. A. Elliot Paine of Brockton in March, 1926, tendered his resignation as medical examiner in the Brockton district, after serving in that capacity more than forty-nine years. He had hoped to hold the position an even half century but failing health made it desirable that he tender his resignation to Gover-

nor Fuller who accepted the same. Undoubtedly he served longer as medical examiner in Plymouth County than any other man ever had or ever will. So far as known he was the oldest medical examiner in the country in both age and service. He was at that time eighty-two years of age and had served since his appointment in 1877 by Governor Rice. During that time he handled many cases which became nationally known. He had qualified in courts as an expert on medical investigations and his opinions were always regarded highly by judges, juries and attorneys. He was succeeded as medical examiner by Dr. Walter W. Fullerton, also of Brockton, who had served as assistant medical examiner seven years.

Dr. Paine was a native of Truro, Cape Cod. He entered Harvard Medical School in 1862, but the same year enlisted for service in the Civil War, and was assigned to Company E, Forty-third Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, and became assistant to the surgeon. As a medical practitioner following the war he was located at Wellfleet, Taunton and North Bridgewater. He was president of the Massachusetts Medical Association in 1891 and 1892 and for several years was treasurer of the Massachusetts Medico-Legal Society. He is a member of the American Medical Society and the Plymouth District Medical Society. He was vice-president of the Brockton Hospital Association in its early years and was for several years a member of the consulting staff of that institution. For more than forty years he had charge of the emergency hospital at the Brockton Fair Grounds during successive Brockton Fairs.

The first autopsy performed by Dr. Paine in his capacity as medical examiner of the First Plymouth District was on the body of Barney McMennihan, whose body was found near the railroad between West Bridgewater and Matfield. Foul play was suspected but no one was ever apprehended for the deed.

Dr. Paine's first murder case was that of Justin L. Gunn of Bridgewater, killed by gunshot. His son was arrested, tried and convicted, sentenced, pardoned, and finally met his fate by jumping in front of a train in New Jersey, meeting death by suicide.

There were several unusual and unsolved murder cases within the experience of Dr. Paine. On April 27, 1892, Collin Leaman, a Brockton barber, was murdered by having his skull crushed by an unknown assailant as he was walking home from his shop in Montello in the evening. A man was arrested in Rhode Island in whose pocket was found a wallet, said to have belonged to Leaman, but, at the trial, the evidence was conflicting and the witnesses unsatisfactory. The man was not convicted and no one was ever apprehended as the rightful murderer. The



deed was done with a sword or a sword fish, one of the strangest weapons ever used in committing a crime in Massachusetts.

Another unsolved murder was that of Elijah Godfrey of West Bridgewater, a recluse, living alone, who furnished evidence against a group of people charged with violation of the liquor laws. Before the case against the men came up in court Godfrey's shanty was blown to bits. The verdict at the inquest was: "The man met his death by an explosive thrown into his dwelling by persons unknown," and they are still unknown.

The bodies of Thomas and Grace Ball, small children, were found in the woods off Oak Street in Brockton several years ago. They had been killed and buried by their mother, an insane person, later committed to an asylum in Taunton. For many days and nights following their disappearance searching parties scoured the woods, fields and every place where they might be found, dead or alive, but without success. They had disappeared in the winter and it is supposed their mother took them into the woods, strangled them and buried them in leaves and such loose earth as she could get together with her hands, as the ground was frozen. Their bodies were discovered May 29, 1908.

Dr. Paine played an important part in unravelling the evidence in the murder of Admiral Eaton of Norwell several years ago, on account of his knowledge of anatomy.

On March 20, 1909, the R. B. Grover & Company shoe factory in Brockton was demolished by explosion of the engine boiler and fire. It was one of the worst catastrophes in New England, in the number killed and the horrible manner in which the shoe workers were pinned down beneath their machines and roasted to death in the holocaust. Dr. Paine was called upon to work days and nights, as bodies were being discovered and brought out for identification. He refers to this as the worst experience of his life.

There were probably five thousand cases in which Dr. Paine figured officially during his half century as a medical examiner and during all that time he served faithfully and was re-appointed term after term without question, until age and failing health made it impossible for him to continue. Dr. Paine said after his retirement that a majority of accidental deaths were traceable to drunkenness and things were fully as bad before as since the Volstead act changed liquor laws.

March 24, 1926, Dr. Walter W. Fullerton, a native of Brockton, succeeded Dr. A. Elliot Paine as medical examiner of the Brockton district. For seven years before that he had been assistant medical examiner and during the latter part of the time had much of the work assigned to him, owing to failing health of the veteran examiner, who nearly completed fifty years in office before resigning.

Dr. Fullerton has practiced since 1896, following his graduation the previous year from the College of Physicians and Surgeons at Baltimore, Maryland. He took a post-graduate course in medicine and pathology at the Johns Hopkins Hospital in Baltimore. For nine years he was visiting physician and pathologist at the Brockton Hospital. He served as city physician of Brockton three years. He has done post-graduate work in pathology, laboratory and autopsy training at the Massachusetts General Hospital.

He served with the American medical units in the World War, as captain in the United States Medical Corps.

**Progress in Local Medical Practice**—Practising physicians of the early days were not highly rewarded for their professional services and most of them had some additional means of livelihood. The knowledge which they possessed; in early days, was obtained largely after they had practiced, rather than before, and it was a hardy community which could withstand the experiments. There were no hospitals in which aspiring young men could fit themselves for their profession, under the eyes and orders of experienced and skilled practitioners. The equipment which they possessed to perform an operation would frighten an up-to-date patient to death from the start. Surgery was little short of torture and diagnosis was a joke. It was literally true in those days, at least, that the doctor buried his mistakes.

Practically every household had its stock of herbs for nostrums, some of them learned from the Indians and others having a certain reputation in the old countries. Everlasting was gathered for poultices and for brewing into a tea, the taste of which suggested its name. There was an ointment made of sourdock for the itch. Mullein leaves were bound on the bowels for some complaints and blackberry root was a cure for dysentery.

The delivery of children was largely in the hands of midwives and they occupied a position of importance in the community. Dr. James Floyd returned from London in 1752, after taking a course in obstetrics and, so much more in favor were midwives than doctors, he advertised himself as a "man midwife." His recognition came slowly, as it was considered scandalous for a man to engage in such operations.

On the other hand, it was hard for the first women doctors to be recognized as eligible to the profession. The first woman to be executed for witchcraft in Massachusetts was Margaret Jones, "a physician and doctress."

In 1721 Dr. Zabdiel Boylston vaccinated for smallpox and for this he was made the first American member of the Royal Society of London. Governor John Winthrop practiced medicine as an avocation and used a famous cure-all called "rubila." Dr. John Tennent was awarded one



hundred pounds by the Virginia Colony in 1739 for curing pleurisy with Seneca rattlesnake root. This was a popular nostrum with itinerant medicine vendors for many years.

Following the line of Dr. Boylston and his recognition by the Royal Society of London, Sylvanus Fancher of Waterbury, Connecticut, wandered about from town to town through all this part of New England using a vaccinating instrument which he had invented, consisting of a silver bar carrying a concealed lancet with which the incision was made. According to a description left of him he wore "velvet small clothes, a parti-colored waistcoat from which dangled half a dozen watch chains and trinkets for the amusement of the little folks, and a faded blue coat—all these surmounted by a slouched hat overhanging green goggles." Many of the early physicians wore knee breeches and a cocked hat and in rainy weather an oiled linen hat cover and a shoulder cape or roquelaure, which gave them a distinguished appearance. Later doctors affected beards as a means of giving themselves a distinguished and learned appearance and dressed more like laymen. Physicians practiced dentistry, of the only kind then practiced, until about 1830 and even then there were few cities having a resident dentist. False teeth were made of hippopotamus ivory. Men whose teeth were extracted wore "Plumpers," small ivory balls to keep their cheeks filled out. Paul Revere advertised in the "Boston Gazette" that in two years he had "fixed some hundreds of teeth" and would "wait on any gentleman or lady at their lodging." This was a side line from his casting bells and silver smithy.

Medical practice has had its fads, its superstitions, its contradictions, its experiments and numberless other phases running the gamut of human credulity and nonsense, since Dr. Samuel Fuller was such a busy practitioner during the general sickness following the arrival of the "Mayflower" at Plymouth. How good a practitioner Dr. Fuller may have been we do not know. How meagre his supply of remedies and how lacking his knowledge of what to do with them or with all the other remedies recognized in his day is equally a matter of conjecture. Whether the fact that such a large proportion of the "Mayflower" company died the first winter was owing to his lack of medical attention and skill, or whether the fact that any of those afflicted lived testifies to his excellence as a practitioner is any person's guess. The story that he prescribed or administered to Alexander, the brother of King Philip, in the sickness of the successor to Massasoit, and that the Indians believed that the white man's medicine caused the death of their sachem, and was one of the causes of Philip's War, is another question which has no answer. It is surely not a matter of controversy in the present generation and it is reasonable to suppose that the first physician in the Plym-

outh Colony was a reputable practitioner in his day and that he, like all other reputable practitioners in the years since, have done the best they could, with the knowledge and skill which they possessed.

There has come down to us from primitive times a semi-superstitious attitude in regard to the healing art, which continues to betray itself in many ways. It is a matter within the memory of middle-aged men when epidemics were entirely mysterious. Medical men have always considered the layman as having no business to even investigate in the field of curative possibilities and this attitude had no exception in the case of Louis Pasteur, a "mere chemist," but probably his "discoveries with regard to disease were to be of greater value than those of all the academies of medicine in the history of the world."

**The First Public Administration of Ether** was October 16, 1846. There is a monument on the Public Gardens in Boston which has upon it this inscription:

"To commemorate the discovery that the inhaling of ether causes insensibility to pain. First proved to the world at the Massachusetts General Hospital, October 16, 1846." The chief credit for the discovery belongs to Dr. W. T. G. Morton. Dr. Crawford W. Long of Georgia had the honor of making the first ether inhalation in surgical operations, and Dr. Horace Wells, a dentist, of Hartford, Connecticut, once a partner of Dr. Morton, a few years later administered gas while extracting teeth. The first operation under ether was, however, performed a little over thirty miles from Plymouth Rock, in the Massachusetts General Hospital in Boston, when Dr. John C. Warren operated upon Gilbert Abbott for tumor of the jaw.

It is even more recent that antiseptic surgery has been practiced. At the time of the Civil War and later hospitals were like charnel houses, when, indeed there were any hospitals, for they were only to be found in the large cities. Every other patient then carried into a hospital for surgical treatment, was carried out dead from blood poisoning. His wound was an unclean fester, with a very bad smell. There was a young surgeon in Glasgow who slopped carbolic acid on the open wounds of accident cases brought to him and found that "hospital gangrene" did not develop, as it would have otherwise. His experiment brought about antiseptis, clean surgery. Since that time surgeons have washed their hands before operating. They wear sterilized gloves, caps and aprons, and even gauze masks over their mouths to prevent foul breath contaminating the air in the vicinity of their patients, and the nurses are equally careful, as a matter of course. But taking the pain and the blood poisoning out of surgery dates back less than threescore years and ten by a considerable margin. Previous to that time—previous to the time that Louis Pasteur made researches in bacteria and fermentation;



previous to the time that Joseph Lister "killed" the smell of stinking festers by slopping them with carbolic acid; previous to the time that Dr. William Thomas Green Morton of Massachusetts, a dentist, administered ether as an anesthetic for Dr. Warren to remove a vascular tumor, we cannot realize the dread and apprehension with which even minor surgical operations were regarded, and with good reason.

While unutterable anguish and big chances of blood poisoning were common in all operations, the surgeon applied the knife with a readiness which we now recognize to have been mistaken, lamentable and inexcusable. Needless amputation, common in Civil War times and before, the opprobrium of surgery, is a back number now, almost as much as the treatment of the insane under the brutal belief that the unhappy persons were possessed of devils, and should be, and were, chained, often in darkness, and beaten and starved. By the use of more intelligent methods and remedies, and less of them, a greater respect for cleanliness and more application of hygiene, substituting external soap for internal drugs, and conquering fear by material means, or mental means, according to the individual receptiveness, and with ultra violet rays as a side line, during the past half century, the life of the individual, on the average, has been extended from forty to fifty-eight years. Medical practice has, perhaps, had something to do with it, and some of the physicians in this vicinity, as elsewhere, are beginning to agree with President Wendell C. Phillips of the American Medical Association, who said, at a conference of voluntary and public health organizations in 1927: "It is time to strike the shackles from the shrinking attitude of the medical profession, not only toward the public espousal of educational programs, but from its attitude toward the lay press, the radio and the great assemblies of truth-seeking people. The physician has no right to conceal from non-medical readers the great body of news of the higher importance which is his to communicate."

**A Call for Better Understanding**—In this matter of education it is somewhat confusing to the lay mind to give its enthusiastic support to the advice of dietitians to provide food containing plenty of vitamins and iron in the form of greens, spinach, salads and fruits, get aroused to the proper pitch to provide milk for the undernourished, and at the same time be told from a session of the American Medical Association that "propaganda for the proper feeding of children has been overdone, the constant efforts to make them eat what was good for them having a bad mental effect. Mothers are advised to avoid the 'neighborhood baby race' or competition as to which gained weight fastest."

Doctors have always disagreed and presumably always will, unless medicine becomes an exact science and its devotees exact scientists. It has always been said that "a difference of opinion is what makes good

horse racing," and perhaps the differences of opinion held by supposedly learned physicians may be a stimulating influence to lead to more useful remedial discoveries.

Our erstwhile summer resident at Gray Gables, on Buzzards Bay, the late President Grover Cleveland, in an address to the Medical Society of the State of New York shortly before his death, urged the profession to abandon their outworn policy of mystery and infallibility and treat the public with more frankness and consideration. "We have come to think ourselves as worthy of confidence in the treatment of our ailments," he said, "and we believe that if this is accorded to us in greater measure, it would be better for the treatment and better for us. We do not claim that we should be called in consultation in all our illnesses, but we would be glad to have a little more explanation of the things done for us. It should not be considered strange if thousands among us, influenced by a sentiment just now astonishingly prevalent, should allow ourselves to be disturbed by the spectre of a medical trust in mystery, and like all who are truly affrighted should cry out for greater publicity between physician and patient."

It is not strange such a sentiment should exist in this vicinity, where so much of the spirit of progress in healing has had an abiding place for three hundred years; not, necessarily, to be expressed by a summer resident who happened to be a President of the United States, but alert to catch the promise contained in the words of Dr. Wendell C. Phillips, quoted above. There was a time when people accepted as beyond question the statement uttered from the pulpits by the early preachers concerning the tortures of the damned and the delights awaiting the righteous, providing they were also the "elect." They were inclined to agree with the dominie when he said that the ways of God were inscrutable and most people still are, but there is a disposition now to question, if such were the case, how the dominie happened to have so much inside information.

There was a time when the physician had his patients so thoroughly "sold" concerning his infallibility, that they would swallow his prepared remedies or whatever his prescriptions called for, without presuming to question his diagnosis or hesitate about putting into their stomachs whatever might have been mentioned in the Latin note written to the druggist. To ask the opinion of another physician before acting upon whatever course the first one laid out for him was rank heresy, and, even if he were infidel enough to do such a thing, the ethics of the profession prevented him from gaining any additional information or contrary expression.

It was not many years ago that the Homœopathic physicians were first recognized by the Allopathic school and allowed to fraternize with



them in their medical associations. Still fewer have been the years that the Osteopathic practitioners received any tolerance. The Chiropractic physicians are still clamoring for recognition in Massachusetts, but their arguments and proofs fall upon deaf ears. It is the old story of every profession fighting to the limit the introduction of new light or methods.

**Benefits of Educational Work**—The smaller towns of Plymouth County, as well as Brockton, its only city, and some large towns approaching the number of inhabitants and other conditions which cause them to assume many of the characteristics of a city such as Whitman, Rockland, Plymouth, Middleborough and Bridgewater, recognize that healthy children are a community asset. They spend money freely and expect their officials to give urgent heed to the child welfare problem, so far as conditions make permissible. Health promoting activities exist in most of the towns and it is a county noted for its neatness, and attention given to the teaching and practice of sanitation. All of the towns have a good water supply, if they have any. The small towns, still dependent upon wells, find good water bubbling from the depths and usually the conditions surrounding these wells are carefully guarded in the interest of health and purity, either by the intelligence of the owners or the watchfulness of the authorities.

As the years go by more attention is given to the milk supply, and better records in regard to infant mortality are the encouraging results. Contrary to the opinions held by some, purer food is consumed in cities than in rural districts, as much more attention is given to its care, including careful refrigeration.

Facilities for the hospitalization of cases of communicable disease are available. Brockton, Plymouth, and some other towns have hospitals of their own and others are soon to have hospitals established. The towns surrounding those mentioned are served by them. There is a county hospital in Hanson and a state hospital in Bridgewater, the latter in connection with the State Farm. Visiting nurse associations exist in the larger towns and school nurses in most of the smaller ones. A generation ago there was a common water pail in the rural schools, filled by scholars who took it to some neighboring well. Between school terms this water pail accumulated dust, perhaps with the remains of the last day's supply of water still standing in it. A tin cup was beside the pail and from this common cup every scholar drank. This was not a condition peculiar to Plymouth County or any other county. It was a custom taken as a matter of course, but a quarter of a century has educated people out of that form of danger to such an extent that most scholars of the present day do not know it ever existed. The common drinking cup has almost entirely disappeared from school buildings

throughout the country and entirely so in Plymouth County and presumably in Massachusetts. All towns in Plymouth County give the teaching of health an important place in their school curricula. The school buildings are adequately ventilated, well lighted, have suitable lavatory and toilet facilities and adjacent playgrounds. Plymouth County has for many years had an enviable reputation along these lines. In addition to the education carried on in the public and private schools in the county, much credit is due the Plymouth County Extension Service for the instruction through the Four-H Clubs for Boys and Girls and the Home Economics Department, along lines of health, good posture, diet and good housekeeping.

Private agencies, such as visiting nurse associations, many times sponsored by woman's clubs, fraternal organizations and service clubs, play a very important part in the health work in this county. Many of them take a definite interest in the under-nourished and under-privileged child and the rising generation is happy in the possession of such sympathetic friends.

Brockton is well supplied with health promoting activities. The city provides a water system of unusual purity and for many years it has held an enviable record in regard to the purity and cleanliness of its milk supply. This is more or less true throughout Plymouth County. More than thirty years ago the city was supplied with a system of sewage disposal, which was unique at that time, and proved the best system for inland cities situated as Brockton was and is. The city carries on a system of garbage collection, the plan being for ashes and paper to be set out at the curbstone, from which it is taken away by city teams. Each district has a specified day for such disposal of ashes and paper and the garbage is taken from the usual containers in the rear of the houses, encouragement being given to use underground garbage receivers, away from the flies and rats. Housing conditions in the city are generally satisfactory. There are many two-family frame dwellings and flats were being built a few years ago with great rapidity, but in more recent years new dwellings have been more of the one-family and bungalow type.

The population is about twenty-six per cent foreign-born and one per cent are negroes. Through the Cosmopolitan Club and other agencies working with the foreign-born or organizations of the foreign-born themselves, sanitation has been seriously taught with commendable results. The predominating groups among the foreign-born are Canadian, Irish, Italian, Lithuanian, Russian and Swedish with a sprinkling of many nationalities, making about twenty-six in all. Since 1919 there has been a zoning law which primarily regulates the sections of the city used for industry and commerce.



The Health Department of the city has a staff consisting of a clerk and statistician and one assistant, a bacteriologist and milk inspector, who is assisted by two laboratory technicians, a dairy inspector and a clerk, three inspectors of slaughtering, a food inspector, and an inspector of plumbing and sanitation. The Visiting Nurse Association attends to the nursing work of the department.

The chairman of the Board of Health and the health officer are physicians, employed on a part-time basis, and there is an executive officer who is not a physician. The latter is employed on a full-time basis. The vital statistics are in the hands of the Health Department and the city clerk, the responsibility being divided. Births and deaths are reported to the city clerk. Cases of communicable disease are reported directly to the Health Department and burial permits are issued by the Health Department. The records are carefully kept and show that the infant mortality rate has decreased very steadily and remarkably.

There is a tuberculosis dispensary and some patients are cared for at the county hospital, to which the city of Brockton contributes. There are also infant welfare clinics conducted in different parts of the city, a physician and a nurse attending each clinic. The visiting nurses visit all babies on the birth list and render assistance wherever it is required. There is no organized work in behalf of the pre-school child and school examinations are reserved for the fifth grade.

The milk work is in unusually capable hands. Samples are taken at frequent intervals, analyzed bacteriologically and chemically, and follow-up field inspections are frequent and thorough. The federal dairy score card system is used in farm inspections. From thirty-seven to fifty per cent of the milk supply is pasteurized and a large percentage of the cows are tuberculin tested. The laboratory is well managed and well equipped and laboratory examinations reach 10,000 a year. Food handling establishments are well supervised and sanitary inspections are frequent and thorough.

The importance of school milk lunches has been felt for many years and in April, 1927, the Lions' Club of Brockton sponsored a plan to furnish milk for all the undernourished pupils in the schools who needed milk but were not receiving it, neither at home nor at school. There is also an open-air school for underweights which has had a considerable enrolment and has accomplished good results.

The school health work includes the work of four part-time physicians, two full-time nurses, a half-time dentist and a full-time dental nurse. All children are weighed every two months and records sent to their parents. There is a school dental clinic for preventive work and corrective work. Physical education is carried on along broad and wholesome lines. There are ample playgrounds, well supervised.

Twenty-eight per cent of the boys and girls between fourteen and

sixteen years of age are gainfully employed. Some work full time and attend continuation schools.

Nearly half of the births in Brockton occur in hospitals. There is a pre-natal clinic at the Brockton Hospital and more than a hundred patients a year have attended in recent years. The nurses have made some 1,700 visits in these cases. The Brockton Visiting Nurse Association also holds pre-natal classes, not attended by a physician, at the headquarters of the association. This is a flourishing organization, employing fifteen nurses, who are employed in nearly every type of case, including maternity, obstetrical, surgical and medical, tuberculosis and contagious disease. Infant welfare work is an important branch for the Visiting Nurse Association and some funds for this work and milk for nutrition work conducted in the schools are provided by the Plymouth County Tuberculosis Association.

There are more than sixty shoe factories in Brockton and the skilled shoeworkers receive good wages and have the disposition to live well. The result is evident in more than usually well-kept residential districts, with a preponderance of private homes.

What is true in Brockton, Plymouth County's only city, is also true to a proportionate extent in the other towns, the equipment and administration of the teaching and work being in ratio to the size of the town and natural conditions governing the necessity. Much of Brockton's milk supply is gathered from surrounding towns, several of them in the same county, and the standard demanded for delivery in Brockton becomes the standard for delivery in the towns or for preparation and refrigeration for use in the homes. The Brockton water supply also serves Pembroke, Hanson, Whitman, East Bridgewater, West Bridgewater and parts of other towns through which the service pipes pass. The Brockton Hospital is available and used by several of the towns when hospital cases are to be accommodated.

In several of the towns the selectmen are also members of the board of health. They are carefully selected at the annual town meetings and the county has reason to be thankful for the efficient and intelligent manner in which health matters are supervised and insisted upon by its town officials. Most of the towns have the services of one or more school nurses and, even in the small towns, it is customary to furnish undernourished children in the schools with milk, sometimes in the cold weather, hot chocolate.

The infant mortality and the death rate in Plymouth County as a whole is much less than in most communities, and it is believed to be due in large measure to the educational work done along the line of sanitation and nutrition.

Strangely enough, the first physician to minister to the Pilgrims pro-



fessionally has never had his name mentioned in any history in the United States and presumably has not appeared in any history printed in the world. He was a regularly educated and recognized physician, according to the standards and customs of his day, and practiced his profession throughout his lifetime, so far as known, living respected and dying regretted. Dr. Samuel Fuller has always been mentioned as the first physician in New England but the Pilgrims were first under the care of the "Mayflower's" ship's doctor, Giles Heale. His bones and those of the "Mayflower" itself have recently been discovered in England, the latter by people from Plymouth County.

**Once Persecuted Quakers Now Own the "Mayflower"**—It was the fancy of Hamlet that

Imperious Cæsar, dead and turned to clay,  
Might stop a hole to keep the wind away,

but it probably never occurred to the captain and crew of the "Mayflower" that sailed down the Thames from London on July 15, 1620, using the old style of reckoning, that the proud vessel of some one hundred and eighty tons burden, would be instrumental in starting the freedom of the world and eventually support a sheltering roof of a prosaic barn in "merrie England," furnishing an abode in which the barn swallows do their nesting. Yet these things became true of what was in 1620 one of the larger ships in the merchant service of England. Descendants of the Pilgrims three hundred and four years after the pilgrimage, located the building in question and viewed the means of identification of the timbers which safely carried the "Separatists" from Leyden in Holland to Plymouth in Plymouth Colony.

Frank E. Packard and Fred P. Richmond of Brockton were in 1924 traveling with their wives in England and a story came to them that, somewhere on the "right little, tight little island" was a barn, the roof of which was kept in place by the ribs of the "Mayflower," and the story was that it was in Buckingham County. Accordingly, the Brocktonians registered at the White Hart and entered into conversation with the genial keeper of the inn concerning the ship which is famous in American history, and its final disposition. It so happened that another guest at the inn was Alan B. Anderson, an English newspaper correspondent, who became interested in the quest but was unable to supply the facts. He, however, was resourceful, disposed to assist and interested on his own account. He accompanied the Brocktonians to the old Moat Farm, where he remembered was a barn constructed of ship timbers. He explained that there were many such barns in England, as the builders recognized the convenience of using the ribs of vessels, already hewn into shape, which answered the purpose as supports for a roof, were durable and lent a certain charm to the architecture.

The barn on the old Moat Farm was evidently not the correct barn, for the timbers in use could not by any stretch of the imagination have been the bones of the "Mayflower." Another clue entered into the quest and Messrs. Packard and Richmond operated from the Jordan Hotel, forty miles from London. Nearby was, and is, a barn controlled by the Quakers, and in which they frequently held their meetings. This building might easily be the right one, in the opinion of the Plymouth County men and women, as the size of the "Mayflower," judging from the meager description which has come down to our time, would have required ribs of similar size. They saw the letters "M A" carved on one of the beams. Another showed twelve distinct charred places, perhaps caused by candles burned by the Pilgrims. Of course the "Mayflower" was used for other voyages than the trip to Plymouth and it is pure surmise to try to identify the marks on the old beams as anything which concerned the Plymouth colonists. Mrs. Packard discovered a framed relic in the rear of the structure. It was the appraisers' report of the "Mayflower" when it was broken up and sold. There have been people in England which have known of the claim concerning the timbers which now look down upon Quaker meetings, forty miles from London, but the fact has never created such an impression in that country as it would among the descendants of the Pilgrims, if such a barn existed in the United States.

There are many other relics of the Pilgrims in England or in Holland, and within recent years considerable attempt has been made to add their story to the many stories of everything connected with them on this side of the ocean. It was a genuine surprise, however, early in 1927, to discover a man whose connection with the Pilgrims must have been intimate and important, but who had never been heard of by historians, or was left out of the records for some unexplainable reasons. Even as faithful an historian as William Bradford, one of the party, participant in everything which concerned the firstcomers to Plymouth, never set down in his records the contribution to the health, good cheer and general welfare, which must have come from the ship's doctor. Trying to visualize the size of the "Mayflower" and the number of passengers and crew, with such possessions as were actually brought, with no reference whatever to the ships' loads of things which dealers in antiques and credulous descendants claim and perhaps believe, were on board, it would seem in these days of hygiene, and bacteriologicistic complex, that the ship's doctor must have been the busiest man aboard, unless he was the sickest. Anyhow, Dr. Giles Heale is deserving of a place in historical records, even though he has long been among the missing.

**"Mayflower's" Man Overboard**—Many times it has been said that when the "Mayflower" sailed on the return trip to England in April, 1621,



not one of the passengers accepted the invitation of Captain Jones to return. In February, 1927, something came to light to refute that statement, providing one wants to include in the list of passengers one whom William Bradford evidently decided did not belong there. This man was Giles Heale, the man-overboard from the "Mayflower" story, who has been missing so long that it makes the long, lost Charlie Ross seem a recent neighbor.

Giles Heale was the ship's doctor and Colonel Charles E. Banks came across his signature as a witness to the last will and testament of William Mullins, who died in the early spring following the landing of the Pilgrims. Since he returned on the "Mayflower," he may rightfully have been excluded from the list of Plymouth colonists, the same as other members of the "Mayflower" crew, although they all took part in the investigations made by means of the shallop from the "Mayflower" and were very useful while they remained, during that first winter, with its suffering and toll of death. Heale went back to London and lived and died in "Merry England," missing his chance of being a Forefather and remaining unheard of by his shipmates of the Pilgrim band and their descendants for three centuries. What his record was with the Pilgrims, we have no way of knowing. The "Boston Transcript" takes it for granted that he was a poor doctor because so many of the Pilgrims died while he was at Plymouth. So was Dr. Samuel Fuller. Why condemn one and honor the other? Presumably those who endured that first winter in Plymouth were either very busily engaged in humane ministrations or among those "on the danger list." We can easily imagine a slacker would have had his head and feet tied together and if that had happened to Giles Heale, he would be on Bradford's records. Colonel Charles E. Banks, who brought Dr. Giles Heale out of obscurity, is a retired United States Army officer who has spent years in historical research. He brought back with him from London a photograph of the nuncupative will of William Mullins, made on his death-bed in Plymouth in February, 1621, in the presence of John Carver, the first governor of Plymouth Colony, chosen the day the Compact was signed in the "Mayflower" cabin in Cape Cod Harbor; Christopher Jones, captain of the "Mayflower;" and Dr. Giles Heale, the "Mayflower" surgeon. This he presented to the Massachusetts Historical Society.

Investigation by Colonel Banks showed the apprenticeship of Heale in the Guild of Barber Surgeons of London and his freedom in 1619, the year before he sailed on the "Mayflower." He practiced medicine in London and lived in Drury Lane. The will is in the handwriting of Governor Carver and is in the provincial Probate Court of the County of Surrey.

Not only were many of the Pilgrims laid low by disease after landing at Plymouth, but there was considerable sickness on board the little vessel tossed about on the broad Atlantic when it was uncertain where it was going but was on its way. Dr. Giles Heale must have been a busy physician on the voyage. It is likely that he officiated at the birth of Peregrine White when the "Mayflower" lay in the harbor. It is evident that he was the physician in charge at the sick bed of William Mullins and it may have been at his suggestion that the latter made his will, after being informed by his physician that death was near. So near was death, as a matter of fact, that Mullins was unable to write the will but this was done for him by Governor Carver. The will appears in the handwriting of Carver and, so far as known, it is the only piece of writing still in existence from his quill.

Emaciated by the "general sickness," knowing full well his struggle to retain the breath of life would only last a brief time, surrounded by his wife and young children, among them Priscilla, later destined to become the wife of John Alden, perhaps Mullins dictated his will to Governor Carver, in the presence of his physician and Captain Christopher Jones, believing that those who survived until the time of the return of the "Mayflower," would return with it. Knowing that Captain Jones and Dr. Heale would return, if they escaped the "general sickness," may have prompted him to select them as witnesses, believing that the will would be administered in England and the witnesses should be there. It was the first will made in New England, what is legally known as a nuncupative will. It was unsigned. He merely expressed his desires for the distribution of his few belongings and it is probable that the actual language of the will was not written out until after his death. It finally was filed with the Probate records of the Archdeaconry of Surrey. The elder children of William Mullins resided at Dorking in that county.

It does not seem especially strange that Bradford did not mention Dr. Heale as one of the Plymouth colonists, as presumably he was employed in the capacity of ship's surgeon by Thomas Weston, a London merchant who was the moving spirit in the emigration and who chartered the "Mayflower" for the use of the Pilgrims, acting for his associates, The Merchant Adventurers. Much interest has been aroused in Dr. Heale, nevertheless, since he was first heard of last February, as a sort of Rip Van Winkle of the "Mayflower" who had been sleeping, not twenty years, but three hundred and six. Dr. Heale was the first physician who practiced in New England and Governor Carver wrote the first will, two facts discovered in 1927.

As for this Dr. Heale, there is on record in the parish of St. Giles-in-the-Fields, his own last will and testament, which reads as follows:



In the Name of God, Amen:

I Giles Heale of the parish of St. Giles-in-the-Fields in the Countie of Midd(lessex) Chirurgion beinge infirme and weake of Bodie but Sound and perfect memorye prayed be God doe make and ordaine this my last will and Testament in maner and forme following:

First I bequeathe my Soule into the hands of Almighty God my Creator and my Body I comitt to the Earth to be decently interred at the discretion of my deare and loving wife and Executrix hereafter named: And concerning my small portion of worldly goods I dispose thereof as followeth Vizt:

Imprimis I give unto my Brother Henry Heale my gray Cloth Cloke my best Hatt and a Satten Capp and one Hollond shirt. The rest and residue of all and singular my Goods and Chattles and Debts whatsoever and wheresoever I give and bequeath unto my beloved wife Mary Heale whom I make constitute and appoint full and sole Executrix of this my last will and Testament hereby revoking all former Wills and Bequests. In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand seale this fourth day of Aprill one thousand six hundred fifty and two.

Giles Heale.

The parish records show that "Mr. Giles Heale" was buried February 3, 1652-3, doubtless in the church or churchyard, of St. Giles-in-the-Fields. This edifice still stands in London, near Drury Lane.

The signature to his will as above shown, is a complete proof of identification as the same Giles Heale, chirurgion, who witnessed in Plymouth thirty-two years before the dying statement of William Mullins.

**Missing Man of "Mayflower"**—The following editorial is from the "Boston Transcript" of February 12, 1927:

The discovery of the name and the ferreting out of the story of a "Mayflower" passenger whose name has never before been included in the immortal roster of the people who came with the Plymouth Pilgrims will furnish a real thrill to all the "Mayflower" descendants and others interested in early New England history. Giles Heale, who, for some reason, either of want of interest or of personal prejudice, was not mentioned in Governor Bradford's wonderful relation of the "Mayflower's" voyage and the founding of the Plymouth colony, was undoubtedly real. His name is found duly signed as a witness to the oral will of William Mullens, father of Priscilla, who died in Plymouth in the February following the landing. This will is said to have been made on Mullens' deathbed in Plymouth. Heale must have been considered of some standing among the "Mayflower's" company, for his fellow witnesses on the will are no less men than John Carver, first governor of the colony, and Christopher Jones, the captain of the ship. Colonel Charles E. Banks, who has dug out in England the copy of this will, not heretofore known, has also traced the London record of Heale, and concludes with reason that he was the barber-surgeon on board the "Mayflower." At that epoch the professions of barber and surgeon were commonly united in one person; and Heale had been officially qualified as a member of the joint profession in London in 1619. Presumably he was quite a young man, and evidently he returned to London on the ship when she sailed for the return in April, 1621.

Therefore Giles Heale was not a real member of the Plymouth Colony, and inasmuch as his ministrations during the winter of the fearful sickness had been

quite useless from the medical point of view he was deemed not worthy of mention by Bradford. What a chance he had to save life, and how feebly he must have seized it! There were not enough well to take care of the sick that winter. Five of the 102 died in December, eight in January, seventeen in February, thirteen in March; and before help came fifty of the little band were dead. Thus Bradford:

"In the time of most distress, there were but six or seven sound persons, who (to their great commendation be it spoken) spared no pains night or day; but, with abundance of care and hazard of their own health, fetched them wood; made them fires, dressed them meat, made their beds, washed their loathsome clothes, clothed and unclothed them . . . and all this willingly and cheerfully without any grudging in the least."

May Alden Ward has said:

Instead of scoffing at the narrowness and bigotry of the Puritan we can endeavor to judge him by the standard of the seventeenth century and not that of the nineteenth century. We shall find that instead of being narrower than his generation he was, in all essentials, broader. If he drove out a heretic now and then, it was because, in their hand-to-hand battle for existence, he did not dare to run the risk of the presence of a disturbing element. Those were dark days for Protestantism, and men needed to be on their guard. The fires of the inquisition were still smoking in Spain; Holland had been well nigh blotted from the face of the earth; Germany had been for thirty years a bloody battlefield, and France had driven the whole of her thinking population into exile. In England the dungeons were overflowing with men whose only crime was attending a dissenting church, and the horrors of torture inflicted on the Scotch Presbyterians make the blood run cold at the recital. What wonder that the second generation of Puritans were more strict than the first? As for superstition,—if the Puritans believed in witches, how was it with the rest of the world? There was not a nation in Europe in which a belief in demoniacal possession was not prevalent. . . . Nor was theology the only science that was still groping in darkness. Other sciences were still in the grasp of superstition, notably the science of medicine. Witness the following prescription sent by Sir Kenelm Digby, a London physician, to John Winthrop, Jr. "For all sorts of agues, I have of late tried the following magnetical experiment with infallible success. Pare the patient's nails when the fit is coming on, and put the parings into a little bag of fine linen or sarsanet, and tie that about a live eel's neck in a tub of water. The eel will die and the patient will recover. And if a dog or a hog eat that eel, they will also die."

In short, looking the world over in the seventeenth century, we find that the New England Puritan compares favorably with other men. He may have been hard and angular, but he was honest, manly, and heroic. What he lacked in art he made up in character, and earnestness is still one of the primal qualities of character. . . . It was George Eliot who pointed out that to be truly liberal you must learn to tolerate intolerance.

Concerning the beliefs in relation to medicine "in the good old days" Charles L. LaWall, professor of the theory and practice of pharmacy and dean of the Philadelphia College of Pharmacy and Science, tells us in his recent book on "Four Thousand Years of Pharmacy," as late as 1741, long after all the Pilgrims and Puritans had gone to their reward, in



England, horses' hoofs, vipers' flesh and wood lice were all offered as cures; even well on in the nineteenth century a Dr. Solomon spread his nostrums in Great Britain, while a Dr. Dyott of Philadelphia functioned as "a most audacious distributor" of them in the United States. Professor LaWall in his work ridicules "the ignorance and credulity of much of the past," and makes us wonder if most and perhaps all of the boasted remedies of the present day may not suffer from the fate meted out to so many of their predecessors.

To some degree, at least, superstitions in regard to medicine as well as demoniacal possession have given way to merchandizing in what H. I. Phillips some time ago called the "rather dingy herb-scented hole in the wall to which a man went when somebody was either sick or in need of a postage stamp." To continue Mr. Phillips' description of the modern drug store, printed in the "Atlanta Constitution": "Today, a drug store has become a combination quick lunch room, mail order house, department store, novelty shop, candy kitchen, ice cream parlor, bakery, soup kitchen, hardware store, camera supply branch, sporting goods store and saloon. Some of the drug stores have put in flowers, millinery, mufflers and radio sets. Once a druggist regarded himself as a disciple of Pasteur and Jenner. Today he regards himself as a rival of Wanamaker, Marshall Field and Sears-Roebuck and Montgomery Ward. About all that remains to be done is to issue catalogues and arrange for time payments."

**The "Ordeal By Touch"**—It was generally believed by people in the Plymouth Colony and the Massachusetts Bay Colony as well—that is by Pilgrims and Puritans alike—that, when a murder was committed, the corpse of the victim would bleed afresh if touched by the murderer, and this was evidently recognized in legal procedure up to the time of the Revolutionary War. The ordeal by touch was nothing which originated in this country but was a belief which the Pilgrims and Puritans brought with them from the old country.

Cotton Mather, who seems to have made a record of everything as well as having a finger in every New England pie in his time, relates in his "Magnalia," the case of a victim of a murder who was found with his head bruised, his canoe pole stuck in his side and his canoe sunk in the river. "His wife (being a lewd woman, and suspected to have fellowship with one Footman) coming to her husband, he bled abundantly, and so did he also, when Footman was brought to him; but no evidence could be found against him. The woman was convicted."

Another case recorded by the same persistent diary-keeper tells of a woman who had killed her child and "when she was brought before the jury, they caused her to touch the face of it, whereupon the blood came fresh into it." She confessed the truth. The quotation is from

a diary kept by Governor Winthrop but, according to Mather, the blood actually flowed anew and did not merely "come fresh into the face."

The story has already been told in this volume how John Sassamon, at one time King Philip's secretary, was murdered on the ice on Assawamsett Lake, and his body plunged beneath the ice. This is supposed to have been a murder at the royal command of King Philip, because Sassamon had warned the governor at Plymouth of hostile intentions on the part of Philip. Three Indians were charged with the murder and a jury empanelled consisting of both white men and Indians, as was the custom when the accused was an Indian. Increase Mather wrote in his diary that when Tobias, suspected of having dealt the fatal blow, "came near the dead body, it fell a bleeding as fresh as if it had been newly slain, albeit it was buried a considerable time before that." The three Indians were convicted of the murder and executed at Plymouth in June, 1675.

Cotton Mather always has the last word when it comes to telling a good story involving the miraculous. In one of his diaries he wrote:

Several Indians were made horribly drunk by the drink which the English had sold unto them. Returning home over a little ferry, eight of them were drown'd (from December to March) one of their dead bodies came ashore very near the place where they had been supplied with their drink; and lying on the shore, it bled so plentifully, as to *discolour* the water and sand about it. Upon which the considerate spectators thought of that scripture "the stone shall cry out of the wall against him that gives his neighbor drink." They thought there was a loud cry of "Blood! blood!" against some wicked English in this matter.

**Potent Influence of the Moon**—In the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries the influence of the moon on animal and vegetable life was not merely an article of faith among the ignorant. It was an accepted tenet of science, though there was some doubt as to the precise limits of this influence. Cotton Mather, perhaps, will hardly be allowed to "qualify as an expert"—though his reputation for exceptional credulity comes rather from his having put himself on record than from any peculiarity in his mental temper. But no one will deny that Robert Boyle, the founder of the Royal Society, the improver of the air-pump, and the discoverer of Boyle's Law of the elasticity of gases, was a genuinely scientific personage. Mather writes:

One Abigail Eliot had an iron struck into her head, which drew out part of her brains with it; a silver plate she afterwards wore on her skull where the orifice remain'd as big as an half crown. The brains left in the child's head would swell and swage, according to the tides; her intellectuals were not hurt by this disaster; and she liv'd to be a mother of several children.

And Boyle records "an odd observation about the influence of the moon" in the following terms:



I known an intelligent person, that having, by a very dangerous fall, so broken his head, that divers large pieces of his skull were taken out, as I could easily perceive by the wide scars, that still remain; answered me, that for divers months, that he lay under the chirurgeons hands, he constantly observed, that about full moon, there would be extraordinary prickings and shootings in the wounded parts of his head, as if the meninges were stretched or pressed against the rugged parts of the broken skull; and this with so much pain, as would for two or three nights hinder his sleep, of which at all other times of the moon he used to enjoy a competency. And this gentleman added, that the chirurgeons (for he had three or four at once), observed from month to month, as well as he, the operation of the full moon upon his head, informing him, that they then manifestly perceived an expansion or intumescence of his brain, which appeared not at all at the new moon (for that I particularly asked), nor was he then obnoxious to the forementioned pricking pains.

Toward the end of the eighteenth century it was generally held by physicians that the new or full moon, or the approach to the new or full moon, was a powerful exciting cause of fever. It had also been observed that persons in extreme age usually died either at the new or at the full moon, though it is not clear how this was brought into accord with the usual theories of the moon's increase.

Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, in a lecture before the Lowell Institute in 1869, concerning "The Medical Profession in Massachusetts," said: "We have seen it in the first century divided among clergymen, magistrates and regular practitioners; yet, on the whole, for the time and under the circumstances, respectable, except where it invoked supernatural agencies to account for natural phenomena.

In the second century it simplified its practice, educated many intelligent practitioners, and began the work of organizing for concerted action, and for medical teaching.

In the third century it has built hospitals, perfected and multiplied its associations and educational institutions, enlarged and created museums, and challenged a place in the world of science by its literature.

In reviewing the whole course of its history we read a long list of honored names, and a precious record written in private memory, in public charities, in permanent contributions to medical science, in generous sacrifices for the country.

Dr. Maurice H. Richardson, in an address at the Sixtieth Anniversary of the organization of the Plymouth District Medical Society observance at Abington, May 27, 1911, said: "I have faith that we are far from the end of progress, and that we have not as yet any idea of the splendors of our art, especially in the conservation of life and limb. I never cease to wonder at what we have already accomplished. What lies before us will go far beyond the imagination of the most hopeful."





## CHAPTER VIII

### LAUNCHING OF THREE COUNTIES.

**Peculiar Government of New Plymouth Went Out With Second and Third Generations From the "Mayflower" and Later Comers, Establishing A New Order—There Were Pirates in Those Days, Likewise, Indian and Negro Slaves and Quakers—Juggling of Areas to Make Up Present-Day Towns—Officials—Postoffices—Apples, Cranberries and Poultry An Important Trio—"God's Cranberry Bog"—Wonderful Marketing Opportunities.**

The second day of June, 1685, might well be considered "County Day" in southeastern Massachusetts, as it was on that date that the General Court, sitting in Plymouth, divided the colony of New Plymouth into Plymouth, Barnstable and Bristol counties.

It was ordered "that Plymouth, Duxbury, Scituate, Marshfield, Bridgewater and Middleboro, together with all such places and villages that do or may lie between the said towns and the patent line be a county; Plymouth the county town, and said county called the County of Plymouth, in which county shall be kept two county courts annually at the town of Plymouth, one on the third Tuesday in March, and the other on the third Tuesday in September."

There have been some changes in territorial limits since that early date and towns not then having a separate name and existence are included, making the present area of the twenty-six towns in Plymouth County seven hundred and twenty square miles and the present population upwards of 180,000. The Atlantic Ocean forms the eastern boundary, and Bristol County, set apart the same day, its western boundary. Bristol, with Barnstable, the third county created that day, form the southern boundary, while Norfolk County is on the north.

**Establishing a New Order**—The order forming the limits for Barnstable County read: "that Barnstable, Sandwich, Yarmouth and Eastham, the villages of Sippican, Suckonesset and Monomoy shall be a county, Barnstable the county town, and said county shall be called the county of Barnstable, in which county shall be kept two county courts annually at the county town, one on the third Tuesday in April and the other on the third Tuesday in October." The towns named for Bristol County included Bristol, Taunton, Reho-

both, Dartmouth, Swansey, Little Compton, Freetown, Sowammet, Pocasset, Punkatest, and May and November were the court months.

Thus went out of existence the peculiar government of New Plymouth, the colony defined in the patent issued in 1629 by the president and Council for New England, to William Bradford and his associates. The area constituting Plymouth County was, when the county came into existence as such, occupied by the second and third generations from the "Mayflower" and later comers. All the men who had come on the "Mayflower," the "Fortune," "Anne" and some other vessels which were early arrivals, had been gathered to their fathers. The isolation period and that of great dangers from what they knew not were over. There were plenty of new problems and there had been much progress, some changes in sentiments, a certain degree of prosperity. Slavery was common in Massachusetts, as in some other States, but the horror of the slave traffic had not entered into the conscience and consciousness of the people. There were negro slaves, Indian slaves and attempts were made to make slaves of some of the Quakers, even many years after this notable "County Day."

An advertisement in the issue of March 5, 1705, of the "Boston News-Letter," an early Boston newspaper, read as follows: "An able, healthy Negro woman about 23 years of age, speaks English intelligibly & is well instructed in Household-business, to be sold. Enquire at the Post office in Boston & know farther." This was like many other advertisements and proves the traffic at that time, in Negroes.

Another advertisement in the same newspaper, issued February 24, 1707, read:

Ran away the last spring from her Master John Otis Esqr. of Barnstable, in the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, an Indian girl named Hannah Wopuck, aged about 20 years, middle sized, full fac'd, a comely Countenance, she speaks good English, not very perfect of the Indian language; had on English Apparel: Whosoever shall apprehend her and take up the said Servant and deliver her to her said Master, or give any true intelligence of her unto John Campbell Post-master of Boston, or unto her said Master, so as that he may have her again, shall be sufficiently rewarded, besides all reasonable costs and Charges paid.

Plymouth County had about thirty miles of seacoast to defend and there were pirates all along the New England coast. The dangers of Barnstable County on account of its coast line, which was nearly all its boundary, were also dangers for Plymouth County. The present Plymouth County seaports are Plymouth, Kingston, Duxbury, Marshfield, Scituate, Hingham and Hull. The two latter were originally a part of Suffolk County, which was a county in 1643. They became a part of Plymouth County in 1803.



The seashore of Plymouth County many times kept the early colonists in and about Plymouth from starvation, on account of the oyster beds and clamflats and the excellent fishing, and the seacoast of the county always has been and still is a valuable asset.

Aside from the seacoast, with its assets and liabilities, the now County of Plymouth, consisted of a light soil none too well adapted to agriculture, drained by three principal rivers, with numerous lakes and ponds, especially in the vicinity of Plymouth. The principal rivers are the Taunton River, emptying into Narragansett Bay; the North River, emptying into Massachusetts Bay at Marshfield, and the Jones River, named for the captain of the "Mayflower," emptying into Kingston Bay. On the latter river the first war vessels of the Revolutionary War were built in later years, also many other ships which entered into the fishing and coasting trade. Extensive shipbuilding also took place for many years on the North River, while the Taunton River is still a source of navigation and considerable manufacturing takes place along its banks. There are smaller rivers and streams which have contributed materially to the progress and prosperity of the county in the 300 and more years since the beginning of activities at Plymouth.

There have been slight changes in the county line since 1685, one of the most interesting being the time when an area which had been left out of either Plymouth or Barnstable counties, was annexed. Under date of October 29, 1706, there is a record which reads: "Upon reading a petition of Barnabus Lothrop, Esq., in behalf of himself and the heirs of Joseph Lothrop and John Thomson, gentlemen, deceased, setting forth that they formerly purchased a tract of land of William Wetispauquin, Assemeta, and other Indians, with the approbation and allowance of the then General Court of New Plymouth, lying within that colony, between the counties of Plymouth, Bristol and Barnstable, adjoining and partly bounded upon the lands of Rochester, praying that the said tract of land may be put within the Constablerick of Rochester and within the county of Barnstable, and their deed of grant being shone forth, the wishes of the petitioners was granted." On November 19, 1707, the following order was passed in the House of Representatives, upon the petition of the town of Rochester, praying to be annexed to Plymouth County, viz.: "that the prayer of the petition be granted, the rates already assessed on them in the county of Barnstable to be paid there, and for the future that they be annexed to the county of Plymouth, any law, usage, or custom to the contrary notwithstanding."

**Juggling of Areas to Make Up Present-Day Towns**—The towns which constitute Plymouth County by no means have the same boundaries they once had, as they have been subjected to many more

changes than the county itself to become adapted to conditions which made the changes seem advisable. To speak of them in the alphabetical order, not attempting to give the order in which the changes were made, Abington has had taken from it Rockland and Whitman; Bridgewater has given up East Bridgewater and West Bridgewater and the latter, in turn, gave a small section to Brockton; Abington to Brockton and a part of Halifax; Duxbury has lost Pembroke and a part of Kingston; East Bridgewater has lost a part of Whitman and of Brockton; Hingham has lost Hull and Cohasset; Pembroke has lost Hanson and a part of Halifax; Plymouth has lost Kingston, Plympton and Carver, a part of Wareham and a part of Halifax; Middleborough has lost Lakeville and a part of Halifax; Plympton has lost Carver and a part of Halifax; Rochester has lost Mattapoisett and Marion; Scituate has lost South Scituate and Hanover, a part of Cohasset and a part of Marshfield; West Bridgewater has lost a part of Brockton.

The Plymouth County towns, the dates of their incorporation, with their population, property valuation and number of legal voters are as follows:

	Incorporation Date	1920 Population	1926 Property Valuation	1924 Legal Voters
Abington	June 10, 1712	5,787	6,703,869	2,494
Bridgewater	June 3, 1656	8,438	7,966,986	2,508
Brockton	June 15, 1821	66,254	88,372,785	26,063
Carver	June 9, 1790	891	3,229,068	376
Duxbury	June 7, 1637	1,553	5,506,256	791
East Bridgewater	June 14, 1823	3,486	5,567,577	1,365
Halifax	July 4, 1734	563	1,467,137	167
Hanover	June 14, 1727	2,575	3,669,475	1,048
Hanson	Feb. 22, 1820	1,910	2,790,455	792
Hingham	Sept. 2, 1635	5,604	13,168,694	2,508
Hull	May 29, 1644	1,771	19,243,291	1,204
Kingston	June 16, 1726	2,505	3,065,777	918
Lakeville	May 13, 1853	1,419	1,750,779	405
Marion	May 14, 1852	1,288	4,850,904	586
Marshfield	March 2, 1640	1,379	5,170,483	880
Mattapoisett	May 20, 1857	1,277	3,315,467	622
Middleborough	June 1, 1669	8,453	9,400,946	3,050
Norwell	Feb. 27, 1888	1,348	2,027,455	689
Pembroke	March 21, 1711	1,358	2,671,467	490
Plympton	June 4, 1707	1,047	904,980	203
Rochester	June 4, 1686	1,047	1,600,478	262
Rockland	March 9, 1874	7,544	9,924,993	3,822
Scituate	Oct. 5, 1636	4,415	11,002,630	1,814
Wareham	July 10, 1759	4,415	12,261,758	1,814
West Bridgewater	Feb. 16, 1822	2,908	2,851,792	1,099
Whitman	March 4, 1875	7,147	9,324,443	3,830



**Officials**—The present Plymouth County officers are: Judge of Probate and Insolvency Court, Loyed E. Chamberlain, Brockton; Register of Probate and Insolvency Court, Sumner A. Chapman, Plymouth; Assistant Register, Mary W. Gooding, Plymouth; Sheriff, Earl P. Blake, Plymouth; Clerk of Courts, Edward E. Hobart, Plymouth; Assistant Clerk of Courts, Edgar W. Swift, Plymouth; County Treasurer, Horace T. Fogg, Norwell; Register of Deeds, John B. Washburn, Plymouth; Assistant Register of Deeds, Edward C. Holmes, Plymouth; County Commissioners: Charles S. Beal, Rockland; Jere B. Howard, Brockton; Frederick T. Bailey, Scituate.

Assistant Commissioners: William L. Sprague, Marshfield; Ezra S. Whitmarsh, East Bridgewater.

Masters in Chancery: William T. Way, Plympton; Edward N. Dahlborg, Brockton; Charles H. Wilkes, Abington; Edmund J. Campbell, Brockton; Frank M. Reynolds, Hull.

District Attorney, Southeastern District (Plymouth and Norfolk counties): Winfield M. Wilbar, Brockton; Assistants: William P. Kelley, Braintree; Dudley P. Ranney, Wellesley; Deputy, John V. Sullivan, Middleborough.

State Farm Superintendent and Treasurer: Henry J. Strann; Master, J. Arthur Taylor; Clerk, Fred P. Turner; Medical Director, William T. Hanson, M. D. Located at Bridgewater.

State Normal School Principal, Arthur C. Boyden. School at Bridgewater, opened September, 1846.

**Police Court**—Brockton (jurisdiction in Brockton, Bridgewater, East Bridgewater, and West Bridgewater), Justice, C. Carroll King; special Justices, William G. Rowe, Herbert C. Thorndike; Clerk, Charles F. King.

**District Courts**—Second Plymouth (court held at Abington and Hingham; jurisdiction in Abington, Whitman, Rockland, Hingham, Hull, Hanover, Scituate, Norwell and Hanson), Justice, George W. Kelley; Special Justices, Edward B. Pratt, James T. Kirby; Clerk, Herbert L. Pratt.

Third Plymouth (court held at Plymouth; jurisdiction in Plymouth, Halifax, Kingston, Plympton, Pembroke, Duxbury and Marshfield), Justice, Harry B. Davis; Special Justices, Morton Collingwood, John P. Vahey; Clerk, John E. Miles.

Fourth Plymouth (court held at Middleborough and Wareham; jurisdictions in Middleborough, Wareham, Carver, Lakeville, Marion, Mattapoisett and Rochester), Justice, Nathan Washburn; Special Justices, Dennis D. Sullivan; Bert J. Allan; Clerk, Luke F. Kelly.

**Postoffices—Postoffices in Plymouth County:**

<b>Postoffice</b>	<b>Town</b>	<b>Postoffice</b>	<b>Town</b>
Abington	Abington	Montello	Brockton
Accord	Hingham	Nantasket Beach	Hull
Allerton	Hull	North Abington	Abington
Assinippi	Hanover	North Carver	Carver
Brant Rock	Marshfield	North Duxbury	Duxbury
Bridgewater	Bridgewater	North Hanover	Hanover
Brockton	Brockton	North Marshfield	Marshfield
Bryantville	Pembroke	North Middleborough	Middleborough
Bumkin Island	Hull	North Pembroke	Pembroke
Campello	Brockton	North Plymouth	Plymouth
Carver	Carver	North Scituate	Scituate
Centre Street	Brockton	Norwell	Norwell
Cochesett	West Bridgewater	Ocean Bluff	Marshfield
Duxbury	Duxbury	Onset	Wareham
East Bridgewater	East Bridgewater	Pembroke	Pembroke
East Carver	Carver	Plymouth	Plymouth
East Pembroke	Pembroke	Plympton	Plympton
East Wareham	Wareham	Rivermoor	Scituate
Egypt	Scituate	Rock	Rockland
Elmwood	East Bridgewater	Rockland	Middleborough
Fort Andrews	Hull	Sandhills	Scituate
Greenbush	Scituate	Scituate	Scituate
Green Harbor	Marshfield	Scituate Centre	Scituate
Halifax	Halifax	Sea View	Marshfield
Hanover	Hanover	Shore Acres	Scituate
Hanover Centre	Hanover	Silver Lake	Kingston
Hanson	Hanson	South Carver	Carver
Hingham	Hingham	South Duxbury	Duxbury
Hingham Centre	Hingham	South Hanover	Hanover
Hull	Hull	South Hanson	Hanson
Humarock	Scituate	South Middleborough	Middleborough
Island Creek	Duxbury	South Wareham	Wareham
Kenberma	Hull	Standish	Marshfield
Kingston	Kingston	State Farm	Bridgewater
Lakeville	Lakeville	Straits Pond	Hull
Manomet	Plymouth	Swifts Beach	Wareham
Marion	Marion	Wareham	Wareham
Marshfield	Marshfield	West Bridgewater	West Bridgewater
Marshfield Hills	Marshfield	Westdale	West Bridgewater
Mattapoisett	Mattapoisett	West Duxbury	Duxbury
Middleborough	Middleborough	West Hanover	Hanover
Millbrook	Duxbury	West Wareham	Wareham
Minot	Scituate	White Horse Beach	Plymouth
Monponsett	Halifax	Whitman	Whitman

**Apples, Cranberries and Poultry An Important Trio**—The problem of wresting a living from the stubborn soil of New England has challenged the brain and brawn from the beginning of things in New England, but agriculture has been an important industry all the while and continues to be. Some of the first lessons in agriculture were learned



from the Indians, such as burying herrings with the corn which was planted to feed the Pilgrim Fathers, Mothers and Children.

Another early custom, whether learned from the Indians or forced upon the First Comers as a matter of experience, was cutting down trees in the winter, allowing them to remain until spring, then burning them, allowing the ashes to mingle with the soil and planting corn while the earth was still warm.

It must be remembered that Plymouth County farms were shaped out of the forests. There were no domestic animals the first few years and the soil was, unlike that of the Middle West, dependent upon the co-operation of fertilizing elements before it would produce much of a laugh at the time of harvest, however faithfully it might have been tickled with the crude agricultural instruments from planting time till approaching winter.

There were unusual agricultural difficulties in Plymouth County from the first and some of them exist today. In order to be picturesque and make a hit with the summer visitor, the topography of Plymouth County is uneven and there are boulders and stones of all sizes distributed over the fields with a lavish hand. This condition makes a hit with the vacationist but makes a mess for the implements. It makes it unusually hard to use the modern agriculturists to the same advantage they can be used on level country, free from rocks and stones. This region was once covered by the great continental glacier, which rounded off the corners and perhaps removed mountains, but it left heaps of gravel and unfertile sands which have been the despair of many brave men agriculturally inclined. This condition helped to make Massachusetts an industrial State and accounts for wooden nutmegs in Connecticut.

A little more than one-third of the farm land in Massachusetts is what is called "improved land." The percentatge is better in Plymouth County but most of the farmers have discovered that success lies in specialization, rather than attempting to grow many of the farm products which the climate permits. Practically all Plymouth County soils are strongly acid and require treatment. According to agronomy specialists, it now pays to do this in Plymouth County. It pays to grow heavy crops of good hay, silage, clover and alfalfa. The market is safe enough to begin building up the farms. According to John P. Helyar, State extension soils and plants specialist, "Plymouth County soils are generally light and well drained, all the land is sour but plenty of lime and acid phosphate to the acre will correct that condition. The land is especially adapted to alfalfa and many progressive farmers are beginning its cultivation on a large scale."

Fruit growing and especially the raising of apples has become an

important agricultural specialty in the county in recent years. Apples have always been a staple crop in the Old Colony and there is no section where the flavor, aroma and juiciness and sweetness, and all those qualities upon which we base our estimate of the excellence of an apple are more highly developed than in this county. There are many thousands of young trees in the commercial orchards now receiving careful scientific care and their condition is full of promise. The Federal census of 1920 gives the total yield of Massachusetts apples as 3,187,211 bushels, and Plymouth County produced its share. The value of the Massachusetts crop is given as \$6,000,000, which is about one-ninth of the value of all crops produced in the State. The statistics for Plymouth County have not been produced, but in Massachusetts the increase in young trees during the decade 1910-1920 was three times as great as the falling off in number of trees of bearing age, which shows a healthy condition.

On the subject of apple culture in Massachusetts, Governor Alvan T. Fuller in his "Apple week" proclamation, said: "Let us plant more apple trees about our homes for the loveliness and fragrance of their flowers, the beauty of their form, for the shade of their verdure, and the joy of their delightful fruit. The apple tree, in the minds and hearts of many, symbolizes the rural home of America."

The hills, of which there are so many in Plymouth County, are preferred as sites for apple orchards, thus providing good water drainage, and, what is equally essential, air drainage. A gravelly loam soil is ideal.

There are many small cities and large towns in Massachusetts alone, to say nothing of New England, which are inadequately supplied with fruits and vegetables of local production. The northern line of Plymouth County is less than twenty miles from Boston, seventh in population among the cities of the United States. In 1922, Boston received and distributed 50,000 carloads of sixty-six different kinds of fruits and vegetables. These came from forty-two States and twenty foreign countries. There are shipped into Boston each season many carloads of cauliflower, celery, spinach and tomatoes, much of which might well be grown in the truck gardens of Massachusetts. There is no lack of marketing opportunities if the producers will put their products into commercial boxes as attractive as they arrive from greater distances. This has been one great handicap to marketing with the best results. The Plymouth County agriculturist has produced quality fruits and vegetables but has not always presented them at the markets all dressed up and ready to sell to the fastidious purchaser who was willing to pay a good price for an article pleasing to the sight as well as every other sense. Boston annually distributes almost as many carloads of



fruits and vegetables as Philadelphia, and about one-third as many as New York.

**Importance of Cranberries**—Cranberry growing is a highly specialized industry in Plymouth County, which produces more of that fruit than any other county in the world. There are in the county many hundreds of acres of marshes and swamps. The soils in these swamps are heavy with muck and peat. About 15,000 acres of peat bogs in southeastern Massachusetts have been developed for cranberry production. From these otherwise worthless areas—not all of which is in Plymouth County—in some years one-half of the entire cranberry supply of the country is produced. The prices obtained for cranberries have been increased greatly the past few years. Cranberry sauces and jellies have been supplied as a canned product and well received throughout this country and abroad. It required quite a campaign of education to convince many human beings that turkey and other fowl required cranberry sauce or jelly to make it doubly desirable as an epicurean possession. There seems no limit to the quantity of cranberries which can be sold, if the right effort is expended in sales promotion.

The Massachusetts Agricultural College maintains a special experiment station in recognition of the importance of the cranberry industry. There is a cranberry school for practical field instruction of growers and students. Weather observations and frost warnings are included in the service.

Massachusetts has 13,891 acres of cranberry bog in bearing, and its crop is running over a million bushels a year. It is the leading export crop of the State, and is exchanged for about \$4,000,000. Plymouth County has 8,582 acres devoted to cranberries, and Barnstable County has 4,331, although most people associate cranberries distinctly with Cape Cod. In Plymouth County the leading town in cranberry culture is Carver, which has an area of 2,691 acres. The other counties largely concerned in this industry make the following contributions in acreage: Bristol, 422; Dukes, 46; Norfolk, 55; Middlesex, 115; Essex, 10; and Nantucket, 330.

This industry has been largely built up to its present importance through propaganda. People have to be educated to like cranberries, much the same as they have to be educated to like olives. To have a good thing is not sufficient in itself. People once attempted to lift themselves by their bootstraps. Now they lift themselves by their yeast cakes—a matter of advertising.

Just what reaction the cranberry acid had on the palate of an Indian, we do not know from any of the early historians but there is an area in the vicinity of Herring Pond in Plymouth which had the Indian

name Massassoomineuk, which means "much cranberries," from which we infer that, passing along that way, the noble red skin was wont to sit up and take notice and cranberry sauce on the shore of Herring Pond if never again.

Records show that the people in the counties producing one million bushels of cranberries annually consume less than five per cent of the total cranberry crop, or two-fifths of a pound per capita. The Missouri River States, including Missouri, the Dakotas, Minnesota, Nebraska, Kansas and Iowa, consume 28 per cent of the crop. In Minnesota the per capita consumption is one pound, showing that the people of that State, half way between Plymouth Rock and the Golden Gate, are well sold on the berry that made Cape Cod famous.

The North Central States, Wisconsin, Michigan, Ohio, Indiana and Illinois, consume 24 per cent of the crop. There is another strange fact, that, in Wisconsin, where the cranberries literally grow on bushes, the Badger state population depends largely upon New England for their turkey "trimmings," much preferring the coast-line variety to their own. Wisconsin is the third largest cranberry-producing State.

The mid-Atlantic States eat 18 per cent of the cranberries.

The Southern and Western States consume a very small percentage of the crop although the Pacific Coast, which has to add to the f. o. b. price a freight rate of nearly \$4 per barrel, last year consumed 15,000 barrels of berries. The whole of New England, with a population of seven and one-half millions and a freight rate not exceeding forty cents per barrel, used only 20,000 barrels.

The profit made on cranberries in Plymouth County depends to a considerable extent on the price of sugar and this commodity is eagerly watched by the cranberry men who preserved a large percentage of the berries. Picking the early blacks, the first cranberries to be harvested, begins about the first of September and continues till after some of the early frosts. Great care has to be taken to flow the bogs, if there is to be a killing frost, and the warning from the Weather Bureau is treated with great respect. Much of the picking is done by foreign-born families who move into the shanties erected by owners of the bogs when the time comes to harvest. Some of the picking is done by a power machine. One such picker consists of a revolving cylinder containing fourteen scoops, each covering thirty inches of space. The vines are combed through two inches. One revolution of the machine covers an area of fifteen square feet. The berries are stripped from the vines at the bottom of the cylinder and taken to the top, where they are deposited on a movable apron which conveys them to the opposite side of the machine.

Some cranberry growers believe that they will get a much larger



yield from their bogs in the future by placing colonies of honey bees on their bogs for cross pollination and other purposes. Bees contribute much to the fruit and vegetable production; and growing cucumbers in hot houses, which is another industry in Plymouth County, would be impossible without their coöperation. But Charles Bradford Hathaway of Marion is the pioneer in the field of harnessing his bees and bogs together.

The scourge of the cranberry bog is the fruit worm. The egg which produces this worm is laid by a moth in the nectar in the small blossom of the cranberry. The moth lays its eggs in the warm part of the day and the egg incubates in the warm nectar. Mr. Hathaway has found by experimentation that the moth does not lay eggs where there is a bee at work for obvious reasons. The Hathaway bogs have been practically free from the ravages of the fruit worm since he has supplied them plentifully with working colonies of bees. Furthermore he has been able to harvest a considerable quantity of cranberry flower honey in excess of the amount of honey produced by the bees at other times, when the cranberry plant is not in flower. Cranberry flower honey has a good taste and color and finds a ready market. According to Mr. Hathaway, a colony of about 60,000 bees will keep two acres of bog free from the moths and the results of laying their eggs. Such a colony can be purchased for about \$15. Without the bees the bogs would have to be sprayed at least twice to keep the worms away. He therefore expects a substantial saving in labor as well as increase in both cranberry and honey production.

**"God's Cranberry Bog"**—Two things have occurred within two years to greatly advertise cranberry culture in this vicinity. Both of them happened in Carver, one of the smallest towns in Plymouth County as regards inhabitants; the largest as regards cranberry production. Rev. Charles W. Hidden, pastor of the Baptist church in that town, sometimes called "the little white church by the wayside," received the gift of a cranberry bog from a lady, to be operated for the benefit of the church. This gave the pastor an idea. He announced that it should be called "God's Cranberry Bog" and it would be dedicated to the work of copious harvests for the benefit of God. Accordingly the day for the dedication was widely announced and the bog was surrounded by motor cars from far and near to witness the service of dedication. Rev. Mr. Hidden made the service simple but impressive and expressed his firm belief that it would be blessed with a liberal harvest.

By the time the berries were ready to pick, calls came for them at far more than the market price. The yield was satisfactory and the profit was pleasing, enabling the society to make needed repairs to the

church edifice and give it an era of prosperity such as it had not had before. Recently a legacy of \$500 came to the church from the estate of Olive A. Sawyer, late of Woodstock, Vermont, bequeathed because of the pastor's supreme faith in dedicating the bog as he did in May, 1925.

Many people have had a feeling which other people have called superstition, about this wayside church and especially about "God's Cranberry Bog." It was not strange, therefore, that the village was somewhat startled, and Edward Rowe in particular, one cool night in August, 1926, when a huge ball of fire appeared in the Heavens, like Elijah's chariot of fire in reverse gear. It came hurling through the air in the direction of "God's Cranberry Bog." The astonished Edward Rowe watched it strike heavily into the ground, not of "God's Cranberry Bog," but one near it belonging to Harvey Burgess.

Mr. Rowe did not know whether to follow the moving star, like one of the wise men of old, or to wait for at least two others to appear. Soon several men came from one of the shanties in the neighborhood and, upon investigation, it was decided that the celestial visitant was a meteor. From front to back it was wedge shaped and weighed about fourteen pounds. It was later viewed by mineralogists who said pebbles bedded in the meteor were granite, gneiss and quartz. It was grey green in color, and looked like various stones, concrete and smooth pebbles melted together. Whether it came from Mars or some nearer shore no one seemed to know but it was placed on exhibition in the centre of the town and attracted much attention and comment.

**Wonderful Marketing Opportunities**—Another small town which has become the centre of an important Plymouth County industry, or specialized farming, is Halifax. This town of less than 500 inhabitants is the geographical centre of the county. A generation ago its principal industries were farming in general in the summer and lumbering in the winter. There were several sawmills, operated by water power or steam, and many thousands of logs were cut, hauled to the mills and sawed into box boards; while the limbs of the trees became commercial wood fuel which sold for a liberal price. Most of the forests were of white pine.

Halifax is today one of several of the smaller towns in the county extensively engaged in producing poultry, eggs for hatching and day old chicks. Most of the fanciers prefer Rhode Island Reds and several hundred thousands of little reds are hatched in the incubators and find a waiting market, or are sold as broilers in another market.

What has been done in Halifax has been done to a large extent in other towns in the county. As a matter of fact the Plymouth County



Extension Service for several years has advocated poultry farming rather than truck farming and the advice has proven profitable to follow. The opportunity for poultry raising in the county seems unlimited. The Boston market secures from the farms in Massachusetts only a small proportion of the eggs and poultry it consumes. Millions of eggs are imported from China and other countries. It is said that eggs cost more in the Boston market than anywhere else in the country, and the prices tempt shipments by train loads from the Middle West.

The brown shelled egg brings a slightly higher price in the Boston market; New York demands white eggs. Since the Boston market is the one for Plymouth County, Rhode Island Reds, which usually produce brown eggs of good size, are the favorites. Plymouth County has become a nursery for red hens. It took much interest in a monument which was dedicated August 28, 1926, in Little Compton, Rhode Island. The monument is in the State where it is supposed the Rhode Island Red originated, but there are other monuments or memorial buildings all over Plymouth County housing her numberless descendants. It is in Plymouth County that the highest degree of specialization in the poultry industry has grown up and persisted.

The governor of Rhode Island, college professors, scholars and economists took part in the dedication of the monument to the little red hen which has become such an important factor in New England agriculture. In Plymouth County, for instance, the highest grade breeding stock is obtained and sent all over the domestic and foreign markets. There are many poultry farmers who have incubators capable of hatching 40,000 eggs at a setting. Economically the business is sound. Highest quality poultry and eggs must be produced near the point of consumption and it is highest quality that the Boston market demands. Western eggs may continue to appear in the cooking but the Plymouth County egg cannot be excelled as the delight of the breakfast table.

Poultry as a meat is also produced for the best markets. There is a poultry farm in Island Creek, between Kingston and Duxbury, from which are shipped to the New York market broilers in the largest quantity of any broiler producing farm in the East. The entire county looks to New England dealers as sources of superior breeding stock, and Plymouth County is the poultry tenderloin of New England. The breeding plant is an added opportunity for the poultry husbandry of the county which has assumed substantial proportions and a matchless reputation. In recent years there has been a great demand for ducks for food, and profitable duck farms are taking the place of those devoted a generation ago to raising vegetables with indifferent success.

There is plenty of opportunity for the man or woman who engages

in agriculture in Plymouth County. There is a good market, generally speaking, close at hand, for whatever products may be grown. In these days of automobiles and roadside stands, with the ability of every farmer to own an automobile of some quality with which he can truck his products to market, it becomes merely a question of selection. Some farms will produce one thing much better than anything else, most of them respond best to some specialty, and others are better for poultry raising, possibly ducks.

There are many helps to agriculture, especially the county farm agent, with whom consultations may be had and whose advice is invaluable. The extension service from the Massachusetts Agricultural College with its three-fold mission, under the county agent, home demonstration agent and county club agent, has raised the standard of living, added general prosperity, educated the children and given the county a new tone and more abundant living the past few years. With all due respect to the leaders in other counties in the State, the staff in charge of Plymouth County is unexcelled. This department deserves a chapter of its own, as does the help of agricultural fairs, granges and other organizations, and this chapter will appear in its proper sequence.

Secretary of Agriculture Jardine included Plymouth County in his advice given July 30, 1926, when, in a speech at the Massachusetts Agricultural College he said: "You have the finest apples, the largest and best cranberry crops in the world, and you must stick to them. Investigate and find out your best product, and then organize and advertise. You must capitalize your advantages, but first you must find out what your advantages are. The principles for your success are those of any business and you must bear in mind that after you have made your market you must be able to deliver the goods. Take advantage of your wonderful market and don't bother about a foreign market."



## CHAPTER IX

### "MAYFLOWER" WAS NOT FILLED WITH CLOCKS.

**Popularity of Clocks Due to London Fog—Pilgrims Presumably Possessed Sun Dials—Early Old Colony Craftsmen Constructed Timepieces Still Measuring Time for Their Descendants—Famous Willard Family Constructed Clocks Which Chimed Psalm Tunes On Sunday and Secular Airs Other Six Days in the Week—Yankees Took Their Inventions With Them When They Helped Tame the Wild West—Rev. Hugh Peters Invited His Congregation To "Stay and Have Another Glass."**

Presumably many thousands of people have at times been asked to look into the face of a clock, proudly exhibited by the owner, with the statement that it "came over in the 'Mayflower.'" In many cases the clock exhibited with that statement has been a tall timepiece called a hall clock or "grandfather's clock," a type which has for two centuries or more been familiar in the homes in New England, more particularly in Southeastern Massachusetts and Maine. It is very doubtful if there was such a clock on the "Mayflower" or if there was such a clock in existence when the "Mayflower" made its voyage to these shores. So many claims have been made for clocks which "came over in the 'Mayflower'" that whenever that boat of small dimensions has been mentioned it has immediately associated itself, in the minds of many, with clocks and other furniture. What clocks, if any, there were with the passengers on the "Mayflower," are more likely to have been brass clocks of the "lantern" type, such as were popular in London, in those days. As a matter of fact clocks became very popular in London before they were especially popular anywhere else, naturally enough. Their popularity was considerably due to "London fog." Lest one remain in the fog as to why this should be, it is well to explain it here.

For centuries men told time by the sun. The original crude sun dial was a stick stuck in the ground, as near perpendicular as the eye could judge. "Cleopatra's Needle" in Central Park, New York, is believed to have been a gigantic timepiece. How far back the sun stick goes as an aid to man to measure time no one knows but there is an historical reference to sun dials as early as 800 B. C., and they were probably hoary with age at that time. Berosus, the Chaldean historian and priest, invented a sun dial shaped like a bowl with a pointer in it. This was about 250 B. C. He argued that the sky itself was shaped like a bowl and so the shadow cast along the lines of the "Hemicycle of Berosus"

to indicate the hours, gave correctness to the instrument. Relics of these sun dials of Berosus have been exhumed amid the ruins of Pompeii and it is related that Cicero was the proud possessor of one of these instruments, for centuries the best means of recording the hours.

But sun dials were not satisfactory where there were frequent days without any sunshine, and this describes London. Necessity is the mother of invention, we are told, and London inventors were working on a good line when they attempted to construct something which would tell the time regardless of the sunshine. King Alfred, about 850 A. D., is said to have invented a water clock; also the plan of dividing his time into eight hour periods, eight hours for work, eight hours for sleep and eight hours for self improvement and charitable deeds. Alfred was apparently the first of the kings who gave sufficient heed to good use of his time to especially concern himself in dividing it or measuring it. Whether King Alfred invented a water clock or not, such a Volstead-approved timepiece, called a clepsydra, whereby water escaping through a hole told the hours, was in use many years. In the law courts of Rome these water clocks leaked while the orators spoke half a pint or a mouthful.

Probably there were hour glasses on the "Mayflower," as they were invented at Alexandria in 300 B. C. and as late as 1839 the hour glass was still used in the British Navy. It made its way generally into the churches in the sixteenth century as a timekeeper for the preacher during his sermon, and is still used to mark the time for boiling eggs and for telephonic conversations in the absence of wrist watches.

A few years ago the writer was looking through the Columbus Cathedral in Havana, Cuba, and had his attention called to a very ornate clock which "was in Christopher Columbus' cabin in his flagship at the time he discovered America," but was glad to see it was not a "grandfather's clock."

Very likely when Massasoit had his official interview with the Pilgrim Fathers in March, 1621, at Plymouth, at the Common House, among the white men's wonders he gazed upon was a clock of the "lantern" variety, or one which hung upon the wall, with the bob pendulum swinging free, after the open plumbing style. It was 1680, some sixty years after the "Mayflower's" arrival, when the long pendulum came into use and about that time the clock case was constructed and this made a "grandfather's clock" of the whole assembly.

For many years in the Plymouth Colony, clocks were a luxury, as their cost prohibited them being owned by the average family. In olden times there were clocks operated by means of weights suspended by catgut and wound by pulling the string to raise the weight for another



descent; and there were clocks operated by means of a spring. The latter were the smaller clocks, which were placed on the mantelpieces, cupboards, tables or on whatever might be used as a standard, replacing the "Old Clock on the Stairs," or in the chimney corner. But the "grandfather's clock" did not

"Stop short, never to go again, when"...

the smaller, spring controlled clocks came into use. Many of them were relegated to the attics and some of them remained there till the modern craze for antiques brought them forth to be dusted, have their faces and hands washed, to go to a new home, in exchange for many times the amount they were considered worth when new. There are many such tall clocks still in use in homes in Plymouth County, which have never been out of the family and never had a vacation, unless it was in earlier days between visits of the itinerant clock cleaners and repairers.

These itinerant clock men were once respected craftsmen in the Old Colony and throughout New England, at least, useful members of society, accustomed to putting their names and the dates of their ministrations to needy clocks in the inside of the clock-case. Some such signatures and notations are still to be read in the old clocks which stand on the floors or on the shelves.

To indicate the value of clocks when the Plymouth Colony was young, there is a record of the inventory of an estate, made in 1645, in which one of the items was "a clock" and the amount for which it was appraised one pound. The estate of John Cotton, inventoried in 1652 or 1653, included "1 clock and case in ye great parlour," the value of which was given as six pounds. From inventories of thirty-six estates, taken at random, in which clocks are mentioned, between 1645 and 1689, the average valuation was two pounds and twelve shillings.

**Willards Made Famous Timepieces**—Men of small means were first enabled to count clocks among their possessions by the genius of the famous Willard family, makers of clocks in this vicinity. The first was Benjamin Willard of Grafton, Lexington and Roxbury, who engaged in clockmaking about 1764. The first clocks had only the hour hand. The bob pendulum was invented about 1640. An early type of clock had four legs and, on this account, was called the "bedpost." The expression "between you and I and the bedpost" is said to have taken into consideration a clock rather than one of the "four-poster" variety of dream couches.

The Willard family was not only composed of good craftsmen but most of them were inventive and one or two were good business men. The latter distinction especially applied to Aaron Willard of Roxbury.

Benjamin Willard advertised in the "Boston Gazette" February 22, 1773, "Musical clocks playing different tunes, a new tune every day in the week, and on Sunday a Psalm tune. These tunes perform every hour." The Willards also had clocks with barometers, those which told the months of the year, days of the week, moon's changes, and other facts convenient to have brought to one's attention when he looked at the clock.

Philander Willard, who made clocks in Ashburnham previous to 1825, "made a gravity clock, very curious, still in existence," according to a paragraph in "The Clock Book" by Rev. Wallace Nutting of Framingham, a former pastor of the Porter Congregational Church in Brockton, and a recognized authority on historic houses and antique furniture, as well as many other things.

Aaron Willard, Jr., a Boston clockmaker, originated the lyre clock.

The most famous member of the family was Simon Willard of Roxbury, 1770-1839, who learned his trade from an English clockmaker named Morris. He it was who, in 1802, brought out the banjo clock. There has been no improvement since in its original design but banjo clocks are much sought after by those interested in Colonial furniture. Simon Willard presented two clocks to Harvard University, the large clock in the Capitol at Washington, which he made at the age of 82 years, and that on the Old State House in Boston, in front of which the Boston Massacre took place. He retired from business in 1839, the principal reason being that he was 86 years of age. Simon Willard, Jr., was a graduate from the West Point Military Academy, but the Willards never brought up their boys to be soldiers but clockmakers. Clockmaking was in the blood. Simon, Jr., resigned from the army in 1816, learned chronometer and watchmaking in New York, set up in business for himself at No. 9 Congress Street, Boston, where he remained true to the traditions of the Willard stock till 1870. He made the astronomical clock now in the observatory at Harvard University. His astronomical regulator was standard time for all the railroads in New England.

Simon Willard, Sr., was the Henry Ford of clock-making. He made it possible for the average man to have a clock as Ford made it possible for the man in the street to ride instead of walk. Thanks largely to Willard the town clock became as much a Plymouth Colony institution as the town pump or the town crier, and the town clock winder became a town official. Simon Willard supplied clocks for public buildings among the many kinds he manufactured. In the official records of Boston there is an entry under date of January 25, 1659, on which date the selectmen ordered that "Rich. Taylor is allowed thirty shillings for repairing the clock for his direction to ring by, and is to have five



pounds per annum for the future, provided hee bee att charges to keepe a clock and to repayre itt." Ten years before, according to an entry dated June 4, 1649, in the second report of the Boston Record Commissioners, this same Richard Taylor was "to ringe the bell at 9 of the cloke at night and half an houre after foure in the morning and is to have for his recompense 4,1 a yeare, begininge his year the 24: 4th mo. 1649."

July 28, 1684, the selectmen "agreed with Wm. Sumner blacksmith to pay him 4 lbs in mony to keepe the clocke at ye North end of the Towne for one yeare to begin the 1st of Augt next & to pay him for worke done about sd clocke the year past 14 s mony."

From these entries it is inferred that the clock kept in the house of Richard Taylor was a brass lantern clock, and that the town had later a large turret clock in the First and in the North meeting-houses, as there is a record, under date of February 28, 1708, that the selectmen "agreed with Isaac Webb that he alter the Town clock now standing being in the old Meeting-House, and make the same into an eight day clock, he to furnish all Materials for ye doing thereof, and cause the same to go well to the satisfaction of the selectmen for which he is to be paid the Sume of thirteen pounds. And after the same is So done he is duly to Attend, wind up and Keep clean the Same yearly," etc.

It is inferred that Isaac Webb was the first clock-maker in Boston, and that he was hired to care for the town clock in 1708 which had in previous years been cared for by William Sumner, blacksmith; and by others who were gunsmiths or mechanics in general.

Simon Willard advertised in the "Massachusetts Spy" or "Worcester Gazette," Thursday, March 11, 1784: "Roasting Jack in which is contained a complete apparatus of Kitchen dripping pan, spit, skewers and baster, &c, which is so constructed with tin plates as to reflect back upon the meat all the heat the tin receives, which occasions the saving of almost one half of that important article fire-wood. The above Jack may be had of Col. Paul Revere, directly opposite Liberty Pole, Boston."

Later, there appeared an advertisement of this same invention in an announcement by Benjamin Willard, who included the announcement that "country produce will be taken in payments for his work. Said Willard also makes all kinds of Tin ware which he sells wholesale and retail." Emphasized by an index hand pointing to the remainder of the advertisement appears: "Wanted by said Willard two or three active, sprightly boys, about fourteen years of age, as apprentices."

It would seem from the records and the advertisements of the Willards with their many kinds of clocks, some of which played a different tune every day, once every hour, and Psalm tunes on Sunday; their

roasting jack and tin ware ; their readiness to take pay in country produce and take apprentice; that they did their share along their own lines, and have left clocks which continue to tell time now as faithfully as in the days of the said Willards. The name of Willard seldom appeared on the works of clocks which they manufactured or upon the dials of their banjo clocks. Occasionally the name of Willard is found upon such a clock today but there are many fraudulent "Willard clocks" as there are fraudulent Stradivarius violins.

When clock-making first began in New England we do not know. In the administration accounts of the estate of Peter Noyes of Sudbury, Massachusetts, there is an item of seven shillings "Pd Mr. Smith ye clockmaker," dated May 16, 1694, for care of Town clock. It has already been mentioned in this chapter that Isaac Webb entered into an agreement with the selectmen of Boston for similar work in 1708. There were no clocks made in the Plymouth Colony, so far as the writer knows, previous to the Revolutionary War, but clockmaking became an established industry in several of the towns in this vicinity during the reconstruction period, following the ringing of the Liberty bell. Three brothers, John, Calvin and Lebbeus Bayley (or Bailey) of Hanover, were clockmakers. John (1770-1815) is said to have been "one of the most skillful mechanics of his time." Some of his clocks are still keeping time in Hanover and neighboring towns. There were of the second generation of clockmakers in the Bayley or Bailey family who manufactured in Hingham, John, Jr., from 1815 to 1820; and Joseph who made clocks about 1808. Lebbeus, already referred to, moved to Maine about 1800, when that State was separated from Massachusetts, and introduced clockmaking in Northern New England. Other clockmakers in Hingham the last few years of the eighteenth century were Caleb Gill and Leavitt Gill; also Captain Joseph Lovis, and Samuel Norton, industrious early residents of that town. About the same time a man named Hiffords, living in North Middleborough, or Titicut, was famous for his clocks of superior quality, which he invented and manufactured.

Dr. Josiah Leavitt of Hingham made a clock which was fitted into a dormer window of the attic of the old Meeting-House in such a way that the dial was plainly seen from the street. It answered the purpose of a Town clock, as indeed it was. This was in 1772 or 1773. He later moved to Boston and became an organ builder. Contemporary clockmakers in this vicinity were Ezra Whitman and Jonah Edson of Bridgewater, Philip Holway of Falmouth, Allen Kelley of Sandwich, Samuel Rogers, Reuben Tower and Caleb Leach of Plymouth; Isaac Rogers of Marshfield, John Monroe of Barnstable, and Benjamin Torrey of Hanover.



Nathaniel Mulliken of Lexington was a clockmaker at the time of the Battle of Lexington and presumably took part in that surprise party given to the British on their way to Concord to arrest John Hancock and other patriots. Mulliken's shop was burned by the British.

David Studley learned clockmaking of John Bayley in Hanover and remained with him several years. He then moved to North Bridgewater, now Brockton, in 1834, and made watches and jewelry and repaired clocks. Eventually he sold out to his brother, Luther Studley, who continued in the business in North Bridgewater. Before him, in that town, the business was carried on by Ezekiel Reed. Shortly afterward Rodney Brace came from Torrington, Connecticut, and began the manufacture of small wooden clocks in North Bridgewater, now Brockton, associated with Isaac Packard as a partner. They were among the first to introduce small clocks and had to travel far to sell them, packing a clock in each saddle bag and riding the rounds like a circuit preacher. Their clocks were built upon honor and eventually were much in demand. Many North Bridgewater clocks were exchanged for country produce.

There was a clockmaker in Hingham about 1790 named Joshua Wilder who made what became known as a "grandmother" clock. It was smaller than a "grandfather" clock, but otherwise much the same. One of these "grandmother" clocks, made by Wilder, still tells the time of day in the home of C. Prescott Knight at Providence, Rhode Island. It is in its original case, tells the time, has an alarm attachment. There is at least one other "grandmother" clock made by Wilder which is still keeping up its good work, but they are very rare.

The late Governor Elisha Dyer of Rhode Island owned a Colonial chime clock which was made for Peregrine White about 1774. Needless to say he was not the first white child born in the colony but a descendant, as the clock was made, if 1774 is the right date, 153 years after the birth of the first Peregrine. This clock chimes every three hours, at 12, 3, 6 and 9, a different tune each day and a Psalm tune on Sunday.

Eli Terry, a Connecticut Yankee, has been given the credit for founding the clock industry in New England but there were many before him. He, however, employed as a joiner Seth Thomas of Plymouth Hollow, now Thomaston, Connecticut, in 1809, and took him into partnership, also Silas Hoadley. They made tall clocks. Thomas, in 1812, sold out to Hoadley and made clocks on his own account. In 1853 he incorporated the Seth Thomas Clock Company which still continues to make clocks. Thomas died in 1859 and the town was named Thomaston in his honor.

Regardless of how many clocks may have entered Plymouth County from the "Mayflower," there were many which went out of it on the prairie schooners or covered wagons when "Westward Ho" was the cry after the Revolutionary War. Yankee inventions as well as Yankees went into the great West. It became a Western habit as well as a New England custom to hide money in the clock; a custom almost as universal as putting it in a stocking.

Many are the romances which have been lived as well as written about a New England Old Colonial clock. The Town clock was the authority on time and within sight of it was the social centre, when early residents came within its vision for a common purpose of regulating their own timepieces. This was before the time of telephones, over which clocks were set until the telephone company discontinued that service, somewhat in advance of the radio which now gives the information several times a day without being asked. So far there has been no Yankee invention to satisfy the different convictions regarding daylight saving time. That institution, however, dates back to the old Colonial days, as Benjamin Franklin, Boston born and bred, was its first advocate.

Some of the old time clocks carried a message, pasted inside the case, the manufacturers seeming to catch a vision of the long time after their own day that the clocks would be preserved in action. One such message, still decipherable in the few remaining clocks of that make still extant, reads:

Lo! here I stand by Thee  
To give Thee warning, day and night;  
For every tick that I do give  
Cuts short the time Thou has to live.  
Therefore, a warning take by me,  
To serve Thy God as I serve Thee.  
Each day and night be on Thy guard,  
And Thou shalt have a just reward.

The following clocks which had been received from England were offered for sale in Boston by Joseph Essex and Thomas Badley, in 1712: Thirty-hour, week, month, spring table, chime, quarter, quarter-chime, church, and turret; also pocket and repeating watches. Clocks which ran a week and repeated the hour when a string was pulled, were advertised in 1716. Some clocks in black walnut cases, precious mementoes of honored relatives who lived more than a hundred and fifty years ago, still remain and perform their service as faithfully as ever. Others adorn the lodge rooms or club houses in many towns of Plymouth County, bequeathed to the organization of which the master of the clock was a member, by those who have had it handed down to them



and wish to make further provision for its being regularly oiled and wound and looked upon with admiration.

There are several estates in the county which are among the show places occasionally opened to the public, in which some precious sun dials are carefully placed in the gardens, some of them having come down from before the days when clocks and watches were used to mark the passing hours. One such timepiece, made of brass, once owned by Governor Endicott, is still preserved in the Salem Museum. Sun dials are referred to in the Bible, in which it is recorded, in Kings, "Isaiah, the prophet, cried unto the Lord, and he brought the shadow ten degrees backward, by which it had gone down in the dial of Ahaz."

No story of timepieces and the part they played in the history of the Plymouth Colony and other colonies in the federation would be well told without further reference to the hour-glass. This was one of the things brought from the old country and was the method of measuring time in the church, both for the preacher and the congregation. A candle was placed behind the hour glass in the dimly lighted churches, to enable members of the congregation to see readily how the sands were running, without too much craning of necks.

There is a story of Rev. Hugh Peters, a Massachusetts colonial preacher whose portrait was painted, standing in the pulpit at Salem and reversing the hour-glass, in the attitude of saying: "I know you are good fellows; stay and take another glass." Often the colonial congregations had to "take another glass," as when they had anxiously seen the sand run low and finally disappear from the upper part of the glass, the minister would arbitrarily reverse the instrument and apparently begin all over again, without saying so much as "by your leave" or making the facetious remark attributed to the Rev. Peters. This preacher, by the way, returned to England, became chaplain to Oliver Cromwell; then a regicide and was beheaded in 1660.

In some meeting-houses the hour-glasses were hung upon the wall, as the strenuous preachers occasionally upset a glass in their vehement picturization of the wrath to come, and the taxpayers objected to the expense of replacement or repairs. Many of these hour-glasses had on the frames mottoes engraved, such as

As this sand runneth  
So your life fadeth.

Another motto was

I mark the Time! Saye, Gossip, dost thou soe?

It is feared few of them were entitled to bear the motto sometimes engraved on the old sun dials:

I mark only the sunny hours.





## CHAPTER X

### INTERESTING RECORDS OF "THE GOOD OLD DAYS."

Colonial Houses Heated By Huge Fireplaces, With Rushes Strewn on the Earth Floors—Stocks Much In Use to Punish Those Who Were Profane or Given To Telling Lies—Colonists Obligated to Observe Thanksgiving But Celebrating Christmas was a Crime—Terrifying Sermons Preached in Meeting-Houses Where Attendance Was Compulsory—Witchcraft Craze Hardly Touched The Plymouth Colony—Roger Williams, Unwelcome in Salem, Admitted to Pilgrim Church—Crude Agricultural Implements Used Most of Nineteenth Century—Plow Used by the "Godlike Daniel" Still in Existence—Many Followed the Trade of John Alden, the Cooper.

A great deal has come down to us in song and story about the good, old days, which remind us of the enthusiastic yarns sometimes spun by "the oldest inhabitant," when in a reminiscent mood. The people of the Southeastern Massachusetts counties a century ago knew nothing of modern methods of heating houses in winter, cooling them in summer, lighting them by electricity or gas; nothing of electric refrigeration or washing machines. Those were the days of the tallow candles, open fireplaces, the open well, with its "old oaken bucket," or the cucumber pump. Many of the wells were a considerable distance from the houses, perhaps on the opposite side of the road.

Barns were frequently built on the other side of the road from the dwelling, because of the danger otherwise of both buildings being consumed if one caught fire, and the well was often beside the barn, as the better position for fire protection, against a fire in the barn, which was considered more likely than one in the house. There were no fire departments.

When the first United States census was taken in 1790, nineteen out of twenty people lived in the country. Now one half the people of the United States live in the cities and large towns. Plymouth County has only one city, Brockton, but that contains approximately one-third of the county population.

Most of the labor-saving machinery used on the farms has been invented or at least come into general use, within the past hundred years. In those "good, old days,"

The floors were strewn with rushes,  
Bare walls let in the cold,  
Oh, how they must have suffered  
In those good, old days of old.

At an earlier period the houses were built of logs, with spaces between chinked with clay, one story in height. The roofs were thatched. The largest room was the living room, kitchen, dining and sleeping room for the head of the house. Smaller rooms were used as sleeping rooms for other members of the family. The large room was heated by means of a fireplace, with a big chimney, and this was the only means of heating the house. Most houses had no floors in the early days, except earthen floors, strewn with rushes, much as many street cars were strewn with straw in winter in Boston and many other cities up to a quarter of a century ago, or as long as horse-drawn cars were common in municipalities.

**No Observance of Christmas**—The meeting-houses, also built of logs, until Richard Church and John Tomson built the first framed meeting-house in Plymouth, were used for religious services, also for places of assembly for the community for all sorts of purposes. Benches were arranged on the sides. Worshippers were seated, men on one side and women on the other, and with special seats assigned to boys and girls, to Indians and colored people, proper distinction, according to the caste of the times, being given to age, rank and wealth. The services were simple. The feast and fast days of the Established Church of England were not permitted, nor the observance of holidays. Even Christmas was forbidden for many years. In fact the observance of Christmas was forbidden the first day that any attempt was made to erect a dwelling in Plymouth.

Governor Bradford's diary includes this entry: "On the 15 of December they wayed anchor to goe to ye place they had discovered, & came within 2 leagues of it, but were faine to bear up againe; but ye 16 day ye wind came faire, and they arrived safe in this harbour and afterwards tooke better view of ye place, and resolved wher to pitch their dwelling; and ye 25 day begane to erecte ye first house for comone use to receive them and their goods." This was the day that work began on the first house in New England of a permanent nature, disregarding the storehouse erected by Bartholomew Gosnold at Cuttyhunk, which was abandoned, owing to the decision of the voyagers, on the second visit to these shores to go to Virginia, instead of remaining to complete their work begun here, toward a settlement.

"So no man rested that day." Trees were cut down, dragged to the position decided upon on Leyden Street, overlooking the harbor in which the "Mayflower," with the women and children still on board, was riding at anchor. A good lookout was kept against an attack from Indians and considerable progress was made toward providing "a local habitation and a home" for a company of one hundred and two people



who had been one hundred and two days and nights on the ocean, in a vessel which would not be chartered in these days to carry a handful of that number, if it would be allowed to put to sea with any number of passengers.

There is a story connected with the second Christmas in Plymouth which is interesting, as it involves what might be called the first strike in America. Some members of the colony demurred against working because it was Christmas and a holiday. Bradford says: "So ye Gov. tould them that if they made it mater of conscience he would spare them till they were better informed. So he led away ye rest and left them, but when they came home at noone from their worke, he found them in ye streets at play, openly, some pitching ye bair, and some at stoole-ball, and suchlike sports. So he went and tooke away their implements and tould them that was against his conscience, that they should play and others worke. If they made ye keeping it mater of devotion, let them kepe their houses, but there should be no gameing or reveling in ye streets."

The governor and his successors frowned upon the observance of Christmas as something which savored of the old church from which they had cut loose, but it was not until 1659 that it became a crime in the eyes of the law to observe the day. The General Court passed a law against the observance of Christmas and the penalty was five shillings for "forbearing of labour, feasting or in any other way" celebrating on the 25th of December.

Christmas remained unlawful in Massachusetts for twenty years or more and did not become a legal holiday until about 70 years ago. It was not until about forty years ago that the banks in Plymouth were closed on that day, so little was thought of the holiday.

In 1640, the General Court passed an order that "No man should be compelled to satisfy any debt, legality, fine or make any payments in money but satisfaction should be accepted in corn, cattle, fish, or other commodities at a rate appraised by an appointed officer." The court further ordered that wild hemp be gathered, against the anticipated scarcity of clothing the coming winter, and that members of families employ all possible time in working out hemp and flax for clothing. Even the children were taught spinning and weaving and set at work.

It was that same year that it was ordered by the court "that profane swearing should be punished by setting in the stocks three hours, or by imprisonment." Another order was that "for telling lies, a fine of ten shillings should be imposed for each and every offence, or setting in the stocks two hours." Money was exceedingly scarce and the stocks much in use.

That same year the court passed an act "to prevent idleness and other evils." The grand jurors in each town were authorized "to take special view and notice all persons, married or single, that have small means to maintain themselves, and are supposed to live idly and loosely and require an account of them how they live; and finding any delinquent, order a constable to carry them before a magistrate, or the selectmen, to deal with them as they see fit." The magistrates in those days had many duties to perform, among them the marrying of couples. Ministers were not allowed to perform that office, presumably because it was the custom in the old church.

**Yankee Traders Began Early**—The Indians had used wampum as a medium of exchange and the colonists sometimes accepted wampum in their transactions with the red men, as it furnished a convenient medium for additional purchases. When colonists purchased land from the Indians they usually gave a certain number of blankets, coats, knives or other articles of wearing apparel or implements useful to either whites or red men. The lack of money made it difficult to do business in the colonies and one article was traded for another in the way of barter. Perhaps it was this habit and the variation in values between one person and another for the same article which got into the blood and produced the "yankee traders" of later days.

There were a few English coins in the Old Colony and some Spanish coins came as a result of commerce with the West Indies. Fish, salted meats and barrel staves were sent from the Plymouth Colony, and likewise from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and exchanged for molasses from the West Indies. This molasses was made into rum to a large extent and New England rum was a commodity which made New England famous for a time to almost the same extent as Milwaukee was made famous from the product of its extensive breweries. Many people of the present day who will hardly admit that they have arrived at the milestone of "middle age" can remember stores in Duxbury, for instance, over the door of which was a sign reading "English and West India Goods." One of these stores also announced on its sign the name of "N. Ford and Sons." It was on the turnpike from Plymouth to Boston, through Duxbury, and was burned a few years ago.

There was a mint established in Massachusetts in 1652 at which Pine Tree shillings were coined. Later some paper money was issued.

**Cruel Punishments In Those Days**—The discipline in the colonies was severe in the extreme, both among the Pilgrims and Puritans, and many people of the present day have wondered whether the early religionists in this country had a zeal for cruelty or revenge as well



as for non-conformistic principles. It is known that in Salem, in one case, Ratcliffe for "uttering malicious and scandalous speeches against the government and the church at Salem" was fined, had his ears cut off, and was banished. People were put in the stocks and publicly whipped for trivial offences in the Plymouth Colony, but in those same days the most inhuman punishments were meted out to offenders in England, and for many years after, as the old British prison ship which visited these shores as an exhibit a few years ago gave testimony.

Lingard's "History of England" gives information about discipline in that country, such as the cutting off of hands and ears, slitting the nose, and being branded for trivial offences. Rev. Mr. Leighton, a non-conformist minister in England, printed a book taking issue with the established church. The House of Lords sentenced him to be fined ten thousand pounds, deposed from his church, publicly whipped, placed in the stocks, an ear cut off, his nose slit open, cheek branded, and at the expiration of one week to be again whipped publicly, placed in the stocks, his other ear cut off, and his other cheek branded. Upon this sentence being carried out, he was sentenced for life imprisonment. Ten years later, Oliver Cromwell released him from prison. At that time instant death was the penalty for committing any one of one hundred and sixty offenses which, according to Blackstone in his "Commentaries," "men are liable daily to commit."

Against the punishment of Rev. Mr. Leighton in England, might be offered, in contrast, that accorded Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, who, for "heresy" was banished by the church in Boston. Her offense was, according to Governor Winthrop, "two dangerous errors, that the person of the Holy Ghost dwells in a justified person, and that no sanctification can help to evidence to us our justification."

There was a law in Massachusetts in 1692 which provided that every person who shall "profanely swear or curse" be required to pay a fine of five shillings or sit in the stocks two hours. The fine was regulated as "twelve pence for every oath after the first" and among other duties required of the tithing men was to present to the justices "all profane swearers, and Cursers and the Number as nere as they Can of their oaths."

Evidently there was not a perfect understanding of this statute or possibly it had somewhat come into disuse by 1746, for in that year there was additional legislation on the subject of swearing "to more effectually prevent profane cursing and swearing," said law to "be read in the meeting-house by ministers on the Lord's day next succeeding the choice of town officers yearly." Recollections of the choice of town officers and the expressions of disappointment on the part of those

whose favorites lost in the municipal battles, would suggest the advisability of reminding the populace of the law just before, rather than just after, such a town meeting.

For uttering reviling speeches Jane Boulton of Plymouth had her legs locked in the stocks. In Eastham there were idlers about the meeting-house who would not go inside and, upon complaints having been made, they were placed in the stocks for a longer time than the long service at the meeting-house. There is a record that William Vesey of Braintree was, in 1697, sentenced to the pillory for ploughing on Thanksgiving Day. The Pilgrims and their descendants were not allowed to observe Christmas, and most other holidays were taboo, but one had to be thankful on Thanksgiving Day and express his thanks. The law required it. Vesey also was introduced to the pillory for making the assertion that James II was king instead of William of Orange. Five years later he was elected to the General Court but the fact that he had suffered punishment in the pillory was brought up against him and he was expelled. Punishment by the pillory was considered infamous, fully as much so as the whipping post.

The latter institution was adapted to certain offenses. Thieves were flogged and then sent to jail, much the same as sentences at the present day call for a person to spend a certain number of years in prison, the first day to be in solitary confinement. More than forty stripes were not allowed and it was forbidden by law that "any true gentleman be punished with whipping unless his crime be very shameful and his course of life viscious and profligate." David Linnell and Hannah Shelly of Barnstable were flogged at the whipping post "by sentence of the magistracy," after they had confessed a statutory offense. Sarah Osgood of Newbury was sentenced "to be whipped twenty stripes for fornication within six weeks after she shall be brought to bed."

There was another instrument of punishment, or torture, in colonial New England, known as the wooden horse. Whether this had any remote connection with the wooden horse in the story of Troy has nothing to do with the case. It was smaller than the Trojan horse but just as effective in its way. There is a certain appropriateness suggested by the fact that among those favored with a ride on the wooden horse, rather than the pillory or a seat in the stocks, were the horse thieves. There is a record that "one James Brown, a transcient Person was brought to the Bar of the County Court on a complaint of Horse-stealing—being put to plead—plead guilty, and on Thursday received the sentence of the Court, that he should be confined to the Goal in this County 8 Weeks, be whipped the first Day 15 stripes on the naked Body, and set one Hour on the wooden Horse, and on the first Monday



of each following Month be whipped ten stripes, and set one hour at each time on the wooden Horse."

**Sought to Discourage Suicides**—There was a law on the statute books in Massachusetts from October 16, 1660, until its repeal February 21, 1824, "Considering how far Satan doth prevail upon persons within this Jurisdiction to make way with themselves," which was intended to discourage suicides. The law read: "To bear testimony against such wicked and unnatural practices that others may be deterred therefrom; do order that if any person be wilfully guilty of their own Death, every such person shall be denied the privilege of being buried in the Common Burying place of Christians, but shall be Buried in some Common Highway and a Cart-load of Stones laid upon the grave as a Brand of Infamy, and as a warning to others to beware of the like Damnable practices."

There were thousands of suicides during the one hundred and sixty-four years that law remained on the statute books of the General Court, and how many cart-loads of stones were actually rattled down upon the graves of suicides in "some common highway" is not a matter of record. It is reasonable to suppose that many of these suicides were prompted by the morbid mental conditions which were natural results of the theological terror which was preached in the meeting-houses, nurtured on the doctrines of John Calvin. A fitting sample is a sermon by Rev. Thomas Hooker, one of the colonial divines, so-called, an extract from which is still in existence and reads: "Suppose any soule here present were to behold the damned in hell, and if the Lord should give thee a little peepe-hole into hell that thou did'st see the horror of those damned soules, and thy heart begins to shake in consideration thereof; then propound this to thy owne heart, what paines the damned in hell doe endure for sinne; and thy heart will shake and quake at it, the least sinne that ever thou didst commit, though thou makes a light matter of it, is a greater evill then the paines of the damned in hell. Men shrink at this and loathe to goe down to hell and to be in endlesse torments. Oh get you into the arke, the Lord Jesus; and when one is roaring and yelling—Oh the Devill, the Devill—another is ready to hang himselfe or to cut his own throat."

Suppose there was a law now, as in the colonial days, which compelled every person to go to church every Sunday and listen to twaddle like that for two or three hours at a stretch, week in and week out, and look about them and see everyone apparently swallowing it as coming from someone who spoke with authority, and answer honestly what would the suicide record presumably be? There was no escape. Listen to these "sons of thunder" or be locked into the stocks or placed

on the pillory for persons to throw rotten vegetables at, every good marksman expecting a special blessing from heaven for making a bullseye! In the language of a very modern humorist: "Them were the happy days!"

Rev. Thomas Hooker was just a little more powerful preacher than most of the parsons. He came to Massachusetts in 1633 and collaborated with Rev. John Cotton of Boston in writing the "Survey of the Summe of Church Discipline," which was published in 1648.

It is true that the witchcraft craze did not have much of a history in the Plymouth Colony. The exceedingly busy Cotton Mather made witchcraft, murders and persecutions his favorite indoor and outdoor sport, next to hating the Indians. It is possible that Cotton Mather's vituperative tongue uttered so many accusations that finally he believed some of his own utterances. If we may believe him, there is one of his writings, dated March 16, 1703, which reads: "Should I tell in how many Forms the Devil has assaulted me it would strike my Friends with Horror. Sometimes Temptations to Impurities, and sometimes to blasphemy and Athieism, and the Abandonment of all Religion as a mere Delusion, and sometimes to self-destruction itself."

The Ides of March of 1703 would have been rather late for the Rev. Cotton Mather to have indulged this sinful temptation to self-destruction and escape the results of his superstitious enthusiasm. Undoubtedly the four generations of the Mather family which supplied preachers did a great deal of good but it was largely through Cotton Mather and his father, Rev. Increase Mather, that witchcraft trials took place in Salem and the craze ran its insane course, resulting in the imprisonment of more than one hundred and fifty men and women and the murder of twenty who were "as innocent in their lives as they were heroic in their deaths."

Cotton Mather was filled with delusions. An entry in his diary reads: "Nov., 1716. There has lately been in the Town an apparition of a Dead person. It is a thing so well attested that there can be no Room to doubt of it. It may be a service to Sundry, and serve many good purposes, for me to obtain a full Relation of ye matter, and have ye persons concerned therein to make oath unto it before a magistrate."

Rev. Henry M. Dexter, D. D., editor of the "Congregationalist" for many years, wrote: "It is to be noted, however, by him who would thoroughly understand Cotton Mather, that his chief misfortune lay in the fact that he outlived that state of society to which he was germane."

**Puritans Invaded Pilgrim Colony**—An interesting fact about the Plymouth Colony, although not mentioned as one which carried with it any virtue or otherwise, mentioned merely as a matter of distinction,



is that, with the exception of the people from the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in Salem and Boston, very few joined the Pilgrims so long as Plymouth remained a colony. The Massachusetts Bay Colony overflow was, however, very substantial, and, at the establishment of the General Court in 1639, there were six towns or settlements, gathered around a church, on the South Shore, beside Plymouth. They were represented in the General Court by deputies and, strange to say, it was not an easy matter to find men in those days who cared for the distinctions or experiences of political action.

Among those who came to Plymouth from Salem was Roger Williams, the founder of Providence, and famous for many things. At Salem, he was assistant to Rev. Samuel Skelton, the pastor. He voiced views hundreds of years in advance of his time, insisted upon the Indians having some rights which the colonists were bound to respect, was more liberal in religion than the Puritans, and for all these convictions, freely expressed, and for many other peculiarities, he was expelled from Salem and its environs.

Evidently the Puritans expected him to go out into the wilderness and die, neither respected nor regretted. Instead, he came to Plymouth, where he "tarried for a while" and, according to Bradford's records, "he exercised his gifts amongst them, and after some time was admitted a member of the church." But, within a year, he caused great dissatisfaction by printing a paper in which he criticised the custom of taking land from the Indians for such paltry payments that it amounted to practical confiscation. He asserted that the charter gave no title to the land; that King James told a solemn public lie, because in his patent he blessed God that he was the first Christian prince that had discovered this land, and also cast several other severe reflections upon King James and King Charles. As has already been said, he was in advance of his time.

New England was more thickly settled than other parts of the country when present-day nonogenarians were born. There was a certain social life which was joyous, sometimes convivial, usually destined to promote the prosperity and larger outlook on life. New England was thrifty, populated largely by descendants of the people from the British Isles, many of whom retained many of the traits of the Pilgrims, and Plymouth County was the essence of New England. It is sometimes said today that New England and Nova Scotia can best be described as the places "where the men still go to church." This church-going characteristic functioned almost one hundred per cent a century ago.

The particular part of New England of which we write was a century ago largely populated by people who lived on small farms. Each family

raised most of its own food supply. There were occasional hired men on the farms but most of the work was done by the owner and his sons. Neighbors sometimes united in work, and husking bees, barn raisings and log rollings were social events as well as coöperative methods of getting a large amount of work done.

Clumsy wooden plows and harrows, wooden rakes, scythes, flails, heavy forks and spades were used up to a comparatively short time ago. The first iron plow was patented in 1797. The grain cradle came in 1803 but very little modern farm machinery came into use before 1830. Indian corn, potatoes and pumpkins were natives of America and grown by the Indians but wheat, rye, oats and barley, cabbages, turnips, peaches and apples were brought over by the early colonists. The Indians possessed no domestic animal except the dog, but horses, cattle, swine and sheep came from Europe to America shortly after the landing of the Pilgrims. It was a long time before the number of horses was equal to the number of oxen used as beasts of burden.

**Famous Daniel Webster Plow**—Daniel Webster, the famous statesman, who was a resident of Marshfield, in Plymouth County, always kept several yokes of oxen. There is still in existence at Durham, New Hampshire, at the University of New Hampshire, a plow which was presented to Mr. Webster by a group of his friends about 1840. It was used by him on his Marshfield farm, where he greatly enjoyed holding the handles behind four yokes of oxen and listening to the roots crack, as the big plow tore them from the tough soil.

Mr. Webster died in 1852, and the plow was secured by the New Hampshire Historical Society, as a valuable relic of the statesman-farmer and something which he had personally used with much pleasure. He was a native of New Hampshire, and the plow was kept in Hanover, in that State, until the opening of Culver Hall at Dartmouth in 1871. On that occasion it was taken into the college field and several furrows ploughed, with Hon. David M. Clough holding the handles. Mr. Clough was a resident of Canterbury and was known as the "corn king of New Hampshire."

In 1893 the plow was transferred from Hanover to Durham, where it has been ever since, except on a few occasions when it was loaned for an agricultural fair or otherwise exhibited under appropriate circumstances.

During the annual Farmers' Week at the University of New Hampshire in August, 1919, it was hitched to a tractor, and with Dean Taylor holding the handles, two furrows, 300 feet long, were turned. It turned furrows, ten inches deep and eighteen inches wide, without a creak. It is made of white oak with a wooden moldboard, covered with strips



of iron. It is thirteen feet long, twenty-five inches high, and weighs 372 pounds.

Clothing was homespun up to one hundred years ago and spinning wheels are still to be found in some attics in Plymouth County, although no longer in use. Many have been bought by antique hunters in recent years and served to ornament colonial rooms or museums. There are still a few grandmothers who can remember the days of making coarse linen and woolen cloth, such as were used for clothing in their childhood. Much hand-made furniture is still in use in the county, including the first rocking chair ever made, an invention for the comfort of a gentlewoman of Kingston, and still kept in the house in which it was made.

Plymouth and Barnstable counties furnished a large number of young men who engaged in cod fishing, shipping on the fishing schooners which sailed away from Kingston, Duxbury and the Cape Cod ports. The call of the sea met with ready response and some of the most skillful and daring seamen of the country have been the boys of these two counties. Whale fishing was an industry in which several generations engaged.

Shipbuilding flourished in Plymouth County. There were numerous grist-mills, iron moulding foundries, sawmills and small manufacturing plants, giving promise of the large factories of the present generation. Furnaces for smelting iron ore, which was found in the ponds and bogs, were in most of the towns. Where the family, if at home, now in long, winter evenings, listens to the radio, it was the custom a hundred or more years ago for the women and girls to spend the evenings in spinning and weaving, while the men and boys made barrel staves, hoops or shingles before the colonial fireplaces. Staves and hoops found a ready market in the West Indies. Most towns had a cooper and barrels and kegs were in general use for all kinds of purposes. The first cooper in the county was John Alden, the secretary to Captain Myles Standish. The colonial home was a factory in which was produced nearly everything needed by the family.





## CHAPTER XI

### HISTORY AMUSINGLY RELATED BY McFINGAL.

**Clergyman Presented Suit of Clothes for Daring To Preach Sermon Which Filled Governor Gage With Rage—Word Pictures of Colonial Meeting-Houses and Early Town Meetings in Plymouth Colony—Lines Written in Appreciation of Marshfield Man Who Took His Commission Very Seriously and Dressed to Play the Part—How Burgoyne Set up Captives as Targets for His Troops and Encouraged the Spread of Smallpox—Savages Paid for Scalping English Colonists by the English Government.**

There were numerous outstanding patriots who took a prominent part in events which led up to the Revolutionary War, whose homes were in Plymouth County. There was the usual proportion of Loyalists or Tories and this county, as all counties, had riotous demonstrations between neighbors of opposing political views regarding Great Britain and the Colonies. There were Plymouth County men who rallied to the defense of Boston, following the Battle of Lexington and the Concord fight. This grand, old county gave a good account of itself in the Revolution and in all the wars.

When there became pronounced opposition to the home government and the tyranny of its officials in this country a Plymouth County clergyman, Rev. Gad Hitchcock of Hanson, was a member of the convention which framed the Constitution of Massachusetts in 1765. He preached the election sermon in the presence of Governor Gage in 1774, taking for his text, "When the righteous are in authority the people rejoice; but when the wicked beareth rule, the people mourn." (Proverbs, 8-2.) After commenting in severe terms upon the calamities resulting from the reign of the wicked he remarked, "We need not pass the limits of our own nation for sad instances of this. Whether or how far it has been exemplified in any of the American colonies, whose government in general are nearly copies of the happy British original, by the operation of ministerial unconstitutional measures, or the public conduct of some among ourselves, is not for me to determine. It is, however, certain that the people mourn."

The sermon referred to was preached in Boston and filled General Gage with rage. Before going into the pulpit, Dr. Hitchcock had been told that General Gage and some of the king's troops were to be present and he was advised to tone down his sermon accordingly, but his answer was: "My sermon is written and it will not be altered."

Among those who heard the sermon and were mightily pleased with the fearlessness of the minister and the way in which he had put over his message in the presence of the king's troops and their proud and haughty governor, was Samuel Adams. He and other leaders, in admiration, presented Dr. Hitchcock with a suit of homespun clothes, as a mark of their appreciation.

In after years "Harper's Magazine" thus referred to him: "Dr. Hitchcock was celebrated for his patriotism and his fearlessness in avowing it, and in doing all that he could for the cause of his country. He sometimes acted as chaplain in the army of the Revolution, and never shunned the dangers to which the soldiers were exposed." Reference is made to him in this history as typical of the men of Plymouth County in the Revolutionary War days, or in any other time of political stress. There were several military companies in the various towns in the county, at Plymouth, North Bridgewater, Middleborough, Bridgewater, Hingham, Scituate, Abington and some smaller towns.

Some amusing flashes, picturing the Revolutionary struggle from the standpoint of the Plymouth Colony, telling something of the peculiarities of the colony itself and reflecting some of the prejudices and judgments commonly held in those times which tried men's souls, were contained in the poem of McFingal.

If you ask the average person today, among those having considerable literary attainments and believing that they know their Old Colonial history, "What can you tell me about McFingal?" the chances are very fair that he will answer in Yankee fashion by asking another question, "Who is McFingal?" This name, however, had a tremendous effect in the latter part of the eighteenth century, and then, as now, most people jumped at the conclusion that McFingal was a real personage, moreover one gifted with second sight.

"McFingal" was a modern epic poem which was first published in America in 1782 in its completed form, although a part of it had been published in Philadelphia in 1775, and the next year reprinted in London, where it passed through several editions. It was published anonymously but was at first thought to have been composed by an Englishman. It dealt with situations in the Plymouth Colony and told the truth about the Revolutionary War, in its later cantos, as no other writing seems to have done, and is deserving of a place in a history of the Pilgrim land. Its author was John Trumbull, Doctor of Laws, whose ancestor came from England in 1645. He was for a time a law student in the office of John Adams, later President of the United States. He was a student of the political turmoil of the time and an ardent advocate of liberty. In 1775 the Battle of Lexington began the Revolutionary War.



Congress was in session in Philadelphia when Trumbull wrote the first part of the poem of McFingal in an effort to inspire confidence in the plan for crushing the Tory party and preparing the public mind for the Declaration of Independence. Friends of the cause immediately took steps to have the poem published in Philadelphia while Congress was in session in that city. The last of the poem was not written until after the surrender of Cornwallis decided the fate of the Revolution. As the poem was not copyrighted it was reprinted by thirty or more printers and booksellers and obtained what was then an enormous circulation. Associated with other young men gifted with powers of satirical writing, many essays appeared more or less mysteriously and had the effect, by their boldness and satire, to check and intimidate leaders of disorganization and infidel philosophy.

An indication of the style of the poem "McFingal" is shown in lines descriptive of the rout of the British from Concord and Lexington when fired upon by the colonists who

"Fired the shot heard round the world."

These opening lines of Canto I were as follows:

Then Yankees, skill'd in martial rule,  
First put the British troops to school,  
Instructed them in warlike trade  
And new manoeuvres of parade,  
Made them give up, like saints complete,  
The arm of flesh, and trust the feet,  
And works, like Christians undissembling,  
Salvation out, by fear and trembling;  
Taught Percy fashionable races,  
And modern modes of Chevy-Chases.

The buildings used as places of public worship in the Old Colony were called meeting-houses rather than churches, as they were used on secular days for whatever gatherings of the people might take place, or, in the language of McFingal:

That house, which loth a rule to break  
Serv'd heaven, but one day in the week,  
Open the rest for all supplies  
Of news, and politics, and lies.

M'Fingal described one of the early town meetings, such as were held in the meeting-houses:

And now the town was summon'd, greeting,  
To grand parading of Town-meeting;  
A show, that strangers might appal,  
As Rome's grave senate did the Gaul.

\* \* \*

Stood forth the constable; and bore  
 His staff, like Merc'ry's wand of yore,  
 Waved potent round, the peace to keep,  
 As that laid dead men's souls to sleep.  
 Above and near the hermetic staff,  
 The Moderator's upper half  
 In grandeur o'er the cushion bow'd,  
 Like Sol half seen behind a cloud.  
 Beneath stood voters of all colours,  
 Whigs, Tories, orators, and brawlers;  
 With every tongue in either faction  
 Prepared like minute-men for action;  
 Where truth and falsehood, wrong and right,  
 Drew all their legions forth to fight.  
 With equal uproar scarcely rave  
 Opposing winds in Aeolus' cave;  
 Such dialogues with earnest face  
 Held never Balaam with his ass.

Abijah White of Marshfield was employed to carry from that Plymouth County to Boston famous town resolves, censuring the Whigs and reprobating the destruction of the tea at the Boston Tea Party. He armed himself in ridiculous military array, as a comic opera hero, pretending he was afraid he would be robbed of his documents. About this time, some British officers, walking on Beacon Hill, Boston, after sunset, were affrighted by noises in the air which they took to be the sound of bullets. It is supposed the cause was the flying of bugs and beetles. An historian says: "They left the hill with great precipitation, spread the alarm in their encampment, and wrote terrible accounts to England of being shot at with air guns." Indeed, for some time they seriously believed, that the Americans were possessed of a kind of magic white powder, which exploded and killed without report. McFingal tells the story:

As comets thro' th' affrighted skies  
 Pour baleful ruin as they rise:  
 As Aetna with infernal roar  
 In conflagration sweeps the shore;  
 Or as Abijah White, when sent  
 Our Marshfield friends to represent,  
 Himself while dread array involves,  
 Commissions, Pistols, Swords, resolves,  
 In awful pomp descending down  
 Bore terror on the factious town:  
 Not with less glory and affright,  
 Parade these generals forth to fight.  
 No more each British colonel runs  
 From whizzing beetles, as air-guns;  
 Thinks horn-bugs bullets, or thro' fears  
 Muskitoes takes for musketeers;



Nor 'scapes, as if you'd gain'd supplies,  
 From Beelzebub's whole host of flies,  
 No bug these warlike hearts appalls;  
 They better know the sound of balls.  
 I hear the din of battle bray;  
 The trump of horror marks its way.  
 I see afar the sack of cities,  
 The gallows strung with Whig-committees;  
 Your moderators triced, like vermin,  
 And gate-posts graced with heads of chairmen.

It was the custom, born of necessity, in early Plymouth days for the Pilgrim Fathers to carry their guns with them to religious services, as indeed wherever they went. McFingal paints the word picture as follows:

So once, for fear of Indian beating,  
 Our grandsires bore their guns to meeting;  
 Each man equipped on Sunday morn  
 With psalm book, shot, and powder horn,  
 And looked, in form, as all must grant,  
 Like th' ancient true church militant,  
 Or fierce, like modern deep divines,  
 Who fight with quills, like porcupines.

As the Revolution approached, commissioners were appointed to ferret out the Tories and bring them to a renouncement, in writing of their toryism; and it was ordered if they should refuse, they be brought before the people assembled and dealt with as the assemblage should decide. Some of these recantations were described by McFingal as follows:

I now renounce the Pope, the Turk,  
 The King, the Devil, and all his work:  
 And, if you will set me at ease,  
 Turn Whig or Christian—what you please.

Sometimes, however, there was a Loyalist or Tory who would not recant, come what would, and in such an event, there was the liberty pole which was the fitting scene for patriotic doings of all sorts and the personification of McFingal would be eased into its presence

And with loud shouts and joyful soul,  
 Conduct him prisoner to the pole.

\* \* \*

And stood heroic as a mule  
 To meet the worst—for recompense  
 To trust King George and Providence,—

When the good work went on

There from the pole's sublimest top  
 The active crew let down a rope,

At once its other end in haste bind  
 And make it fast upon his waistband,  
 Till like the earth, as stretched on tenter,  
 He hung, self balanced, on his centre;  
 Then upwards, all hands hoisting sail,  
 They swung him like a keg of ale,  
 Where looking forth in prospect wide  
 His tory errors he espied,—

Such a scene as Trumbull has described had its counterpart around the liberty pole in several Old Colonial villages

While loyalty, oppress'd in tears,  
 Stands trembling for its neck and ears

and some of the characteristic and effective ways in which the Tories were treated is described in a chapter devoted to that purpose in this history. Many of the Tories had a vision of what was to come and were like McFingal when he says

I hear a voice, that calls away,  
 And cries "The Whigs shall win the day."

Many of them joined the British Army or sailed for Halifax, Nova Scotia, Canada, or elsewhere, fearing the vision of McFingal might be realized:

I see the Mob, beflipped at taverns,  
 Hunt us, like wolves, through wilds and caverns!  
 What dungeons open on our fears!  
 What horsewhips whistle round our ears!  
 Tar, yet in embryo in the pine,  
 Shall run on Tories' back to shine;  
 Trees, rooted fair in groves of salallows,  
 Are growing for our future gallows;  
 And geese unhatched, when plucked in fray,  
 Shall rue the feathering of that day.

Trumbull described in his inimitable way the cruelties of the British commanders. It has been said that the conduct of the Turks in putting all prisoners to death is much more humane than that of the British army for the first three years of the Revolutionary War, or till after the capture of Burgoyne. Loring, a refugee from Boston, was made commissary of prisoners by General Howe. The consummate cruelties practiced on the American prisoners under his administration, almost exceed the ordinary powers of human invention.

Where Britons, all their captives taming,  
 Plied them with scourging, cold and famine,  
 By noxious food and plagues contagious  
 Reduced to life's last, fainting stages.  
 Amid the dead, that crowd the scene,



The moving skeletons were seen.  
 Aloft the haughty Loring stood,  
 And thrived, like Vampire, on their blood.

Burgoyne, in his northern expedition, arranged to give compensation to the Indians for American scalps, without distinction of gender. He denied, however, his personal agency in these transactions, which is hardly borne out in the correspondence between him and General Gates, occasioned by the murder and scalping of Miss McCrea.

There is a footnote in the London Edition of "McFingal" which states, "Loring was a refugee from Boston, made commissary of prisoners by General Howe. The cruelties practiced on the American prisoners under his administration almost exceeded the ordinary powers of human invention. The conduct of the Turks in putting all prisoners to death is certainly much more rational and humane than that of the British army for the three first years of the American war, or till after the capture of Burgoyne."

It is asserted that General Howe's troops, openly and without censure, in many instances, on his first conquest of Long Island, tied up the first captives for the troops to shoot at, and "hoped they'd learn on foes thus taken,"

To aim at rebels without shaking.  
 Then deep in stratagem, he plann'd  
 The sure destruction of the land;  
 Turn'd famine, torture and despair  
 To useful enginry of war;  
 Sent forth the smallpox, and the greater  
 To thin the land of every traitor.

Concerning the above allusion to the smallpox in the poem "McFingal," it is explained that "Great pains were taken by emissaries from New York to communicate the smallpox through the country. It became necessary to counteract the attempt by a general inoculation of the inhabitants."





## CHAPTER XII

### CHOICE BETWEEN WAR AND SLAVERY.

**Colonists Camped Before Boston in Such Numbers That the British Took the Hint and Their Departure for Canada—First War Vessel Built for Revolutionary War At Kingston and Launched on the Jones River—Issue of Money "Not Worth a Continental" Led To Shays' Rebellion—Existence of the Commonwealth Threatened But Governor Bowdoin's Firmness Saved the Day—Adoption Of Constitution by Convention at Philadelphia of Peculiar Interest in Massachusetts—Salutary Influence of Paul Revere.**

At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, there was no widespread desire for independence in America. It was an uprising on the part of the colonists to defend their rights as Englishmen. Great interest was felt in Plymouth County in the controversies which had arisen, as John Adams of Quincy and John Hancock of Boston were well known by reputation and were recognized as acknowledged leaders. Consequently, when General Gage, the British commander in Boston, was ordered to arrest Adams and Hancock and send them to England for trial, it was the spark which ignited the flames which would not be quenched as long as there was patriotic zeal to finish the process of purification by fire, and burn up the dross of persecution and unrighteous demands from the throne of George the Third.

Warned by Paul Revere and William Dawes who made the ride from Boston to Lexington, Adams and Hancock escaped. The British soldiers numbering 800 reached Lexington at sunrise April 19, to find about fifty minute-men, under Captain John Parker, armed with guns and displaying a most determined appearance, the fifty men confronting 800 trained and fully equipped British soldiers who were on the way to destroy the military stores which the colonists had collected at Concord. After arresting Adams and Hancock. Major Pitcairn, riding at the head of the British troops, merely expected to capture the additional military implements which he saw in their hands, but his demand "Disperse, ye villains, and lay down your arms" was met with the calm command of Captain Parker to the farmers: "Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon, but if they mean to have a war, let it begin here."

At Lexington common, the British slew eight minute-men, including Captain Parker, whom they bayoneted because he would not disperse, even when his companions fled. Ten were wounded and some of them

crawled and hobbled to positions behind stone walls or clumps of trees and took part in the firing upon the British later in the day when the latter returned from Concord, after destroying the military stores and engaging with the citizens of that town and vicinity who were drawn up at the bridge, half a mile from the powder house.

Concerning the Concord fight, Ralph Waldo Emerson, one of America's greatest men of letters, afterwards a resident of Concord, wrote:

By the rude bridge that arched the flood,  
Their flag to April's breeze unfurled,  
Here once the embattled farmers stood  
And fired the shot heard round the world.

That shot was heard in Plymouth Colony almost instantly and men from Southeastern Massachusetts and indeed from all New England, were encamped before Boston with surprising promptness, after the British had returned and were under the protection of their fleet in Boston harbor. The colonists of America came together for a common purpose and began to know one another better. The New Hampshire minute-men were led by John Stark, the Rhode Island militia by Nathaniel Greene, Connecticut men by Israel Putnam and, even in the wilderness of Kentucky, there was a Camp Lexington, occupied by a party of hunters and named in honor of the town where the first blow was struck against British misrule. George Washington declared that Americans must choose between war and slavery.

The soldiers encamped before Boston were represented at the Continental Congress which met at Philadelphia May 10, 1775. John Adams was a prominent figure there. George Washington was appointed commander-in-chief of the army and was soon on his way to Massachusetts to take command. An important battle was fought, however, before Washington took command of the army under the old elm tree in Cambridge, which was still in existence until a few years ago. This was the Battle of Bunker Hill, in which the colonists fought until their ammunition was exhausted, twice driving the British back and diminishing the attacking force more than one-third. Nathaniel Greene of Rhode Island said: "I wish we could sell them another hill at the same price."

George Washington took in hand the sixteen thousand untrained and poorly equipped but thoroughly in earnest men who constituted the army of colonists. In March, 1776, he fortified Dorchester Heights and assumed a commanding position which the British realized, and March 17 they evacuated Boston and sailed for Halifax, Nova Scotia. Not a British soldier remained on the soil of New England.

It was not long after this that Thomas Paine wrote his pamphlet entitled "Common Sense" in which he declared "the blood of the slain,



the true interest of the continent, and the great distance between England and America all cry, 'Tis time to part.'"

The people became prepared to acquiesce in the opinion expressed by Richard Henry Lee when, on June 7, 1776, he moved in the Continental Congress "That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states." John Adams of Massachusetts seconded the motion. A committee was appointed to draft a declaration of independence. Benjamin Franklin, the Boston printer who had gone to Philadelphia some years before, who has been called "the first civilized American," was one of the committee and it is said would naturally have been chosen to write the document. The task was given to Thomas Jefferson, because the colonists thought Franklin would put a joke in it somewhere and these were serious times. After it had been signed, however, by John Hancock and John Adams, the men whose arrest was prevented by the "Midnight Ride of Paul Revere," by Thomas Jefferson and Benjamin Franklin himself, someone made the remark "Now we must all hang together." "Yes," remarked Benjamin Franklin, "or we will all hang separately."

Benjamin Franklin became the best known man in America. He was sent to Paris to plead for recognition of the new nation. His scientific discoveries and writings, shrewdness and good judgment became internationally famous.

There were many "conscientious objecters" at the time of the Revolutionary War. They agreed with their neighbors that hardships and persecutions had been put upon America by the British government, but to declare themselves no longer under allegiance to the British crown was quite another thing. Families became divided. Some left home to enlist on the British side, while regiments of Tories, as they were called, appeared in New York and the Carolinas.

Like "the Northern man with Southern principles" who became a problem in the Civil War, the colonists in their fight for freedom, were greatly in danger from the Loyalists or Tories who remained at home and did not hesitate to sell supplies to the British government or give information concerning the plans and operations of the Whigs, as the members of the patriot party were called. Elsewhere in this history appear instances where cannon castings were made in Plymouth County to be used against the patriot army and stories are also told of the treatment accorded those who gave aid and comfort to the British.

The spirit of the patriots was typified by Captain Nathan Hale who went into New York to obtain information for General Washington, was captured by the British and put to death as a spy. When led out for his execution, he said: "I only regret that I have but one life to give for my country."

**Navy Began In Kingston Shipyard**—In the story of shipbuilding in Kingston it is shown that the first navy vessel built for service in the Revolutionary War was built in that town and launched in the Jones River, named for the captain of the "Mayflower." In all the events connected with the war the Plymouth Colony had its rightful share and performed its part not only to the extremity where "it hurt" but to the very limit. John Paul Jones' answer to the British commander of the "Serapis" who, after an hour fighting, during which the Americans lost heavily, asked "Have you struck your colors?" was the answer of America whenever any question of compromise or surrender was suggested. The ships were lashed together, the deck of the "Bonhomme Richard" ran red and thick with blood and the vessel was so cut to pieces that it was almost sinking, but Captain Jones' reply was "I have not yet began to fight."

On October 19, 1781, the British Army was compelled to surrender. Three of the ablest men in America were sent to Paris to discuss terms of peace and of those three two were Massachusetts boys, John Adams and Benjamin Franklin. The other was John Jay of New York. By the treaty of Paris, Great Britain recognized the independence of the United States. It is the privilege of the writer of this volume to tell, on various pages, heroic services which were performed in that war by men and women of Plymouth County. Equally heroic services were performed by the people from all the counties of all the states.

The old colonial governments were a thing of the past. In a new birth of freedom, with new responsibilities before them, each community, as well as the United States, was obliged to embark on the great experiment of democracy. The United States had no coinage of its own and every community was frightfully in debt. Most of the money in circulation consisted of paper notes issued by the Continental Congress, promises to pay but with no gold or silver in existence to back up the promises. The people doubted their ability to make good the promises and at one time it required some \$2,000 in paper currency to purchase a suit of clothes. We have the expression still in use "Not worth a continental" when we wish to express something of little or no value, based on the opinion of those notes issued by the Continental Congress when the fate of the nation hung in the balance.

Debtors were thrown into prison, property was seized and sold by the sheriff for the benefit of creditors, no one wanted to take the paper currency. Trade was restricted by duties being collected at the state lines, there were no interstate commerce regulations on the part of the central government, and lawlessness and rioting were frequent. It was under these conditions and at this time that Shays' Rebellion took place, the briefest war in the history of the United States.



Shays' Rebellion used our neighbor, Bristol County, as its scene of operations, on one occasion, but the discontent which it represented was just as general in Plymouth and other counties. Captain Daniel Shays had been a captain in the Revolutionary War. He was the leader of the insurrection which stated its grievances to include that the governor's salary was too much, that the senate was aristocratic, lawyers extortionate, taxes burdensome and the times demanded a large issue of paper money. Captain David Valentine of Freetown led 182 insurgents into Taunton and an attempt was made to prevent the sitting of the October term of the Supreme Court in 1786. The militia appeared with a fieldpiece now preserved at Historical Hall in Taunton. General David Cobb was judge of the Court of Common Pleas and also major-general of the Fifth Division of the Militia. He explained the intentions of both court and militia and the mob dispersed on Taunton Green. A tablet marks the spot.

This is, however, by no means all there was to Shays' Rebellion. The sentiment which it typified, according to the late United States Senator Henry Cabot Lodge, "threatened the existence of the Commonwealth but shook to its foundations the unstable fabric of the Confederacy."

**Results of Shays' Rebellion**—Senator Lodge, in the "Memorial History of Boston" went on to say:

While the storm was gathering, John Hancock, the popular hero and governor, not fancying the prospect opening before the state, and the consequent difficulties and dangers likely to beset the chief magistrate, took himself out of the way, and the younger and more conservative element in politics elected James Bowdoin in his stead. It was a fortunate choice in every way. Bowdoin was a wise, firm, courageous man, perfectly ready to sacrifice popularity, if need be, to the public good. He was warmly supported in Boston, as the principles and objects of Shays and his followers were peculiarly obnoxious to a business community. The alarm in the town was very great for it looked as if their contest for freedom was about to result in anarchy. The young men came forward, armed themselves, and volunteered for service; but the governor's firmness was all that was needed. General Lincoln, at the head of the Militia easily crushed the feeble mob gathered by Shays, whose followers were entirely dispersed. Nevertheless the rioters represented, although in a very extreme fashion, the general sentiment of the state, demoralized and shaken by civil war, as was shown by the almost criminal delay of the lower branch of the Legislature in sustaining the governor in his efforts to maintain order, and by their reluctance to declare the insurgents in rebellion,—a step forced upon them by the vigor of the governor and senate.

This unhappy condition of public opinion was still more strongly manifested at the next election. The issue was made up between pardon and sympathy for the rebels on the one side and just and salutary punishment on the other. The conservative party, in favor of the latter course, put forward Bowdoin; while Hancock, who had been under shelter, now came forward once more to catch the popular support as the advocate of mercy, which another better and braver man had alone earned the right to dispense. Hancock had chosen his time well.

Popular feeling in the country districts was with the insurgents, and Bowdoin was defeated; although Boston, now thoroughly in the hands of the younger and more conservative party, strongly sustained him. Thus the new party of order and reconstruction started in Boston, which continued to be its headquarters; and gradually extending its influence, first through the eastern towns and then to the west, came finally to control the state.

The Shays' Rebellion did more, however, than decide the elections in Massachusetts. It was without doubt an efficient cause in promoting the Constitutional Convention at Philadelphia, and in frightening the decrepit and obstructive Congress of the Confederation. The adoption of the Constitution, submitted by the delegates who met in Philadelphia, was an event of national as well as local importance, for the adhesion of the great state of Massachusetts was essential to success.

The conservative elements, which had begun to take a party shape in the Shays' Rebellion, developed into a strong and homogeneous body in favor of the Constitution. They had an arduous battle to fight and they fought it well. Against them were arrayed all the sympathizers with the Shays' Rebellion, besides many who had actually taken part in it, and who, having tasted the sweets of incipient anarchy, were averse to anything like strong government.

With intense interest Boston watched the adoption of the Constitution of one state after another; and we can see, in the newspapers, the rapid development of the new party of reconstruction, the friends of the Constitution, now known as Federalists, and the corresponding increase of bitterness toward all who attempted to thwart a measure believed, in Boston at least, to involve the future existence of the nation.

So far as Shays' Rebellion itself is concerned, as an organized movement, it terminated at Petersham in Worcester County, January 25, 1787. The previous month, Captain Shays, at the head of 1,000 insurgents, appeared at Springfield and prevented the Supreme Court from holding a session there. Emboldened by this success, three bodies of insurgents attempted to capture the Continental Arsenal, defended by 1,000 militia. The largest body, under Captain Shays, numbered 1,100 men. The defenders fired and killed three and wounded one. Shays' troops fled, pursued by the militia, until they were overtaken in a blinding snowstorm. One hundred and fifty were captured and subsequently several of the leaders were sentenced to be hanged. Shays escaped. He lived in Vermont about a year, was pardoned, as well the others who had been sentenced to be hanged. Shays moved to Sparta, New York, where he died in 1825, when 78 years of age. In his old age he was allowed a pension for his services in the Revolutionary War.

The adoption of the Constitution stabilized matters considerably. William E. Gladstone, the great English statesman, called the Constitution of the United States "The most wonderful work ever struck off at a given time by the brain and purpose of man." It was not immediately so recognized hereabouts, however. The great leaders of the Revolutionary period, John Adams and John Hancock, were lukewarm.



It was adopted by only 19 votes, and these 19 were probably due in great measure to the fact that Adams was impressed by resolutions which had been adopted by the mechanics of Boston who met at the Green Dragon Tavern, under leadership of Paul Revere.





## CHAPTER XIII

### EARTHQUAKES, COMETS, THUNDER AND LIGHTNING.

**Famous Controversy Between Prof. Winthrop and Dr. Prince Shook  
Harvard College and Boston Akin to the Earthquakes—Comets, Northern Lights, Famous Yellow Day, All Explained With Terrible Meanings to Sinners—Fatal Visitations By Lightning in Marshfield—Attempt to Name a Posthumous Son "Child of Thunder."**

There are records of five earthquakes in New England which were felt in this vicinity of considerable disturbing power. These were in 1638, 1658, 1663, October 29, 1727; and November 18, 1775. Nineteen others are mentioned in the annals of New England, including one November 28, 1814, which was the most severe since 1755. The other eighteen were on October 29, 1653; 1660, 1665, 1668, 1669, 1670, 1705, September 5, 1720; 1732, February 6 and December 7, 1737; June 3, 1744; July 8, 1757; March 12, and November 1, 1761; 1766, 1769, 1771, November 29, 1788; May 8, 1804; November 9, 1810; November 28, 1814, already referred to. There have been others in recent years in which the vibrations have been so slight that they did not attract general notice. There was such a one in 1926 in Plymouth County.

The earthquake of 1638 occurred on the first of June and it has been described as "so violent its shock in some places that movables in houses were thrown down, and people out of doors could scarcely retain a position on their feet. It has been said that events were often referred to in after years as having taken place such a time after the earthquake, much as was the custom in vogue for one to date his birth in Ireland as so many years before or after the "big wind."

The earthquake of 1658 came the same year as the first death by stroke of lightning in Plymouth County. The lightning stroke was July 31 and the victim a Marshfield man.

There were two earthquakes in 1662, one January 26 and the other two days later.

Great alarm was felt throughout New England at the time of the earthquake, October 29, 1727. It was the most violent of any in that generation. It occurred at four minutes past 10, P. M. Cellar walls were shaken down, chimneys toppled and there was terror among the seamen who were on vessels near the coast, as they believed they had struck a shoal. The shock was accompanied by a great rattling and crackling sound which caused some to believe that the end of the world was at hand. We have a record of some of the clergymen of that day

to the effect that it proved "reformatory to some loose-livers who became apparently devout penitents."

A record of the earthquake of November 18, 1775, reads: "A terrible earthquake occurred in America November 18, the most violent ever known in the country."

This earthquake was of unusual violence and caused much alarm. It also caused a famous controversy between Professor John Winthrop, who received the degree of Doctor of Laws, from Harvard College and was the first person to receive that degree from that college, according to publications of the Colonial Society of Massachusetts, although it has many times been stated that General George Washington was the first to receive that honor from Harvard, after the evacuation of Boston by the British. Professor Winthrop was the fourth in descent from Governor Winthrop, a distinguished professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy.

Professor Winthrop delivered a lecture in the college chapel, describing the earthquake referred to and the general causes, dwelling on the undulatory character of the shock, and ascribing the phenomena to the action of heat in the interior of the globe. At about the same time Rev. Thomas Prince, pastor of the South Church in Boston, prepared a new edition of a sermon called "Earthquakes the Works of God, and Tokens of His Just Displeasure." He stressed the operation of God in earthquakes by means of the electrical substance, following a line of argument which forced Professor Winthrop to make a reply as a postscript to his published lecture.

Benjamin Franklin had invented lightning rods and they had become popular in this section, but Dr. Prince was opposed to them, as an impertinent attempt to escape the wrath of the Almighty. His warning against lightning rods was:

The more Points of Iron are erected around the Earth, to draw the Electrical Substance out of the Air; the more the Earth must needs be charged with it. And therefore it seems worthy of Consideration, Whether any Part of the Earth being fuller of this Terrible Substance, may not be more exposed to more shocking Earthquakes. In Boston are more erected than anywhere else in New England; and Boston seems to be more dreadfully shaken. O! there is no getting out of the mighty Hand of God! If we think to avoid it in the Air, we cannot in the Earth: yea, it may grow more fatal.

Professor Winthrop exposed the fallacies of this sermon and wrote:

"I know no reason to think that 'Boston was more dreadfully shaken' than other towns. Some of the effects of the earthquake may have been more considerable, for their number, than elsewhere; but the reason of this is, not that 'in Boston are more points of iron erected than any where else in New England' but there are more brick houses erected there. For the effect of a shock is more considerable upon brick work than upon wood work. The reasons for this are obvious; and that it is so in fact, plainly appeared by our chimnies being every



where more shattered than anything else: though this was in part owing to their being the highest parts of buildings."

Referring to Dr. Prince's admonition he said: "I should think, though with the utmost deference to superior judgments, that the pathetic exclamation, which comes next, might well enough have been spared. 'O! there is no getting out of the mighty hand of GOD!' For I cannot believe, that in the whole town of Boston, where so many iron points are erected, there is so much as one person, or, to say all in one word, so atheistical, as ever to have entertained a single thought, that it is possible, by the help of a few yards of wire, to 'get out of the mighty hand of GOD.'"

**"Heaven's Alarm to the World"**—In 1680, Increase Mather preached a terrifying sermon, inspired by the comet of that year, which he called "Heaven's Alarm to the World." He wrote what purported to be a history of comets from the creation to 1680 and told of the calamities which were in the wake of every appearance of such a blazing star. He said: "There are those who think, that inasmuch as Comets may be supposed to proceed from natural causes, there is no speaking voice of Heaven in them, beyond what is to be said of all other works of God. But certain it is, that many things which may happen according to the course of nature, are portentous signs of divine anger, and prognosticks of great evils hastening upon the world. . . . Thunder, Lightning, Hail and Rain, are from natural causes, yet are they sometimes signs of God's holy displeasure. . . . Earthquakes are from natural causes, yet there is many times a very speaking voice of God in them."

The appearance of the Northern Lights put many people into a frenzy in the early days, especially when they were "explained" by some of the divines of those days who combined the learning and superstitions of the age and quoted Scripture to prove their contentions.

In 1780 came the famous Dark Day of May 19th, and this was a time for special terror, as the Day of Judgment was at hand, and the end of the world. There were innumerable conjectures as to the cause of the darkness. Some said it was the fulfilling of Joel's prophecy of a "pillar of smoke." Others said it was the pouring out of the seventh phial into the air. One clergyman called his congregation together in the dark, reminded the Lord that he had made a promise to Noah that "day and night should not cease" and asked that the sun might shine again.

There was another dark day November 6, 1819, but the mind of the people as a whole had progressed in the intervening years so that there were less ridiculous explanations offered and less distress and terror.

Many people recall the Yellow Day September 6, 1881, which excited wonder and a desire to look for causes, but little superstitious fear, as compared with phenomena in former years appearing in the heavens.

The best description of the Dark Day of 1780 is given in Whittier's poem "Abraham Davenport."

'Twas on a May-day of the far old year  
Seventeen hundred eighty, that there fell  
Over the bloom and sweet life of the Spring,  
Over the fresh earth and the heaven of noon,  
A horror of great darkness, like the night  
In day of which the Norland sagas tell,—  
The Twilight of the Gods. The low-hung sky  
Was black with ominous clouds, save where its rim  
Was fringed with a dull glow, like that which climbs  
The crater's sides from the red hell below.  
Birds ceased to sing, and all the barn-yard fowls  
Roosted; the cattle at the pasture bars  
Low'd, and looked homeward; bats on leathern wings  
Flitted abroad; the sounds of labor died;  
Men prayed, and women wept; all ears grew sharp  
To hear the doom-blast of the trumpet shatter  
The black sky, that the dreadful face of Christ  
Might look from the rent clouds, not as he looked  
A loving guest, at Bethany, but stern  
As Justice and inexorable Law.

There were visitations of thunder and lightning, as well as earthquakes in the early days of the colony which left their imprint upon the consciousness of the inhabitants to a remarkable degree. It is doubtful whether visitations of that sort mystified the people more than at present and caused them to attribute supernatural significance to them, even looking upon them as omens or signs from heaven, or whether people were more inclined to write of such things in diaries, and letters, including their personal convictions with the record. In these days the newspapers tell the story and few diaries are kept of such events, or, if kept, they do not become common property.

There were deaths by lightning in Marshfield in 1658 and 1666, which led to the printing of a book to chronicle the facts. This book was by Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff and privately printed in 1850, as a memorial of the events mentioned, and inscribed to the members of the American Antiquarian and Massachusetts Historical societies. In the archives of the latter society appear a letter from Samuel Arnold of Marshfield, written to Rev. Increase Mather, teacher to the church in the North End of Boston, accompanied by a manuscript written by Captain Nathaniel Thomas, who was a witness to one of the lightning visitations. The letter and manuscript tell of the sad occurrence.

Captain Thomas wrote:

In the month of August in the yeare 1658 there was in the Towne of Marshfeild a terrible storm of Thunder Lightening & raine, & as I was going homeward being about a mile from home I meet one John Phillips & another man coming



out of a meadow from making hay to the next house for shelter from the storm, who aduised me to goe in with them to the house least I should be ouertaken in the storm ere I should get home the storm then coming vp exseeding black & Terrible I accordingly went in with them. & the sd Phillips sat down on a stoole with his face toward the Iner door & his back to the hearth & his side closs to the Jam of the chimney I sat downe with my face directly toward him about six foot from him, the Thunder came quickly vp ouer the house The Clouds flying exseeding Low & thick so that the heauens were much darkened. Then in a moment came downe (as it were) a great ball of fire with a Terrible crack of Thunder & fell Just before where the sd Phillips sat, my eye then happening to be on him saw him once start on the stole he sat on & fell from thence dead on the hearth backward without any motion of life, many bricks of the chimney were beaten downe the principle Rafters split the battens & lining next the chiney in the chamber broken, one of the maine posts of the house into which the sumer was framed torn into shiuers & great part of it carried seuerall rod from the house, the dore where the ball of fire came downe Just before the sd Phillips was broken downe, out of the gert of sumer aforesd being a dry oak was peices wonderfully taken, I doe not remember there was any outward appearance of hurt vpon the body of the sd Phillips, a young child being at that moment about three foot from sd Phillips had noe harm.

This statement was enclosed in the letter referred to, the language of which, given in the old style, as in the previous instance, was as follows: "Reverend Sir I salute you in the Lord & have according to your desire indeavoured to giue you the best information I could obtaine respecting the 2 terrible stroakes by thunder & lightning that were in our toune by enquiry of such as were eye witnesses of those awfull dispensatjons being as brands pluckt out of the burning. as for the first in July last day 1658. I refer you to the enclosed paper which I obtained from Capt: Nath: Thomas written with his oun hand.

Answer to General Prayers for Rain.—As for the second being on June 23, 1666. we being sorely distressed with drought had on the 4th day of the week made our address to the most high God by humble fasting & prayer, the drought continued till the last day of the sayd weeke on which day it pleased God to answer us by terrible things in righteousnes who was yet the God of our salvatjon, for about the middle of the sayd day there arose in the north the most dismall black cloud I thinke that ever I saw our eyes were fixed upon it so pinching was the drought we feared least it should go beside us & so terrible was the aspect of it that we trembled least it should come ouer us, but God that steers the course of the clouds so disposed that it came directly ouer our towne & it was extremely darke & thundred & lightnd dreadfully, & ther being in the hous of John Phillips (father to the foresayd John Phillips slaine by the former stroake) the number of 14 psons the woman of the hous calling earnestly to shut the dore which was done, instantly a terrible clap of thunder fell upon the hous & rent the chimney & split the doore in many places & struck most of the psons if not all.

Timothy Rogers my informer told me that when he came to himself he saw the house full of smoake & there was a terrible smell of brimstone & that fire lay scattered all about the floor whether the fire that was upon the hearth by the vjolence of the stroake hurled about the hous or fire from heaven he kn not, he thought at first that all the people had been dead but himself till it pleased God to reviuie most of them, but 3 of them were mortally struck with Gods arrowes that they never breathed more (viz) the wife of John Phillips & son of his about 20 years of age or upwards and one Willj: Shertly who having been a little before burnt out of his oun hous & was with his family a present sojourner there, who

had (as is sayd) a little child in his armes which was wonderfully preserued, there was also a dog slaine under a table behinde 2 little children sitting as is sayd upon the table ledge the wife of the sayd Shertly being big with childe neer her full time was graciously reviued & notwithstanding both stroak & fright seasonably & marcifully deliuered we may say as Elihu Job 36. 31 by them he judges the people & giues meat in abundance the Lord guide that we may sing of mercy & judgment & walk uisely in a pfect way until he comes unto us, & the Lord guide your son & croune your pjous indeavours both by tongue & you with a blessing to the promoting of his own glory the good of the present & after generatjons which shall be the prayer of him who desires an interest in your prayers &

am

Yours in what I may serve you

Sam: Arnold Senj:

Marshfeild July 28. 1683.

Sir I thanke you for your booke, & present my salutations to Mrs Mather, & your good son Cotton, whome I pray God to bless & make a blessing. it was almost a month after the date of your first letter ere I receiued it.

To the Reverend Mr Inceas

Mather Teacher to the

Church in the North

end of Boston thes

present

These two documents are among the "Mather Papers" in the Massachusetts Historical Society collection. They once were the property of Rev. Thomas Prince, the annalist or historian of early colonial days. Rev. Samuel Arnold was pastor of the church in Marshfield. It is said that the proper date for the occurrence mentioned by Captain Thomas as in August was the last day of July, 1658. The manuscript was written about a quarter of a century after the occurrence, which led to the mistake. This information, or correction, appears in the margin of the manuscript, in the handwriting of Rev. Samuel Arnold in these words: "The time as I am certainly informed was the last day of July, 1658." The inquest, which was made an order of the court, also given the last day of July as the date.

Evidently these lightning strokes caused unusual consternation in the colony. Rev. Timothy Alden considered it of sufficient importance to be given in a report to the Religious Societies of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, his account of the second occurrence being as follows:

"He (William Shurtleff) lived in Marshfield and was killed with lightning, in 1666. The tradition is that he was endeavoring to comfort his wife, who was much terrified at the severity of the tempest, and had just taken an infant from her arms and was seated, having one child between his knees and the other two in his lap; yet the flash of lightning, which killed him, did neither of them nor his wife any injury."



**"Displeasure Against New England Manifested"**—It is shown in the court records that there was a coroner's jury impaneled and the finding of this jury was that John Phillips came by his death "by the Immediate hand of God manifested in Thunder and lightning."

We of the present generation are not so much interested in the fact that two or more men of Marshfield were struck by lightning in 1658 and 1666 as we are in the way in which the casualties were regarded in those days. Morton's "New England Memorial" considered the circumstances of such sufficient importance that the following extracts relate to them:

1658. "This year, on the last day of July, it pleased God that by Thunder and Lightning one John Phillips of Marshfield, in the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth, was suddenly slain." Page 155.

1666. "This year it pleased God to go on in a manifestation of his displeasure against New England, in a very remarkable manner, by striking dead in a moment, by a blow of Thunder, three persons in the Town of Marshfield in the Jurisdiction of New-Plimouth, in the moneth of June. viz. one named William Shirtliff, and a Woman and a Youth; which sad Dispensation of Gods hand, being considered with some Circumstances, gave cause to the beholders to be much astonished: the said Shirtliff having his Wife by the hand, and sitting by her to chear her, in respect that the said storm was so fierce, he was slain, and she preserved, though in some measure scorched with the Lightning; yea, he had one of his children in his arms, and himself slain, and the Childe preserved. We have likewise received intelligence of four more that about that time were slain by Thunder and Lightning about Pascataqua, and divers more hurt. At the time of this storm of Thunder and Lightning, in the which those of Marshfield died, there arose likewise a very great Whirlwind, that where it came it tore up Trees by the Roots, though through mercy it did little other hurt.

"It was a great while, and many years spent since the English came into these parts, before any considerable hurt was done by Thunder and Lightning to either man, or beast appertaining to them, although sometimes very fierce storms of that kinde, as frequently as in these times: but now how doth the Lord go on gradually in this, as in other Judgements here in New England? first, by striking Cattel, and then one person at a time, and this year divers, to the number of seven, besides some Cattel also.

Thus God thundereth marvellously with his voice,  
he worketh great things which we know not: He can  
send the lightnings that they may walk, and say, Lo  
here we are. Hath any an arm like God? or can any (Job 37.5 & 38.35 & 40.8)  
thunder with a voice like him? By his terrible Voice  
he breaketh the Cedars, and divideth the flames of

fire; which he commissionates to do his pleasure,  
sometimes not only striking Cedars, but great Oakes  
in a wonderful manner, sometimes Beasts, some-  
times Men and Women. If Gods Judgements have  
thus been abroad in the Earth, how ought the Inhabi-

(Psalm 29, 5, 7)

tants (of New England) to learn righteousness? How easily can the Lord stain the pride of our glory with a stroke of his hand? Let not the familiarity or frequency of such Providences, cause them to be neglected by us, to improve them as God would have us, to fear before him, and to turn from such in-

(Isaiah 26.9)

iquities especially as are most displeasing unto him, and to hold our lives in our hands, and to be in a readiness for his pleasure, lest knowing not our time, as the fishes that are taken in an evil net, and as the

(Eccles. 8. 13.)

birds that are caught in the snare, so we shall be snared in an evil time, when it falleth suddenly upon us.

(Eccles. 9. 12.)

"This year the Lord threatned the Country with that infectious and Contagious Disease of the Small Pox, which began in Boston, whereof some few died: but through his great mercy it is stayed, and none of late have died thereof.

"This year the Lord likewise threatned, and in some measure executed his displeasure upon the Country by Drought; but through his mercy hath of late sent plenty of Rain, for the recovering of the fruits of the earth. Although it is to be observed, That soon after a day of Humiliation was observed by some Congregations, for the blessing of Rain in the Drought above mentioned, that sad stroke by the Thunder and Lightning at Marshfield fell out: so that we may say with the Psalmist unto the Lord, By terrible things in Righteousness thou hast answered us, O God of our Salvation. Pages 178-180.

John Phillips was killed by lightning in the first instance, and one of the three killed in the second instance was Mrs. Grace Phillips, his step-mother, and the youth mentioned as the third victim of the storm June 23, 1666, was Jeremiah Phillips, brother of the victim of the storm in 1658. Lightning seemed to have followed the Phillips family, and as the family was much respected and led good lives, it was something which the early residents of Marshfield could not understand. John Phillips, the elder, father of the two men and husband of the woman killed by lightning, escaped "an immediate hand of God manifested in Thunder and Lightning" and every other cause until the fall of 1691, when he was in his ninetieth year and died, supposedly of old age. He was three times married and left numerous descendants who are now residents of Plymouth County and elsewhere. How William Shurtleff happened to be in the Phillips home and killed by the same stroke of lightning which killed Mrs. Phillips and Jeremiah Phillips is explained by a record which shows that Shurtleff's house had been destroyed by fire early in the year 1666, and that he was temporarily residing with the Phillips family.

Another sidelight on the significance of things which appealed to the earlier settlers and their modes of reasoning and adoption of circum-



stances is shown in the name chosen for the son of William Shurtleff who was born shortly after Shurtleff's death. Quoting from the book "Thunder and Lightning and Deaths at Marshfield," written by Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtleff:

"Abiel, the third and youngest son, was born at Marshfield in June, 1666, a very short time after the decease of his father. At his birth there was a considerable debate about his name. By some it was thought that he should be called after Boanerges (Children of Thunder), as mentioned in the New Testament; but the difficulty of converting the plural name to the singular number fortunately prevailed against the infliction of an appellation which was far from being euphonious. This scriptural name Abiel, which, interpreted into English from the Hebrew, signifies 'God my father,' being sufficiently indicative of his posthumous birth, was adopted as the most satisfactory."

The circumstance of attempting to bestow upon the posthumous son of a victim of a lightning stroke something which would be indicative of that occurrence shows that, after all, the psychology of the white men was not far different from that of the Indians.

On April 29, 1695, there was an extraordinary storm of hail, following thunder and lightning. The ground was made white as by a snow-fall and large quantities of window glass were broken. Judge Samuel Sewall had as his guest in his house in Boston that day Rev. Cotton Mather. The judge's house suffered greatly by the violence of the storm. "He had just been mentioning that more ministers' houses than others, proportionately, had been smitten with lightning; enquiring what the meaning of God should be in it . . . I got Mr. Mather to pray with us after this awful Providence. He told God he had broken the brittle part of our house, and prayed that we might be ready for the time when our Clay-Tabernacles should be broken."





## CHAPTER XIV

### IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE MEETING-HOUSE.

**Sometimes It was Lacking in Architectural Beauty But It Was There With Bells On—Heated Only By Frenzied Eloquence of Vigorous Speakers—First Sunday School Organized in Halifax in Meeting-House Erected in 1732—When the Sabbath Began Saturday Night and Foot Stools Were in Vogue—Terrible Poem Which Rev. Cotton Mather Said Would Become Immortal.**

If you ask the average resident of Plymouth County or any of the adjacent counties how far one point is from another, involuntarily he begins to reckon from the meeting-house. That, to the Plymouth County men for generations has been regarded as the centre of the town, regardless of its location, and the habit clings. The meeting-house is an institution of peculiar lineage and significance. When milestones were first erected on the highways they directed the way toward it, and guide boards at the cross roads told the distance and the direction.

Meeting-houses were usually erected on the highest hills and the steeple of the church in one town was often visible from the other. The meeting-house on the highlands of Truro, in Barnstable County, served as a means of identification to mariners many years before Highland Light came into existence. Old Nantucketers tell of the whaling days and how the master of a homeward-bound whaling vessel sent a man aloft to get the bearings of the meeting-house steeple of Nantucket. The first meeting-house and the first fort in Plymouth stood side by side, near where the "Faith monument" now stands, and the meeting-house was discerned far out to sea, while there was an obvious significance of the two buildings side by side.

James Russell Lowell said in one of his letters: "New England was all meeting-house when I was growing up." It was there that the town meetings were held and mass meetings for every purpose. Two New England institutions will always hold the fort in the affections of New England people—the little red schoolhouse and the meeting-house. In many instances the meeting-houses were erected by the combined labor of the people of the town. The whole town took part in the "raising," with appropriate festivities. Such an event took place in Carver in 1793, and in preparation for the "raising" the selectmen bought two barrels of rum which they said, was "Licker sufficient for the spectators." Whether their judgment as to quantity was correct is one of those historical omissions which the present day can not seem to supply.

It was necessary to have a meeting-house and a minister before any new community could be incorporated as a separate town. There was no waiting until the people of the community could afford to erect a building which would be an ornament as well as a necessity. Consequently some of the meeting-houses were crude affairs and far from comfortable but, the General Court of Massachusetts in 1715 enacted a law which caused the meeting-houses to be well filled on Sunday. This was nothing more nor less than an act which required all able-bodied persons, "not otherwise necessarily prevented" to attend divine worship. The penalty appears in the words whoever "shall for the space of one month together absent themselves from the public worship shall be fined twenty shillings; and, if unable to pay the fine, to be set in the cage or stocks not exceeding three hours according to the discretion of the justices."

**Thanked God For Pirates, Rum and Stoves**—From our point of view there were some strange prayers of thanksgiving offered in these old-time meeting-houses, both in the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies. In the former Governor Winthrop relates how, in 1646, "one Captain Cromwell, a privateer with three ships and eighty men, who had captured richly laden Spanish vessels in the West Indian seas, had been forced by adverse winds into Plymouth Harbor, divine Providence so directing for the help of that town which was now almost deserted." In these days newcomers of that sort might come under the head of what President Roosevelt used to set down as "undesirable citizens," but it was a matter of thanksgiving, according to Governor Winthrop, in his day and generation.

There is a story that a deacon in one of the churches esteemed the slave trade with its rum side-lines as home missionary work, and, on the first Sunday after the arrival of his slaver was accustomed to offer thanks "that an over-ruling Providence had been pleased to bring to this land of freedom another cargo of benighted heathen to enjoy the blessings of a Gospel dispensation."

Perhaps it was some of the same people for the coming of whom Governor Winthrop offered thanks, who were in the mind of Bradford, the historian, when he wrote "and by this mean the cuntrie became pestered with many unworthy persons."

Many of the meeting-houses had bells in the steeples, as is the case today, and one use to which the meeting-house bells were put in some towns was to summon laborers from the field, in harvest time, to drink their allowance of rum at eleven in the morning and at four in the afternoon.

It was not only considered unnecessary but absolutely sinful to have a meeting-house heated against the wintry blasts, which were harder



to bear in New England in the early days than now. An entry was made by Rev. Roland Thacher, minister of the church at Wareham, in February, 1773, in which he said: "A remarkably cold Sabbath reaching as far as New York. Some by their glasses found it to be many degrees colder than ever was known in New England. Many were froze. I myself coming home from Meeting had my face touched with the frost." Almost fifty years later, in 1825, Perez Briggs and Ebenezer Bourne, selectmen of Wareham, called a town meeting, "To see if the Town will furnish sufficient money belonging to the meeting-house to Purchase a Stove and pipes and furnish wood and attendance for said Stove."

The town voted: "Not to purchase a Stove and pipes. Not to furnish wood and attendance. What money belongs to the Town to remain in the Treasurer's hands until otherwise ordered."

From a diary record of a Sunday in January, 1716: "An extraordinary Cold Storm of Wind and Snow. Blows much worse on coming home at Noon, and so holds on. Bread was frozen at the Lord's Table."

**Beginning of Sunday Schools**—Before the days of the Sunday school, an institution, introduced to the colonies by Rev. John Cotton of Boston, was called "the fifth day lecture." This took place in the meeting-houses on Thursday. Schools were dismissed, after there were schools, and labor ceased, so that there might be no absentees when the lecture began. Rev. John Cotton, the elder, had maintained his ordinary lecture every Thursday in St. Botolph's, Boston, England, under direction of the Bishop of Lincoln. How it became so popular on these shores, when most of the institutions of the Old World were so carefully obliterated, no one seems to know. "Lecture day" began in Boston in 1634 and continued many years. There is a record bearing the date 1679 of "an order and advice of ye magistrates yt all the elders of this towne might jointly carry on the 5th day Lecture." Perhaps some of its popularity was occasioned by the fact that it was the great day for some offender to be confined in the stocks or set upon the pillory, flogged at the whipping post or made to sit on the wooden horse, and the populace dearly loved to witness a fellow-mortal in distress.

It was on these lecture occasions that the names of those who intended to be married were read in the meeting-house. If no one could show just cause why this should not be a matter of self-determination, the intentions were usually carried out. A couple, after being made one by the magistrate—ministers were not allowed to perform marriages in colonial days—were expected to "come out bride" at divine service in the meeting-house the following Sunday. Everyone would be there to see the bride and groom, and it would add much to the day.

The colonial dame was without doubt criticized as severely as everyone else was dealt with in the most trivial and personal matters. The men of Abington voted in 1775 "that it is an indecent way that the female sex do sit with their hats and bonnets on to worship God in this house."

It is said that the first Sunday school in America was organized in Halifax in the meeting-house erected in that town in 1733. The first pastor of the church was Rev. John Cotton, a son of the Rev. John Cotton of Boston who introduced the "fifth day lecture" already referred to. The younger Cotton shared his father's enthusiasm concerning the "fifth day lecture" but deemed the idea open to innovations, so far as instructing the children was concerned. Accordingly, he set apart a sort of catechism especially designed for the children and they had their own part to become familiar with and on which to be examined. This effort on the part of Mr. Cotton was decidedly successful and spread into several other churches in Plymouth County, although handicapped considerably by the prejudice against any innovations in religious convictions or practice, which was rampant in those days and by no means lacking in this generation of ours.

The Sunday school in Halifax was nearly half a century in advance of what is usually recognized as the first Sunday school, that established by Robert Raikes, the English publisher and philanthropist, at Gloucester, England, in 1780.

The Sunday school has reached its fullest development in America, in which Sunday was such a cheerless day for the children of Colonial days, until the Halifax idea gave them something to do, to at least help them forget the cold in winter. The meeting-houses were not warmed but elderly people and those in delicate health were allowed to carry foot stools, in which hot coals and ashes were placed, so that their feet might not be frozen. The practice was to place the feet upon these foot stools and children got as much warmth from them as they could from the "overflow" of heat.

In most meeting-houses the children were not allowed to sit with their parents, the boys going into one pew and the girls into another, with no foot stools in either. The officers, commissioned to preserve order in the "pue of ye wretched boys to see that they behave comlie, and use such raps and blows as shall be meet" would tolerate no pounding of feet or other method of getting them warm after the long walk from home to the meeting-house.

In the Plymouth Colony early Colonists observed "divided time." The Sabbath began at Sunset on Saturday night, when the children's play was stopped to prepare their minds for the coming of the Sabbath. Early the next morning, they were tumbled out of bed in unheated rooms and started for the meeting-house, perhaps miles away, to sit through a sermon two or three hours long which, in most cases, even their parents



did not understand. If they fell asleep they were vigorously tapped on the head with a knobby pole.

There is a record of one town which had a law against children "riding down the hills with small and great sleds" on Sundays and, if any offenders were caught, the tithing men were empowered to "break any sled or sleds in pieces, and to seize the coat or upper garment of the boy or girl and present it to the parents, to be redeemed on the payment of a fine of five shillings."

The Sunday school was, perhaps, the most enjoyable feature of the long, sad day for a child. In later years the Raikes plan was generally adopted in connection with American churches. The Methodists organized their first school on that plan in 1786, the Universalists in 1790, and the Friends and Baptists in 1791.

**Infant Damnation Doctrine Preached**—Terrible doctrines thundered from the colonial pulpits included, in some instances, announcements that unbaptized infants who had died were eternally lost, as well as all others who had sinned and died without repentance. The congregations, if they believed the utterances, could not but feel that this world and the next alike were cheerless and hopeless, with most of their beloved ones who had passed on tortured in the fires of hell. There was bound to be a reaction from such doctrines and more liberal churches came into being.

Rev. Michael Wigglesworth was author of a poem entitled "The Day of Judgment," which included a discourse about Eternity. In it he gave the information that mothers of babies are not allowed to distress themselves in Heaven about their offspring suffering in hell where

God's vengeance feeds the flame  
With piles of wood, and brimstone flood,  
That none can quench the same.

According to the poem the babies who died in infancy appear before the judgment bar and plead that they should not be made to suffer for the guilt of Adam, but the judge informs them

But what you call old Adam's fall,  
And only his Trespass,  
You call amiss to call it his;  
Both his and your's it was.  
He was designed of all mankind  
To be a public head,  
A common root whence all should shoot,  
And stood in all their stead.

Rev. Cotton Mather said this poem would become immortal. It is an indication of the doctrine which experienced no rectification in the filter of love or mercy, in coming down from John Calvin.

Notwithstanding the utterances from the pulpits were accepted by the majority of the people making up the congregations as Gospel truth, without question, the minister seems to have been a most unappreciated individual, patient, long-suffering, but either too poverty-stricken to assume the expense of a removal to a more desirable location or unable to escape from a place where he had been ordained. Public opinion would hardly accept a minister in one place if he had left another in which the matter of compensation had been a determining factor. There is the record of Rev. John Robinson of Duxbury, rewarded, after thirty-six years of faithful service, by a vote of the town, passed August 7, 1738, which read:

' Voted that ther meting hous shuld be shot up so that no parson should open the same to that Mr. John Robrson of Duxborough may not get into said meeting-hous to preach anay more without orders from the towne.

At a previous meeting of the town a committee was appointed to make up accounts with him "from the beginning of the world to the present day." The parson was ordained at Duxbury with all the pomp and ceremony befitting the occasion in 1702. He had spent much time and efforts going about his parish "gathering his own rates," and received more promises than firewood or grain. Cold and undernourished, he brought suit against the town to force it to pay attention to the long standing arrears in his salary account and his dire necessity. The parish had a spokesman at the town meeting, called in indignation that the minister should ask what was due. According to a story told in that fascinating book written by William Root Bliss, entitled "Side Glimpses from the Colonial Meeting House," the following dialogue took place:

"Well! what do you want now?" said the spokesman of the parish to him; "If we haven't paid up, we gave you the improvement of the island and about thirty acres of upland besides. Isn't that enough without asking for your salary?"

"Ah! yes;" said Mr. Robinson, "you did give me the island. I've mowed it and I don't want a better fence around my cornfield than one windrow of the fodder it cuts. If you should mow that upland you speak of with a razor and rake it with a comb, you wouldn't get enough from it to winter a grasshopper."



## CHAPTER XV

### TOWN MEETINGS, TOWN CRIERS AND CURFEWS.

**Meeting-house Door the Official Bulletin Board for Legal Notices and a Repository for Heads of Wolves and Other Noxious Animals For The Extinction of Which Bounties Were Offered—Customs on the Way to Assemblies of All Sorts—Man Who Was Publicly Whipped For "Common Sleeping"—Church-Going Provincetown Dogs Faced Death Penalty—One Quakeress Whose Simple Garb Electrified a Congregation—Man's Status in Society Denoted By Seat He Had in Church—Curfew Ringer's Reply to Personal Question From An Early Evangelist.**

The great door of the meeting-house was that upon which public notices were tacked or pasted, as it was the official bulletin board for all public events. The warrants for town meetings were posted in several places in the town for convenience of the residents but the posting which was done on the great door of the meeting-house was that which made the call legal, and in accordance with the custom of the times. There were some in most towns who were unable to read and they were warned "by word of mouth," constables stopping at a corner of streets or elsewhere to give notice to people. It was for such a reason that the town crier became a leading citizen, his popularity based on service.

The records of the town of Plymouth in 1694 include this: "The town declared themselves to be against Warning town meetings by papers set up for that end, but do Expect warning from the Constables by word of mouth when Ever there shall be occasion." The constable was the community radio broadcasting station in that day for all who "tuned in."

The town of Ipswich, although many miles from Plymouth, was associated with it in many ways in early colonial history. It was a custom required by the town government, to use the great door of the meeting-house as a place whereon to prove the killing of wolves for bounties. The hunter was to receive ten shillings as a bounty for each wolf killed, providing the heads were taken to the meeting-house and he was required to there "nayle them and give notis to the constable." Other towns made the same requirement, but in one town, for obvious reasons, it was ordered that the wolves' heeads were not to be nailed to the door but "to a little read oke tree at the northeast end of the meeting-house."

The meeting-house was the repository for the town gunpowder, and many times it was stored under the pulpit. Before the Battle of Lex-

ington, Captain Parker said to his company: "Every man of you who is equipped, follow me! And those who are not equipped, go into the meeting-house and furnish yourselves from the magazine and immediately join the company." This command was obeyed and, when all were assembled, Captain Parker looked them over, took account of the stock of gunpowder, guns and bullets, and give other direct advice, including his famous instruction: "Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon. But if they mean to have war, let it begin here."

It was the custom to open all town meetings with prayer, the same as the Congress of the United States or the General Court, and this brings to mind the story of the small boy who was taken by his father to a session of Congress and had pointed out to him the chaplain of the Senate. "Does that man pray for the Senate?" asked the son. "No, he takes a look at the Senate and prays for the country," responded the wise parent.

After the prayer and reading the warrant of the town meeting, the men of the town, sitting with their hats on, had an opportunity to be heard and many "town meeting orators" developed. There were town laws which required "every man shall speak by turn, rising and putting off his hat and when he has said his say he shall signify it by putting on his hat and sitting down." The moderator was a man of importance in town meetings, then as now, and there was a law against the unruly citizen who, if he "presume to speak without liberty of the moderator," was to be fined twenty shillings. Even this was not always a sufficient deterrent, and

The constable to every prater  
Bawl'd out—"Pray hear the Moderator!"  
Some call'd the vote, and some in turn  
Were screaming high—"Adjourn! Adjourn!"

**Battle of Lexington Bell Disappeared**—The first bell to be hung in a meeting-house tower in New England was set up in Cambridge in 1632. The town was called Newtowne at that time and much pride was taken in the bell, but it was small and its tone was harsh. After four years, the town voted to let the bell remain silent and summon people to divine worship by beating a drum, as was done in other towns. Where a drum was used, it was usually beaten by a drummer who paraded back and forth on the highway from the meeting-house to the end of the village.

The first bell for the church at Ipswich was hung on a tree at the northeast of the meeting-house, the same tree on which wolves' heads were to be nailed by hunters who claimed a bounty for killing the beasts of destruction. The first bell in Hingham was small and unsatisfactory. When the second house was built, which is still standing, the oldest church edifice in New England, the town voted to request the select-



men to get a new bell "as big againe as the old one was, if it may be had."

The most historic of all the bells connected with all the meeting houses of New England was the bell hung in a tower near the meeting-house at Lexington. It had summoned people to church since 1702. It sounded the first national alarm, for the protest with fire, the "shot heard round the world." This bell deserves equal fame with the famous Liberty Bell in Philadelphia. Captain Parker's squad of resistance answered the call, and so did the patriots for miles around. It was heard in Woburn by Sylvanus Wood, who testified, when seventy-four years old: "about an hour before the break of day I heard the Lexington bell ring, and, fearing there was difficulty, I immediately arose, took my gun, and, with Robert Douglass, went in Haste to Lexington, which was about three miles distant."

The old meeting-house at Lexington and the bell tower were torn down in 1794 and the bell which sounded the alarm of the Revolutionary War disappeared.

In the records of the town of Plymouth for the year 1679 there is an entry: "The constable is ordered by the Towne to take Course for the sweeping of the meeting-house and the Ringing of the bell and to pay an Indian for the killing A woulfe."

Seven families of the town of Bridgewater petitioned the court at Plymouth in 1685: "God, by his providence, hath placed the bounds of our habitation in Bridgewater, and on the eastward side of the town, and about two miles from the meeting-house and the mill, and some of us have had no way into the town but upon sufferance through men's lands. We think it is very hard that living in a wilderness we cannot have convenient room for highways." "Without doubt, to borrow a phrase used at the present day, "public convenience and necessity" called for "a way" to church and the mill, without trespassing on private property.

Those who rode to the meeting-house on Sundays usually hitched the horse when completing half the distance and other members of the family who had started on foot would untie the horse and continue by that means of transportation. A farmer carried his wife on a pillion behind him and a child on the saddle in front of him, if he had a child. Those who walked carried their shoes in their hand, until they came within sight of the meeting-house, sitting down beside the road to put on their footwear before entering the edifice. Those who had horses and preferred to rent them to others and walk to the meeting-house, to gain the extra income, supplied the means of transportation for those well-to-do. An entry in an old account book, made in 1737, read: "Ebenezer Bates Dr for my mare for your wife to ride to meeting 2 shillings 6 pence."

**Duties of Inspectors of Youth**—It was the custom in the early meeting-houses to have an officer appointed to keep people awake as well as to discipline unruly boys and girls. Then, as now, the people in the country looked to Boston for the style in some things. In that city the churches had a man, armed with a long staff, with a solid ball at one end and a fox's tail at the other. His duty was to watch out for people sleeping during divine service, especially if they were such sound sleepers that the sound could be heard. In that event, he arose in all his dignity, marched with his respected weapon to his shoulder as a marshal with his mace, tapped the offender on his head, if the offender was a man. If the sleeper was a woman, he brushed the end of her nose with the fox's tail, since there was presumably a bonnet on her head and the solid ball would not have the required effect.

There is a record of one Robert Scott who took a nap in the Lynn meeting-house and was rudely awakened by the man with the staff and ball. Scott was a man of quick action and, before becoming fairly awake, he struck his assailant, and the meeting-house official fell to the meeting-house floor with a dull thud, if they had them in those days. For this offense, Scott was condemned by the court to be publicly whipped for "common sleeping."

These officers were not called "sluggard wakers," as was the case in old England, and were not properly called tithing men, although by the latter name they have frequently been mentioned in stories which have come down of colonial meeting-house discipline. They were usually called "Inspectors of Youth" and sometimes their duties included keeping the boys and girls from unseemly actions, the congregation from becoming dead to the world and the dogs from swelling the congregation undesirably.

The tithing men were officers of distinction whose duties were well defined in a report of a Committee of the General Court, read March 26, 1697, as follows: "Yr Duty in presenting to the Justices the names of all such as Continue Tipling in Inns, & other publicque houses of entertainment especially on the Lords Day; and such as they find Drunke together with those that entertaine them; all profane swears, and Cursers and the Number as nere as they Can of their oaths; All such as are quilty of extortion; All such as Keep houses where unlawful gains are used & such as sell Drinke without Lycence; the names of such as live Idley without estates, Suspicious persons, Whores, night Walkers, mothers of Bastard Children; Such as Commit Common Nuisances."

Lest it appear to the reader that the order in old colonial meeting houses was something scandalous beyond the power of the present generation to conceive, possibly that "total depravity" of which much has been said in time past, the following are presented from a note book of a Justice of the Peace in 1750, giving the court record of one offender:



A Rude and Idel Behavior in the meting hows Such as Smiling and Larfing and Intiseing others to the Same Evil

Such as whispering and Larfing in the meting house between meetings

Such as Larfing or Smiling and puling the heir of his nayber benoni Simkins in the time of publick Worship

Such as playing with her Hand and fingers at her hair

Such as throwing Sister pentecost perkins on the Ice it being Saboth day or Lord's day between the metinghous and his place of Abode.

**Whipping Dogs Out of the Sanctuary**—In these days, following the restoration of the schoolhouse in which Mary's little lamb went to school, by Henry Ford, there are those who aver that there never was a Mary, never a lamb and neither one nor the other ever followed one another to school or any other place of public entertainment or instruction. There may be a crass iconoclast who will appear to deny that there ever were officers specially appointed in the old colonial meeting-house to exclude the dogs, but the town records of the towns in counties hereabout will rise up to cry out against such sacrilege. Many dogs there were in Plymouth, Norfolk and Barnstable counties, speaking in terms of present definition, who attended divine services with such regularity that real money was appropriated and paid for their suppression. Even a death penalty was imposed in Provincetown, in 1775, and an officer was appointed to "kill every dog that comes into the meeting-house on the Sabbath day." As a matter of mercy the dog had the right of appeal and if a sufficiently good appeal was made to his master to have that worthy pay a fine of fifty cents, the dog's life was spared.

Many years earlier, about 1662, in the town of Reading, England, the law was: "Every dog that comes to the meeting either on Lord's day or lecture day, except it be their dogs that pays for a dog-whipper, the cwner of those dogs shall pay sixpence for every time they come to the meeting that doth not pay the dog-whipper." It appears from the records that there were twenty-six men of Reading who made it possible for their dogs to receive religious instruction as well as other members of their families. It took an officer of discrimination to recognize the orthodox dogs and heterodox dogs in those lively moments when dogs were yelping and running about, persuaded by the whiplash of the dog-whipper; and refrain from lashing the sheep while he belabored the goats, as a manner of speaking. Having once attended to the dog problem it would not be strange if the officer found employment in that other branch of his profession, "keeping the boys in order," even preventing them from "smiling and Larfing and Intising others to the Same Evil," as present-day boys might easily be led astray by such scenes.

In the town of Abington in 1793, those who suffered their dogs to enter the meeting-house on the Lord's day were required to pay "the same fine as for a breach of the Sabbath." There were similar local laws in other towns.

**Services Disturbed By Quakers**—There were still other disturbers of divine worship in the meeting-houses, at times. The Quakers were not excused from attendance at the meeting-house because they had a different faith. They were dissenters but their unorthodoxy was no excuse. They became unwilling attendants and at times allowed their ordinary calm to forsake them and "railed" at the minister. In one meeting-house a Quaker arose in the midst of the service, broke a glass bottle and shouted to the minister: "Thus will the Lord break you in pieces."

The drab atmosphere of a service in Newbury was rudely electrified on one Lord's day when Lydia Wardwell, a Quakeress, walked in, clad only in a look of indignation, presenting the appearance of Lady Godiva without her horse. This was to "show to the people the spiritual nakedness of their rulers."

The General Court dealt severely with Quakers, whether their alleged offenses were committed inside or outside a meeting-house. Some were imprisoned, branded with a hot iron, publicly whipped and banished from the colony but the treatment of Quakers in the Plymouth colony was better than in some other parts of New England. Some were hanged on Boston Common including Mary Dyer, whose husband pleaded with Governor Endicott in a tear-stained letter that he would spare her life, but in vain. The letter is still in existence.

**Arbitrary Seating Regulations**—Considerable levity has been occasioned by the fact that it was a rule in the colonial meeting-houses for the men and women, even husbands and wives, to be separated. There were "men's seats" and there were "women's seats." There were also seats for Indians and seats for "black people." Another division in the meeting-house was for boys and girls. The seating carried with it recognitions of honor and distinction, with much insistence upon the social code occasioned by ranks of official prominence, age and wealth.

In Rehoboth those arriving at the meeting-house in 1718 were sorted out, "firstly to have regard to dignity of person, and secondly to age, and thirdly what charge they have been at in building the meeting-house, or to have respect to age, office and estate, negroes excepted." In some other places those who paid the highest taxes were given the best seats. In one town there was a rule which forbade men and their wives "to be placed in the same pews unless they incline to sit together." Even if they were so inclined it was evidently not always an easy matter to arrange in Boston, as there is a fragment of a diary kept by the respected Judge Sewall in which appear entries for three weeks in succession as follows: "Lord's Day April 1. Sat with my wife in her Pue. April 8 introduced her into my Pue and sat with her there.



April 15, conducted my wife to the Fore Seat." The Fore Seat was the seat of honor and just why the learned and most excellent judge was not allowed to sit there the middle of April while his wife was given the honor, does not appear in the record.

These rules for seating the congregation were neither Puritan nor Pilgrim. They were inherited from England. There is a record of an old church in Hawstead that "Richard Pead, Reg'rar'ras," directed an instrument to the Church Wardens charging and commanding them to place the inhabitants in such seats in the church as they should think proper, according to their estates, degrees and callings. Returns were to be made of those that were refractory. This rule was dated December 1st, 1623.

In 1717 it was a vote of Rochester, Massachusetts, that old people be provided for: "Voted that three Short Seats be built nye the pulpit Stairs for Antiant parsons to set in."

A real problem presented itself in seating the boys and girls in the meeting-houses and, not only in seating them, but in keeping them seated and in good behavior, within the meaning of good behavior in those good old days. The town of Duxbury, in solemn conclave in the meeting-house in 1760, voted to choose a committee to take care of "the wretched boys on the Lord's Day." In Harwich the three hindmost benches in the meeting-house were reserved for boys under twelve years of age, and three benches in the gallery for older boys. Two stout-hearted old mariners were chosen to "look after these boys, that they sit in their seats and be kept from playing" and still we wonder why Cape Cod boys ran away to sea. A little later in Harwich the girls came in for distinction when a vote was passed "that the same course be pursued with the girls" as with the boys.

There is a record that John King was appointed by one Cape Cod town to keep boys "from playing and prophaning the Sabbath day" and, for his encouragement the town went on record that it would "stand by the said John King" if he found it expedient to chastise an offender after the custom of those days when strap oil was plentiful as whale oil. John King, even with the moral support of the town behind him, had to ask assistance, as the town later appointed four men "to take care of the boys on Lord's day and whip them if found playing."

At Truro, where the Pilgrims first set foot upon New England sand, three men were appointed "to whip boys that are disorderly on Sabbath days at or about the meeting-house."

**Stories Rang Out From Belfries**—There was a custom in many of the towns in Plymouth County, which continued up to the beginning of the present generation, of ringing the bell in the meeting-house to inform the town of the passing away of a resident. The bell was tolled for a

time and, after a pause, the age of the person was struck slowly on the bell. Some towns had a special signal, by vote at the town meeting, to signify the sex as well as the age of the person who had passed away. In the small towns, "where everybody knew everybody," they usually knew every person who was infirm by reason of age or illness, and were able to make a fairly good guess who had passed away when the bell was tolled. Many sextons had a hammer which was used to strike the edge of the bell, instead of using the tongue of the bell, when the time came to "strike the age." This gave a slightly different sound and prevented any mistakes.

Several of the towns had the bells sounded at nine o'clock in the evening or at some other "seemly hour" as a warning of bedtime. It is related that when the spire of the old First Church in Plymouth burned many years ago, the townspeople watched closely for the time when the flames should consume the belfry, as they were anxious about the fate of the ancient bell. According to the story the flames reached the bell and burned away the supporting cradle so that it fell at precisely nine o'clock, sounding its own curfew, without aid of human hands.

One of the curfew ringers, an elderly man who had performed that office for many years, was, on one evening, ringing the curfew, when he was visited by a clergyman who was doing evangelistic labor in the town. The evangelist watched the aged man skillfully handling the bell rope and, when the impressive office had been performed, and the curfew ringer stood with the keys to the belfry in his hand, ready to depart, the evangelist said: "You are an aged man, approaching the end of mortal life. Have you made your peace with God?"

"I don't remember of ever having any difficulty with Him," was the reply.

It is said that "history repeats itself" and apparently it has done so in recent times, in cases where municipalities have adopted a curfew law. Brockton and some of the larger towns in Plymouth County have received numerous petitions from women's clubs and other organizations requesting a curfew hour for children, and also a police woman.

The great door of the meeting-house continues to be used as a bulletin board to advertise the church business meetings and occasional conventions, social events and suppers, but the "sluggard-waker" and "dog whipper" are as out of date as the town crier.



## CHAPTER XVI

### OLD TAVERNS, TURNPIKES AND STAGECOACHES.

**Guests Could Literally Hang Their Wraps on the Ceiling—Some Stages Passed Near "The Old Oaken Bucket" But That Did Not Interfere With the Popularity of the Bar—Horses Were Changed on Baggage Wagons at Brimstone Corner—Some Laws Under Which Landlords of the Old Taverns Had to Conduct Their Hostelries—Idling Much Decried by the Ministers of That Period.**

The days of the old turnpikes and the stagecoaches are frequently recalled as there is a romance associated with those early methods of travel. Mail and passengers were transported between Plymouth and Boston and farther on, to New York and Philadelphia. At short intervals wayside taverns awaited the travelers, at which food, lodging and social life served to make the journeys more or less pleasurable. Long journeys were tiresome and tedious. Starts were usually made before daybreak and the journey continued long after dark, with frequent changes of horses. The journey from Boston to New York took from three to six days.

In the early part of the nineteenth century stage coaches afforded the only commercial means of transportation. The individual traveled on horseback or packet. Two men of Plymouth, Leonard and Woodward, in 1810, ran a line of coaches from Sandwich to Boston, passing through the Plymouth woods and town, and on through Kingston, Duxbury, Pembroke, Hanover, Scituate, Hingham, Weymouth and Quincy to Boston, the same identical route which is now traversed by motor cars in such large numbers that there is practically a continuous procession. A turnpike through Braintree and Weymouth had been built in 1803 and this was taken in on the route. Stops were invariably made at the "Old Half Way House" in Scituate, a tavern kept by one Leonard. The fare from Plymouth to this tavern was \$1.25 and the same fare was collected from Scituate to Boston.

The "Old Half Way House" was a popular place for the gentry in the stagecoach days, as were all the taverns, as the "waits" at these places gave opportunity for refreshment, to hear the latest news and associate with people seldom met elsewhere in the colonial life.

Taverns were usually situated in the centre of the town and, as the meeting-house was almost inevitably placed in the centre, the two colonial institutions were near neighbors and on terms of friendly intimacy. As soon as town meeting was adjourned those who had, perhaps, thrashed out their differences before the moderator, gathered

around the bar at the tavern and became good friends, "even as you or I."

The villagers gathered at the taverns to hear the latest news, the same as they gathered at the postoffice after that institution had been developed by Benjamin Franklin from his original idea. It is asserted that the first postoffice was in Benjamin Franklin's hat.

All the buildings in colonial times had low ceilings to the rooms, to make it an easier matter to heat them in the winter. There was no real ventilation problem, as the ample open fireplaces served to take the foul air as well as most of the heat "up chimney." Sometimes hooks or nails were driven into the ceiling of the kitchen or living room from which various things were suspended as a matter of convenience, as it was an easy matter for a person of ordinary height to touch the ceiling without extraordinary effort.

It was in the tavern, many times, that the selectmen held court, and settled such matters and made such records as were called for and were customary. It saved the discomforts of the meeting-house, which was usually not heated, and was a more congenial place in which to meet, with frequent adjournments to the bar.

The country tavern, like the country hotel of today, was a shining mark for the clergymen, as a place where all kinds of people gathered for all kinds of purposes afforded some chances for criticism, and the clergymen considered themselves the heaven-inspired critics.

At a general convention of ministers held in Boston in May, 1694, they went on record as declaring:

Ye Liberty taken by Towne Dwellers to mispend their Time in Taverns which are places properly & honestly designed but for ye Accommodation of Travellers—It is most earnestly prayed That some effectuell check may be given unto this way of sinning.

Most of this sinning must have been done at a seemly hour because when the Court of Common Pleas gave an inn-holder a license to keep the tavern it was nominated in the bond that he should not "suffer any children or servant or other person to remain in his house tippling or drinking after nine o'clock in the night." Those were days when laws were enforced, and the tavern-keeper who upset the dignity of the Court of Common Pleas would have an opportunity to sit in the stocks or pillory and suffer other inconveniences, to say nothing of having his license revoked. A tavern-keeper might die but the tavern would be continued by the family. There is an epitaph in a New England cemetery which informs the curious that

Beneath this stone, in hopes of Zion,  
There lies the landlord of the Lion.  
His wife keeps on the business still,  
Resigned unto the Heavenly will.



The bell in the meeting-house was rung at nine o'clock in the evening and the bar was closed and the villagers wended their way home, carrying lanterns of the period to find their way over the rough roads.

When the Revolutionary War was coming on, several of the tavern-keepers in the Plymouth Colony were loyalists. Most of the discussions concerning the tyranny of King George had taken place at the taverns and a tavern-keeping Tory was the most offensive of all Tories in the colonies.

**Old-time Stage Drivers**—One of the stagecoach drivers in 1840 was "Jake" Sprague, whose route was from Duxbury to Hingham, to connect with the steamboat at Nantasket. The route was through Marshfield and Scituate, a pretty country, and was most popular, made as pleasant as possible by "Jake," a character in his day, jovial and a good judge of human nature. The fare between Hingham and South Scituate was thirty-seven and a half cents, as is attested by a receipt still in existence signed by Sprague.

The Sprague coach changed horses at the stable of John Nash and Mr. Sprague was assisted in doing this quickly by Benjamin Foster, a boy at the time, who was frequently bawled out by the genial "Jake" if he passed up the reins with a single twist in them. "Augers in those reins, Ben," was the expression he used, accompanied by a merry twinkle in his eye which took the sting out of the rebuke. "Ben" was the successor to Sprague in driving the coach and had some of the same characteristics.

Another boy who sometimes assisted in changing horses at John Nash's was Seth Foster who, on one occasion, was given a tip of a silver quarter by Daniel Webster. Seth Foster was another boy who eventually became a stage driver, succeeding Reuben Gardner who ran a stage over the same route to Hingham. Foster changed the route in 1854 to run through Assinippi and West Scituate, to connect with the boat at Hingham in summer and the steam train in winter, which by that time had been put on. In 1875 he sold out to Allen Wright of West Scituate. William Collamore was his successor and enlarged the route to accommodate Rockland. Seth Foster had extended his line to take in North Marshfield, Hanover and Greenbush, where "the old oaken bucket hung in the well." The Greenbush route was operated as late as 1902. Mr. Foster was a stage driver 48 years and carried the mail 43 years. He always regretted that he had not preserved the silver quarter presented him by Daniel Webster.

George S. Hatch was the last stagecoach driver over the Greenbush route, holding the reins until the transportation facilities were motorized.

Many people of the present generation recall Frank Hatch who ran

a stage and express from Marshfield through Scituate, over the Country Way to Cohasset, which was the last station on the Old Colony Railroad. When the Duxbury and Cohasset Railroad was built by the South Shore towns he gave up the route, but continued to run a stage from Marshfield station to Brant Rock and carried on a general livery and express business, until John Flavell succeeded him.

Seth Foster and Frank Hatch both had built during the Civil War a sixteen-passenger coach. Both "Tally-ho" coaches are still in existence and have figured in gala occasions at the Brockton Fair and the Marshfield Fair as well as special occasions far and near.

**No Mad Speed For "Baggage Wagons"**—Along with the stagecoaches in earlier days vehicles without springs were used to transport baggage. In the South vehicles of this type were called Conestagos but the matter-of-fact Plymouth County Yankee was content to call them "baggage wagons." The line from Sandwich, traversed by Leonard and Woodward's coaches took a long time to negotiate, because the baggage wagons moved at a walking pace for the horses. Horses were changed at Brimstone Corner in West Duxbury and at the Howard House at Hanover Four-corners and elsewhere. Much of the travel was done in the night as well as the day to facilitate the delivery of freight. James H. West, of Pembroke, one of the last of the Quakers in Plymouth County, had many boxes delivered in this way from his mill. One of the last of the freighters was "Honest Tom Alden," who served his district for several years in the General Court and was one of the best known and most respected public men on the South Shore.

**Something For Man and Beast**—George Lyman Kittredge, who wrote a book in 1904 concerning the "Old Farmer and His Almanack," in recalling the old-time taverns, said:

"On the whole, it appears that the inns or taverns of New England were pretty comfortable places, and that some of them were rather distinguished. Tourists are proverbially hard to please, and it is natural that we should hear more of the unpleasant than of the agreeable incidents that accompanied traveling in a new country. But the good repute of our hotels nowadays is merely a continuation of the character which they bore in old times. The administrative capacity for which the Yankee is famous has applied itself successfully to the complicated business of innholding. Many noted landlords in other parts of the country have been New England men. Good cheer has become a cherished American institution. We can hardly venture to assert that its home is New England; but one would find it hard to make out a better case for any other part of the continent."

So far as the old-time landlords of the taverns, along the turnpike



from the tip of Cape Cod to Boston, through Plymouth, are concerned they were typical tavern-keepers, dispensing "for man and beast" and making both comfortable and full of "good cheer." Again we are indebted to Mr. Kittredge for a list of these landlords, the locations of their respective taverns and the number of miles from one to the other. It will be seen from the following list, for instance, from Roxbury to Kent's tavern was four miles, and from Kent's to Pierce's tavern at Milton an additional three miles, until the whole 117 miles from Roxbury to Provincetown is taken into consideration. From Sandwich to Wood's Hole was 82 miles and the distance to Martha's Vineyard, by ferry, an additional nine miles. If the ferry was late, there was a chance at Parker's tavern to get refreshment before embarking on the sea voyage. The list:

To Plymouth & Cape Cod			
Roxbury	Kent 4	Harwich	Silk 7
Milton	Pierce 3	ditto	Clark & Snow 1
Quincy	Marsh 2	Eastham	Knowles 6
ditto	Salisbury 2	ditto	Knowles 3
Weymouth	Arnold 1	Wellfleet	Collins & Lombard 9
ditto	Rice 3	Truro	Knowles 7
Hingham	Waters 3	ditto	Stevens 1
Scituate	Collamore 4	Provincetown	Nickerson 7
Hanover	Wales 5		
Pembroke	Baker 4		
Kingston	Little 6		117
Plymouth	Bartlett & Witherell 4	To Martha's Vineyard	
ditto	Corinth 6	Sandwich	Fessenden 60
ditto	Ellis 5	Falmouth	Fish 10
Sandwich	Newcomb & Fessenden 7	Falmouthtown	Hatch 8
Barnstable		Wood's Hole	Parker 4
	Howland, Baxter & Chipman 8	Over the ferry to Vineyard	9
ditto	Loring & Crocker 4		
Yarmouth	Baffet & Thatcher 5		91

Plymouth Mail Stage passes through Hingham; sets off from King's Inn, Market-Square, every Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday, at 6 o'clock in the morning, and arrives at Plymouth the same days, at 4 o'clock in the afternoon; leaves Plymouth every Monday, Wednesday and Friday, at 6 o'clock in the morning, and arrives in Boston the same days, at 4 o'clock in the afternoon.

The above is an advertisement of the stage which served the Old Colony District the first year of the nineteenth century, and it might safely be said of it, in the words of "The Midnight Ride of Paul Revere,"

Hardly a man is now alive  
Who remembers that famous day and year.

There was a hospitable custom of entertaining strangers at private houses and the experience of being ushered into a cold "spare room,"

containing a high feather bed, so high that there was a step or "cricket" beside it, on which to begin the journey upward, before falling into the depth of goose feathers, was something long since out of date. Usually the top of the voluminous feather bed was warmed by passing a warming pan, containing hot coals, over it, just before the guest was ready "to call it a day."

So far as the coaches themselves were concerned and their rattling and swinging over the highways of one and two hundred years ago, there was little in the experience which would spell comfort to the ease-loving people of today. There is a record extant of an experience, chosen from "Melish's Travels," and has to do with intercourse between Boston and New York in 1806:

"Having taken my leave of a number of kind friends, with whom I had associated during my stay in Boston, I engaged a passage by the mail stage for New York, and was called to take my place on the 4th of September, at 2 o'clock in the morning. It is the practice here for the driver to call on the passengers before setting out, and it is attended with a considerable degree of convenience to them, particularly when they set out early in the morning. The mail stages here are altogether different in construction from the mail coaches in Britain. They are long machines, hung upon leather braces, with three seats across, of a sufficient length to accommodate three persons each, who all sit with their faces toward the horses. The driver sits under cover, without any division between him and the passengers; and there is room for a person to sit on each side of him. The driver, by the postoffice regulations, must be a white man, and he has the charge of the mail, which is placed in a box below his seat. There is no guard. The passengers' luggage is put below the seats, or tied on behind the stage. They put nothing on the top, and they take no outside passengers. The stages are slightly built, and the roof suspended on pillars; with a curtain, to be let down or folded up at pleasure. The conveyance is easy and in summer very agreeable; but it must be excessively cold in winter."



## CHAPTER XVII

### RISE OF MORE LIBERAL CHURCHES.

**Many Congregational Parishes Became Unitarian and Universalists Sprang Up, Even in the Smallest Towns—Catholics in Boston Sold Into Slavery—Some Clergymen Obligated to Quit Plymouth County Pulpits, After Hearing Rev. George Whitefield Preach—Bible Was Not Read In Colonial Meeting-Houses First Hundred Years—One of the Innovations Which Made Rev. Cotton Mather "Cry Mightily Unto God"—Early Historians Say Pilgrims Were More Tolerant and Mild Than the Puritans—took Fifty Years to Sing By "Rule Instead of By Rote" Harmoniously—Even First Liberal Church Refused Gift of Organs as Not Suitable Instruments for Public Worship of God.**

Out of Salem, the stronghold of the Puritans and from the very church of which Roger Williams was assistant to the pastor, Rev. Samuel Skelton, came what has been called an attempt to organize on these shores an established church, which is Congregationalism.

According to Edward Oliver Skelton's "Story of New England": "It was now apparent to the central body of the confederation, to wit, the Great and General Court, that to maintain in close relation the settlements, of quasi states of the colony, that the cause of Congregationalism, which was established by Rev. Samuel Skelton at the first immigration to Salem in July, 1629, must be advanced both here and in England, and to the people in England was made known fully the system of church government as exemplified here in the Congregational churches. That system met with the instant approbation of the masses, a majority of whom organized into an independent section, who were opposed to the National Church on the religious side, and to the abolition of the monarchy upon the civic, and as the years wore on the battle became fiercer and fiercer, involving Episcopalian, Presbyterian and Independent, until the influence of that sectarianism, known as Congregationalism, born that July day in 1629 at Salem, rose to irresistible ascendancy, sweeping through the country to such degree that when Cromwell raised his banner the people by thousands flocked around it, and as the army moved additions were so large that finally it overcame, as is well known, every obstacle, and Oliver Cromwell became the greatest ruler that England had ever had."

The church at Plymouth, founded by the Pilgrims and of which Rev. John Robinson was pastor at Leyden, Holland, was one of the numerous

Congregational churches, in the Plymouth Colony, and the church at Salem, already referred to, was another. It was a law in those days that a community must have a church and the means and disposition to maintain a preacher before it could be set apart as a town. Among the struggles of the early towns was the problem of maintaining its minister and of getting along with him socially. There was not so much difficulty in accepting his theology, because the word of the minister regarding spiritual things was taken with much more authority then than now.

The discovery of America did not so much mark the era of higher discoveries in the realm of ideas as it provided a chance for the application of those ideas. When the Plymouth Colony started, with its Compact, signed on board the "Mayflower," and its newly elected governor and all the scheme of government and religious observances which were required for many years, the conditions were new, the experiment of self-government was new, under which all the lesser experiments in religious faith and practice were carried on. Our staunch, daring ancestors knew what they wanted and the ideal to be tested was well understood. They wielded the greatest power in humanizing the world that has ever been witnessed, but they were intolerant toward any religion that was, from their point of view, intolerant. The Baptists and Quakers were harassed, although the records of Plymouth Colony, in which were the Pilgrims, show more tolerance than those of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, in which were the Puritans. While there have been so many religious movements started or centered in Boston, the oldest city in the New World, that their name is legion, none have raised their heads without the fiery darts of vigorous opposition being fired at them. The way in which they have flourished recalls the saying "the blood of the martyrs is the seed of the church." So far as the Puritans are concerned, as late as 1734, two Quakers were served with twenty lashes upon the bare back, marched to Roxbury where they received ten more, then to Dedham where a final ten were bestowed.

It might be said that the Congregational church, or the Orthodox church as it was called, maintained the normal Calvinistic creed. The earliest intimation of dissent was in 1747, when Rev. Jonathan Mayhew was settled as pastor of the West Church in Boston. He was regarded as heretical and, at least, seemed to challenge the teachings and attitude of the Mathers, Edwardses and Higginsons of earlier days. One writer has described these worthies and others like them, "who felt themselves to be in personal covenant with God, like Israel of old, who framed their state as a temple and invited the Eternal to rule over them, whose state assembly was a church council, whose voters were church members, only voters because members, only citizens because saints."



There were believers of a gentler order like Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, Roger Williams, Dr. Hopkins, the Nortons and Dr. Channing. The reaction questioned the coercive element in creeds and confession of faiths. The Revolutionary War had its influence also, and, in 1780, according to Rev. Andrew P. Peabody, D. D., LL. D., professor of Christian morals in Harvard University, nearly all the Congregational pulpits in and around Boston were filled by Unitarians. At that date they were commonly called Arminians. The distinctive name "Unitarian" did not come into general use till early in the nineteenth century, though the specific dogma designated by that name had long been openly preached and professed.

**American Unitarian Association**—The American Unitarian Association was formed in 1825, with headquarters in Boston, and at that time and since most of the towns in Plymouth County have had Unitarian churches. Many of them were previously of the Congregational fold and in numerous instances we find a town in which appears the First Congregational (Unitarian) church, while the original "Orthodox" church in the same town is called the Second Congregational church. This came about, in some instances, from the fact that there was a difference between the church and the parish. One could be a member of the parish and have voting power without being a member of the church. Church membership involved confession of faith and other requirements, including baptism. There were many members of the parish who did not take this step and became interested in the more liberal doctrine of Unitarianism and the parish voted to become Unitarian and the vote transferred the property of the organization. Those who did not wish to be identified as Unitarians formed another society, hence the Second Congregational societies to which reference has been made.

It is not so remarkable that there should be a Unitarian church in nearly every Plymouth County town of considerable size, but the fact that even the smallest towns, like Halifax, had a Universalist church in the early days of Universalism, strikes most students as more indicative of liberal convictions, a breaking away from the so-called Orthodoxy of the Pilgrims. The subject of human destiny had awakened an especial interest. Among the early Universalist preachers in this vicinity, Dr. John Murray held that the Atonement was universal and therefore universally effective. Christ was the head of every man, and redemption, though not salvation, was an accomplished fact. His pulpit in Boston was supplied, during his absence, for ten weeks, by Rev. Hosea Ballou, who, believing God to be impartial in His parental love, was convinced that the decree of human salvation could not be other than universal.

Such utterances as these fell on receptive ground, even within sight of Plymouth Rock. This is literally true as, in Plymouth, on Cole's Hill, on which lie buried the remains of the Pilgrims who died in the general sickness the first winter, almost directly across Leyden Street from the site of the first common house, the first permanent dwelling erected in New England, was built a Universalist church. It is there today, the place of worship for a large congregation and has been a flourishing branch of Universalism from its early days.

When Dr. John Murray first preached in Boston, so riotous was the opposition to Universalism that he found the cushions of the church had been sprinkled with a noxious drug, the strong effluvia from which was expected to prevent his speaking. During the service many stones were thrown through the windows. Picking up one of them, he remarked: "This argument is solid and weighty, but it is neither rational nor convincing."

How Universalism was regarded in the smaller towns in Plymouth County was indicated in Halifax, a town of less than 400 population, in which a church was erected at the cost of much sacrifice on the part of those of more liberal convictions than the "strictly orthodox." One of the latter sort was seized with violent pains in his stomach and was in fear that he would die. Holding on to his abdomen, he approached the house of a neighbor as a witness and shouted "Damn the Universalists, damn the Universalists," acting on the theory that to pass away damning the Universalists would be his own best passport to paradise.

There was no special opposition to Unitarianism or Universalism in Plymouth County, because they were Unitarianism or Universalism. If a person became identified with any religion but that founded by the Pilgrims he was regarded as "irregular," to say the least, by many who might be called bigoted without arousing much controversy. But there has never been any pronounced persecution on account of variance of religious convictions or affiliations, since the colonial days. Nearly every sect has had a church or society in the county that has had a branch in this part of the country, even the Latter Day Saints and so-called "Holy Rollers" and, aside from the attention given them by natural disturbers, have been allowed "to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences."

Interesting stories of the early struggles and patient efforts of various local churches appear in that part of this history devoted to the individual towns, where there has been anything outstanding or unusual in their experiences.

The rise of liberalism in this vicinity brought forth a remark which has almost become a classic. When Unitarianism, Universalism and Transcendentalism were gaining a substantial foothold among men of educa-



tion and refinement, among them was Ralph Waldo Emerson, the sage of Concord. "Father Taylor," a Methodist minister, and founder of the Seaman's Bethel in Boston, said of Emerson: "He must go to Heaven when he dies for if he went to Hell the devil would not know what to do with him."

Another version is that some of "Father Taylor's Methodist friends objected to his friendship with Emerson who, as a Unitarian, they felt was surely doomed to the lower regions. "Father Taylor" said: "It does look so, but I am sure of one thing, if Emerson does go to that place, he will change the climate and emigration will set that way."

It is remarkable that Boston of all places in the United States should have developed into the centre of liberalism. There is said to be as many sects, cults and denominations in that city of culture and free thinking as can be found under the sun, and it can only be explained by the fact that the pendulum swings back in one direction as far as it swings out in the other. The old-time theology of the Pilgrims and Puritans, backed up by the strictest laws and most unflinching determination to punish heretics, burned itself out, after the people became surfeited with long sermons on the wrath of God

And how, of His will and pleasure,  
All Souls, save a chosen few,  
Were doomed to the quenchless burning,  
And held in the way thereto.

Under the strict rule of the Puritans, Catholics were prohibited from entering the Massachusetts Colony, under pain of death. This law was made in 1647 and for some years after, many Irish Catholics were sold in Boston to people in need of slaves. To quote from James O. Fagan's book entitled "The Old South":

With a few notable and glorious exceptions, nobody in those days wanted religious toleration, and the law of William the Silent, under the protection of which the Pilgrims were harbored in Holland, was universally ridiculed as tending to foster "a cage of unclean birds, the mangle-mangle of religion." Be this as it may, the Puritans' concept of religion lasted in Boston until well into the nineteenth century, when churches were still permitted to put chains across the streets on Sundays to prevent disturbance, and when the penalties that threatened the unbelievers were seriously expressed in the popular conviction that it was "easier for a shad to climb a greased barber-pole tail foremost than for a sinner to enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

**Whitefield and "The Great Awakening"**—Much credit for a more liberal religious atmosphere must be given to Rev. George Whitefield, who stirred the people to a new sensation, causing an intense religious excitement about 1740. He was an evangelist who had been a clergyman of the Church of England, a graduate of Oxford, and, at the time

of his arrival in Plymouth County, was about 26 years of age. While in Boston, Rev. Jonathan Bowman of Dorchester recorded his impression in the following language, more or less representative of the opinions held by the clergy in general, although there were exceptions: "Things are by some Persons carried too far, contrary to ye design of ye Holy Spirit—as in some places where Laymen go about Exhorting (as they call it), and people crowd in great Assemblies to hear them; and many cry out in ye Assembly, and are so struck (as they call it) that for a time they loose their senses and Reason, and ye like."

It was perhaps a novelty which the conservative clergymen of the day could not understand to see people eagerly flocking to divine service without the stimulus of the law and the penalty of the stocks behind the custom. He seemed to be able to draw all men to hear him and preached to 23,000 at one time on Boston Common.

He wrote to a friend at the time, concerning an invitation he received to preach in one of the churches at 6 o'clock in the morning: "Not expecting a very great auditory, I opened a lecture in one of the smallest meeting-houses, upon these words, 'And they came early in the morning to hear me.' How was I disappointed! Such great numbers flocked to hear that I was obliged to make use of two of their largest places of worship, where I believe, seldom less than two or three thousand assembled. . . . One morning the crowd was so great that I was obliged to go in at the window." His position was peculiar. He was an ordained minister of the Church of England yet his work was done in the meeting-houses in Boston and vicinity which had been erected by those who came from England to escape the Established Church of England.

It is related that a scoffer went to one of the outdoor meetings addressed by Whitefield, holding a stone in his hand which he intended to throw at the preacher. As he listened, the stone dropped from his hand and, after the sermon, he went forward and said: "Mr. Whitefield, I came here to break your head, but God has broken my heart."

The scoffing tongue was prayerful  
And the blinded eyes found sight,  
And hearts, as flint aforetime,  
Grew soft in his warmth and light.

Whitefield accepted invitations to preach in some of the smaller towns, among them being Kingston and Duxbury in this county. Rev. Thaddeus McCarty of Kingston was much impressed with the evangelist and was compelled to quit his pulpit. When he had gone the town held a meeting and appointed a committee of eight men "to prevent itinerant preachers from disturbing the peace of the town." Duxbury took similar action, directing the selectmen to take "care of the meeting-house to keep out itinerant preachers."



54.

set by them done (this their condition considered) might  
be as firme as any patent; and in some respects more sure.  
The forme was as followeth.

In y<sup>e</sup> name of god Amen. We whose names are underwritten,  
the loyall subjects of our dread soueraigne Lord King James,  
by y<sup>e</sup> grace of god, of great Britaine, France, & Ireland King,  
defondor of y<sup>e</sup> faith, &c.

Having undertaken, for y<sup>e</sup> glorie of god, and aduancements  
of y<sup>e</sup> Christian<sup>faith</sup> and honour of our king & countrey, a voyage to  
plant y<sup>e</sup> first Colonie in y<sup>e</sup> Northern parts of Virginia. God  
by these presents solemnly & mutually in y<sup>e</sup> presence of god, and  
one of another, Covenant, & combine our selues together into a  
Ciuill body politick; for y<sup>e</sup> better ordering, & preservation & fur-  
therance of y<sup>e</sup> ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enacte,  
constitute, and frame such just & equall Lawes, ordinances,  
Acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought  
most meete & conuenient for y<sup>e</sup> generall good of y<sup>e</sup> Colonie: vnto  
which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes  
whereof we haue here vnder subscribed our names at Cap-

Codd y<sup>e</sup> 11. of Nouember, in y<sup>e</sup> year of y<sup>e</sup> raigne of our soueraigne  
Lord King James of England, France, & Ireland y<sup>e</sup> eighteenth  
and of Scotland y<sup>e</sup> fifth fourth. An. Dom. 1620.]

After this they chose, or rather confirmed in John caruer (a man  
godly & well approued amongst them) their gouernour for that  
year. And after they had provided a place for their goods, or  
comon store, (which were long in unlading for want of boats,  
foulnes of y<sup>e</sup> winter weather, and sicknes of diuers) and began  
some small cobages for their habitation; as time would admit  
they made and consulted of Lawes, & ordors, both for their  
Ciuill & military gouernments, as y<sup>e</sup> necessitie of their condi-  
tion did require, still adding therunto as vrgent occasion  
in seuerall times, and <sup>as</sup> Cases did require.

In these hard & difficult beginings they found some discontents  
& murmurings <sup>arise</sup> amongst some, and mutinous speeches & carriage  
in other; but they were soone quelled, & ouercome, by y<sup>e</sup> wis-  
dom, patience, and just & equall carriage of things, by y<sup>e</sup> gou-  
and better part with cleau faithfully together in y<sup>e</sup> maine.  
But that which was most sad, & lamentable, was, that in 2  
or 3. moneths time halfe of their company dyed, especially  
in Jan: & february, being y<sup>e</sup> depth of winter, and wanting  
houses & other comforts; being infected with y<sup>e</sup> Scuerie &





To briefly sketch theological history from the beginning of the provincial period on the Massachusetts coast, for there was not so much difference in the theology of Boston or Plymouth after the Puritan and Pilgrim peculiarities became merged, first of all came the Congregationalists, as the denomination which had first become firmly planted, after much suffering. There was a church of this denomination in every town of ordinary size, and three in Boston. There were a few Baptists, when the colonial charter was withdrawn, and fewer Quakers. Church membership had ceased to be a requisite for voting. The "Thursday lecture" was still observed and it has come down to our own day, Thursday being generally observed under the present name of "prayer meeting night," for most evangelical denominations.

**Bible Was Not Read in Churches**—During the first century of New England there was no Bible set up in the colonial meeting-house, nor did any minister read from the Bible in any pulpit. One of the innovations when the Brattle Street Church was organized in Boston was that the minister should read from the Bible to the congregation and it was one of the things which the conservative Congregationalists of the day viewed with alarm, as something dangerous to introduce. Included in the "Manifesto or Declaration" which the Brattle Street Church made at the time of its organization, so that it might be set right before the community and not dependent upon the prejudiced fame which would be spread abroad about it by its opponents, appears: "We design only the true and pure Worship of God, according to the Rules appearing plainly to us in His Word. . . . We judge it therefore most suitable and convenient, that in our Publick Worship some part of the Holy Scripture be read by the minister at his discretion."

The St. James version of the Holy Bible was printed about the time the Pilgrims left the old country for the new, and it is still the version which is commonly used in this country as well as Great Britain. The Pilgrims, therefore, brought with them a new Bible; and the solemn charge of Rev. John Robinson, their pastor, before they sailed from Holland, was to be always ready to receive whatever further truth should be made known to them; for he was persuaded the Lord had more truth to break forth out of His Holy Word. Why more than a hundred years should have passed before the descendants of the Pilgrims were ready to have the Bible read in the meeting-houses is one of the mysteries which have not been satisfactorily explained.

It was no new thing to have the Bible read at a divine service. Almost a hundred years before the coming of the Pilgrims to Plymouth the Bible had been printed at London, in folio size, under the direction of Coverdale and the patronage of Cranmer, and copies were purchased for

various English towns. A second edition appeared in 1541 which contained a preface written by Cranmer in which he said: "Scripture should be read of the lay and vulgar people."

It was in 1541 that a royal proclamation was published which required every parish in England to procure, for public use, a Bible of the largest size, under penalty of forty shillings monthly for a delay. This Bible was to be set up in the churches, where it might be read by the people, but it was not read to the people. The Pilgrims had no Bible in the meeting-houses available for the people and, judging from the attitude of their descendants and the descendants of the Puritans in Boston at the organization of the Brattle Street Church, they "were not ready" to allow the people such a liberty.

It may not be fair to take the attitude of Rev. Cotton Mather as indicative of that of the Congregational brethren, as he was an extreme type, but his diary contained an entry, made when he heard of the Brattle Street Church, which reads: "A company of headstrong men in the town, the chief of whom are full of malignity to the holy ways of our churches, have built in the town another meeting-house. And without the advice or knowledge of the ministers in the vicinity they have published under the title of a Manifesto, certain articles that utterly subvert our churches."

For testimony on the side of the more liberal-minded Congregationalists we are able to present an extract from the diary of Samuel Sewall, set down after receiving a visit from the minister of the new church: "I told him If God should please by them to hold forth any Light that had not been seen or entertained before, I should be so far from envying it that I should rejoice in it."

Not so the Rev. Cotton Mather. A few months after writing the entry quoted, he took his quill in hand again and wrote: "I see Satan beginning a terrible Shake unto the Churches of New England and the Innovators that have sett up a New Church in Boston (A New one indeed!) have made a Day of Temptation among us. The men are Ignorant, Arrogant, Obstinate and full of malice and slander, and they fill the Land with Lyes, in the misrepresentation thereof I am a very singular sufferer. Wherefore I set apart this day again for prayer in my study to cry mightily unto God."

It was just a hundred and fifty years after the landing of the Pilgrims that Duxbury, the home of Captain Myles Standish, John and Priscilla Alden and others of Pilgrim fame, voted that the Holy Scriptures "should be read every Lord's day by the minister."

**Pilgrim and Puritan Differences**—While considering the different attitudes taken by different members of the old, orthodox churches when



a more liberal conviction was beginning to find expression in the new church in Boston, it is well to introduce some quotations from recognized historical writers along this line. Chamberlain Benjamin Scott, in his "Pilgrim Fathers Neither Puritans Nor Persecutors," says:

The Pilgrim Fathers and their precursors in England, Holland and at Plymouth, were Separatists, and had no connection with the Puritans, who subsequently settled in New England, at Salem and Boston, in Massachusetts, that the principles and practices of the two parties, confounded by some careless writers, differed essentially, the Separatists ever contending for freedom of conscience and separation from the powers of the State, while the Puritans remained in connection and communion with the State Church, and held, both in England and New England, that the State should be authoritative in matters of religion. Hence the anti-Christian and intolerant acts of the Puritan colony (Massachusetts) to the Separatists—Ralph Smyth, Roger Williams, Isaac Robinson, John Cudworth and Timothy Hatherley. Hence, also, on the arrival of the Friends the cruel laws for whipping, banishing and executing, for matters of religious faith and practice. I have shown that the Separatist colony of Plymouth had no share in this intolerant conduct during the lives of the Pilgrim Fathers, and, moreover, that they acted kindly, and received into their church both Smyth and Roger Williams when forbidden to worship freely elsewhere; and that after the death of the Pilgrim Fathers, some of their sons and successors, acting up to their principles, shielded the Friends, and refused to be parties to the persecuting laws then enacted....

It may interest you to know that two eminent historians, recently deceased, virtually admitted the truth of that which I have thus affirmed. I refer to Lord Macaulay and Earl Stanhope (Lord Mahon) who as Commissioners for decorating, historically, the House of Lords, were appealed to respecting an erroneous inscription placed under Mr. Cope's painting of "The Pilgrim Fathers Landing in New England."

The inscription stood: "Landing of a *Puritan* Family in New England," but, after listening to the proofs submitted, and hearing Mr. Cope, who stated he had taken his ideas from "Bradford's Journal," the Commissioners ordered the terms "Puritan Family" to be removed, as unjust to the memory of the parties concerned, and substituted the words: "Pilgrim Fathers."

Backus, in his "History of New England," wrote: "Rigidity is a word that both Episcopalians and Presbyterians have often cast upon our Pilgrim Fathers. Yet the Massachusetts now discovered so much more of that temper than they, that Mr. Dunstar, October 24, 1654, resigned his office among them and removed and spent his remaining days at Scituate in Plymouth Colony."

Baylies' "History of New Plymouth" contains these paragraphs:

The Plymouth colonists of humbler rank and less excited from having been so long removed from the scene of controversy in England, were more tolerant and mild, and although much swayed by the influence of their domineering neighbors, to whom, on all great occasions, they seemed to defer, were never led into

those horrible excesses of fanaticism which disgrace the early annals of Massachusetts.

Sectarians, it is true, disturbed the tranquillity of the inhabitants of this little Commonwealth; but persecution with them assumed its mildest form, and their annals have escaped that deep and indelible stain of blood, which pollutes the pages of the early history of their sterner and more intolerant brethren of Massachusetts.

Arnold's "History of Rhode Island": "The spirit of Robinson appeared to watch over his feeble flock on the coast of New England, long after his body was moldering beneath the Cathedral church at Leyden.... The Pilgrims of Plymouth were more liberal in feeling, and more tolerant in practice, than the Puritans of Massachusetts Bay. The simple form of democratic government (i. e., in its absolute form, precisely as practiced in the Congregational churches) was maintained in Plymouth for eighteen years, until the growth of the colony compelled the introduction of the representative system."

Quotations of this kind might be continued and multiplied from eminent historians. One more will be sufficient for our purposes, something well to remember in connection with civil government, taken from Wellman's "Church Polity of the Pilgrims:" "It has been said and it is true, that it was a Congregational church meeting that first suggested the idea of a New England town meeting; and a New England town meeting embodies all the germinal principles of our State and national government."

**Customs at Early Religious Services**—Most public events, like town meetings, the opening of court, the laying of cornerstones of public edifices and even the annual election of officers of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston were attended with prayer in former days, and they still are. Marriages, which had been performed by the magistrates in colonial days, were delegated to clergymen under the provincial government, and still are, although there are a few officials, such as mayors and Justices of the Peace who are empowered to perform marriage ceremonies. It was under the provincial government that the English custom of kissing the Bible when taking an oath was changed to the present plan of putting the left hand on the Bible and raising the right hand.

Some idea of the services held in some of the churches in the early days can be gleaned from the diary of Jasper Dankers. It was a Fast day service in 1680: "In the first place a minister read a prayer in the pulpit of full two hours in length; after which an old minister delivered a sermon an hour long, and after that a prayer was made, and some verses sung out of the psalm. In the afternoon, three or four hours were con-



sumed with nothing except prayers, three ministers relieving each other alternately; when one was tired, another went up into the pulpit."

Full church membership depended in early times upon an applicant giving a public relation of his religious experience before the whole congregation. Some shrank from laying their hearts bare before their neighbors. Church membership languished and, under the prevailing system, the parish government was vested in the members of the church as distinct from the congregation. This led members of the parish to demand a voice and vote in the business affairs of the parish, and new churches were organized, giving parish members the right to decide upon matters of expense. In time the voting power, so far as the control of property was concerned, became more liberal in its convictions, than those included in full church membership. This accounts for the First Congregational (Unitarian) churches in various towns in the county.

The Puritans allowed no Scripture readings without comment in their services, presumably to be different from the Church of England. They would not allow what they called "dumb reading." The Pilgrims also attempted to have their services differ from that of the English church and a plan was adopted in Plymouth of reading aloud the hymns, line by line, to the congregation. This was convenient for those who could not read, in addition to its merit of originality. The custom spread throughout New England and removed "the embarrassment resulting from the ignorance of those who were more skillful in giving sound to notes, than in deciphering letters."

The first efforts to teach a choir to sing "by rule" instead of "by rote" in the colonial meeting-houses was vigorously opposed. Some churches compromised by having the hymns sung in the morning by the old way and in the afternoon by the new way, but this was regarded by the "conscientious objectors" as "an iniquity of the Devill" and the bitter fight took another inning. The town of Duxbury voted in 1780 that the psalms be "sung without being read line by line," but it had taken years to come to that conclusion. The town records of Barnstable in 1726 show that the civil authorities were called in "to detect and bear testimony against such iniquity" as adopting the new style. These records show that the controversy waged in Plymouth and Barnstable counties at least half a century.

**First Liberal Church In Boston**—The first movement in Massachusetts for a more liberal church was taken in 1697 when the Brattle Street Church in Boston was organized and a wooden meeting-house erected. The first minister was Rev. Benjamin Colman, who was the clergyman who first invited Rev. George Whitefield to preach in that city and

lead in "The Great Awakening." This was called the "Manifesto Church" and, with the possible exception of the matter of baptism, the position assumed by the Brattle Street Church is substantially the same as that of most of the Congregational churches at present and for many years past.

Organizing the "Manifesto Church" did not at once completely liberalize its members. The land on which the meeting-house was erected was transferred by a deed of gift from Thomas Brattle. He died in 1713 and left as a legacy to the Brattle Street Church "a pair of organs, which he dedicated and devoted to the praise and glory of God with us, if we would accept thereof, and within a year after his decease procure a sober person skilful to play thereon." The church with all possible respect to the memory of "our devoted friend and benefactor," "Voted, That they did not think it proper to use the same in the public worship of God."

In 1707 John Leverett was chosen president of Harvard College. He was known to be identified with the "Manifesto Church" and it was a great blow to the old-style Congregationalists to have the head of the college descend upon a liberal-minded man, when they had considered Harvard College their own institution. It was a personal disappointment to Rev. Increase Mather and his son, Rev. Cotton Mather, as they both sought the place. Both made accusations against Governor Dudley, instigated by his part in having President Leverett appointed, and Rev. Cotton Mather wrote a pamphlet or two of bitterest denunciation. There was a tract printed in London of about forty pages, entitled "A Memorial of the Present Deplorable State of New England." An authority has said: "It is evident that Rev. Cotton Mather was the inciter and perhaps the compiler."

President Leverett died in May, 1724, and again Rev. Cotton Mather desired and expected the office. He was regarded by many as one of the great scholars of his time and was inclined to admit it. But the bitter religious controversy which he had incited at the appointment of President Leverett was not forgotten in seventeen years. Rev. Joseph Sewall, pastor of the Old South Church in Boston, was given the appointment but the church was unwilling to release him and he declined the appointment. The Mather family then received "the most unkindest cut of all" when Rev. Benjamin Colman, pastor of the Brattle Street Church, a so-called liberal church, received the appointment. He, however, declined after the General Court had refused to provide a fitting salary for the office, and Rev. Benjamin Wadsworth relinquished the pastorate of the First Church to manage the affairs of the college.

These affairs in connection with Harvard College indicate that the



liberal movement had considerable standing in the provincial affairs. About this time the Baptists had grown considerably in numbers. The Quakers had a meeting-house here and there. There was a colony of Irish Presbyterians in Boston and a few employed elsewhere in the province. A law was passed in 1729 which relieved Baptists and Quakers from parish taxes.

All ministers were closely watched in those days for any evidence of departure from the churches which were direct descendants of the Pilgrims and Puritans. Even the son of Rev. Cotton Mather was under suspicion and finally charged with being unsound in doctrine. He was Rev. Samuel Mather and at that time assistant pastor of the Second Church in Boston. He was dismissed and ninety-three members of the church went out with him and organized the Tenth Congregational Church in Boston. They erected a meeting-house on Hanover Street in which they worshipped until the death of Rev. Samuel Mather in 1785. The congregation then returned to the Second Church, in accordance with his request, and their meeting-house was sold to the Universalists. The latter denomination acquired it as their first meeting-house in Boston on Christmas Day, 1785 enlarged it twice, the last time in 1805. During the changes the society worshipped in Faneuil Hall.

There were Methodists among the British soldiers who came in 1768 and the beginning of a society was made but it was not until after the Revolutionary War that Methodism received any real impetus in Massachusetts.

The same year that the Universalists made their beginning in Boston, the Unitarians became prominently in view in that city by action of the society worshipping in King's Chapel adopting a modified form of the English liturgy, in place of the original. This was the first Unitarian Society in New England which admitted the fact and remained the only one for several years.

The city of Boston has been mentioned many times in this history of the religious movement during the provincial period, because it is the metropolis and, naturally enough, the place where nearly all the denominations which spread to Plymouth County, had their first representation. Worshippers from Plymouth County as well as elsewhere attended the meetings held by Whitefield in Boston in "The Great Awakening," and for making these trips and the effect the Whitefield meetings had upon them some of the Plymouth County clergymen were dismissed by their congregations.





## CHAPTER XVIII

### FROM COLONIAL PERIOD TO THE CIVIL WAR.

**Yankee Influence Entered Into Developing the Middle and Far West and A More National Feeling Was Engendered by the Give and Take of Days of the Pioneers—Discovery That Coal Was Fuel For Smelting Ruined Iron Industry Locally But Cotton Industry Has Always been Important—Famous Slogan of War of 1812 "Don't Give Up the Ship" Uttered By Captain Lawrence in Battle Off Massachusetts Coast—"American Army of Two" at Scituate—Beginnings of American Literature and Oratory in Plymouth County—Intrepid Prospectors of the Days of '49.**

Many people have never had called to their attention the fact that Plymouth County has had a continuous share in promoting the world's oldest factory industry, that of spinning cotton. The making of cotton gins in this county was not even interrupted to a serious extent by the Civil War, although transportation between the North and the cotton-growing States was rendered practically impossible at times.

The review of the cotton industry for the year 1926 showed that the New England States have about the same number of spindles as the cotton-growing States, or approximately 17,750,000. For the cotton season ending in July, 1926, North Carolina showed figures for active spindle hours of 19,952,000 against 18,938,000 for Massachusetts. A large number of northern cotton mills have moved south the past five years but cotton is still a great industry in Massachusetts, harking back to early days in this county.

At the close of our colonial period, there was a spinning wheel and other paraphernalia for the manufacture of clothing in nearly every home. Likewise nearly everything else which entered into the usual requirements of the family were made by its members in what we consider today a very crude manner. Labor-saving machinery had not been invented to say nothing about its being introduced into America. When such machinery was invented and first used in England, great was the opposition on the part of the people who thought that it would displace men, women and children with machinery and there would be no means of livelihood for those displaced. The struggle against the introduction of labor-saving machinery in the Old World is a very interesting chapter in the advancement of humanity.

The introduction of machines for weaving and spinning into the United States came immediately after the Revolution. In 1789, Samuel Slater came to America from England, and erected a spinning mill in

Pawtucket, Rhode Island. He had been employed in a factory operated by Richard Arkwright, who had invented a spinning machine, an improvement on the spinning jenny, which was the invention of James Hargreaves, a weaver of Lancashire, England. He named the machine in honor of "Jenney," his wife. Slater's mill at Rhode Island was a success from the start. Other improvements were made in spinning machinery. Arkwright's spinning machine had been called the "water frame," because a water wheel was used as motive power. It was learned that clothing could be produced at Rhode Island in what seemed to the Plymouth colonists amazing rapidity, but there was another invention on the way which had a direct bearing on the industrial development of Plymouth County and brought about the founding of an industry which has flourished ever since. This was the invention of the cotton gin.

The growing of cotton obtained a feeble start about the time of the Revolution but when a machine was invented which separated the seed from the fibre, the development came much faster. By the hand method one workman could clean only about one pound of cotton in a day. Eli Whitney, a native of Massachusetts, invented the cotton gin, his early machine enabling a person to clean three hundred pounds of cotton in a day. Through the invention of this Massachusetts man, who had gone to Georgia as a school teacher, the Southern States became the greatest cotton-growing region in the world. The story of how the Carver Cotton Gin Work in East Bridgewater was established and its remarkable success, is told in the proper place in this history.

It has already been related how iron ore abounded in the lake bottoms and swamps in the Plymouth Colony and how taking the ore was one of the industries, in which each town appointed a committee to superintend the taking of the ore from the lakes and the collection of the share agreed upon as belonging to the town. Pots, kettles, andirons, war material, anchors and other things were cast or forged in several Plymouth County towns before and during the Revolution. Probably this section would have been a much more important region for the iron industry, had it not been for the discovery that coal could be used as fuel in smelting. It had been believed that charcoal was the only fuel which could be used to advantage. The great development of the iron industry west of the Alleghenies was on account of the proximity to the coal mines.

As the discovery that coal was a suitable fuel to use in smelting iron, took the iron industry away from that part of the country with which this volume deals, so the invention of farm machinery led to great agricultural developments in the Middle West, rather than in the older part of the country. For a generation, beginning about 1830, the hand tools used in tilling the soil were displaced by the mowing machine, horse rake,



horse hoe, grain drills, corn planters and many implements which enabled farmers to think in terms of large areas. Plows and harrows were the only farm implements drawn by horses and oxen when the first railroads were begun. So the marvelous changes and expansion in agriculture came by reason of steam transportation as well as by the labor-saving farm machinery and, the Middle West, being rich in large areas of land enriched by centuries of leaf mould, required no fertilizer. The Pilgrims, previous to the introduction of domestic animals in the colony, followed the example set them by the Indians, planting their seed with dead fish buried in the furrows, in lieu of better fertilizer. Fertilizing was one of the important and expensive parts of agriculture.

**Went West in the "Covered Wagon"**—While the rich prairies of the Mississippi valley were far away, there was a way of getting to them and of getting the produce from them to available markets. Consequently many Plymouth County men "went West," and grew up with the country, following the advice of Horace Greeley. The imprint of the New England character and determination is upon the success of many important cities and counties of the present Middle and Far West.

It should not be inferred that those who left this section to "go West," did so in railroad trains. The building of the railroads was more of a promise and a prophecy of the future than a present reality to the hardy, adventurous, eager and ambitious families who broke home ties and, like the man in the Scriptures, "went out not knowing whither he went." Some of the emigrants to the West carried all their possessions in packs upon their backs or in small carts drawn by hand. Others procured a canvas-covered wagon in which they loaded their household goods and provisions, and in this "prairie schooner," cut loose from old associations, determined "to do or die." The wagons were drawn by horses or mules, sometimes by oxen, and a distance of twelve to twenty miles a day was made, according to the condition of the road or trail. After the War of 1812 sometimes a group of such families joined together on the way. It is not necessary to go into the details of the life of those who took the trail of the "covered wagon." On the contrary, to forego mention of those who took the blood of the Pilgrim into the pioneer country would be unfair to the stout-hearted and ambitious. They were among those who established public schools in the new country, as they carried their ideas of education and religion with them.

Many people from this section emigrated to the "Western reserve." This was that part of Ohio on Lake Erie which had been reserved by Connecticut when she ceded her western land claim to the United States. There had been a fellow-feeling between the "charter oak" state and the Plymouth Colony ever since the episode with Governor Andros

which made famous that most venerated giant of the forest. Some people from this section had moved to Connecticut and, in turn, were making another move to Ohio. The diary of a Connecticut girl who traveled with her family to Ohio in 1810 contains some interesting entries. Her diary concerned some people from Plymouth County who were accompanying their Connecticut friends on the adventure westward. Among the entries were: "I have learned to eat raw pork and to drink whiskey. Don't you think I shall do for a new country? From what I have seen and heard, I think the state of Ohio will be well filled before winter. Wagons without number every day go on. One went on containing forty people."

In 1820, so rapid was the growth of Ohio, that its population outnumbered that of the State of Massachusetts, and some of its inhabitants were natives of Plymouth County. It was that same year that Massachusetts acquiesced in the desire of its northern population to found a state of their own, and the state of Maine was set apart.

This separation and loss of an area several times the area remaining to Massachusetts had a political significance which many people of the present day have, perhaps, never had called to their attention. Maine was admitted into the union in 1821 as a free state. Missouri had previously sought admission to the union but the petition was delayed over a controversy whether it should be admitted as a slave or free state. Admitting Maine as a free state brought about the admission of Missouri as a slave state. There were eighteen states in the union in 1815, half free and half slave. Congress attempted to preserve the balance between the two opposing opinions. After the admission of Maine and Missouri, it was fifteen years before another state was admitted to the union. In 1836 Arkansas was admitted as a slave state, followed by the admission of Michigan a year later as a free state, restoring the balance between freedom and slavery.

The people from New England, inheriting the virtues and the prejudices alike of the Pilgrims and Puritans, helped to give the breath of life to the New West and develop its marvels. There they came in contact, competition and coöperation with emigrants from Europe. After 1840 great numbers of European workers sought employment in America and many of them found their way to the West, especially those who had a tendency toward farming. Men from all sections of this country and from foreign climes met on the level of the western prairies and began to get one another's point of view. New Englanders, Virginians and pioneers generally broke away from local prejudices and embraced a more national conviction as Americans. The schools, churches and books with their refining influences were characteristic of the East and they were duplicated in the West by the people who were loyal to their traditions and convictions, but with the give and take spirit which mu-



tual respect and a wider outlook had fostered. The finest qualities of the American people were brought about by the mutual dependence of pioneering.

An extract from Baylies' "History of New Plymouth" in this connection is appropriate: "The Plymouth Colony has furnished her full proportion of talent, genius, learning and enterprise in almost every department of life; and, in other lands, the merits of the posterity of the Pilgrims have been acknowledged. . . . In one respect they present a remarkable exception to the rest of America. They are the purest English race in the world . . . . In all the southern and southwestern states, the natives of the Old Colony, like the Armenians of Asia, may be found in every place where commerce and traffic offer any lure to enterprise; and in the heart of the gigantic West, like their ancestors, they commenced the cultivation of the wilderness, like them, surrounded with savage beasts and savage men, and like them, patient in suffering, despising danger, and animated with hope."

And still their spirit in their sons, with freedom walks abroad;  
The Bible is our only creed, our only sovereign, God!  
The hand is raised, the word is spoke, the joyful pledge is given—  
And boldly on our banner floats, in the free air of Heaven,  
The motto of our sainted sires; and loud we'll make it ring—  
A Church without a bishop, and a State without a king!

Rev. Charles Hall, D. D.

In the Visitors' Book in the Old South Church in Boston—with the possible exception of Independence Hall in Philadelphia, the most notable landmark and reminder of the early American story—appears this entry:

L. D. Adams

Brockton, Mass.

My husband is a direct descendant of Crocker Sampson of Kingston, Mass., who served seven years in the Revolutionary War. I have in my possession Crocker Sampson's certificate of membership in The Society of the Cincinnati, signed by George Washington and Henry Knox. I have also the identical colonial script of bills which he received for his patriotic service. These notes are still uncut from the original sheets. Mr. Sampson also received a grant of land in Ohio—Incidentally, I may say, this colonial money was of little or no value and the land in Ohio has not yet been located.

The United States had to fight a second war for independence from Great Britain in 1812. That nation had treated us in the most overbearing and haughty manner possible and had treated our remonstrances with disdain. Over nine hundred American ships had been taken by the British and six thousand American citizens had been forced to serve in the British navy. England was at war with Napoleon. The latter attempted to secure American provisions by promises and guarantees against interfering with our trade. Napoleon a little later seized every

American ship in the French ports and by this act stole \$10,000,000 worth of American goods.

From 1807 to 1812 the United States had every good reason to make war against England or France, but the country desired peace, until the price of peace became too high. Henry Clay of Kentucky was one who favored war with England. When asked "What are we to gain by war?" his reply was "What are we not to lose by peace? Commerce, character, and a nation's best treasure, Honor." About this time the British traders supplied the Indians in the West, under Chief Tecumseh, with guns and ammunition, and people believed that the Indians were incited against the settlers in the West by the British. The Battle of Tippecanoe was fought by General William Henry Harrison, which taught the Indians a lesson, and, in June, 1812, Congress declared war against Great Britain, which apparently was just as much in need of one.

Plymouth and Barnstable counties suffered directly through the causes of the War of 1812. Among the American seamen who had been seized and impressed into the British navy were citizens of those counties. They had suffered through the Embargo Act of December, 1807, which was an ineffective method of President Jefferson to deal with the outrages perpetrated on the seas by both France and England. They were ready for the War of 1812 and many from this section took part in it enthusiastically. Many served in the navy. The United States was woefully unprepared for a war, with only sixteen ships of all sizes against the British navy of more than a thousand ships. One of the United States ships was the "Constitution," since called "Old Ironsides," and with this frigate, Captain Isaac Hull, defeated the British ship "Guerriere" off the coast of Nova Scotia, and captured the "Java." The "Wasp" took the "Frolic;" the "United States," the "Macedonian;" the "Hornet," the "Peacock," and the American captain and crews proved to be superior to the British as seamen and gunners.

A battle was fought off the Massachusetts coast between the "Chesapeake," Captain Lawrence, and the "Shannon." Captain Lawrence was carried below mortally wounded, and he shouted to his men: "Don't give up the ship. Keep the guns going. Fight her till she sinks." His last command became an inspiring war cry for the American navy and the words "Don't give up the ship" appeared upon Captain Oliver Hazard Perry's flag when he captured the British fleet on Lake Erie. The victorious fleet, under Perry, had been built from timber cut in the forest, and the ropes, sails, guns and ammunition were supplied with great difficulty to the young naval officer who announced his victory in the historic words: "We have met the enemy and they are ours."

Cape Cod sailors were among those engaged in privateering upon British commerce. With letters of marque or reprisal, the captains and



crews captured ships of the enemy. The captured ships and cargoes became the property of the captors and privateering became very profitable. Enormous damage was inflicted upon British commerce in this way.

England succeeded in defeating Napoleon in 1814 and could then give her full attention to the war with the United States. Attempts were made to invade the United States with veteran British troops. The entire eastern coast of the United States was blockaded that summer. A British fleet and army entered Chesapeake Bay, landed below at Washington, advanced on the Capital, defeated the raw militia which tempted to defend it. The British burned the White House and other public buildings, destroyed as much priceless property as possible and then withdrew to their ships. The fleet moved up the bay toward Baltimore. An attempt was made to take that city but it was unsuccessful. The flag of the United States still floated over Fort McHenry after the attack and the sight of this flag inspired Francis Scott Key to write "The Star Spangled Banner."

The attempts on the part of the Americans to invade Canada had been fruitless, so were the attempts of the British to invade the United States, except for the satisfaction which may have been derived from burning the White House at the Nation's Capital. Had there been modern communications between the two countries, presumably the War of 1812 would never have taken place. It is more likely that England and the United States would have united against Napoleon. The arrogance on the part of the British, however, made the War of 1812 necessary, under all the circumstances, and both sides were losers to a great extent. There were lessons learned on both sides. The United States learned the necessity of preparedness and how to act like a nation. England learned that the United States could not be conquered.

Before the close of the war, however, the British policy of coast descents placed the Massachusetts coast in a hazardous position, especially Plymouth County and Cape Cod, which were away from the forts and armies around Boston, and with many miles of seacoast undefended. The sails of English cruisers could be seen from Burial Hill in Plymouth, the site of the Pilgrim fort.

In October, 1814, the General Court took action towards concerted action among the New England States to stir the national government to action regarding naval defences. The Hartford Convention was held, with a part of the delegation ready for secession or any other strong measure. Judge Joshua Thomas of the Plymouth County Probate Court was one of the delegates from Massachusetts to this famous Convention, the voice of which would have been heard with no uncertain sound at Washington, but the committee reached the Capital City just as the news of the Ghent treaty was received.

Commerce had been largely destroyed by the war and manufacturing received a great impetus. From that time to the present day manufacturing has increased and the goods which have been made in Massachusetts have been shipped to all parts of the world, testifying to good workmanship, honesty in production and the ability to produce articles pleasing to their purchasers, as it has been a Yankee characteristic to study the needs of the market and produce the thing needful. This has been especially true of shoemaking, the leading industry of the county, which has a chapter by itself.

**Famous Army of Two Saved the Day**—A most unusual part in the War of 1812 was played in Plymouth County by two young girls. It illustrates the defenceless condition of the Massachusetts coast towns but the native wit of these girls of 1812 was "sufficient unto the day."

In the historic Old South Church in Boston there is a Case No. 12, which contains the autographs of the celebrated American "Army of Two" in the War of 1812, and the story of this army, as follows:

#### WAR OF 1812.

During the War of 1812 the harbor of Scituate, Mass., was entered by two British barges, greatly to the terror of the inhabitants. There was no man-of-war to protect them nor any soldiers. Before the British barges reached the harbor they were seen from the lighthouse by two brave girls, Rebecca and Abigail Bates, who gave the alarm to the village. The inhabitants, not strong enough to oppose the British, hastened to hide their property. There were two large vessels laden with flour lying in the harbor and towards these the British went. The girls from the lighthouse saw the proceedings and thought something should be done, so Rebecca seized a fife and Abigail a drum and walking down the beach in the direction of Boston, got behind the sandhills out of sight of the British and then, turning round, marched toward Scituate fifeing and drumming for dear life. The British heard the music, and without a minute delay, turned right round and went to sea again.

#### AMERICAN ARMY OF TWO

Abbie, the drummer, one of the American Army of Two in the War of 1812, drove from our shore two British barges, saved two vessels laden with flour from capture and crew from prison with Fife and Drum.

(Signed) Abbie Bates aged 82

Born in 1777—

Scituate Harbor, Mass.

Rebecca W. Bates—Born 1793 Aged 86

One of the American Army of Two in the War of 1812 who with her sister aged fifteen years saved two large vessels laden with flour and the crew from imprisonment with Fife and Drum, from being taken by the British off Scituate Harbor, Mass.

(Signed) REBECCA THE FIFER.

**Literature, Oratory and Abolition Started**—While the Middle West was having its wonderful development with the influence of the early



settlers of Plymouth County one of the ingredients in the mixture, the beginning of real American literature took place. Plymouth County has a proud share in the literary footsteps. Just after the War of 1812 William Cullen Bryant wrote in North Bridgewater (now Brockton), "Thanatopsis," and other poems which are recognized as American literature of the better sort.

Benjamin Franklin, whose trenchant quill brought down the wrath of Cotton Mather, the fists of his older brother and the willingness on the part of ultra-conservatives to have him depart, forsook Boston for Philadelphia before the Revolution. He was the greatest American man of letters of the eighteenth century.

The beginning of American oratory was in Plymouth County. Daniel Webster was a resident of Marshfield when he served in Congress, his home being not far from that occupied by Governor Winslow of Pilgrim fame in a previous generation. Daniel Webster's reply to Robert Hayne of South Carolina who eloquently defended the idea of nullification in the Senate, is still regarded as one of the greatest speeches in American history. The peroration of that famous reply closed with words, almost as venerated as the closing words of President Lincoln's Gettysburg address. Webster's words were: "Liberty and Union, now and forever, one and inseparable."

It was at this time that the anti-slavery movement had a real leader in William Lloyd Garrison, of Boston, whose voice in the interest of freedom was heard many times in Plymouth County, at Abington Grove and elsewhere. He was publisher of the "Liberator," the most influential anti-slavery paper. In 1833 slaves were emancipated everywhere in the British Empire. They had also been freed in all the Latin-American countries except Brazil. In 1833 Garrison and other Abolitionists formed the American Anti-slavery Society, but they by no means represented the sentiment which prevailed at that time in this section. Mobs broke up their meetings, destroyed their printing presses and attacked their leaders. When meetings were held in this county, guards were posted to give warnings of the coming of people who could not be vouched for. Garrison was dragged through the streets of Boston and lodged in jail to keep him from the fury of a mob composed of the "best citizens."

When he began the publication of the "Liberator" he was a young printer very much in earnest but very much in advance of the times. He had an uncompromising conviction but no influence or capital to promote his cause. Lowell depicts him thus:

In a small chamber, friendless and unseen,  
Toiled o'er his types, one poor, unlearned young man.  
The place was dark, unfurnished and mean,  
Yet there the freedom of a race began.

John Greenleaf Whittier was the poet of the abolition movement. Wendell Phillips was its greatest orator.

There were many anti-slavery advocates and enthusiastic workers in Plymouth County and some of them were enlisted in the Underground Railroad Movement, as the system was called by means of which fugitive slaves, on their way to Canada were hid in the houses of agents or in secret places during the day, and at night carried in wagons to another "station" nearer Canada. When the slaves reached Canada they were safe, as slavery was prohibited in all the English dominions.

The anti-slavery men were greatly displeased with their fellow-citizen of Plymouth County, Daniel Webster, when, in his seventh of March speech in support of a compromise offered by Henry Clay, he admitted that the complaints of the South about the difficulty of recovering runaway slaves were just, and declared that the North had failed to do its duty in this matter. One anti-slavery man said of this speech: "I know no deed in American history done by a son of New England to which I can compare this but the act of Benedict Arnold." Whittier expressed the anti-slavery indignation against Webster when he wrote:

Of all we loved and honored, naught  
Save power remains;  
A fallen angel's pride of thought,  
Still strong in chains.  
All else is gone; from those great eyes  
The soul has fled;  
When faith is lost, when honor dies,  
The man is dead.

Webster was accused of trying to curry favor with the South in the hope of winning the presidency.

So fallen! So lost! the light withdrawn  
Which once he wore;  
The glory from his gray hairs gone  
For evermore!

**Path of "Mayflower" Ice-Locked**—Plymouth County was called upon to endure its most severe winter in 1844. Plymouth and Duxbury bay was frozen over and people in the seacoast towns had an opportunity to enjoy skating on salt water, which is unusual. Boston Harbor was frozen over as far out as Boston Light. Vessels could not enter the harbor and cargoes were discharged on the ice and transferred by teams to warehouses. There was a long period of intense cold, and considerable suffering resulted for those whose supply of fuel was meager or houses built suitable for the Old Colony climate but not for that of the North Pole.

In 1846 the Cape Cod Branch Railroad was incorporated. It was opened in 1848, from Middleboro to Sandwich, a distance of twenty-



eight miles. It connected with Fall River and the Old Colony Railroad at Middleboro and was of great advantage to Plymouth County and Barnstable County alike. The number of passengers carried in 1849 was 66,825. The road from Middleboro to Sandwich cost \$500,000, and the total cost with the connection to Hyannis, eighteen miles long, was \$824,957.99. The cost of the road and equipment was less than \$18,000 per mile, which was less than any other railroad in the State, and less than one half the average cost per mile of all the railroads in Massachusetts at that time. The comparison with the cost of railroads at the present time is especially interesting. The Cape Cod population in 1850 was 33,979.

**Typical Forty-niner**—Plymouth County furnished its quota of adventurers in the gold rush to California in 1849. Some of the "Forty-niners" sailed around Cape Horn but others took the long trail by means of prairie schooners across the plains and through the Rocky Mountains. Such a man was the late Eben Holt, whose declining years were passed on the shore of Silver Lake in Pembroke.

Mr. Holt was a young man when the "Forty-niners" started for California, was engaged to be married, and had little interest in the wealth to be obtained through the "golden gate," but he had a chum who was seized with a longing to cross the continent and return wealthy. He finally persuaded Eben Holt to meet him at the cross roads, from which they were to start about midnight to walk many miles to take a train for the first part of their journey, carrying with them a few necessities.

Mr. Holt hastened to inform his fiancée that if she wanted to marry him she would have to make haste, as he was going to start the next day for California. The marriage was performed and Eben Holt started to join his chum in search of fortune and adventure in the Far West. Reaching the cross roads, the chum was absent. The young man waited until he was convinced that his supposedly enthusiastic chum had had a change of heart, then he started at a quick pace toward California. A few years ago he told the writer that he had made up his mind to go and, his mind once made up, he had no intention of quitting. This was a characteristic of Eben Holt, a characteristic of many another brave "Forty-niner" who were the first to participate in the adventurous days, such as never before or since have occurred in the United States, in "the glorious climate of California."





## CHAPTER XIX

### BECOMES COUNTY OF ABOLITIONISTS.

**Every Town Furnished Its Contingent of Men in Answer to Every Call Made by President Lincoln—Oldest Militia Company in the State Responded from Halifax—The Martland Band from North Bridgewater Joined the Fletcher Webster Regiment at Fort Warren—Abington Then the Largest Town, Furnished More Than A Full Regiment Before 1865—Men Older Than Military Age Formed Coast Guard at Wareham—Grand Army Post in Kingston Honors Service of Martha Sever, A Volunteer Nurse—Plymouth and Hingham Companies Were Without Captains When First Call Came But Both Made Immediate Response—Marshfield Pledged Its Last Dollar and Last Man—Origin of "John Brown's Body" and Great Popularity of the Song.**

A few months ago, the writer of this history examined in the Congressional Library at Washington, District of Columbia, the original manuscript written by General Ulysses S. Grant which was transmitted to General Robert E. Lee, demanding "Unconditional and immediate surrender." It was also the privilege of the writer to examine, in the handwriting of General Lee, his acknowledgement that the terms proposed by General Grant were "most generous," and the other writing which passed between those two, opposing generals of the Civil War, in the closing days of the great rebellion. Written in the field, here and there a word erased or interlined, with no thought on the part of either man that their words, much less their handwriting, would be scrutinized more than threescore years later by anyone who goes to the Capital city of the Union which was being preserved, these documents give a personal touch that inspires and thrills. The student of today feels the impulse of both the North and South.

More than seven thousand treatises, containing varying viewpoints relating to the struggle of two opinions, denominated North and South, are available for perusal in the Library of the War Department at Washington or in the archives of the American libraries. "The Radicals of the South cried: 'No Union without slavery!' The Radicals of the North replied: 'No Union without liberty!'" The Northern Radicals were right. Upon the great issue of free homes for free men, a President was elected by the free states. The South appealed to the sword, and raised the standard of revolt. "For the first time in history the oppressors rebelled."

The struggle was between two factions of a peace-loving people. It was not the love for the art of war which induced either side to spring

to arms but the mistakes made by our fathers had not been corrected. Four millions of human beings were in chains and those who enslave others cannot themselves be free.

The Old Plymouth Colony had its abolitionists, the true patriots who, like their great leader, William Lloyd Garrison, were in earnest, would not equivocate, would not retreat a single inch and would be heard. Acting on the impulse of justice, the boys of the Plymouth County towns, their hearts beating to the martial strains of the national anthem "The Star Spangled Banner," found their way to the enlistment stations and volunteered to join the sweeping line, under floating banners, which was the answer contained in the words "We Are Coming, Father Abraham, Three Hundred Thousand Strong."

The oldest militia company in the state was in Halifax, a company chartered by John Hancock in 1792. As soon as President Lincoln made his call for volunteers, the entire company caught the next train for Boston and was one of the first companies to assemble on Boston Common for which it was complimented by the Boston press, in recognition of the fact that some of the boys left their work and, literally without taking leave of their families closed up the ranks, that every man should be in his place, under command of Captain Joseph Harlow. This same company, in the War of 1812, had marched forth with equal promptness, under command of Captain Asa Thompson, familiarly known as "the tall captain." He stood six feet and six inches in his stockings and several members of his company measured more than six feet. It is related that the people assembled at the bridge at South Boston to see the company pass over and cheered as the wooden bridge responded to the rhythm of the tall and erect farmer boys from one of the smallest towns in the state.

When despatches were received April 15, 1861, announcing that Fort Sumpter had been fired upon, and that President Lincoln had issued a call for seventy-five thousand three months' men, the militia companies of Plymouth County were ready. Governor John A. Andrew of Massachusetts, ordered the commanders of the Third, Fourth, Sixth and Eighth regiments of Massachusetts Militia to report with their commands on Boston Common the following day. The Standish Guards, a military company organized in 1818, named in honor of Captain Myles Standish, the first military commander in Plymouth Colony, was without a captain. It was in charge of First Lieutenant Charles C. Doten, at that time a merchant, aged 28.

When the train left Plymouth the next morning at nine o'clock, he had nineteen of his company with him. Others were picked up at Abington and in Boston; a large number of others were on hand the following morning, when the company embarked on the steamer "S. R. Spaulding."



Two members of the company were detailed for recruiting service and when the steamer departed from Boston for Fortress Monroe April 18, there were sixty men to answer the roll call.

Upon arrival at Fortress Monroe, the Plymouth company was at once embarked on the U. S. S. "Pawnee" to destroy the Norfolk Navy Yard. On the 22nd it was mustered into the United States service. As it was without a captain, First Lieutenant Charles C. Doten was chosen captain. Otis Rogers became first lieutenant, and William B. Alexander, second lieutenant.

Captain Charles C. Doten was well known to the present generation, as for many years he was editor of the "Old Colony Memorial" and later curator at Pilgrim Hall, Plymouth. He was one of the finest men who ever carried a sword or pushed a pen. A quarter of a century ago, when the writer was in the employ of Captain Doten, the latter was reminded of the prompt response made by the Halifax Company to the call of Governor Andrew. A merry twinkle, so well remembered by all who knew him, came into the eyes of the captain as he responded, "Yes, but I got my company on that same train and had them on the train first. You see the train started from Plymouth, and Halifax was more than ten miles up the track."

Eight days after the attack on Fort Sumpter, there was a notable gathering of patriotic people of North Bridgewater, now Brockton, in the vestry of the Church of the New Jerusalem, for the purpose of forming a new military company to respond to the call for volunteers to put down the rebellion. Dr. Alexander Hitchborn presided and more than one hundred men volunteered to make up the company, with Dr. Hitchborn as their captain. The company became Company F, Twelfth Regiment, under the command of Colonel Fletcher Webster of Marshfield, son of Daniel Webster. It left North Bridgewater at nine o'clock in the morning of April 29, 1861, with eighty men in line. The Twelfth Regiment was organized at Fort Warren in Boston Harbor. The roll of Company F, corrected at Fort Warren, after receiving some recruits, showed the company was made up of one hundred and nine men. The town of North Bridgewater also furnished for the Twelfth Regiment, Martland's Band, under Bandmaster William J. Martland, with twenty musicians. The band was mustered out of the service May 8, 1862. The band is still in existence, although its honored leader many years ago passed away. The present leader is Mace Gay who has been the bandmaster forty-seven years.

North Bridgewater also furnished Company I, First Regiment, Massachusetts Cavalry, which was recruited by Captain Lucius Richmond. This company left for Camp Brigham, Readville, September 11, 1861. It was a part of the Third Battalion, which left the State December 29,

1861, and had its first experiences in battle at Pocotalgo, South Carolina. More about the Civil War experiences of North Bridgewater men is found under the history of Brockton, the present name for the town, which is Plymouth County's only city.

The town of Abington sent more than a full regiment to the front. A company, representing the old town, was one of those to answer the call within twenty-four hours. The town furnished two lieutenant-colonels, three majors, twelve captains, seven first lieutenants, twelve second lieutenants, and, in all, 1,138 men. This notable record is fitting for the town in which the abolitionists held their spirited meetings in Island Grove. It was in this same cradle of liberty and justice, under the towering pines, that the returning soldiers were given a reception by the town after Lee's surrender and "for the first time since man has kept a record of events, the heavens bent above and domed a land without a serf, a servant or a slave."

One of the earliest official acts of the town of Wareham after war was declared was to choose a military committee to form a coast guard of sixty-four persons, from the age of forty-five to sixty, leaving the men usually regarded as of military age to volunteer into the regular arms of the service. The town records show that Wareham furnished three hundred and fifty men for the war, which was a surplus of fifteen over and above all demands.

Colonel Schouler in his "History of Massachusetts in the Civil War" says: "Every town in Plymouth County furnished its contingent of men upon every call made by the President during the war, and each had a surplus at the close of the rebellion, which in the aggregate amounted to five hundred and twelve men."

Pembroke furnished one hundred and sixty-seven men for the Civil War, which was twenty-nine more than enough to fill its quotas. Of this number five served in the navy. Those killed or who died in the service numbered twenty.

Kingston has the honor and distinction of having the only Grand Army Post in the country named for a woman. Martha Sever Post, No. 154, Department of Massachusetts, Grand Army of the Republic, took the name of a brave and patriotic Kingston girl who was a volunteer nurse, and died while nursing the sick and wounded soldiers in the army. Her grave is beneath a sheltering evergreen tree in the Union Cemetery and above it flutters the stars and stripes, placed there every Memorial Day by comrades who thus recognize her devotion, in the exercise of which she gave her life. Several years ago, when the members of Martha Sever Post had been reduced to two comrades, able to attend meetings, the late John T. Thompson and Amasa Lincoln, the regular meetings were carried on by these two comrades and records



made of them, which elicited the commendation of the department officers. The only living member of the post is Amasa Lincoln but there has been no surrender of the charter. One of the last surviving members of the post was the late Captain George H. Bonney, who was in command of the Halifax Company after its return from the Civil War. He died later than Comrade Thompson but was a long time in feeble health and unable to attend the post meetings.

There were one hundred and fifty-three men in the Civil War Army and Navy credited to Kingston and of this number sixteen were killed or died in the service.

At the outbreak of the Civil War, Lieutenant James M. Sampson of Company C, Fourth Regiment of Infantry, held the positions of town clerk, treasurer and collector of taxes of Lakeville, positions which he had held since 1859. In August, 1862, he resigned these offices and volunteered as a private soldier in the company of which he later became lieutenant. Commissioned as second lieutenant, September 13, 1862, ten days later he was mustered into the United States service, on duty in a camp of preparation and instruction in Lakeville. In December, 1862, he left with his company and regiment for the Department of the Gulf, arriving at New Orleans February 7, 1863. He soon after participated in the expedition against Port Hudson, and also in the battle of Bisland, fought April 12, and Franklin, April 14, 1863.

While participating in the defense of Brashear City, June 23, 1863, Lieutenant Sampson was taken prisoner and carried several hundred miles to Camp Ford. After thirteen months as a prisoner he was paroled, exchanged and honorably discharged from the service August 9, 1864. In 1883, another generation of voters again elected him town clerk, treasurer and collector of taxes. He was one of eighty-five men from Lakeville to serve in the Union Army. The town also furnished nine men in the navy. This branch of the service had its fascinations for several boys whose age would not permit them to enlist before the war closed. Among them was Jones Godfrey, who, as acting third assistant engineer, was, October 20, 1866, ordered to the Naval Academy at Annapolis, Maryland. The following year he was placed upon duty at the naval engine workshop at Washington, District of Columbia. He was graduated from the Naval Academy in June, 1868, was immediately appointed a third assistant engineer and ordered to duty on board the U. S. S. "Sagamore" on a cruise to the Pacific Ocean. He also served on several other armed vessels, among them the "Saginaw," that was wrecked on the reefs; the "Nantasket," on board of which he cruised among the West India Islands; and the "Kansas," employed in carrying a surveying party to Greytown. He afterward returned to Lakeville, studied law and was admitted to the bar in 1877.

Marion furnished about one hundred men in the Civil War, including twenty-three seamen. Three of the latter were officers. Four soldiers died in the service. At the close of the war the credit to the town was ten in excess of all demands.

About forty represented the town of Rochester.

There were several Hanson men who were members of the old Halifax Company which responded to the call of Governor Andrew received during the night of April 15, 1861. There were seventeen who answered the first call for three months, twenty-five who volunteered for nine months, eighty-five three years' volunteers, thirty one year volunteers, six one hundred days' volunteers, and three who served in the navy. Twenty died in the service.

Duxbury, being one of the coast towns, furnished several men for the navy. The town furnished two hundred and thirty-six soldiers and seamen and thirty-five of them died in the service.

Mattapoisett was incorporated as a town four years before the breaking out of the rebellion, previous to that time being one of the villages of Rochester. The new town furnished two hundred and fifteen soldiers and seamen, of whom eighteen died in the service.

The first meeting in Hanover, to act upon matters relating to the war was held May 4, 1861. She furnished about two hundred men, nearly one-eighth of her population. At the end of the war she had a surplus to her credit of twenty-two over and above all demands. Hanover paid in bounties \$25,000, and in State Aid (refunded by the state) during the war, \$12,859. In the election of 1860 about eighty-five per cent of the votes cast for president were for Abraham Lincoln. At the meeting held May 4, 1861, already mentioned, it was voted to raise \$500 "in aid of the families of volunteers that have or may enlist from this time;" two hundred and fifty dollars "to provide uniforms for such volunteers," and five hundred dollars to pay them for drilling, "before leaving for the seat of war." A company of Hanover men was organized that same month by Loammi B. Sylvester and others. This became Company G, of the Eighteenth Regiment and served with the Army of the Potomac.

At the beginning of the war, the military strength of Hanover in able-bodied men between eighteen and forty-five years of age, was two hundred and seventy-five. Of this number, one hundred and sixty-nine enlisted. Six of them were killed in battle, eighteen died in the service and several others died soon after their discharge by reason of service wounds or illness contracted in the service. The town was credited with seventeen men in the navy. Some of them served on the "Kearsarge," the "Cumberland" and the "Congress" in famous battles.

The population of Scituate at the time of the election of Abraham



Lincoln in 1860, was 2,227. A large proportion of the able-bodied men volunteered and were assigned to service in the Second, Seventh, Twelfth, Fifteenth, Eighteenth, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Thirty-second, Thirty-fifth, Thirty-eighth, Thirty-ninth, Fifty-fourth, Fifty-sixth, Fifty-eighth, Fifty-ninth and Sixty-second regiments of Massachusetts Volunteers, and one resident of the town, Thomas St. James, to the First Iowa Cavalry.

South Scituate, now Norwell, furnished two hundred and thirty-nine soldiers who served in the Second, Eleventh, Sixteenth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Thirty-second, Thirty-fifth, Thirty-ninth, Fifty-fourth, Fifty-eighth and Sixty-first regiments of Massachusetts Volunteers. Benjamin F. Delano, a native of the town, was a naval construction engineer during the war, in fact from 1847 until his retirement from the service in 1873. During the rebellion he was one of the most efficient naval constructors in the employ of the government.

Edward H. Delano, youngest brother of Benjamin F. Delano, also served his country as a naval constructor. He built some of the best wooden naval vessels the United States ever constructed, among them the steam frigate "Merrimac" and the "Hartford," which was sent to Russia and various parts of the world to be exhibited, and was chosen by Admiral Farragut as his flagship.

When the rallying voices of the abolitionists were first heard in Abington Grove and at other selected spots in Plymouth, when the abolition movement was exceedingly unpopular and the people as a whole were not ready to accept the patriotic doctrine for which they flew to arms in 1861, even as early as June 22, 1852, Thomas B. Griffith and forty-seven others petitioned the governor of Massachusetts, as commander-in-chief of the militia, for leave to organize a company of light infantry in the town of Carver and vicinity. The petition was granted and the Company G, of the Third Regiment of Light Infantry, Second Brigade, First Division, came into being, July 10, 1852, with Matthias Ellis captain, Seneca R. Thomas first lieutenant, William S. McFarlin second lieutenant, Benjamin Ward third lieutenant, and Joseph W. Sherman fourth lieutenant. The company voted to take the name of "Bay State Light Infantry." Captain Ellis was, in January, 1854, promoted to the office of aide-de-camp to Governor Emery Washburn, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. This company became a minute-man company in 1861, with William S. McFarlin captain and John Dunham lieutenant, three non-commissioned officers and twelve privates.

Thomas B. Griffith, who headed the petition to the governor for the light infantry company which became Company G, was made captain of Company B, Third Regiment, Infantry, which volunteered from

Carver, for three months' service, with thirty officers and men. When the volunteers went out for three years' service, Captain William S. McFarlin was in command of Company C, Eighteenth Regiment, Infantry, as designations were changed when the local companies were mustered into the United States service. Carver lost in the service twenty-one men. She furnished her quota of soldiers in the army, two ensigns in the navy and had several men to spare to her credit at the end of the war.

Thomas B. Griffith volunteered as a militiaman and served early in the war as recruiting officer to fill the ranks of the Third Regiment. He was mustered into the Third Regiment in 1862, as captain of Company B, served his nine months' enlistment, participated in several battles, and returned to Carver and his business of manufacturing parlor grates. He was promoted to the rank of major, after serving as captain of the Eighty-sixth Unattached Company, following the war, when that company was attached to the Third Regiment. He was major in command of the Third Regiment until his resignation in 1875.

The votes at early town meetings, after the opening of the rebellion, showed that the town of Bridgewater recognized the seriousness of the impending struggle and intended to govern itself accordingly. At one of these meetings held April 26, 1861, it was voted to hold in reserve \$1,400 which had been appropriated at a previous meeting for highways, and the county commissioners were requested not to lay out any highways in the town until it should be determined to what extent the town was liable to be called upon for money to support the war. It was voted to pay every volunteer soldier ten dollars a month while he was in the service, to provide suitable aid for his family while he was away, and in case he should die or be killed his children should be given a proper education and be put to some honorable calling or pursuit, "not as a charity but as a debt due." In other words the town proposed to assume the financial obligations of heads of families who made the supreme sacrifice on the altar of their country.

Each volunteer was presented with a revolver and a Bowie knife. The Town Hall became a recruiting office. Eighty-five signed the roll in response to the call of the president for volunteers May 3, 1861. The town voted July 17, 1862, to raise thirty-six volunteers as its share to answer a new call and to pay each one a bounty of one hundred and sixty dollars. The quotas were met as fast as the calls came and, at the close of the war, the town had a surplus of forty men in the service in excess of all demands. There was a call July 18, 1864, for fifty-seven men and the citizens contributed \$13,427 by subscription. The town was represented in every branch of the service in the army and navy. Among them were two West Point graduates, Major-General George L.



Andrews and General Samuel Breck, both of whom performed notable service. Company K of the Third Massachusetts Regiment was composed largely of men from Bridgewater and a large proportion of them reënlisted in the Fifty-fourth Regiment and performed gallant service.

Company C, Twenty-ninth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, previously called Company L of the Fourth Regiment, consisted principally of East Bridgewater men. Company D of the Thirty-eighth Massachusetts Regiment had twenty-six East Bridgewater men on its rolls when the first quota was called for. The town paid for bounties for the soldiers, under all the calls for men, \$51,605.

West Bridgewater furnished for the army and navy two hundred and ten men, four of whom were commissioned officers. At the close of the war the town had met all the demands and had a surplus of eleven in the service. Bounties were paid, the families at home well cared for, State aid was furnished the drafted men and every obligation cheerfully assumed and faithfully discharged. Exclusive of State aid, the town expended for the war, \$21,950. The State aid, afterwards refunded by the State amounted to \$11,691.17.

Middleborough was patriotically represented in the regiments which were the first to leave Massachusetts for the seat of war in April, 1861. The names of those who served during the war are included in the rolls of the Second, Third, Fourth, Ninth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Sixteenth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-second, Twenty-third, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-eighth, Thirtieth, Thirty-second, Fortieth, Fifty-eighth and Fifty-ninth regiments of Infantry; First, Third, Fourth and Fifth regiments of Cavalry. The roll of honor shows that fifty-four died or were killed in battle.

Among the gallant soldiers from Middleborough was General Ebenezer W. Pierce who enlisted in the Massachusetts Militia at the age of nineteen and at twenty-two was major of the Fourth Regiment of Artillery.

He was honorably discharged from the militia at the age of twenty-six, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. He became captain of the Assonet Light Infantry Company two years later, and in 1851 was major of the Third Regiment of Light Infantry. He rose in rank and, at the time of the outbreak of the rebellion, was brigadier general of the Second Brigade in the First Division. Mustered into the United States service for the Civil War, he commanded the Second Brigade three months and then was commissioned colonel of the newly raised Twenty-ninth Massachusetts Infantry. In command of that regiment in the battle of White Oak Swamp, Virginia, June 30, 1862, his right arm was torn off by a cannon ball.

He was off duty only thirty days, participated in the second battle of Bull Run, and was soon afterward given the command of the Second

Brigade in the First Division of the Ninth Corps. For a time he was in command of the division in Tennessee.

When the first call for volunteers was made by Governor Andrew, pursuant to the call from President Lincoln, the Lincoln Light Infantry, a Hingham militia company, was under command of Captain Joseph T. Sprague, who was dangerously ill. A telegram was received by Lieutenant Luther Stephenson, Jr., April 16, which read:

"Captain Sprague is discharged. You will report in Boston with the Hingham company by first train.

John A. Andrew."

There were forty-two men who responded, five of them credited to Weymouth and one to Marshfield.

The Lincoln Light Infantry had been organized October 19, 1854, and named for Benjamin Lincoln, a major-general in the army of the Revolution, not for Abraham Lincoln. As a matter of fact, however, the paternal ancestors of Abraham Lincoln were natives of Hingham. The company was mustered into the service of the United States to date from April 16, 1861. May 18, 1861, thirty-seven additional volunteers increased the roll to seventy-nine men.

The First Massachusetts Regiment was the first regiment in the United States, armed and equipped, tendered at Washington for a service of three years. It left the State June 15, 1861, and was the first three-year volunteer regiment to reach the city of Washington. There were seven Hingham men in the regiment. As might be expected of a town on the coast, Hingham had a large number of enlistments in the navy, and no less than sixteen of them, possibly more, were officers. There were many commissioned officers, as well as non-commissioned officers and privates in the various branches of the army.

All the quotas from Hingham were filled with volunteers, with a single exception. A draft was made July 20, 1863, and, so far as known, only three joined the army under provisions of the draft, from Hingham.

The soldiers' monument, erected in 1870, bears the names of twenty-six officers and fifty privates who were killed or died in the service.

Company H, Third Regiment, Massachusetts Militia, responded to the call the day after the surrender of Fort Sumpter, with twenty-two Plympton men in the ranks, with Lucian L. Perkins captain and Oscar E. Washburn, first lieutenant. The men left Boston for Fortress Monroe April 18, and April 23 were mustered into the service of the United States. In enlistments to the credit of the town were eighty-two for three years, thirteen for nine months and four in the naval service. Fifteen were killed in battle or died in service. Out of a population of about eight hundred, Plympton furnished ninety-three soldiers, and thirty-four of them reënlisted.



Marshfield furnished for the war one hundred and sixty-one men and, including those credited to the town in the navy, the whole number was two hundred and ten. The bounties paid amounted to \$24,465. The disposition of the town is shown in a resolution, prepared by Nathaniel H. Whiting, and passed at a town meeting July 22, 1862, as follows:

Resolved, That we will stand by the government to the extent of our last dollar.

Resolved, That in the dark and troubled night which surrounds us, we cherish with a deeper love and more exalted patriotism the noble sentiment proclaimed in that early conflict with the spirit of dissension on the floor of the American Senate by our great statesman, now sleeping in our midst by the sea he loved so well,—“Liberty and Union, now and forever, one and inseparable!”

Resolved, that, in defense of this sentiment, we will stand by the Government to the extent of our last dollar and our last man, preferring to leave for those who shall come after us a wilderness like that our fathers found when they sailed into yonder bay, and landed on Plymouth Rock, rather than that this monstrous rebellion shall prevail.

Among those who perished in the conflict was the son of the distinguished statesman to whom reference was made in the resolution, Colonel Fletcher Webster, in command of the Twelfth Massachusetts Regiment, to which so many Plymouth County men belonged. He was killed at Bull Run, August 30, 1862. Fletcher Webster Post, No. 13, Grand Army of the Republic, of Brockton, was named in his honor and many members of that post were his comrades.

The men either killed or those who died in the service, from Marshfield, numbered twenty-five.

At the time of the Civil War, as now, Hull was the smallest town in Plymouth County, having a population of two hundred and sixty. She did her part, however, furnishing twenty-two soldiers and two sailors. Three men were lost in service. Sergeant Ansel P. Loring was killed on duty near New Orleans June 24, 1863. His body was found floating in the Mississippi, with shot wounds through the head. He was a soldier in Company E, Forty-seventh Regiment. Nathaniel R. Hooper was killed at Fredericksburg, December 11, 1862. He was a member of Company F, of the Twentieth Regiment. John M. Cleverly died of disease at Charity Hospital, New Orleans. He served in Company A, Third Rhode Island Cavalry.

**Early Regiments to Leave the State**—Plymouth County was represented in nearly every branch of the army and navy in Massachusetts which took part in the Civil War. The Third Regiment was one of the earliest regiments to leave the State, taking with it several of the militia companies from Plymouth County towns, including Company A, from Halifax, the oldest of them all, organized in 1792. It was commanded by Colonel David W. Wardrop.

Colonel Abner B. Packard of Quincy was in command of the Fourth Regiment, which included in its make-up Company I, of Hingham, the Lincoln Light Infantry company. It was mustered into the service of the United States in April, 1861, and ordered to Fortress Monroe, Virginia, with the Third Regiment. The first enlistment was for three months but when the call was made in 1862 for nineteen thousand and eighty men for nine months, the Fourth Regiment again volunteered. It was sent to Camp Joe Hooker to receive recruits, and was placed under the command of Colonel Henry Walker, and ordered to join the forces under Major-General Nathaniel P. Banks in the Department of the Gulf.

There were some Plymouth County volunteers in the Seventh Regiment but it was principally composed of men from Bristol County. Major-General Darius N. Couch, of Taunton, when colonel, was in command of the regiment, which was mustered into the service June 15, 1861. One month later it had arrived in Washington. It took part in the battles of the Peninsula, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsburg, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna and Cold Harbor.

**County Furnished War Governor**—The governor of Massachusetts during the Civil War was John Albion Andrew, who is buried in Hingham, in Plymouth County. He had long been known as an anti-slavery man and a leading member of the Republican party. There is a statue of him above his grave in Hingham which was dedicated October 8, 1875, with an address by Horace Binney Sargent. The statue is of marble and views of it were contained in a memorial volume, containing an account of the dedication exercises, compiled by Luther Stevenson, Jr., and published in 1878. Another statue of him stands in Doric Hall in the State House, the work of Thomas Ball. The Hingham statue is by Thomas R. Gould.

**Webster Blood Was Stirred**—Governor Andrew quickly united all of Massachusetts enthusiastically and devotedly in opposition to secession. Among his admirers was Colonel Fletcher Webster of Marshfield who, as soon as he heard the governor's proclamation, offered his services and promised to raise a regiment to represent Massachusetts in the war. A mass meeting was held in State Street, Boston, near where the Boston Massacre took place just before the Revolutionary War. Among those who addressed the people was Fletcher Webster. He said: "I shall be ready on Monday to enlist recruits. I know that your patriotism and valor will prompt you to the path of duty, and we will show to the world that the Massachusetts of 1776 is the same in 1861."

The regiment was organized at Fort Warren, in Boston Harbor, and was mustered into service, June 26, 1861, numbering one hundred and forty men. Company F was recruited at North Bridgewater and left



that town April 29, at 9 o'clock in the morning, under escort of the North Bridgewater Light Dragoons, marching to the music of the North Bridgewater Brass Band, with the hand engine companies and citizens generally in line. Many towns in the county contributed to the make-up of the regiment. It left the State July 23, 1861, and took part in the battles at Cedar Mountain, Second Bull Run, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna River, Cold Harbor and Petersburg. The Second Bull Run battle took place August 30, 1862, and Colonel Fletcher Webster was killed. It was afterward under the command of Colonel James L. Bates of Weymouth. Attached to the Twelfth Regiment was Martland's Band, with William J. Martland as bandmaster. It served the regiment until May 8, 1862, when it was mustered out of the service. More about its service is given on a later page of this volume.

The Fletcher Webster Regiment, as the Massachusetts Twelfth was often called left Boston July 23, 1861, arrived at Maryland July 27, and went into camp. The regiment marched twenty-one miles to the Monocacy River, encamped there several days, then marched to Hyattstown, a distance of six miles; to Darnestown, eighteen miles; to Muddy Branch, seven miles; to Edwards Ferry, fifteen miles; and to Seneca Mills, by way of Poolesville, fifteen miles. The regiment went into winter quarters at Frederick, Maryland, having arrived through Darnestown and Barnestown, a distance of thirty miles. February 27, 1862, the regiment marched to Shenandoah City, Virginia, and went into camp there, twenty-five miles from the other camp. Marching orders seemed almost continuous, the regiment being kept practically always on foot for four months, until the battle of Cedar Mountain, August 9, in which Captain N. B. Shurtleff, Jr., was killed and ten men were wounded. Marches and countermarches were again made almost continuously until August 30, except on August 20, when the regiment stopped marching long enough to engage in the battle of the Rappahannock. August 30, in an engagement at Grovetown, near Bull Run, Colonel Fletcher Webster, Captain Kimball and ten privates were killed and one hundred and thirty-five were wounded or missing.

The next day the regiment arrived at Centreville, remaining until September 14, when it marched to South Mountain and was engaged in that battle, losing one man killed and five wounded. From that place the regiment went to Keedysville, formed in line of battle September 16 and bivouacked for the night; engaging the enemy at five o'clock in the morning, but was ordered to leave the field at nine, and withdrew in good order. The regiment went into that fight with three hundred and twenty-five men and of this number forty-seven were killed and one hundred and sixty-six wounded. On leaving the field, bringing off their

regimental colors, four officers and thirty-two men, they volunteered to support a battery; after which they rejoined their brigade, and participated in the pursuit of the flying enemy, who withdrew across the river. The regiment was at this time under command of Captain B. F. Cook of Company E. Colonel James L. Bates took command of the regiment September 22. From this time until November 10 the regiment was almost continuously on the march in Maryland and Virginia and arrived at the Rappahannock Station, near which it encamped.

A narrative of the Twelfth Regiment continues:

At the battle of Fredericksburg, fought on the thirteenth of December, 1862, the Twelfth Regiment was in General Gibbon's division. The division was formed in three brigade lines, and the third, commanded by General Taylor, had the advance, the Thirteenth Massachusetts Regiment acting as skirmishers for the division. Colonel Lyle's brigade, composed of the Twelfth Massachusetts, the Twenty-sixth New York, and the Nineteenth and One Hundred and Thirty-sixth regiments of Pennsylvania Volunteers, formed the second line, this regiment having the right. The third line was Colonel Root's brigade, the Sixteenth Maine Regiment having the right. The position of the Twelfth Regiment was taken at 9 o'clock in the morning; the enemy were hidden from view by a thick wood.

Our men remained lying down until 1 o'clock P. M. under a brisk fire of shot and shell, the skirmishers being hotly engaged, and the balls of the enemy passing over us. During these four hours there was but one man of this regiment injured. At 1 o'clock the signal to advance was given to the whole division and immediately obeyed. A heavy fire of musketry broke from the whole line of woods in our front. General Taylor's brigade stood the fire some thirty minutes, when the brigade in which was this regiment was ordered to relieve them. As they advanced they became separated from the brigade by the retiring regiments of the Third Brigade, and continued to advance independently, taking a position and firing until their ammunition began to fail. Their brigade had fallen to the rear, and they were alone until the third line came forward; their solid ranks broke the right of this line, which opened to the right and left to get to the front, where it was quickly formed.

The Twelfth Regiment followed the one in their front, the Sixteenth Maine, a short distance and being out of ammunition, were about to join their brigade in the rear, when they were ordered by General Taylor to prepare for a charge. The colonel thereupon gave the command to fix bayonets, and filed to the right of the brigade and charged with them into the woods in their front. About two hundred of the enemy rushed through our lines and gave themselves up as prisoners of war.

We carried the position and remained some twenty minutes expecting support, but none was in sight and the men were constantly falling before the fatal fire of an unseen enemy. Captains Ripley, Reed, Packard and Clark and a hundred of the men had fallen.

After consulting with the officers, the colonel gave orders to about face, and they fell back slowly and reluctantly and in very good order, bearing their tattered banners with them to their brigade. After reaching the place they were ordered to fall back to where they were supplied with rations and ammunition. They remained under arms all night, and early on the morning of the 14th they were ordered to another position, where they remained until the night of the 15th, when they recrossed the river to Falmouth with their corps.



During the battle the Twelfth was under fire six hours, and their loss was chiefly sustained during the last two hours. During that time they had five officers wounded and fifteen men killed, eighty-seven wounded, and three were missing, making an aggregate of one hundred and five out of two hundred and fifty-eight, with which they went into the fight.

**The Old Colony Regiment**, if one might be given that designation, was the Eighteenth Massachusetts which was largely recruited from volunteers in Duxbury, Middleborough, Carver, Hanover, Wrentham, Dedham, Quincy and Plymouth. The nucleus of the regiment was a company previously formed and drilled, largely from Plymouth County towns, which were ordered into camp at Dedham in July, 1861, until there were nine hundred and ninety-six loyal men. The regiment was mustered into the service of the United States August 27, 1861, and served as a regiment until September 2, 1864, when it was mustered out. Members of the regiment whose term of service had not expired by that date were transferred to the Thirty-second Regiment, concerning which more will be told later.

The Eighteenth Regiment left Massachusetts August 26, as a battalion of eight companies, under orders to proceed to Washington. The regiment was drilled in the autumn and newly equipped with uniforms and camp equipage imported by the government from France, being the same worn by the *Chasseurs à pied*. General George B. McClellan complimented the regiment upon its commendable proficiency in military drill and general appearance. The regiment took part in the battles of the Peninsula, Second Bull Run, Shepherdstown, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Rappahannock Station, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, and Weldon Railroad, giving a good account of itself on all occasions. The killed and wounded numbered nearly two hundred and fifty.

**Twenty-ninth Regiment**—Seven of the companies in the Twenty-ninth Regiment were formed from the first enlistments of three years' men in this vicinity. The companies were mustered into service and left Massachusetts at different times to fill up the ranks of the Third and Fourth Militia regiments at Fortress Monroe. Among them was the Lincoln Light Infantry of Hingham, the home town of Governor John A. Andrew. When the seven companies returned home they were designated as the First Battalion Massachusetts Volunteers.

With the three additional companies sent to join the original seven, the battalion was regularly organized as the Twenty-ninth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry. It took part in the battles of Hampton Roads, Gaines' Mills, Savage Station, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Second Bull Run, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Vicksburg, Jackson,

Blue Spring, Campbell Station, Siege of Knoxville, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Weldon Railroad and Fort Stedman.

**Thirty-second Regiment**—The basis of the Thirty-second Regiment was six companies of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia which organized for garrison duty at Fort Warren in Boston Harbor. Many of the enlistments were from those who had already been in the service and the regiment was regarded as one of the most efficient and dependable organizations in the State.

The survivors of the Twenty-second Massachusetts Volunteers were transferred to the Thirty-second Regiment, as were the survivors of the Eighteenth Regiment, to replenish the ranks of the Thirty-second. The Eighteenth and Twenty-second served separately as small battalions from July 20 to October 26, 1864, upon which date both were consolidated with the Thirty-second.

Captain Luther Stephenson, Jr., of Hingham, who had previously been connected with the Fourth Regiment, in November, 1861, started to recruit a company to be stationed at Fort Warren. He established his headquarters in the Town Hall at Hingham, which he designated as "Camp Dimmick," in honor of Colonel Dimmick, who was the commanding officer at Fort Warren. He had the requisite number so that November 26, 1861, the company was mustered into the service of the United States. Included in the company was Lieutenant Charles A. Dearborn of Salem and thirty-one men from "Camp Cameron." The company spent the winter of 1861-62 at Fort Warren.

Captain Cephus C. Bumpus of Braintree, was another patriotic young man who had already seen service in connection with the Fourth Regiment. He started to raise a company and was joined in the undertaking by Lieutenant Lyman B. Whiton who opened a recruiting office at Oasis Hall. About forty of the men in the new company were from Hingham. The recruits left the latter town December 13, for Camp Cameron, where they were consolidated with Company E, under Captain Bumpus. They remained there nine days but were at Fort Warren the day before Christmas.

The Thirty-second Regiment was not recognized as a regiment until May 25, 1862, when the several commands were ordered by telegraphic despatch to report at the seat of war at the earliest possible moment. In twelve hours they were on their way to Washington. The battles in which the regiment participated were those of Malvern Hill, Gaines' Mill, Second Bull Run, Antietam, Shepherdstown Ford, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Rappahannock Station, Mine Run, Wilderness, Laurel Hill, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Tolopotomy Swamp, Bethesda Church, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Weldon Railroad, Vaughan Road, Dabney's Mills, Boydton Road and White Oak Road. The total



number of killed and wounded and of those who died of disease contracted in the service, was two hundred and seventy-seven.

In January, 1884, three hundred and thirty men of the regiment, having reënlisted, were permitted to have a furlough of thirty days at their homes. They received a most cordial welcome from Governor John A. Andrew upon their arrival in Boston, he being personally acquainted with many of them. The mayor of Boston and other officials and prominent citizens turned out and a collation was provided in Faneuil Hall, while cannon boomed on Boston Common as a salute upon their arrival.

The regiment was mustered out June 29, 1865.

**Thirty-fifth Regiment**—Few regiments from Massachusetts had a more severe experience or are remembered with more gratitude than the Thirty-fifth Massachusetts which was mustered into the service of the United States August 21, 1862, and the day following was on its way to the seat of war. Its efficient service included participation in the battles of Antietam, Fredericksburg, Campbell Station, siege of Knoxville, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Cold Harbor, Weldon Railroad, South Mountain, Vicksburg, Poplar Spring Church, Hatcher's Run, Fort Sedgwick, Fort Mahine and Petersburg. It rendered efficient service in Virginia, Kentucky, Tennessee, Arkansas and Mississippi, and especially distinguished itself at the taking of the city of Jackson, the capital of Mississippi.

The regiment was mustered out June 9, 1865.

**Thirty-eighth Regiment**—The Thirty-eighth Regiment was one of those who assisted in the demonstration made to aid Admiral Farragut in passing the batteries in March, 1863, in the desperate encounters at Port Hudson. It was in the Western Louisiana Campaign under General Nathaniel P. Banks, and took part in all the assaults upon Port Hudson and suffered heavy losses. It shared in the Red River expedition under General Nathaniel P. Banks. Its service included participation in the engagements of Bisland, Port Hudson, Cane River, Mansura, Opequan, Fisher's Hill and Cedar Creek.

It was mustered out at Savannah, June 30, 1865, by reason of the close of the war and the men reached Massachusetts July 13, 1865.

**Thirty-ninth Regiment**—The Thirty-ninth Regiment was present at the surrender of General Robert E. Lee, and participated in the grand review of the victorious army at Washington at the close of the rebellion. It was recruited from the Plymouth County towns of Hingham, Scituate and South Scituate, now Norwell, South Shore towns; also from the neighboring counties of Bristol, Essex, Middlesex, Norfolk and Suffolk. A short time before leaving Massachusetts it was located at

Boxford, but was recruited at Lynnfield. It was mustered into the United States service September 4, 1862, and four days later reported at Washington. It served until June 2, 1865, when it was mustered out by reason of the close of the war.

The regiment participated in the battles of Mine Run, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Tolopotomy, Bethesda Church, Petersburg, Weldon Railroad, Dabney's Mills, Gravelly Run and Five Forks. The battles in which it did its part occurred in rapid succession and in the last year of its service it lost heavily in killed and wounded. Among those killed was Colonel Davis, the commander of the regiment.

Until July 12, 1863, the regiment served upon picket guard duty in the Department of Defenses of Washington. Later it joined the Army of the Potomac. Its first engagement was May 5, 1864. On that date it was ordered out on the Brock Pike and advanced in line of battle through the woods to the support of a body of troops in front, which was being hard pressed by the enemy. It participated in the swift succession of engagements between the Army of the Potomac and the Confederate forces in Virginia.

**Company I, First Massachusetts Cavalry**—In the days when the abolitionists were holding their meetings in Plymouth County and public opinion began to run high in support of freedom for the slaves, there was organized in North Bridgewater a military company, which became known as the North Bridgewater Light Dragoons. The company was chartered in 1853. At the time of the organization of Company F of the Twelfth Massachusetts Infantry, under Captain Alexander Hitchborn, and its leaving North Bridgewater April 29, 1861, escort duty was done by the Dragoons. Their commanding officer was Captain Lucius Richmond, who, a few months later recruited Company I, First Regiment, Massachusetts Cavalry, enlisting as many of the Dragoons as were willing to serve, and securing others outside that organization. The newly formed company was offered and accepted and on the morning of September 11, 1861, was on its way to Camp Brigham at Readville, Engine Companies 2, 3, and 5, which, with the Dragoons, had turned out in April to give Company F of the Twelfth Regiment a fitting send-off, were again in line, with many citizens of North Bridgewater, to bid good-bye to the cavalry volunteers, the first company of that branch of the service to leave Plymouth County.

The North Bridgewater Company was assigned to the Third Battalion, consisting of Company I, Captain Lucius Richmond; Company K, Captain James H. Case of Middleborough; Company L, Captain William Gibbs of Waltham; Company M, Captain Marcus A. Moore of Waltham. This battalion left Readville December 29, 1861, for New York, where



the battalion was quartered for fourteen days at Park Barracks. The battalion arrived at Port Royal January 11, 1862, and camped at Hilton Head until early in August. Being ordered to Beaufort, North Carolina, the regiment engaged in the battle of Pocotaligo, South Carolina, during which three of the North Bridgewater Company were wounded.

Twenty-five men from the North Bridgewater Company were detached for courier duty on Morris and Folly islands April 1, 1863, and the last of May the remainder of the company was ordered to James Island, under General Terry.

Captain Lucius Richmond was placed in command of fourteen infantry companies July 7, 1863, forming the picket line from Hilton Head to Caribou Sound near Pulaski Fort. They went to headquarters at Hilton Head January 4, 1864. Ordered to Jacksonville, Florida, they arrived February 8 and joined Captain Elder's First United States Battery of four guns, and the Fortieth Massachusetts Regiment Mounted Infantry, under command of Colonel Guy V. Henry. These companies were brigaded and placed under command of Colonel Henry, acting as brigadier-general.

On the day of the arrival of these forces they started on an expedition of one hundred and fifty miles into the country. The first night they surprised and captured four picket posts of five men each, and captured an artillery camp of eight guns, called Camp Finnegan. They remained at that camp just long enough to make "off again, gone again Finnegan," although this was half a century before that expression was heard. They proceeded to Baldwin Station on the Jacksonville and Tallahassee Railroad, arriving February 9 at dawn. They located four cars on the railroad, loaded with ammunition, cannon and forage, turpentine, rosin and cotton, all of which could very easily be used in the business in which they were engaged. They, therefore, captured the find, and pressed on to Barber's Ford on the South Fork of St. Mary's River, arriving there the following day.

About noon of the day of arrival there was a fight in which one member of Company I was killed and four were wounded. The man killed was Thomas F. C. Dean of Stoughton. The Union forces captured forty-five prisoners and the next night bivouacked at Sandersonville, after driving General Finnegan's forces from his headquarters there, to Lake City. The Union forces remained long enough at Sandersonville to destroy some distilleries, a quantity of corn and other things, then overtook General Finnegan, in sight of Lake City, engaging in a hot battle for about two hours until ammunition became scarce, with no supply train to fall back upon. Consequently General Seymour gave the order to fall back to Barber's Ford.

Company I participated in an expedition which destroyed three ferries

on St. Mary's River and in an engagement, under General Seymour at Olustee, when five thousand men were against thirteen thousand of the men in gray. After a severe fight both sides fell back, the Union forces destroying, in their retreat, Baldwin village. There was an engagement at Camp Finnegan February 23 and at Mile Run February 25.

March 30 the battalion was ordered to Pilatka, Florida, where it remained two weeks. Four men were lost during those fourteen days, being picked off the picket line. They were Matthew Lincoln of Abington, H. F. Poole of Easton, John Sylvester of East Bridgewater, and Roscoe Tucker, one of the corporals of Company I. They were carried to Andersonville Prison.

The battalion evacuated Pilatka April 14, and Captain Richmond was ordered to St. Augustine, Florida, where he stopped three days and then continued on to Jacksonville, Florida. A part of the company had reënlisted and earned a furlough in the North from the time of the evacuation at Pilatka. After several changes of positions, Company I, with its battalion, arrived May 3, at Yorktown, Virginia, and May 8 joined General Gilmore at Bermuda Hundred. On the eighth and ninth of May the company was in fights at Swift Creek, from the eleventh to the sixteenth of May in engagements in front of Fort Darling, falling back to Bermuda Hundred May 16. It was engaged in front of Petersburg, Virginia, June 9, in front of Richmond, September 28 and in several other engagements up to the middle of November, when it was ordered to the Army of the James, under General Benjamin F. Butler, another Massachusetts general, and was employed on escort and courier duty.

Company I of North Bridgewater led the advance from Jacksonville to Lake City, engaging and capturing the enemy in front, usually successfully. The company was consolidated into the Fourth Massachusetts Cavalry.

Captain Lucius Richmond served thirty-nine months and was a brave and efficient officer. He was honorably discharged December 17, 1864.

**Fourth Regiment of Cavalry**—The Fourth Massachusetts Cavalry into which Company I was consolidated, was organized by special order from the War Department, the Independent Battalion, formerly Third Battalion, First Regiment of Cavalry, Massachusetts Volunteers; and two new battalions recruited in Massachusetts. The regiment consisted of twelve squadrons, each one hundred strong, fully recruited March 1, 1864. A portion of the regiment took part in the engagements before Gainesville, Florida, Drury's Bluff, before Petersburg and Richmond. The regiment was mustered out November 14, 1865.

**First and Third Heavy Artillery**—The First and Fourth regiments of Heavy Artillery contained a large number of soldiers from the Old



Colony District. The First was mustered into the service of the United States July 5, 1861, and left the State two days later. The basis of this regiment was Fourteenth Regiment of Infantry. It was changed to a regiment of heavy artillery, by order of the War Department January 1, 1862. Its complete term of service exceeded four years as the regiment reënlisted in 1863, for a term of three years, terminating at the date of its discharge, August 16, 1865. The engagements in which the regiment participated were those of Spottsylvania, North Anna, Topotomy, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Strawberry Plains, Deep Bottom, Poplar Spring Church, Boydton Road, Hatcher's Run, Duncan's Run and Vaughan Road.

The Third Regiment of Heavy Artillery furnished service for eight companies originally raised for Massachusetts coast defense. They were employed in that capacity for a time but eventually the Third Regiment was raised from the Third, Sixth, Seventh, Eighth, Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Thirteenth, Fourteenth, Fifteenth and Sixteenth Unattached companies of Heavy Artillery. The new organization was directed by the War Department, and was forwarded to Washington in the fall of 1864, being stationed at various locations for the defense of the National Capital until the close of the war.

It was a great day in the various towns "When Johnny Came Marching Home Again," at the close of the war, a duplicate of what took place in all the towns in the United States and—may we add,—in the South as well as the North. The once more united country was ready to endorse the words of General Grant, "Let us have peace."

**First Band to Play "John Brown's Body"**—Martland's Band, which was attached to the Twelfth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, Colonel Fletcher Webster, of Marshfield, was the first band to play "John Brown's Body Lies a Mouldering in the Grave." In fact Samuel C. Perkins of North Bridgewater, a member of that band, wrote the original band music, arranging it for every instrument and printing it by means of a crow's quill, so that it looked almost as if it were copper plate engraving. The song was familiar in early war times, before the Fletcher Webster Regiment left Fort Warren, and there was an air to which it was sung, taken from a song written by a Philadelphia musician for the Sumpter Hose Company of Charlestown, South Carolina, as a march before the firemen went on an excursion, before the secession. It had never been arranged in regular form for playing by a band until the North Bridgewater musician assumed the task, recognizing its popularity at Fort Warren.

This important fort in Boston Harbor was partially completed when Jefferson Davis became secretary of war in ante-bellum days, and, while he was in office, the work was held up. Consequently after

Davis became the president of the Southern Confederacy and work was rushed to complete Fort Warren, he was considerably in the unpopular thought of the soldiers quartered there, engaged in building the fort. In leisure moments the men at the fort engaged in singing, led by a quartet composed of Charles E. I. Edgerly, James Jenkins, Newton J. Purnette and John Brown. The latter was a Scotchman and, on account of his name being the same as the man hanged for the raid at Harper's Ferry, he was frequently the butt of many jokes from his comrades. One day Brown and others were taking their leisure near the sally-port of the fort when some of the soldiers returned from Boston and, as they marched to the sally-port, someone called out "What is the news?" In order to be facetious, one of the returning men sang out, "Why, John Brown is dead." This sally brought back the response from someone, who changed the reference to the Harper's Ferry episode to the Scotchman within hearing, "But he still goes marching round." A laugh was raised which relieved the hard work and the home-sickness at the fort. Among others quartered at the fort was the men of the Second Battalion of Massachusetts Infantry, locally known as "The Tigers."

By the time dress parade was over, "The Tigers" were chanting

"John Brown's body lies a mouldering in the grave,  
But his soul goes marching on,"

much as a college yell originates and is heard on all occasions at the present day. Some of the soldiers knew the old "chantey" written for the North Carolina Hose Company in the form it had been adopted by Methodist camp meeting followers. The original words:

"Say, bummers, will you meet us?"

had been changed by the Methodists to a hymn carrying the line

"Say, brothers, will you meet us?"

but the tune was identical, and the same to which the words of "John Brown's Body" were being chanted day by day at the fort.

When Colonel Fletcher Webster organized the Twelfth Regiment at Fort Warren, many of "The Tigers" enlisted in it, among them the members of the quartet which took the lead in the vocal music at the fort. Jenkins and Brown became sergeants in Company A and Prunette and Edgerly sergeants in Company E. The regimental dress paraders were in "heavy marching order" with knapsacks and all accoutrements, and the dress paraders were accustomed to marching around the parade ground, inside the fort enclosure, singing the second verse:

"John Brown's knapsack's strapped upon his back  
And his soul goes marching on."



One stanza after another was added and the unpopularity of the president of the Confederacy caused a reference to him to be included in the fifth verse:

"We'll hang Jeff Davis to the limb of a tree"

This was later changed to "a sour apple tree."

William J. Martland, bandmaster of the North Bridgewater Band, conferred with Samuel C. Perkins, one of his post horn players, and waited expectantly till Perkins had written the musical score for all the instruments. One evening at dress parade the band led 1,100 voices in singing the song which went like wildfire through the Union Army.

The Twelfth Massachusetts Regiment sang it in Boston July 18, 1861, when the regimental colors were presented by Hon. Edward Everett. It was sung at Fort Warren July 23, as a rehearsal for its rendition in New York, as the North Bridgewater Band and the Fletcher Webster Regiment paraded through Broadway, to deafening applause. It stirred the echoes in Baltimore July 26. Bandmaster Martland led the band at Charlestown, Virginia, March 1, 1862, on the spot where Ossawatimie Brown was hanged; and the boys of the Twelfth Massachusetts joined in singing

"John Brown's body lies a mouldering in the grave  
But his soul is marching on,"

as they had never sung it before. Colonel Webster was fond of the song and much pleased with the way in which the regimental volunteers put it over.

Patrick S. Gilmore, bandmaster of the Germania Band, heard of the new musical success and it was played to him by Sergeant Hallgreen of the Forty-third Massachusetts Regiment, who caught the air as it was sung by two Maine lads. Samuel C. Perkins made additional copies for Bandmaster Gilmore and other regiments adopted the stirring air. It was published by Oliver Ditson to meet the demand from regiments everywhere. When Julia Ward Howe wrote her inspiring "Battle Hymn of the Republic" the same air was used and it was thus given a more dignified standing and became known all over the world.

In July, 1864, the Twelfth Massachusetts Regiment—what was left of it—returned to Massachusetts. There were eighty-five men in all. Company A was represented by only three. As the regiment marched through Boston an effort was made by the colonel to revive the old chorus but the men were not in the mood to respond. Colonel Fletcher Webster, who was in command of the regiment when it left Boston, had been killed at Bull Run, August 30, 1862. Sergeant John Brown had been drowned at Port Royal, June 6, 1862. The North Bridgewater

Band was taken away from the Twelfth Regiment and Bandmaster William J. Martland had been discharged May 18, 1862, when the number of bands in the army was reduced by general orders. The regiment believed it had been treated unfairly and discourteously by Lieutenant-colonel Timothy M. Bryne. The remnant of the Twelfth Regiment, with its losses and memories, could not pick up the old song with the spirit in which they had rendered it when the original comrades touched elbows.

Bandmaster William J. Martland was discharged when the number of bands was reduced by general orders in May, 1862, but reënlisted as bandmaster in the Fifty-sixth Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, November 30, 1863, and served until his discharge July 13, 1865, at Alexandria, at the close of the war. He participated with the Fifty-sixth Regiment in the battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Cold Harbor, Petersburg, Weldon Railroad and before Petersburg.

William J. Martland was leader of a band in North Bridgewater as early as 1854. In 1861 eleven of the eighteen members of the band were volunteers. About 1874 the name was changed to Martland's Band. Mr. Martland first became its leader in 1860 and continued to be its leader until 1880, when he was succeeded by Mace Gay, its present leader.

Samuel C. Perkins, who wrote the musical score for the band to play "John Brown's Body" was an original member of the North Bridgewater Band, when it was organized in 1843, in a building which stood at the corner of Crescent and Summer streets in North Bridgewater, when that locality was called "Factory Village." Previously, Mr. Perkins had been a member of a band which played at May trainings, organized in 1837, which practiced in Edward Snow's Tavern in North Bridgewater, on Main Street, at the junction of Main and Belmont streets. This band existed about three years and its leader was Sion Packard. Samuel C. Perkins played post horn, as he did in the so-called Boys' Band organized in 1843, with Jérôme Smith as leader, and in the Martland Band, organized that same year.



## CHAPTER XX

### NEW ENGLAND CONSCIENCE RAMPANT.

**So-Called Western Cordiality and Democracy Expression of The Transplanted Yankee—Plymouth County Man and What He Did With "The Wisconsin Idea"—New Forms of Education But the Same Spirit of Intellectual Striving—Samuel Adams Sold Idea of Revolution By Means of the Town Meeting—Five Thousand New Englanders and the Emigrants' Aid Society Helped Colonize Kansas—Most Cities of United States Financed By New England—Sits Pretty on The Atlantic With an Unparalleled Future.**

Many there are, and many there always have been, who have taken delight in referring to "The New England Conscience" as something to conjure with, as the cause of ribald merriment. "The New England Conscience" is a phrase capable of as many interpretations as there are interpreters, when handled carelessly; but there is such a thing as "The New England Conscience," and it is something which needs no apology and its definition is the definition of America itself. From this local area, which nurtured or produced the men who laid the foundations on which rest the freedom and glory of the United States, have gone forth pioneers whose influence has been felt in the making of the great Middle West and the Far West. The "native son" of California who seems to be imbued with the notion that he is entitled to the inheritance of the Pacific slope was a native son because he had a New England father, possessed of the "will to do and soul to dare" to "go west and grow up with the country."

The New England conscience, says James Phinney Munroe in his entertaining book, by that name, "was an admirable, selective force, picking out the ruggedest from the English stock, strengthening it by a fight against the wilderness, proscribing from contact with it all idleness, ungodliness and frivolity. A good means to an important end, but in itself an ill-favored thing. Economizing and concentrating the forces necessary to found America, it was narrow as avarice, morbid as egoism. It exalted harsh, unlovely deeds into Heaven-inspired acts, and was blind to all human purposes, but death. Those early New Englanders, condemning the symbols of formalism, were slaves to form. Their spiritual life was a ceaseless ceremonial, their pious observances were rigid rules of etiquette without which one could obtain neither favor nor even audience of the Almighty.

"This spirit of caste, largely induced by their geographical isolation, kept our ancestors not provincial but parochial. It fostered a condition of life and a type of character doubtless never again to be possible in the world's history. Having done its work, having founded soundly and peopled strongly an exceptional region, the New England conscience had no further necessity of being. It is no less an anachronism than the formal, mannered speech in which its dread decisions

were embodied. Both demanded leisure, and haste is the dominant characteristic of today. . . . Having made the discovery that luxury—the material reward of life—is mainly a question of transportation, we are striving to annihilate time and space. . . . Already we are launching aerial ships and are turning inquisitive, neighborly eyes toward Mars. The insoluble mysteries of yesterday are the schoolboy's reading-lesson of today; and the Land of the Anthropophagi is the picnic ground of the tourist. . . . Our careers must start at a point where those of many of our ancestors ended. Their anxious, year-long problems have become our five-minute hesitations, their crises—two or three in a lifetime—our daily experiences. Americans are now not only of the world, they are of a world that knows and avails itself of steam and electricity, that finds the air too dull a medium for intercommunication and seeks to use in place of it the subtler ethers.

"The new conscience localizes heaven and hell within the individual instead of beyond the stars; the new religion of service which finds His work waiting to be done on every street corner; and the new gospel, that of physical, mental and spiritual simplicity.

"This modern type of conscience has developed new concepts of religion. Our churches may be emptier of worshippers than when the tythingman held legal sway; but our streets and houses and offices are fuller of the real presence of God. The women's clubs, the men's gatherings, the various social organizations of which every American hamlet has at least one are, most of them, when viewed too closely, rather absurd; looked at in the aggregate, however, they are magnificent. For they signalize the final emancipation of New England and the New England spirit from the reign of that selfish individualism which sought only its own salvation. The modern individualists, with their flaunting of vulgar wealth, with their disregard of others' rights, with their legal and illegal grasping of everything within their reach, hold still, of course, the centre of the stage; but the real work of civilization is being done by those thousands and tens of thousands who, wittingly or unwittingly, are laboring for each other and for the uplifting of the world.

"The shut-in, conventional, censorious morally dyspeptic existence of earlier America is being transformed into the out-door loving, toleration, friendliness and genuine democracy of today."

This rather long quotation from James Phinney Munroe is used because it is recognized as a valuable contribution to the story of the progress and development of the New England spirit and the New England conscience, which have remained true to type, and had their part in leavening the whole lump of the glory which is America. The more thoughtful study we give to the way in which problems were handled and solved by the colonists, the struggle against annihilation with the aborigines, the rebellion against tyranny from the English, and French, the struggle for the preservation of the Union, the more we come to the realization that those were "times which tried men's souls." Those were times when rumors of threatened massacres had to be taken in hand determinedly, without waiting to investigate their authenticity. The sentiment of human relationships and love of the land of one's birth had to be sacrificed that the experiment of democracy might go on. Mistakes were made, injustice was sometimes done. So it was in the conquering of the Great West. The lynching law was not justified by



the principles of jurisprudence but is made for law and order, even though there were martyrs who dangled undeservedly at the end of a rope, adjusted with good intentions.

But, in a latter day, the stirring up of hatred by means of the phrase "Remember the Maine" was the compelling influence which stimulated enlistments and nerved a peace-loving generation to conquer an empire. A generation later "He kept us out of war" was a phrase of propaganda which won reëlection, by the votes of an unprepared and unready electorate, of a "watchful waiting" president. That same voting force a few months later, fed on propaganda which kept pace with preparations for participation in the World War, marched forth "to make the world safe for democracy" to the strains of

"And we won't come back till it's over, over there."

What a whale of a difference a few words make!

Teeing off from old Plymouth Rock, driven by the New England spirit, impregnated with the New England conscience, "westward the star of empire takes its way" and the Pilgrim and Puritan progeny mingle with the latter-day Pilgrims, where the soil is black but hearts beat true, where a pebble is a curiosity but there is a "grit" not of the earth earthy. The pioneer-draftsman drew new designs upon the trestle-board of the broad prairies as faithfully as they had hewn civilization out of the pine forests of the Massachusetts coast wilderness. The cod-fish of the Old Colony and the bean pot of Boston were no less symbolical and faithful reminders of the beginnings of America, when the melting pot was stirred to regenerative action and the pork-packer became the successor of the fisherman. And so, by the covered wagon and the transcontinental railroad, both with Yankee starters, the Atlantic spirit and conscience ploughed through to the Golden Gate, giving and getting. Forefather's Day is now observed all the way from Eastern Standard Time to the Philippines, for the name of the New Englander, with the birthmark of the Old Colony, is seen all along the blazed trail.

In the year 1927, the secretary of the Associated Industries of Massachusetts, deplored the tendency of the young men who were graduated from the Eastern institutes and universities to seek their fortunes in other parts of the country. The burden of his plea was that New England was sowing and cultivating and other States took the harvest; thus far the Massachusetts manufacturers had not made an adequate bid for the service of the graduates; they had taken what was left after the cream had gone to other States. New England industries had become planted in the West by New England planters, to the detriment of New England.

Such a complaint may be characterized as patriotic or provincial. The saving grace is that there is another side to the picture. There have been people with unusual visions, native to New England, who have chafed

or been handicapped by the conservatism of the East, when they had a message to impart. These men have found their freedom to express themselves and teach their convictions and visions in the more receptive atmosphere of the "wide open spaces."

**Dr. McCarthy and the Wisconsin Idea**—Dr. Charles McCarthy went from a boarding house on Joslyn's Court in Brockton, through Brown University, an educational institution in Providence, Rhode Island, the town founded by Roger Williams, the lover of freedom and an open mind; to the University of Wisconsin, there to work out what he has called "The Wisconsin Idea." This is the university in which Professor Henry Steenbock recently discovered that, by treating food with sunlight, it was possible to get a fourth vitamin, a great boon to humanity, inasmuch as its infusion into ordinary food, by means of the ultra-violet ray, causes such food to be a preventive of rickets in children, and anaemia in later life. To safeguard this discovery from those who would exploit it for financial gain, Professor Steenbock applied for a patent and made over his rights to the University of Wisconsin. He refused offers for rights which would have made him wealthy, as he did not intend to pervert his life's greatest work by selling it. He lived up to the traditions and spirit of the university.

That same university has received with open arms and an open mind another teacher and thinker from Massachusetts, formerly a president of Amherst College, and described by his admirers as a man "whose only indiscretion was being fifty years in advance of his time." This high-minded experimenter, thinker and humanitarian, Dr. Alexander Meiklejohn, has received from the University of Wisconsin full official authority to work out his ideas of a liberal education with the student body. Concerning his connection with "The Wisconsin Idea," if Dr. McCarthy's phrase may be borrowed for another man from Massachusetts with a soul to dare, the New York "Herald Tribune" said in an editorial:

Ever since Dr. Alexander Meiklejohn's resignation of the Amherst presidency the hope has been widely entertained that he would find just such a "laboratory" as the University of Wisconsin has now provided him to test with a free hand his conceptions of a liberal education. He has had abundant sympathy from friends and skeptics, too, in his desire to cut loose from the leading strings of formal college traditionalism. His failure, for very practical reasons, to remold the habit of an old New England college by no means proved that his scheme of teaching and learning in the "college of tomorrow" where "living will be taught as any game is taught—by playing with good players," was of no value.

No strings appear to be attached to Dr. Meiklejohn's initiative power at Wisconsin, as announced by President Glenn Frank. He has full official authority to work out his ideals with his own teaching staff and a body of 250 students, freshmen and sophomores, regular members of the university, who elect to enter the Meiklejohn circle, "roped off," as President Frank expresses it, within its own boundaries.



No educator could hope for a more liberal opportunity to realize aspirations that can flower only in congenial soil.

This high-minded experiment is creditable to the great state university which has the means and the enterprise to indulge in it. Many share with Dr. Meiklejohn the opinion that American college education is in the main unstimulating, if not intellectually barren. The prophet of tomorrow's college has had reason to be pessimistic while his fine talents lacked generous exercise in the art of shaping plastic material. In the possession of his new studio he has ample occasion for optimism and may it be rewarded.

Of course the poet, the dreamer and the idealist never have the support of everybody and it is not necessary to go outside of Plymouth County to find an adverse opinion regarding Dr. Meiklejohn's crusade and the wisdom of the University of Wisconsin in being willing to furnish an opportunity for him to try out his experiments. The Brockton "Times," in an editorial printed one day in February, 1927, voiced this opposition as follows:

Dr. Alexander Meiklejohn, former president of Amherst, now Brittingham professor of philosophy in the University of Wisconsin, by permission of President Glenn Frank, of the university, and the state board, is going to try out some "freedom" experiments in education. He will take two hundred and fifty freshmen and sophomores and fool with any methods of teaching and contents of study which may seem promising. Thus we continue our mad career toward the will-o-the-wisp goal of "self expression" and away from discipline and hard work. Apparently nothing is going to stop our continued disintegration except some frightfully arresting catastrophe or a prolonged period of hard times. Times change and customs and ideas must change with them, but history does not afford a single example of great and enduring success being gained except through discipline and hard work.

An answer to the above view is contained on a tablet which the class of 1910 presented to the University of Wisconsin, the words of the regents who investigated somewhat radical teachings of Professor Richard T. Ely seventeen years before, and, in acquitting him, said: "Whatever may be the limitations which trammel inquiry elsewhere, we believe that the great state of Wisconsin should ever encourage that continual and fearless sifting and winnowing by which alone the truth can be found."

Dr. Charles McCarthy was, for ten years or more, legislative librarian in the state of Wisconsin, constantly in touch with the legislation of that state which attracted so much attention throughout the country. As librarian of the legislative reference department and as a member of the faculty of the University of Wisconsin, this former Brockton boy had opportunities to see events in that state of legislative experiments from a different standpoint than any other man, and he had opportunities to inject into the experiments something of "the New England conscience." In that connection, Dr. McCarthy said in a book which he wrote, entitled "The Wisconsin Idea," "I, a wandering student, seeking knowledge,

came knocking at the gates of the great University of Wisconsin, and it took me in, filled me with inspiration, and when I left its doors the kindly people of the state stretched out welcoming hands and gave me a man's work to do."

The late President Theodore Roosevelt said of the work of Dr. McCarthy, who, it must be remembered by readers of this history is mentioned here because he was a strong type of the typical New Englander seeking expression in an open-minded atmosphere: "Mr. McCarthy emphasizes the lesson that cheap clap-trap does not pay, and that the true reformer must study hard and work patiently. Moreover, Mr. McCarthy deserves especial praise for realizing that there is no one patent remedy for getting universal reform. He shows that a real reform movement must have many lines of development."

Mr. McCarthy said: "The 'forty-eight' Germans, those of the Carl Schurtz type, came fresh from a struggle for liberty in the old country, and brought with them as high ideals as any people who ever came to America. Under these influences, the farms of Wisconsin were settled and an orderly, careful government established. A New England stream arriving about the same time brought with it high educational ideals, which endowed the whole Northwest with colleges and institutions of learning."

The writer of this history holds no brief from the University of Wisconsin and has no desire to advertise it, beyond the opportunity to use it as a typical mid-Western institution of learning which welcomed from the first, and still does—as witness the opportunity afforded ex-President Meiklejohn, already referred to—a fusion with "the New England conscience."

John Bascom, a man of the highest type of New England character, was one of the presidents of that university. On December 13, 1911, memorial services were held for this New England teacher in the University, and among the tributes paid was one by Dean E. A. Birge, in which he said: "No social influence in Wisconsin during the past generation has been more potent than that of Dr. Bascom."

Dr. McCarthy, like many other Old Colony men, went West, not only to "grow up with the country" but to assist, if possible, the country in growing up with high ideals, including, if you please, "the New England conscience." A few quotations from Dr. McCarthy's book will give an insight into the purpose of his useful life, brought to an end a few years ago, by his untimely death, in the full tide of his usefulness, while still a young man:

Is there not some way of keeping history from repeating itself? Is there not some means by which we can maintain the youth of the nation, keep poverty at a minimum, and wealth, caste and privilege from commanding, conquering and finally destroying the nation?



The hardy woodsman, the sturdy American who has battled with the elements, swift rivers and vast forests, may frown at the suggestion of legislation mentioned here. This man in the legislature, powerful in his own strength, frowns upon laws for the limiting of hours of labor for women and children as "Un-American." It will be felt by men of this kind (and they have been the sturdy, old oaks of American life after all) that there is something very softening in this kind of legislation. Indeed a weakening influence may occasionally creep in but by looking over long periods of time we find that selfishness has always won, so it is not the softening influence that we need to fear but the pauperizing influence, which comes from another kind of paternalism—that of the largess of the great millionaire or the successful proconsul of Ancient Rome. The pages of Gibbon and Ferrero are full of instances which are comparable to actual conditions in our own country today. There is a corrupt influence from large concentration of wealth and its unhappy distribution which will cause more beggarism, more softening and more synchophancy than all the laws which can be put upon the statute books regulating the hours of labor of women and children.

Place before the American people the ideal of Lincoln and search keenly into our conditions to discover why there are not more Lincolns. If in our modern life, conditions are not conducive to the highest type of American manhood we should attempt to find some way of helping men to help themselves. What is the need of philosophy or an "ism" when there is obvious wrong to be righted? . . . If certain social classes are forming among us, can we not destroy them by means of education and, through hope and encouragement, make every man more efficient so that the door of opportunity may always be open before him?

Not only through missionary endeavors in other parts of the country but at home the descendants of the Forefathers have endeavored to teach Americanization in the least objectionable and more effective ways, through educational advantages open to everyone.

**Education and a Home Market**—Plymouth Colony has always had a proud record in education. The starting place of the public school system, it has continued to take a forward look, contributing money liberally and arranging courses for the enlightenment of those ambitious to pursue studies in technical, commercial, agricultural and vocational pursuits. Night schools have been established for many years for those who are employed during the day. Some are maintained by the larger towns, some by the Young Men's Christian Association branches, some as extension services from the colleges. There is another important educational movement which has made great headway in the county and is contributing much to good citizenship. That is the Four-H Boys and Girls Club movement.

Every town in the county has its public library and most of them have regular lecture courses open to the public. Parks and playgrounds furnish recreational and educational advantages and there are social centres with their attendant blessings. Museums and art galleries are available means for culture and lessons in refinement. The county is especially rich in newspapers. There are two daily newspapers published in the

county and many weeklies. One of the latter, the "Old Colony Memorial," published at Plymouth, has enjoyed a continuous existence since 1824 and has done its share in developing the community in its steady rise to better things and a more abundant life more than a century. The daily papers, published in Brockton, would be a credit to any municipality, many times the size of our only city. The excellence of the county press makes it expedient to devote an entire chapter to that subject. The educational value of the churches and that of the civic organizations and fraternal societies also call for extended mention.

The public schools give the children of the immigrants from all countries a common language and they begin to think of themselves as Americans. The public school is the most potent influence of all the agencies which enter into the process of making Americans. The history and purpose of American institutions, the stories of American heroes, many of whom were of foreign birth, and the songs of patriotism are taught in the schools to the descendants of immigrants who have sought these shores for three hundred years.

The World War had a levelling influence and the Liberty Loan drives, the Community Chest drives and other movements in which color, religion and nationality were forgotten, was the ice breaker which brought the Pilgrims from all nations closely together, with a wholesome respect for one another's characteristics and a charity for the differences which had formerly seemed insurmountable. A notable work was carried on then and is still carried on by the Brockton Young Men's Christian Association among the foreign-born. The organization and maintenance of the Cosmopolitan Club in that Plymouth County city is one of the side issues of the Americanization movement. The Cosmopolitan Club is composed of members representing twenty-six nationalities.

There were many foreign-born men and women employed in the Plymouth County industries who had war gardens, furnished them by their employers. They were deeply appreciative of the opportunity afforded them to have a garden of their own. Many of them never hoped to own or have the use of a bit of real estate under their own control. With this introduction to agriculture, some of the abandoned farms of the county have since been taken up by these war gardeners and they are among the most successful vegetable raisers and poultrymen of Southeastern Massachusetts. Strange as it may seem, agriculture has never been an over-crowded business in this or adjacent counties.

The "Old Farmers Almanac," by Robert B. Thomas, this year being its one hundred and thirty-fourth, is a work greatly appreciated by the farmers of the present as well as the past. Many people have preserved these almanacs for many years. In the "Farmers' Calendar" for December, 1796, the following admonition was given:



The cultivation of the earth, ought ever to be esteemed, as the most useful and necessary employment in life. The food, and raiment, by which all other orders of men are supported, are derived from the earth. Agriculture is of consequence; the art which supports, supplies, and maintains all the rest.

The "Farmers' Calendar" for May, 1811, contained a brief sermon which read:

Boston folks, they say, are full of notions—and so are country folks. By this time perhaps you think that I am a silly, notional creature. No matter for that.

Perhaps it is but a notion, but I think it will be for our interest to gratify these Boston people in their notions, by raising peas, beans, beets, carrots, cabbage, squashes, turnips and potatoes, &c., for their market. If you would know how this is to be done, go and look in your old almanacks.

Those who are skillful in tilling the soil find today it is for their interest to gratify the Boston market in its "notions" and they find it a remunerative calling. It is no longer necessary to take instructions from old almanacs, as the Plymouth County Extension Service supplies that need remarkably well and is constantly increasing in usefulness and popularity.

**God-father of His Country**—George Washington is called "the father of his country" and it required just such a great leader, general, and courageous gentleman to fight the Revolutionary War to a finish and to bring the United States through the hard testing time following its independence. He was one of the greatest military leaders of his time. There is a story that Frederick the Great sent to him a sword on which was inscribed "From the oldest general in the World to the Greatest." This story has been proven untrue, but many will agree that it should have been true. Previous to the Revolutionary War, Washington had been a successful business man, a success as manager for "Fairfax" and his gallantry in the Braddock campaign made him the logical commander of the undisciplined, ragged, hungry troops which constituted the Revolutionary forces. But, if Washington of Maryland was "the father of his country" Samuel Adams of Massachusetts was the God-father. John Fiske said of him "He stands second only to Washington as the greatest of Americans."

James Phinney Munroe has said:

Boston led the movement against the arbitrary rule of Great Britain, but it was Sam Adams who led Boston. Boston stirred up Massachusetts and the other colonies to resist taxation; but it was Sam Adams who stirred up Boston. And he did this, not by eloquence and fiery speech-making—for he was no orator; he stirred up Boston, he stirred up Massachusetts, he stirred up all the colonies by letters to the newspapers, by correspondence, voluminous and fiery, most of all by resolutions passed in that greatest political institution which America ever possessed or ever will possess,—the New England town meeting.... His first writing of consequence was a document prepared for a town meeting, a document which

was adopted, protesting against the proposed Stamp Act. This paper is important in being the first formal statement ever made by the Colonies that Parliament had no right to tax them, and in containing the very first suggestion that the Colonies get together to secure redress. . . . At his suggestion town meetings were held throughout Massachusetts to arouse the people against using British goods and to encourage the starting of domestic industries. . . . The king's government, therefore determined to break the spirit of the colonies by forbidding town meetings, by having such leaders as Adams and Otis arrested, and by sending troops to overawe the people. When the mother country took such violent action as this, Adams foresaw that reconciliation would be impossible, and from that moment, he afterwards said, he began to work night and day for the absolute independence of America. . . .

Adams saw that the only way to strengthen the cause of independence would be to bring the force of all the Massachusetts town meetings to bear upon the somewhat wavering policies of the Boston town meeting. Therefore, in the fall of 1772, he moved, in the Boston meeting, that "A committee of Correspondence" be appointed, to consist of twenty-one persons, to state the rights of the colonists, and of this Province in particular, as men and Christians and as subjects; and to communicate and publish the same to the several towns and to the world. . . . In Plymouth the vote showed that there were ninety to one ready, if need be, to fight Great Britain. . . . His cousin, John Adams, once enthusiastically called him "the wedge of steel which split the knot of *lignum vitae* that tied America to England." That is a true description of the part he played; and the force he used was the enormous democratic power of the New England town meeting.

James Octavia Fagan, the custodian for many years of the Old South Church in Boston, which contains so many priceless relics, tells in his book, "The Old South," that Case No. 11 in that edifice contains "an old 'Bill of Goods' made out in 1777 by Messrs. Blaisdell, Morrill and King to Thomas Cushing of Boston who as a member of the Committee of Correspondence, ordered the construction of the first ship of war built in America." Of course it is interesting to know about this ship of war, but the Committee of Correspondence referred to was one of the most notable achievements in the story of the Revolution. "This strange instrument of government was created on the suggestion of Samuel Adams when Massachusetts was at fever heat in its controversies with Governor Hutchinson and his royal master. It was really a new legislative body whose transactions, of the most practical nature, were conducted by correspondence between the representatives of the people from every nook and corner of Massachusetts. These Committees of Correspondence have been aptly called the 'beginning of the American Union.'"

Faneuil Hall in Boston has been called the "cradle of Liberty" and so it was, but there were other cradles in all the towns of the province and they were rocked just as patriotically; perhaps more so, as in Boston there was a large, powerful aristocracy wholly in sympathy with British rule and Samuel Adams was not at all popular in his home town for the attitude he assumed. Such men as Rev. Gad Hitchcock of Hanson, James Warren of Plymouth, Israel Fearing of Wareham, Josiah Keen



of Pembroke, Ebenezer Washburn of Kingston, Captain Ichabod Alden of Duxbury, and Colonel Edward Mitchell of Bridgewater, as well as scores of others, all over the Old Colony, helped stir up the spirit which animated Samuel Adams. The New England conscience was rampant.

Not only the men but the women were aroused in every fibre of their being to place their all on the altar of freedom. Deborah Sampson of Plympton, a quiet, unassuming girl, said nothing to indicate her response to the call to action, but secretly made a suit of boy's clothing for herself, slipped away under cover of darkness, and served as a soldier in the Revolutionary War, winning the personal commendation of General Washington for her heroism and devotion to duty.

The New England conscience had its great day at Concord and Lexington April 19, 1775, when it fired "the shot heard round the world." When Captain John Parker and seventy undisciplined farmers stood against eight hundred of the King's best troops and their captain would not disperse or lay down his arms, it was an absurd situation. But the New England conscience was on trial and it could not flinch.

Having attended to the work in hand of defending the experiment of democracy and preventing the annihilation of its founders by the Indians, answering back to the tyranny of England and winning the Revolutionary War, starting the abolition movement and saving the Union; going West, to find out what it was all about, and assisting in western development through the injection of Atlantic Coast ideals, the New England conscience has worked in a straightforward manner.

A tourist from Virginia once asked John Adams how to make a New England in Virginia and Adams' recipe was "Town meetings, training days, common schools and ministers." He later recorded in his diary his clear conviction that the meeting-house, the schoolhouse, the training field are the scenes in which New England men are formed.

The early Plymouth colonists worked much as those who rebuilt the walls of Jerusalem, each with his weapon in his hand. It was necessary at all times to be prepared to defend one's self and his household and indeed his community against savage attacks. Training days were days of instruction in preparedness and the skillful use of the means of defence. When the colonists went to church they carried their weapons with them, placed them close at hand in the meeting-house and kept a sharp outlook against surprises by enemies.

There are better ways of expressing this situation, but a recent magazine quoted a clergyman in Toledo, Ohio, as having said: "There is nothing that holds the family together like a little family prayer. Our Puritan fathers lived on parched corn, but they talked about God. They shot Indians through the port hole with one eye and taught the Bible to their children with the other." This is one of the Middle Western references to New England history which is not to be taken literally, at

least not verbatim. The common school trained pupils for a common cause.

The New England conscience, or influence in National legislation is an interesting study, showing how the Compact made on the "Mayflower" entered into the scheme of things in making laws through all the epochs and vicissitudes. The Western Reserve was largely settled by emigrants from Connecticut and this vicinity. At first it was a New England outpost; later a fortress for the defense of those principles which underlay social and political life of the New Englanders. Even today it is apparent in that mid-Western locality. Bancroft says of these settlers that "the compact establishment of the culture of New England in that district had a most beneficial effect on the character of Ohio and the development of the Union." Putnam and Cutler and the pioneers on the Reserve never ceased to be New Englanders, nor have their descendants forgotten whence came their strength. When Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin came out of the same territory they were established on the same fundamental law, having the same provisions which proved a source of greatness in Ohio. This salutary influence of New England spirit and character has gone on producing consequences which Daniel Webster said: "We shall never cease to see, perhaps, while the Ohio shall flow."

It was an interesting and helpful part which the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay counties, indeed the whole State, took in the colonization of Kansas. The early Abolitionists were agitated in the great Missouri question of 1819 and 1820. The people of Massachusetts vigorously opposed the extension of slavery in the new State. On December 3, 1819, a public meeting was held in Doric Hall in the State House at Boston, over which Daniel Webster presided. He made a speech concerning the danger of the further extension of slavery which probably expressed his real convictions on the subject of slavery, as well as any utterances which ever came from his lips.

In 1855 the New England Emigrants' Aid Company was formed and, by virtue of that organization, nearly five thousand emigrants from New England went to Kansas and settled the towns of Lawrence, Topeka, Osawatomie, Manhattan, Wabaunsa and Burlington, taking with them the New England passion for integrity, education, democracy and religion. They also fired the new free state with the spirit of abolition and patriotism, and Osawatomie Brown, who made his raid at Harpers Ferry and whose "soul is marching on," was not the only man in Kansas who had come to the conclusion that much had been said about freeing the slaves and it was time that something be done about it. The New England young men who had emigrated to Kansas were well represented among the Kansas young men who volunteered for the Civil War



from that new state, which furnished a larger proportion of volunteers than any other state in response to the calls of Father Abraham.

**Transplanting Church, School and Town Meeting**—The period when the New England emigrants went west to grow up with the country was a decade or two of great significance to the country as a whole. Over the mountains and across the plains, the emigrants took with them the life and traditions of the early settlers. In the vanguard were restless spirits, hunters, trappers and adventurers who built rude cabins. They were followed by farmers who built more substantial log houses, cleared land about these rude habitations and raised their crops amidst the charred stumps, until the roving spirit again influenced them to bundle their families and belongings into covered wagons and again take up the trail toward the setting sun.

Young and ambitious pioneers followed these adventurers, took up the farms which had been cleared, finished the job. They took with them their brides or went on ahead and soon returned for the women of their choice, to share with them the dangers and triumphs of a new country. They were unable to purchase farms in the East but a little money meant plenty of land in the West and youth and ambition supplied the other necessities. Soon harvests showed the results of industry and it was the beginning of what is still more apparent today, large barns and smaller houses, with wide surroundings of fertile acres, with tall corn with its golden ears standing on the stalks, and wheat waving in the winds which sweep over the prairies. Surplus crops were sold and the money bought additional land about their home buildings. The church, the school, the town meeting were there and on the way were the duplicates of Harvard, Yale and Dartmouth. Thus was laid the foundation of much of the great West. The names of many of the western towns are duplicates of those in New England.

In recent years the cry has arisen that New England is losing its industries, that the Great Middle West, with its slam-bang, plowing by the mile, killing hogs by the train load, raising corn twelve feet from ground to tassel, with an ear at every joint, and the stalks hollow and filled with shelled corn; and blowing its horn with a steam calliope which slumbers not nor sleeps, was getting so far ahead of the Atlantic Seaboard that the race was like that of the hare and tortoise. If that is not enough, there is a still further cry that the New England textile mills are moving to the South, and the West and South will soon absorb everything in the East except the east wind.

The cry has been heard in Washington and the United States Chamber of Commerce has been doing some impartial investigating. There are major economic factors that keep working indefinitely, and among them are raw materials, agriculture, transportation and other things equally

as important. The centre of industry is not fixed by temporary movements. The native New Englander has been so thoroughly convinced that, after all, New England is the best locality of the whole United States, that he has admitted it instead of going out to prove it. If he has a farm, a home or a factory—and many times he has all three—he wants to keep them, operate them and enjoy them. He does not place any price upon them. They are his, to have and to hold. He does not understand the Californian, whose constant theme is glorious climate and unparalleled felicity in his state, but is anxious to sell everything he owns. He listens to arguments why he should move his business South, but he does not want to live in the South and he wants his business where he lives. He likes to travel and enjoys his visits but, to him, the best of a journey is getting home. He is sold on New England but where he has missed a beat is in selling New England to others. The New England conscience is a state of mind instead of a state of vocalization. Therefore, New England continues to prosper in spite of the lack of blare rather than by reason of it, and that is where New England shows its "otherwise-mindedness." It may not be a winning trait but it is thoroughly Yankee.

Massachusetts is the nearest to Europe of any commercial State in America and Boston is the only city in the world which has a dry-dock sufficiently large to accommodate the largest ocean liner. Frank S. Davis, manager of the Chamber of Commerce Maritime Association, says that the port is not losing business, as many persons have been led to believe, but, on the contrary, is making decided gains. There is much business to and from the Pacific coast by way of the Panama Canal. The power of water transportation and foreign commerce combined is quite likely to attract Western plants eastward to fully as large an extent as raw materials are to develop Western industries. New England's position with reference to such swiftly developing major markets as the Orient and South America is constantly becoming more advantageous. Western and Southern industries are having some advantages at present occasioned by nearness to raw materials, but as these materials and rail transportation become more costly, the present advantages will be reduced to a minimum. New England business men continue to be ship-minded, with the ocean in front of them and the mountains behind them. The Atlantic has always furnished the scene for many activities since the beginning of the Old Colony and is one of the advantages which never dries up. This section is likewise mill-minded, and its industrialists constitute an asset not duplicated elsewhere. The skill and availability of labor and inventive genius has been passed on from generation to generation. The spirit of craftsmanship and the desire to work well and produce goods in which the workers can take pride still prevails. Ex-



cellent transportation facilities to leading central markets encourage industries of all kinds and the diversification of New England's industries, to the square mile, exceed those of anywhere else on earth. New England is well equipped to become the merchandizing laboratory of the country. That being the case, what are New Englanders going to do about it?

Manager Davis of the Chamber of Commerce Maritime Association urges the need of New England pulling together to secure what it wants and needs from Washington officials. A more forceful stand should be taken, after the manner of the demands from other sections of the United States.

**New England Always Adaptable**—According to Major P. F. O'Keefe of Boston, New England has built most of the rest of the country and is now preparing to tell the world "in no uncertain accents" how prosperous she still is. According to the New York "Post," in a recent editorial, "There have been changes since the days when the Dakota wheat fields were unheard of, but New England, contrary to the idea generally held, is adaptable. If she had not been, she would have suffered the commercial and financial decline which she is often represented as having experienced. The fact is, we are misled by the shift of the political centre of gravity to the Middle West. Because of New England's small number of electoral votes and the conspicuousness of Ohio as a presidential breeding place, most Americans think of our Northeast group of states as having lost its grip. This erroneous idea will not continue long, if enterprising sons of twentieth century New England, press the campaign of education they have so vigorously undertaken."

The New England conscience in Captain John Parker spoke to his seventy comrades that morning at Lexington when he said: "Stand your ground. Don't fire unless fired upon. But if they mean to have war, let it begin here." New England has stood its ground, in spite of contrary rumors, but it is now not unmindful that it has been drawn into the war between the states in the struggle for population, as reflected in the quest for new industries. Chambers of Commerce in many states let loose a daily barrage of slogans and statistics calculated to lure people from other states to their's, as if they possessed some golden opportunities which made life anywhere else an absurdity. This is still a young country, and every other part of it, with the exception of Virginia, is younger than Massachusetts and Plymouth County. Population is the primary concern of the Chamber of Commerce campaigns for industries, for there is a strong belief that a constantly increasing population develops a city or town and enhances real estate valuations. There is a craze for bigness, and a cry for development from without rather than from within. It may be in the hope of finding employment

for people already within its borders or in the hope that new comers will bring money with them which, in some way, may find its way into the pockets of those earlier on the ground. The impression the New Englander has of California and Florida—selected because they have in recent years been the most conspicuous types of advertising states—is a place where everyone he meets has a map in his hand and an oleaginous tongue in his head trying to sell land.

Speaking of New England's future, Roger Babson has said:

Her future depends upon what her past has depended upon. Here we have a wonderful location, but there are a lot of other points in Africa, Asia and South America which have as strategic locations as New England. We have natural resources and available labor but there are more natural resources and available labor in China than there are in America. New England's real success, New England's past and her present, are due to something more even than strategic location, natural resources and available labor, or even educational opportunities. New England's position in America and in the world has been due to certain underlying spiritual forces which have supplied the thrift, the courage, the faith, the industry, which have not only created but which have developed this entire country.

The railroads of the west were built by New England; the copper mines of the north were developed by New England; the mills of the south were built by New England. Yes, most of the cities of the United States were financed from New England. It is not alone through our natural resources, our available labor, our strategic location. There was underlying all that, fundamental religious training that we and our fathers and grandfathers received in some little white-spired country church in some little New England village.

**Potential Possibilities Not Yet Tested**—So far as developing the resources of New England—or let us stay right at home and narrow the statement down to Plymouth County—even the surface has not been scratched in these three hundred years. Even reforestation has hardly been attempted and the growing of forests is a sheet anchor against poverty in lumber, such as is being experienced already. Areas of land, now waste, might easily be made to yield, every thirty or forty years, a crop of great value. There are a few town forests and something in reclamation has been done recently but more will rapidly follow. There is much water power going to waste. Millions of eggs, thousands of cases of dressed poultry, barrels of milk, train loads of vegetables are arriving at Boston daily, to be distributed to Plymouth County and other counties, simply because we have not learned the lesson so well understood in the Middle Western States of scientifically exploiting resources. In recent years Plymouth County has become famous for poultry-raising of quality eggs and chicks and this is the beginning of a vast industry at home, to supply products until recently imported in even larger quantities.

Ex-Governor Channing H. Cox, of Massachusetts, vice-president of the First National Bank in Boston, early in 1927 addressed the Bankers Club of Chicago on "New England Old in Years But Young in Spirit,"



in which he said: "We rejoice when the West has an abundant harvest of grain, when the South continues her steady advance, and when the communities of the Pacific thrive and expand. We are not interested in our welfare alone, but in the common good of our country as a whole." In that statement he expressed the New England conscience to a large extent. It may be there are other sections of the United States which rejoice in the prosperity of rival sections, but it is doubtful if the statement of ex-Governor Cox could be said with as much truth of any other section.

He also said: "Come and spend a summer at our seashore with its rugged cliffs broken by sandy beaches, or among our wooded hills and mountains, or by the countless lakes and streams. Continue to send your boys and girls to our schools and colleges, but come to see them while they are there."

Carrying costs from Boston to the Pacific Coast, through the Panama Canal, are much lower than freight rates from Chicago to the Pacific Coast. New England has 2,000,000 horse power of potential hydro-electrical energy, and of this amount 1,400,000 has been developed. In New England there are about 20,000 manufacturing establishments. Aside from cotton, woolen and worsted, and shoe and leather industries, the remaining two-thirds of the total value of products is contributed by about 325 separate industries.

Having the industries, New England is especially open to attack from other states which have a hunger for more people and more manufactures. It is in a war of defense that she will point out her own advantages for industries to come or stay.

The Brockton "Enterprise," February 22, 1927, contained the following editorial:

Written into the records as one of the worst blizzards in twenty years, and by some observers likened to the raging fury that in November, 1898, lashed New England, last Sunday's storm left twelve dead in its wake. This was the toll on land and sea, eight of them the crew of a coastguard patrol boat.

Distressing though the record is, compare it with what happens in California, glorious and golden, when elements go on a rampage? Or with Florida, with its sunshine, surf, dream cities and palatial hotels? Floods, earthquakes, tornado—these exact larger toll of life and pile up vastly greater damage.

Before twenty-four hours had elapsed the principal highways between cities and towns of the State were open. Most industries operated with a full complement of help on Monday. The holiday yesterday was marked by the usual activities, with little inconvenience caused by the snowdrifts. There was no blockade and there was comparatively little suffering.

While the rest of the country has jeered good-naturedly the versatile climate which so admirably satisfies the urge for constant change, and commiserated us because of the rigors of our winters, we have offered only a feeble defence. As a dispassionate fact, each subsequent storm proves New England is the best and safest place in which to live.





## CHAPTER XXI

### CONTRIBUTIONS BY LATTER DAY PILGRIMS.

**Early Days When The Church Was The State and Cruel Punishments and Bloodshed Spelled Narrowness Warmed By the Sunshine of More Liberal Democracy—Jews Helped Fight For Independence; Negroes In America Before the Pilgrims; Chinese and Twenty-five Other Nationalities Have Contributed to County Prosperity—Notable Congress of Foreign-Born Citizens at Brockton Fair Grounds—Education of Colored People By Plymouth County Teachers.**

Halting for a moment at the period of the beginning of the Civil War, it is seen that there had been considerable immigration previous to that time and many of these immigrants fought in that great war for the preservation of the Union, as they have fought in all wars, including the Revolutionary War. Proud as we are and have a right to be of our kinship with the first comers, it is well not to lose sight of the fact that the "Mayflower" was loaded with immigrants. Those who have arrived since, have had their reasons for leaving their native lands and have greeted the New World with high hopes and aspirations, many of which have been abundantly achieved. The United States would be a lonesome place, indeed, without the immigrants and descendants of immigrants which make up the body politic. In these days, when there is so much thought given to diplomacy and the importance of trying to understand the people of all nations of the world, the American has a very definite task of trying to understand the people from all countries who have come here by recent vessels to become Americans. Without them the "Land of the free and the home of the brave" would be without most of its art, music, commercial life, financial prowess and the very foundation of the safety and stability of any nation, its agriculture. The influence of the immigrant, speaking in terms of common parlance, has not been an unfavorable influence. In the process of becoming Americanized, he has contributed much which America would be poor without. There are millions of Americans by adoption and many other millions in the process of becoming Americans, and in this immediate vicinity there are representatives from all over the world. The United States is peculiarly linked to every other nation.

It is no part of the policy of this history to go outside of its well-defined boundaries and it does not have to do so, to mention the Carnegie libraries. There are several of them in Plymouth County and adjacent counties, and they were the gifts of an immigrant. It is merely necessary to offer that instance as a suggestion. Every reader can fill in

for himself the details of the debt which Plymouth County owes to these latter-day Pilgrims.

Everyone can see the results of two or three generation of foreigners, how they adopt our institutions, ways of thinking, living and acting. Joseph V. Collins said in an article in the Forum of 1925: "America can take Jews from Russia and make the second generation as good at spending as at making money. She can take the son of a Slav peasant and make of him a Beau Brummel or an artist. America can transform a Dago (pardon the word) and a Dane and make of each a Wilberforce. She can adopt a German and Serb lad and develop each into a scientist and inventor fit to rank with the world's greatest. She can absorb awkward peasant boys from Europe and raise them up to be captains of industry. Surely these are not mistakes of America.

"Besides, methods and plans are in sight which will greatly promote the progress of Americanization."

According to Collins, it is our excessive partizanship which is poisoning our life, as its counterpart, unbridled patriotism, is distorting life in Europe.

Be that as it may, Plymouth County, in which latter-day Pilgrims find themselves, is a fairly liberal place in which to assimilate and grow to the full stature of life as an American. The Plymouth Colony was always more liberal than the Massachusetts Bay Colony which whipped Quakers through the streets, hanged witches in Boston, drove out Roger Williams and Anne Hutchinson. But the two colonies were finally united and the same laws prevailed. The State, ostensibly the home of religious freedom, was in fact founded by colonies of devout believers who sought liberty of faith for themselves without extending the same privilege to others. The earliest government was a church government. The church was the state, in a figurative sense, before the Commonwealth, as such, existed. By slow degrees the colonies ridded themselves of this religious despotism. It took one hundred and fifty years to get to the point of drawing up a state constitution in which the right of the individual to worship as he pleased was sedulously safeguarded. Even the early constitutional government was a Protestant government. The word occurs in Article 3 of the Old Constitution, where provision is made for support and maintenance of "public Protestant teachers of piety, religion and morality." This stipulation was later dropped for the Eleventh Amendment, which gave the right to all religious societies to elect their own leaders, and forbade the subordination of any one sect or denomination to another. The same amendment carried a repeal of the constitutional clause which empowered the Legislature to enforce attendance at church.

There is now in Plymouth County practically every denomination of religious believers to be found anywhere in the country, from Quakers



to Latter Day Saints, inclusive. There is a welcome, and special opportunities afforded to the immigrants, and religious prejudices are by no means as rampant as once they were, and no more in evidence than in the most liberal-minded communities in any part of the country.

These things had their day and have passed away. It is not to be wondered at that sectarian domination was part and parcel of New England in its first century. There may be those of our generation who criticize the Forefathers for the way in which they handled situations, their apparently rigid discipline enforced by merciless punishments, their narrow-mindedness and the like. But, rather than think of them as three hundred years behind the time, it is well to remember them as three hundred years in advance of the times in which they lived. If they had not been what they were then, we might be now as they were then, in those qualities for which we are prone to criticize them; if indeed we would have been permitted at all, through their preservation, to inhabit the earth.

The Pilgrims were more tolerant than the Puritans and even the Puritans were far in advance of the Old World. James Russell Lowell, in "New England Two Centuries Ago," says: "Next to the fugitives whom Moses led out of Egypt, the little shipload of outcasts who landed at Plymouth two centuries and a half ago are destined to influence the future of the world. The spiritual thirst of mankind has for ages been quenched at Hebrew fountains; but the embodiment in human institutions of truths uttered by the Son of Man eighteen centuries ago was to be mainly the work of Puritan thought and Puritan self-devotion."

**"Safety First" A Necessity**—The nineteen dwelling houses which the Pilgrims planned to build on their first street never became a necessity because half of the number of Pilgrims who landed at Plymouth died the first winter and entered "that house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens." On Cole's Hill, towering above Plymouth Rock, many of the brave voyagers had been laid to rest. Many times in the words of Tennyson had "the stately ships moved on to the haven under the hill." And many times were the survivors made to cry in their loneliness, additional words of Tennyson, "But Oh, for the touch of a vanished hand and the sound of a voice that is still."

It is neither a matter of fairness nor reasonable intelligence to try to judge the Pilgrims of the early seventeenth century by the standards of our own time. Rumors were brought to Plymouth of plans being made by the Indians to exterminate the white. This might easily have been done at any time that the Indians wished to stage a massacre. The Pilgrims could not afford to spend time in investigating the rumor. Their only safety lay in acting as though the rumor were true. They were sur-

rounded by savages, whom they did not understand and by whom they were not understood. Aside from these red men, there were no human beings less than five hundred miles to the north, where there were a few French settlers. An equal distance to the south, was the little colony of Jamestown. So far as being of service was concerned, neither settlement of white people could have lifted a finger in protection. This was the situation when the "Mayflower" returned to England, but not one of the Pilgrims who had come over in the "Mayflower" accepted the invitation of Captain Jones to return with him.

**Foreign-Born Americans**—Undoubtedly many reasons have actuated the coming of Europeans to these shores and some of those who have arrived could easily be classified as undesirables without any departure from simple justice but, for the most part, the immigrants have brought with them ambitions which have blossomed in the sun of freedom into the best traits of character found in their native land. Let us not deceive ourselves into thinking that there was only one nationality of newcomers to the colonies in its early days or that people of other countries, sometimes spoken of contemptuously and unthinkingly as "foreigners," are of recent arrival. Many European countries made contributions to early America. It is true that the English sent the largest number and their abiding trait was home-loving and freedom-demanding. The Dutch and Swedes poured contributions of sturdiness and enterprise into the "melting pot." The Germans were plodding and thrifty in the seventeenth century as they are now in this country. Many Irish came to this country just before the Revolution and there were hardy and aggressive members of that race already on hand. The influence of the Pilgrims has entered into the Americanization of the immigrants from earliest times and is by no means a dead letter today.

At the present time one person in seven living in our country came here from a foreign land. Some conservative genealogist of Plymouth County may ask "What has that got to do with us? There are not many 'foreigners' in this county." There is in Plymouth one important industry conducted by the Plymouth Cordage Company, employing several hundred people. It is the largest rope manufacturing company in the world, and has enjoyed a wonderful degree of prosperity, founded on excellence of its product, denoting good management and good workmanship alike. For generations a large percentage of the employees have been foreign-born, many of them Germans, with a sprinkling of many others. In Brockton thirty years ago the foreign-born were confined almost wholly to the people from the British Isles, Swedes, Polanders, Lithuanians, Canadians, a few Greeks, Italians, Chinese and Portuguese from the Azores. Now there are about thirty nationalities there. The story of the original town of the county and the only city



has been duplicated in all the towns, even the smallest, like Pembroke, Halifax, Plympton and Carver. They are populated in respectable numbers by latter-day Pilgrims who have come to this country to work out their destinies. Take them as a whole, they have contributed much to the county industrially and have given it very little trouble, as regards law and order.

So far as Jews are concerned, there was only one store in Brockton thirty years ago owned by a Jew and that was on the second floor of a Main Street building. Today the Jewish population in Brockton numbers several thousands. There are several synagogues, numerous fraternal organizations, their charities are generously and well administered and they have proven their right to the respect and admiration of the rest of the population. There are more Jews in Brockton than in any other one town, of course, and presumably more in Brockton than all the other towns in the county put together.

The best known Jew in the county is Isaac S. Kibrick, who came to America as a political refugee from Russia, his native land. He had been a teacher of Latin in Russia but knew no English. His determination to come to America was formed too late to enable him to speak the language when he arrived in New York, and began American industrial life by selling newspapers. He is now in the insurance business and in one recent year wrote nearly \$2,000,000 worth of life insurance. Moreover, he has held office several years in the Brockton Chamber of Commerce, as a public library trustee, director of the Brockton Hospital, and has been active in all civic enterprises.

The Jew has always been concerned in the upbuilding of America, loath as many people are to admit it, forgetful of the fact that it was a Jew who introduced Christopher Columbus to Ferdinand and Isabella and paved the way for the discovery of America. It was a Jew who suggested to Columbus the voyage of discovery and it was money confiscated from the Jews in Spain which financed Columbus' second voyage to America. The day after Columbus set sail for America 300,000 Jews left Spain, impelled by the edict that all Jews would be given three months to become Christians by joining the Catholic church and those who did not would be banished. They left while the going was good, before all their belongings had been confiscated. Italy, England and France did not want them and many of them went to Turkey. Later the Sultan of Turkey sent a letter to Ferdinand of Spain, thanking him for sending so many new people to help him build up his country.

There were forty-six Jews in our Revolutionary War and a proportionate number in the War of 1812 and the War of the Rebellion, while in the World War there was the largest representation of Jews, in proportion to the number in the country, of any race. At the beginning of the nineteenth century there were one million and a quarter Jews in

America. In 1927 there are at least 14,000,000, not because they have multiplied so fast but because America treats the Jew with more Christian charity than any other nation on earth, the efforts of anti-semitic societies to the contrary notwithstanding.

Since this subject has been entered upon, it is a matter of justice to remember that it was not alone the public spirit of the descendants of the embattled farmers who fought at Lexington and Concord or even at Bunker Hill who erected the monument in memory of the Battle of Bunker Hill, or Breed's Hill, to be historically correct, but through the munificence of Judah Touro, a Jewish gentleman of New Orleans.

It is also a matter of common gratitude to keep in mind that Haym Salomon, one of the immigrants before the Revolutionary War, from his native Prussian-Poland, loaned the colonists \$600,000 to help finance the struggle for independence. He died in Philadelphia in 1785 and at his death \$400,000 had not been returned.

Among the latter-day Pilgrims who arrived within a few years have been hundreds who have taken advantage of the opportunities for education in the night schools and Americanization groups organized in Plymouth County. In 1927 there were in the night school at Brockton about nine hundred foreign-born eager to learn all they could which would enable them to take their rightful places with the people of the county. Of this number six hundred and seventy-two pursued academic studies. The average age was thirty years and none were under sixteen. Several were over sixty. The outstanding instance of progress in the citizenship classes was Rudolf Ungewitter, twenty-four years old, employed by a landscape gardener in North Abington. He qualified for an evening high school diploma during the few weeks study. He was educated in his native land but needed instruction in the English language. Others were practically without education when they entered the school and their progress was remarkable.

Stephen Dalton, editorial and feature writer for the Brockton "Enterprise," said of this school: "Strangely contrasting types are encountered in the citizenship classes, for which raw material is supplied by Ellis Island or kindred gateways. At a desk sits a man of middle age writing, 'I sit at a desk.' Memories go back to the Volga, to the knout and bayonet and the red ruck of pogroms, to hideous nights when the Kol Nidre Nidre wailed the anguish of yesterday more poignantly than the sorrows spanning the centuries. Fifteen years have elapsed. Sometimes it takes more than fifteen years to heal wounds inflicted in fifteen minutes. But he's trying, and manfully."

Marinus Van Der Pol came to this country from Holland March 21, 1923, friendless and penniless, leaving behind in the land of dikes and tulips, Elizabeth, a buxom, smiling Dutch girl whom he would dearly have liked to bring across the water with him as his bride. Three years



later he returned for Elizabeth and this time the cabin was booked for two. They make their home in Rockland and both attend a night school to become thoroughly Americanized. He is employed at the Bay State nurseries and has the cleverness in floriculture which seems to come naturally to the Dutch.

**Notable Assembly of New Citizens**—A few years ago the Brockton Fair Grounds contained thousands of newly made American citizens who had come to Plymouth County from many lands. The affair was largely arranged by the immigration secretary of the Brockton Young Men's Christian Association, with the coöperation of many organizations and citizens in the county. One of the speakers was James J. Davis, Secretary of Labor, himself an immigrant. In February, 1927, the "Saturday Evening Post" contained a story by James Stevens on "New New Englanders," in which he used the name of John Bianco for the hero of his story, and referred to this New Citizens' Day at the Brockton Fair Grounds as follows:

In Brockton, Massachusetts, the shoemakers and their families turn out in a tumultuous celebration of Citizenship Day. Thirty thousand men, women and children of twenty different nationalities heartily applaud the Americanization orations. It is an inspiring sight, this demonstration of patriotism by the foreign-born and their sons and daughters. But the mark is totally missed if the demonstration is regarded as the expression of a group or a class. For the matter-of-fact truth turn to the individuals in the crowd. Here are men who earn from thirty-five to seventy dollars a week at piece work. They have known no labor battles with their employers since the war, though Brockton is the shoe city of New England.

They all wear royal raiment. Their wives wear satin and silk. Diamonds flash from scarfs and fingers. Every child is lusty and well fed. Here is a man who has worked in one factory for sixteen years. He owns a home valued at \$6,800 and his family of five rides luxuriously in a big sedan. Here is another who drives a \$2,000 car and whose home cost \$3,000.

Let him visit the factories during the working hours and see the acres of parked cars, follow the stream of them when the day is done, and even a college sociologist will see that these two examples are average ones of the men who have had the capital of their labor invested for five years or more at Brockton. The real reason they celebrate is because they can afford it so well. Materialism is a fearful word to utter in the land of Emerson and Amos Bronson Alcott. But it is certainly New England industry which has been the greatest force in uplifting its immigrants and Americanizing them. It has made their labor an investment of capital which assures them of the material benefits the immigrants of other days dreamed about.

Through the materialism of industry the old class barriers have been destroyed and ranks based upon efficiency and skill have been established. Every worker now has a great deal more to lose than his chains. And far more inspiring to the Americanization of John Bianco than the fine ideals expressed in speeches are his modern house, his automobile, his radio, his graphophone, his upholstered furniture, his evenings at the moving pictures, his tailored clothes, his summer week-ends in the White Mountains, his wife's vice-presidency in the Parent Teachers' Association, his membership in the Elks, his bank book, his share in the new community hotel, the privileges and usufructs of his rank as a veteran plumber. Is a man with such

possessions anything like the pitiful wretch who has always been pictured as the typical member of the working class? Then so's your old banker. Here is a New Englander. Here is a man of respected rank in the all-embracing American capitalist class.

Every one of these centres has its successful stories, of course; the accounts of ambitious and gifted young immigrants and immigrants' sons who climbed to the top ranks of American life.

This story by James Stevens gave a faithful picture of conditions which are experienced by the latter-day Pilgrims who came to Plymouth County and, by the mere investment of the labor of their hands and the use of their intelligence, sharpened by taking advantage of the opportunities afforded by the evening schools, in the Young Men's Christian Association classes and extension courses, win the security, comfort and luxuries which are the rewards. The writer left out of his account a strike in the Brockton shoe factories which was initiated and continued by designing men in an attempt to tear down Brockton's prestige and prosperity, but who eventually faded away from the city and the atmosphere of prosperity and industrial harmony in which they had no part.

Plymouth County has in recent years received important contributions to its population from the Azores, Madeira and the Cape Verde Islands, constituent parts of the Portuguese republic. These people are industrious and usually law abiding and thrifty. They have contributed much to agricultural supply in Plymouth and Barnstable counties, many of them being natural gardeners who make their farms smile with a harvest which have not been common to them under former ownership.

It seems late in the day to speak of the Swedish people as latter-day Pilgrims, as that country has been sending people to America since 1638, at least. The country of John Morton, Swedish-American signer of the Declaration of Independence; of John Hanson who presided over the first congress of the colonies before George Washington was elected President of the new country; of Captain John Ericsson, Swedish engineer and inventor, who invented the "Monitor," the first turreted ironclad war vessel, which not only saved the Union Navy as the result of the famous and decisive battle with the "Merrimac" in Hampton Roads March 9, 1862, but transformed the navies of the world, has not left Plymouth County out in making its contributions of citizens who have been a credit to the country and location of their adoption.

The ancestors of most Americans in earlier days came from Great Britain, Ireland, Germany and the Scandinavian countries. Consequently a large percentage of the immigrants up to a certain time were from those same countries. But since forty years ago southern and eastern Europe has sent their many thousands every year, many of them fleeing from political tyranny or religious persecution of the present century,



for these things have by no means passed away and the spirit of intolerance is still an active foe to the brotherhood of man. Immigrants from Italy, Austria-Hungary, Poland and Russia have come to escape military service at home or unendurable economic conditions. Armenians and Syrians have come here to escape the tyranny of the Turkish government. Jews have fled from persecution in Russia and elsewhere. All of these have their representatives in Plymouth County and the task of Americanizing them has been far different than was that of making Americans out of those who were from countries in which there was more progressive agriculture, thriving manufacturing, skilled labor and more participation in government. Many of them have been hardy and industrious people and their rise in industrial life in the community has been creditable to them and of value to the county.

**Negroes Arrived Before Pilgrims**—The Negroes have contributed much to the development of the county. There have been several notable teachers who have given their best efforts to bringing this race into a worthy position in society, by going to the South, or elsewhere, from Plymouth County homes.

Rev. Alan Hudson, for many years pastor of the First Congregational Church in Brockton, was deeply interested in the education of the colored race. He spoke on several occasions before the students of Howard University in Washington, and in 1904 that institution conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Divinity and made him a trustee. He later became president of the university and held that position until his death in 1916.

Rev. J. Stanley Durkee, Doctor of Philosophy, for several years pastor of the South Congregational Church in Brockton, succeeded Rev. Dr. Hudson as president of Howard University, and remained in that position until early in 1927, he became one of the successors of Rev. Henry Ward Beecher as pastor of the Plymouth Congregational Church at Brooklyn, New York. The two men were friends and, shortly after the passing away of Rev. Dr. Hudson, a memorial volume, entitled "In the Footsteps of a Friend," was written by Rev. Dr. Durkee. The title proved a prophecy, so far as continuing the work among the colored people was concerned. A copy of this book was sent to Rev. Dr. Newell Dwight Hillis, as that time pastor of Plymouth Church, and in response he wrote to Dr. Durkee:

I have returned from a long lecture trip to find the news of the death of Alan Hudson and your tribute of affection to our old friend. It spreads a black cloud over the face of the sun. I have always associated Hudson with life, and never thought of him in relation to death,—and I am unable to realize that the announcement is true.

This inability in itself is a kind of argument for immortality, and, if the intellect questions, the heart stands up and answers, "I have felt." He was only at the

beginning of his career and what treasure was locked up within him, none of us can ever know.

Another Brockton minister who became deeply interested in educating the colored people was Rev. Pitt Dillingham, several years pastor of Unity Church in Brockton, later identified with collegiate education among Negroes in the South. Rev. Dr. Charles M. Melden, several years pastor of the Central Methodist Episcopal Church in Brockton, was in later years president of a colored university in the South.

The first church organized among the colored people in Brockton had as its organizer and first pastor, Rev. Sabastian D. Turner. He remained in Brockton until he went into the army, as chaplain of a colored regiment in the World War. He was induced to remain in the service after the war.

One of the conspicuously successful colored men of Plymouth County is Watt Terry, once janitor of the Brockton Young Men's Christian Association Building and several apartment houses in Brockton. He later took up real estate and at one time controlled a large amount of real estate in that city, being one of the largest owners of record of real estate in the county. Later he changed his base of operations to New York City, where he became conspicuously successful. He retains his home in Brockton, is a leading member of the Messiah Baptist Church in that city, rated among the wealthy residents and progressive citizens. He has been much in demand in recent years as a speaker before organizations of colored men throughout the East, giving them inspirational talks, based on his own experiences.

Negroes landed at Jamestown two years before the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth, and the Indians were here years without number before either Negroes or Pilgrims, but the white people had strong antipathies against both black and red. This *rouge et noir* antipathy asserted itself in the way in which Negroes and Indians were treated in the meeting-houses. Negro slaves were placed in the furthestmost corners of the galleries and sometimes in pens on the walls about the galleries. Sometime Indians were required to sit on the stairs leading to the pulpit or to the gallery but this did not disturb the Indians to any serious extent. Probably any of them would have preferred to squat upon the floor, as was their custom in their wigwams.

In the Plymouth town records, as late as 1715, is a donation recorded that "the owners of the seat before the place where the Negroes and Indians sett at the meeting-house Doe give 3 pounds Towards Erecting a plase for said Negroes and Indians to sett in Elsewhere." These were evidently war captives who had been sold into slavery.

There is a record that in 1676 in Bridgewater, the town voted to "see what should be done with the money that was made of the Indians that



were sold last, and it was voted that the soldiers that took them should have it."

John Bacon, a man of prominence in Barnstable about that time, directed in his will that his Indian slave, Dinah, be sold and the proceeds "improved by my executors in buying Bibles."

There were white slaves also in those days, men, women and children, brought by transports from Ireland, in most cases, under an agreement that the persons so imported should be sold as slaves for a time agreed upon. The Boston "News-Letter" contained, in 1727, an advertisement which read: "A likely Servant Maid's Time of about Five Years, to be disposed of." Another advertisement, under date of January 5, 1764: "Just imported from Dublin in the brig 'Darby' a parcel of Irish servants, both men and women, to be sold cheap by Israel Boardman at Stamford." (Connecticut.)

Some servants of this type were bought in Plymouth County and the neighboring counties but not many, so far as the records show.

The first Fugitive Slave law made no distinctions concerning the color of slaves but the articles of confederation between all the New England colonies included the following:

If any servante rune away from his maister into another of these confederated jurisdictions, that in such case, upon ye certificate of one magistrate in ye jurisdiction out of which ye said servante fledd, or upon other due prooffe, the said servante shall be delivered either to his maister or any other yt pursues such certificate or prooffe.

Sometimes Negro slaves were admitted to church membership and the number of "praying Indians" became large, thanks to the work of Rev. John Eliot and Roger Williams, more especially than to the Pilgrims. No general effort was made to convert slaves, however, as it was feared their conversion might entitle them to personal freedom. Some ministers protested against this lack of missionary work in 1696, proposing to the General Court, "That ye wel-knowne Discouragement upon ye endeavours of masters to Christianize their slaves, may be removed by a Law which may take away all pretext to Release from just servitude, by receiving of Baptisme." No notice was taken of this proposal.

Occasionally there was a brand saved from the burning, the most conspicuous example being that of Phillis Wheatley, who not only became a church member but a poetess worthy of mention. When about eight years of age, Phillis was brought from Africa with other slaves. She learned to read and write, had an understanding of religion and became author of a volume of poems. Her book bore on the title page her name, under which was the line "Negro servant to Mr. John Wheatley of Boston in New England." Her book was entitled "Poems on Various Sub-

jects Religious and Moral." Telling her own story in one of the poems, she wrote:

'Twas mercy brought me from my Pagan land,  
 Taught my benighted soul to understand  
 That there's a God, that there's a Saviour too;  
 Once I redemption neither sought nor knew.  
 Some view our fable race with scornful eye,  
 "Their colour is a diabolic die."  
 Remember, Christians, Negroes, black as Cain,  
 May be refin'd, and join th' angelic train.

In the early records of the first church in North Bridgewater (now Brockton) it is recorded under date of March 19, 1789, "Voted to build a porch, provided it can be Don without expense to the parish, and also to put seats in the porch and Belfree for the negroes, and sell the room where the stairs and negro pew now are."

Evidently there was some resentment on the part of the colored people at being expected to occupy a loft especially set apart for their use, and there is a later record, August 4, 1800: "To see what measures the parish will take to prevent the *blacks* from occupying the seats appropriated to the use of white people, so as to prevent any disturbance in time of Public worships." At that meeting it was "Voted that the side galleries and the seats in the Body of the meeting-house be appropriated to the use of the white people, and the seats in the porch above to the use of the blacks."

Whether this vote was carried out and there was no controversy worth mentioning for sixteen years, we have no way of knowing, but there is no official evidence of dissatisfaction recorded until December 5, 1816, when it was "Voted that the People of Color may occupy the two back seats in the west gallery of our meeting-house and no other seats, or that they may have ground for one pew in the northwest corner of the Gallery, and ground for another pew in the North East corner of the Gallery as they choose, and that the Parish clerk serve the people of color with a copy of this vote."

Booker T. Washington, by one writer defined as "the wisest and most influential leader that the Negro race has ever had in America," was for a time a citizen of Weymouth, a neighboring town. Dr. Washington was, it will be remembered, entertained by President Roosevelt, at a dinner at the White House, and for this act of courtesy to a great leader, was greatly criticized by those who worried about the Negro being given a place of social equality with a white man, regardless of his achievements. To this fear Dr. Washington himself said to a white audience at Atlanta, Georgia, in 1895: "In all things that are purely social, we can be as separate as the fingers, yet one as the hand in all things essential to mutual progress." Dr. Washington devoted his life to training Ne-



groes in industrial pursuits in a school which he built at Tuskegee, Alabama, in support of which many generous contributions were sent from Plymouth County.

**Our Inter-relations With China**—There are comparatively few, perhaps, who realize that there has been any contribution from China which has entered into the industrial or agricultural life of Plymouth County, or that Plymouth County has in any way had its effect in China. The average man, when Chinamen are mentioned, thinks of the laundry business but there is in Hanson a Chinese farm on which scientific methods are employed and good results obtained.

The Porter Congregational Church in Brockton has for many years maintained a foreign pastor in China. It was the first church in Plymouth County to have a Chinese Sunday school and has assisted in educating several Chinamen who have become industrious citizens of Brockton and other towns in the vicinity.

Rev. and Mrs. John Delmore Mowrey returned to Brockton in March, 1927, after working as missionaries in China, forced to leave their foreign field temporarily on account of war-torn conditions. Their daughter, Julia Elizabeth Mowrey, was born in Ku Ling, in the mountains north of Changsha, where the fighting started. Mrs. Mowrey is the daughter of Rev. and Mrs. David B. Matthews of Brockton.

Nearly fifty years ago, Captain Calvin Bryant, a deep water sea captain whose home was in Plympton, made a voyage once in two years to China. He was a thorough shipmaster and a keen observer. He had a son whom he wished to start in some position which would give him the greatest advantages and decided to take him to China. One day the sea captain sailed on his homeward voyage on the old windjammer, leaving Nelson Bryant, his son, as clerk in an office in China, telling him he would be back in two years and expect to find him doing so well that he would not want to return. Captain Bryant told the writer: "I always believed boys were like cabbage plants—they never amounted to much until they were transplanted."

Nelson Bryant became attached to the Chinese Customs Service and remained in the employ of the Chinese government many years, until he retired from active business, returned to this country, and took up his residence, with his wife, a former Marshfield girl, in California.

There is a considerable Chinese population of laundrymen, restaurant owners, real estate operators, farmers and poultry-raisers in Plymouth County. Something is true of the Chinese which is, perhaps, not true of any other nationality, unless it is the Indians. A Chinaman may be illiterate but by no means ignorant. This is because much of the knowledge and culture of China is handed down to succeeding generations by word of mouth and one may converse with an illiterate China-

man and find him responding with a quotation from Confucius; an experience which would challenge one to make inquiries. He would be likely to find that while the man was not well-read he might be well-taught.

Baalis Sanford Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons, in Brockton, conferred the degrees a few years ago upon an honored member, a Chinaman of distinction, Dr. Tsieh.

When the term "Americanization" is used it is of doubtful meaning, because many flagrant violations of courtesy to newcomers have been done in that name. In its better sense, teaching the foreign-born newcomer to desire and attain a higher standard of living and, by means of education and opportunity, show him how it can equitably be obtained, is the true Americanizing.

The Negro slaves were brought to America in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, as captured, barbarous Pagans from the jungles of Africa. As slaves in America they were taught to wear clothing, to live in houses and work, although in a lazy and inefficient way. But they were kept in ignorance and superstition and were helpless and shiftless for the most part when the proclamation of emancipation gave them a freedom they did not understand. The Chinamen early in this country were accustomed to living upon a few cents a day and satisfied with the standard of living which it brought them. The immigrants from various countries had low standards of living, many were ignorant, herded themselves together and used their own language instead of making sufficient efforts to learn that of their new country.

The children have gone into public schools, first instituted in Plymouth County, and the older people have been taught higher standards of living by the trade unions, among other agencies. In these trade unions many immigrants have received their first lessons in citizenship and self-government.



## CHAPTER XXII

### WHEN THE CRUEL WAR WAS OVER.

**Abington Was Largest Town in the County, and Aggregate Population Was 63,974—Town Academies Were Worthy Branches of "The Chief Glory of New England"—First State Normal School In America Erected Building in Bridgewater in 1846—Banks, Insurance Companies, Industries, Societies and Inventions—Ship-Wise County Unwilling to Part With Training School for Marines.**

It is generally known by most people that cruel punishments, such as sitting in the stocks, standing in the pillory and being lashed at the whipping post were practiced in the early days of the Plymouth Colony, but fewer have any idea how long these inhuman practices continued. In the early days a man, in order to vote, had to possess a certain amount of property and be a member of a certain church. It was comparatively few years ago that one could serve as governor of Massachusetts unless he possessed \$10,000 in property. When the late Governor William E. Russell was elected, it was necessary for some of his friends to sign over to him certain property to comply with this requirement. This circumstance led to the condition being abolished.

The growth of a more democratic consciousness came in the early part of the nineteenth century. Laws were changed in the interest of humanity and justice. Cruel punishments were stopped to a large degree, and sanitary jails took the place of those which had been disgraces. Well-kept poor houses, institutions for the insane, schools for the deaf and dumb were established, not in every county, but through coöperation and agreements which made such institutions available regardless of their location. Free schools for boys had been established in the earliest days in Plymouth Colony and in the early half of the nineteenth century girls were admitted to such schools everywhere, following an earlier example from this section. The first Normal school for the training of teachers was established in Bridgewater as a part of the great advance in education in Massachusetts, under the inspiring leadership of Horace Mann. American literature became enriched by the writings of Bryant, Longfellow, Whittier, Holmes and Lowell, all Massachusetts poets; and by the prose writings of such men as Emerson and Hawthorne. The Transcendentalists of Concord began to be heard from and liberality in religion and the spirit of toleration gained its greatest impetus.

At the close of the Civil War nearly a million, within a year, returned from army to civil life. Some to whom army experiences had given a

taste for adventure, established new homes in the West. It was at this time that the Union Pacific Railroad was built to connect the valley of the Mississippi with the Pacific Coast. The prime mover in that great railroad project was Oakes Ames of Easton, just over the line from Plymouth County in Bristol County. The Civil War showed the great necessity for better means of transportation and from that time on building railroads progressed with great rapidity.

The earlier railroads were short, like the Old Colony Railroad which connected Plymouth with Boston, a distance of 39 miles. Later short railroads were joined together and it became possible for the first time to take long journeys without changing cars, and something like rapid transit was known. By 1880 the railroad mileage of the country was more than three times as great as it had been at the opening of the Civil War. In 1862 Congress encouraged two private companies to build a railroad to connect the Pacific Coast with the East by loaning them large sums of money and giving them vast tracts of land along the sides of the great railroad. One company started at the Pacific and built eastward and the other worked westward up the Platte River. They met near Ogden, Utah, where the golden spike was driven in May, 1869.

Far up on the bare face of one of the Rocky Mountains, visible from the trains of the Union Pacific Railroad which his genius helped build, is a monument made of the mountain rocks erected in honor of Hon. Oakes Ames of North Easton, manufacturer, capitalist and politician, as well as railroad builder, a member of the much respected Ames family of Massachusetts.

**Comparison At Close of Civil War**—The first vessel constructed in Plymouth Colony registered forty or fifty tons and was built in 1641. Iron manufacture was an early industry in the Colony, being introduced in the town of Raynham in 1652, by James and Henry Leonard. They had previously had forges in Lynn and Braintree. It was some years later, however, before iron manufactures began in Plymouth County, as Raynham is in the adjoining county of Bristol. The Plymouth Colony did not progress as rapidly as the Massachusetts Colony, owing to the poverty of its inhabitants. The two colonies were united in 1692.

Plymouth, Bristol and Barnstable counties took on county governments in 1685 and the combined population did not exceed 10,000. Probably Plymouth County started with about 4,000 inhabitants. At that time Scituate was the most important town in the county. In 1690 the county raised a body of troops, under Major Benjamin Church, to march against the Indians who were ravaging that part of Maine which lies between the Piscataqua and Kennebec rivers. Nineteen men were sent and of this number Scituate sent six, Plymouth four, Marshfield and



Bridgewater three each, Duxbury two, and Middleborough one. Twenty-three pounds was raised for their equipment, according to the same ratio, showing the comparative importance of the towns which constituted the newly-born county. Bristol and Barnstable counties also contributed men to go with Major Church; so, five years after the counties were organized, we have, in this coöperative effort, some indication of the beginning of the union of forces and efforts in the New World.

New towns were added and the boundary lines changed from time to time, and the story of the early struggles and developments up to the Civil War has already been related. In Civil War times the largest town in the county was Abington. At the close of the war, in 1865, its population was 8,576. Brockton was then North Bridgewater and its population was 6,335. It would have required the combined population of North Bridgewater and Scituate at that time to equal that of Abington, and Abington also led in business and wealth. Abington in those days included the present towns of Rockland and Whitman.

Plymouth County towns and their population in 1865, at the close of the Civil War were as follows: Abington, 8,576; Bridgewater, 4,196; Carver, 1,059; Duxbury, 2,377; East Bridgewater, 1,977; Halifax, 739; Hanover, 1,545; Hanson, 1,195; Hingham, 4,176; Hull, 260; Kingston, 1,626; Lakeville, 1,110; Marion, 960; Marshfield, 1,810; Mattapoisett, 1,451; Middleborough, 4,525; North Bridgewater (now Brockton), 6,335; Pembroke, 1,488; Plymouth, 6,075; Plympton, 924; Rochester, 1,156; Scituate, 2,269; South Scituate (now Norwell), 1,578; Wareham, 2,842; West Bridgewater, 1,825. The total population at that time was 63,974, less than the present population of Brockton.

In that year, when the Boys of '61 came marching home to again take up the vocations of peace, Judge William H. Wood of Middleborough was judge of probate and insolvency. Several other county officers claimed Plymouth as their place of residence. They were Daniel E. Damon, register of probate and insolvency; William H. Whitman, clerk of courts; William S. Danforth, register of deeds; William R. Sever, county treasurer; William H. Whitman, D. J. Robbins and Daniel E. Damon, overseers of the House of Correction at Plymouth, the shire town; James Bates, county sheriff, jailor and master of the House of Correction.

The county commissioners were William P. Corthell of Abington, Charles H. Paine of Halifax, and Harrison Staples of Lakeville; with Alden S. Bradford of Kingston, and Jedediah Dwelley of Hanover special commissioners. Samuel Stetson of Duxbury was public administrator and William H. Whitman, of Plymouth, master in chancery. Commissioners of wrecks were Elisha Holmes, Duxbury; Nehemiah Ripley, Jr., Hull; John Baker, Otis Baker and George H. Hall, Marshfield; Jo-

siah D. Baxter and Barnabus H. Holmes, Plymouth; Perry L. Parker and John Tilden, Scituate; and John Damon, North Scituate.

The trial justices were Isaac Hersey, Abington; Lewis Holmes and Elisha G. Leach, Bridgewater; William H. Osborne, East Bridgewater; James S. Lewis, Hingham; Ebenezer Pickens, Middleborough; Rufus L. Thatcher, North Bridgewater; Albert Mason, Plymouth; Caleb W. Prouty, Scituate; William Bates, Wareham; Austin Packard, West Bridgewater.

The custom house officers were: For port of Plymouth, Thomas Loring, collector; Charles O. Churchill, deputy collector and inspector; for port of Duxbury, Harvey Soule, deputy collector and inspector; for port of Kingston, Stephen Holmes, 2nd, deputy collector and inspector; for port of Scituate, Joseph S. Drew, deputy collector and inspector.

The State Almshouse at Bridgewater was under the charge of Levi L. Goodspeed as superintendent, and Joseph B. Thaxter of Hingham, James Ford of Fall River and James H. Mitchell of East Bridgewater as inspectors. Albert G. Boyden was principal of the State Normal School at Bridgewater, assisted by George H. Martin and Elisha H. Barlow.

Those were the days of the academies going in full strength, some of them already with many years of usefulness to their credit, including Bridgewater Academy in Bridgewater, incorporated in 1799. Right after the Civil War the principal was Horace M. Willard, afterwards principal of the Howard Seminary at West Bridgewater. Principal Willard had as assistants Mrs. S. C. W. Gammell and Miss Elizabeth Crafts.

**Oldest State Normal School**—The first State Normal School building erected in America was at Bridgewater in 1846. On the 19th of April, 1838, sixty-two years to a day after the colonists defied the British at Concord Bridge, the Legislature passed a resolve, accepting an offer from Hon. Edmund Dwight of Boston. He agreed to give \$10,000 "to be expended under the direction of the Board of Education for qualifying teachers for our common schools" upon the condition that the Legislature would appropriate a like amount for the same purpose.

The Board of Education decided to establish three schools for the training of teachers, each to be continued three experimental years. On May 30, 1838, it was voted to establish one of these schools in Plymouth County. On December 28, 1838, the board voted to establish the other two at Barre and Lexington.

In an effort to raise \$10,000 for the erection of three buildings for the school in Plymouth County, Artemus Hale and other men of the county spent two years. Appropriations were voted by the towns of Abington, Plymouth, Duxbury, Marshfield and Wareham, from surplus rev-



enue which had previously been divided by the general government. Some of the towns, however, refused to redeem their pledges when it was decided to place the school in Bridgewater. The funds were not forthcoming, so an offer from the town of Bridgewater to use the Town Hall free, was accepted. This arrangement continued three years. For three additional years the Town Hall was used and an annual rental of \$50 was paid.

The school opened with twenty-eight pupils, twenty-one of whom were women. The first principal was Lieutenant Nicholas Tillinghast, a graduate of the West Point Military Academy. He served efficiently from 1840 to 1853. There have been only three other principals, Marshall Conant, who served from 1853 to 1860; Albert G. Boyden, who served from 1860 to 1906, and his son and successor, Arthur C. Boyden, the present principal.

The State provided a permanent home for the school in 1846. The building was enlarged at various times, increasing its capacity as the demand increased. In 1881 a building for chemical, physical and industrial laboratories was erected. In 1890 these buildings were removed and a massive brick structure, eighty-six feet by one hundred and eighty-seven feet, three stories and basement was built. In 1894 this building was enlarged, increasing its capacity fifty per cent. The following year, Tillinghast Hall was added, furnishing accommodations for seventy-two additional pupils. At times the combined capacity was 275 Normal students and a practice school of 500 pupils.

The boarding department of the school was added in 1869. A residence for the principal and dormitories were erected, accommodating fifty-two students. In 1873 the dormitory was enlarged to accommodate one hundred and forty-eight. In 1891 the Laboratory Building was converted into a dormitory for thirty-two students.

The buildings are surrounded by grounds covering sixteen acres, with a beautiful park and campus.

**Famous Academies at Their Height**—The principal of the Derby Academy at Hingham, incorporated in 1797, was Henry F. Munroe and his assistant, Miss Elizabeth A. Andrews.

Hanover Academy at Hanover was comparatively new at that time, having been incorporated in 1861. P. L. Woodbury was the principal.

The Ingleside School for Young Ladies at Middleborough was a popular institution of learning, having as principal Mrs. S. G. Dodd, established in 1866. Miss Mary V. Maxwell was assistant principal and Mrs. E. W. Foss teacher of music. It was designed as a school of the highest order, combining thorough individual instruction with all home influences and attractions.

There was a boarding school for boys at Middleborough, with Rev. P.

L. Cushing as principal. The most famous school for higher education in Middleborough, however, was the Pierce Academy, incorporated in 1808, which was attended by many men who went from it to make their mark in the world. The principal in 1867 was J. W. P. Jenks, A. M., with C. A. Cole as assistant and A. G. Pickins, teacher of music.

There was a Pratt Free School at North Middleborough, incorporated in 1865 with M. C. Mitchell principal and Miss Martha Keith assistant.

A famous academy had as its principal in the Civil War, Rev. J. Moore. It was the Partridge Academy at Duxbury, concerning which more is told in that part of this history referring to the town of Duxbury. The academy was incorporated in 1629, about the time that John Alden and Captain Myles Standish became leading citizens of that town. Previous to the Civil War one of the teachers at Partridge Academy was Mrs. Mary A. Livermore, so well remembered for her remarkable work in the Civil War in connection with the Sanitary Commission.

As early as 1838 Rochester Academy was established in Rochester. The principal after the Civil War was Miss Cornelia Rounseville. She had as her general assistant Miss Catherine L. Barker. Miss Harriett C. Clapp was teacher of painting and F. B. Pitcher, teacher of music.

A school established immediately after the close of the war for young ladies was the Sea Side Boarding School for Young Ladies and Misses at Mattapoisett. Mrs. H. B. Pratt was principal and Miss Sarah E. Pratt assistant, and especially in charge of instruction in physical development, as she had had previous experience as an instructor in accordance with Dio Lewis' popular system of gymnastics. The school was urged as "offering a judicious application in gymnastics in connection with the ocean air and sea bathing to aid essentially in the development of vigorous and healthy constitutions."

**Industries, Banks and Insurance Companies**—To continue a description of Plymouth County at the close of the Civil War, the principal articles being manufactured were castings and rolling mill machinery at Bridgewater by the Bridgewater Iron Manufacturing Company, established in 1825; nails, tacks and shovel plates by the East Bridgewater Iron Company and cotton gins by the E. Carver Company in East Bridgewater; cordage by the Plymouth Cordage Company, which began business in Plymouth in 1824, and by the Hingham Cordage Company of Hingham, established in 1853; wooden ware by the Hingham Wooden Ware Company; cotton batting by the Old Colony Batting Company of Plymouth; duck by the Old Colony Duck Company of Plymouth, the Plymouth Woolen and Cotton Company of Plymouth, and the Russell Mills at Plymouth, the latter manufacturing since 1855; cut nails by the Parker Mills at Wareham, established in 1845, and the Tremont Nail Company at West Wareham, established in



1858; castings and stoves by the Plymouth Iron Foundry at Plymouth; rivets and water wheels by Plymouth Mills, Plymouth, since 1846; tacks and rivets by Plymouth Tack and Rivet Works, Plymouth; flannels by Plymouth Woolen Mills; nails and tack plate by Robinson Iron Company, of Plymouth; and fancy cassimeres by the Star Mills at Middleborough, which commenced in 1863. Boots and shoes were being made in many small home and dooryard shops, each employing a few neighbors. A directory of North Bridgewater, now the city making the most men's fine shoes of any city in the world, contains the names of several whose business is given as boot and shoe manufacturers, in 1865. In that year North Bridgewater manufactured 1,112,766 pairs of boots and shoes, valued at \$1,466,900, and employed in the industry 1,267 persons. Sewing, pegging, cutting and scouring machines were then in use, run by steam power. Chandler Sprague was manufacturing lasts in North Bridgewater and this revolutionized that branch of the shoe business. That same year \$4,000,000 worth of shoes were manufactured in Abington. The manufacture of musical instruments was a thriving industry in North Bridgewater and in some other towns.

At that time there were five National banks in the county, the Abington National Bank of that town, Hingham National Bank of that town, Old Colony National Bank of Plymouth, Plymouth National Bank of Plymouth, and the National Bank of Wareham. The Savings banks were: Abington Savings Bank, incorporated in 1853; Hingham Institution for Savings, Hingham, incorporated in 1833; Middleborough Savings Bank, Middleborough, incorporated in 1867; North Bridgewater Savings Bank, North Bridgewater, incorporated in 1851; Plymouth Five Cents Savings Bank, Plymouth, incorporated in 1855; Plymouth Savings Bank, Plymouth, incorporated in 1828; Scituate Savings Bank, Scituate, incorporated in 1851; South Scituate Savings Bank, South Scituate; Wareham Savings Bank, Wareham, incorporated in 1847.

There were two insurance companies, the Abington Mutual Fire Insurance Company, incorporated in 1856; and the Hingham Mutual Fire Insurance Company, incorporated in 1826.

The Brockton Agricultural Society was not organized until 1874, but in 1865 there were in existence the Plymouth County Agricultural Society, incorporated in 1819; the Hingham Agricultural and Horticultural Society, incorporated a few years previous to the war; and the Marshfield Agricultural Society, organized November 19, 1864.

The Masonic Order was the only one which had numerous members in Plymouth County at that time, of the orders which are so strong in the county today. The list consisted of the following lodges and the year in which they were organized: Fellowship, Bridgewater, 1797; Social

Harmony, Wareham, 1823; Plymouth, 1825; Old Colony, Hingham, 1792; Cornerstone, Duxbury, 1801; Paul Revere, North Bridgewater, 1857; John Cutler, Abington, 1860; Pythagonian, Marion, 1862; Mayflower, Middleboro, 1864.

Temperance organizations were very popular at that period, there being, in 1865, fifteen lodges of the Independent Order of Good Templars, and sixteen divisions of the Sons of Temperance. That same year Daniel Lawrence and Sons were advertising as "the only manufacturers of Medford Rum, still enjoy the reputation of manufacturing the best rum in the States, duly authorized by State license." It was the forty-fifth year for that popular firm which cautioned people to "order direct from us, and we will warrant perfect satisfaction." In order not to clog the mails it is stated in passing that the firm is now out of that business.

Permanent telegraphic communication between America and Europe dates back to 1866. This communication by cable has been prominently identified with Plymouth County, since the United States' end of the French cable lands in Duxbury, not far from the old John Alden house, the home of John Alden and Priscilla Mullins of the "Mayflower."

Shortly afterwards the dynamo, a machine for making electricity cheaply and on a large scale, came into use. Brockton, in Plymouth County, has the distinction of being the first city in the world to have an electric street railway, built especially for electric power. It was one of the first cities to be lighted by electricity. Thomas A. Edison was in Brockton to see the starting of the first electric street railway.

Alexander Graham Bell invented the telephone a little later and many early experiments with the telephone were worked out in Brockton.

It must be admitted that New England is not as "county conscious" as is the South or West. Nevertheless there is a certain pride which goes with county definitions in the Old Bay State. Perhaps this is especially true of Plymouth County, in which the early events took place and in which the influence of the Pilgrims still remains to a considerable extent. People are proud to have been born and reared in Plymouth County or in the Old Colony, and a perusal of these pages will give some of the reasons why, and afford sufficient justification.

Plymouth County has an area of about 720 square miles and thirty miles of seacoast.



## CHAPTER XXIII

### AGRICULTURE IN THE OLD COLONY.

**Communitistic Experiment Caused Famine, So Pilgrims Were Hardly Dressed to Receive Company When "Anne" and "Little James" Docked in 1623—First Thanksgiving When Captain Standish Turned Out the Guard and Massasoit Drank a Toast—Hard Schooling for Indians Before They Were Given Wives—First County Farm Agent Was a Real American—Present Activities Include Projects in Home Economics and Boys and Girls' Club Work—Reclamation of Lands Dates Back to First Expansion.**

The early New England farmer expected, of course, to raise the staple grains which he had cultivated in the old country, and among these wheat naturally held an important place. On the coast, however, wheat would not thrive. Thus in 1666 Morton's "Memorial" records the failure of the crop at Plymouth in characteristic phraseology: "This year much of the wheat is destroyed with blasting and mildew, as also some other grain, by worms, and the drought aforementioned; but the Lord hath sent much rain for the recovery of the remainder, through his great mercy." There are similar entries for the two years preceding. The settlers wrestled stubbornly with unfavorable conditions, but they had to give up in the end.

In 1764 Governor Hutchinson remarked that little wheat had been raised in Massachusetts for a long time, except in the towns on the Connecticut River, and in 1826 Judge Davis added that since Hutchinson wrote "wheat has not been a constant crop—in any places nearer to the seacoast than the county of Worcester." It is significant that the word "corn," which means "wheat" in England, was gradually transferred in the Colonies to what was at first called "Indian Corn," so that finally the adjective was not needed and is now seldom used.

**Communism Was a Failure—**The first planting and tilling of the land was a communistic experiment and the second year there was an insufficient supply of food, so that, had it not been for the supply of oysters and clams, it is likely that the entire Pilgrim population would have been wiped out. There is a record made by Elder Brewster of his thankfulness that they were allowed to "suck of the abundance of the seas and of the treasures hid in the sand."

Governor Bradford and his advisers decided to have a certain plot of land assigned to each man of Plymouth on which he was expected to

raise a sufficient crop for the family for the sustenance of which he was responsible. The community plan had not been a success, but when individual responsibility became the rule, in the language of Bradford, "This had very good success; for it made all hands very industrious, so as much more corne was planted than otherwise would have bene, by any means ye governor or any other could use, and saved him a great deall of trouble and gave farr better contents. The women now wente wilingly into ye feild and tooke their litle ons with them to set corne which before would aledg weaknes and inabilitie; whom to have compelled would have bene thought great tiranie and oppression."

Governor Bradford moralizes on this result to the effect that communism is not a success.

The experience that was had in this comone course and condition, tried sundrie years, and that amongst godly and sober men may well evince the vanitie of that conceite of Platos and other ancients, applauded by some of later times;—that ye taking away of propertie, and bringing in comunitie into a comonwealth, would make them happy and flourishing; as if they were wiser than God. For this comunitie (so far as it was) was found to breed much confusion and discontent, and retard much employment that would have been to their benefite and comforte. For ye yong-men that were most able and fitte for labour and service did repine that they should spend their time and streingth to worke for other men's wives and children, without any recompense. The strong, or man of parts, had no more in devisiion of victails and cloaths, than he that was weake and not able to doe a quarter ye other could; this was thought injustice. The aged and graver men to be ranked and equalised in labours and victails, cloaths, etc. with ye meaner and yonger sorte, thought it some indignitie and disrespect unto them. And for men's wives to be commanded to doe service for other men, as dressing their meate, washing their cloaths, etc., they deemd it a kind of slaverie, neither could many husbands well brooke it . . . . And would have bene worse if they had been men of another condition. Let none objecte this is men's corruption, and nothing to ye course itselfe. I answer, seeing all men have this corruption in them, God in his wisdom saw another course fiter for them.

**Newcomers on "Anne" and "Little James"**—The second winter the Pilgrims were on half rations. There was a famine which "pinched them sore." By the time their corn was planted the third spring "all their victuals were spent, and they were only to rest on God's providence; at night not many times knowing where to have a bite of anything the next day. And so, as one well observed, had need to pray that God would give them their daily bread, above all people in the world."

When the "Anne" and the "Little James" arrived in 1623, bringing wives and children of some of the Pilgrims they were much distressed to witness the appearance of the men and women of Plymouth. Bradford says: "And truly it was no marvell they should be thus effected for they were in a very low condition, many were ragged in apparrell, and some litle beter that halfe naked. For food, they were all alike. The best dish they could presente their friends with was a lobster, or a



peece of fish, without bread or anything els but a cupp of fair spring water. And ye long continuance of this diate and their labours abroad, had something abated ye freshnes of their former complexion."

If the newcomers were disappointed in the appearance of the Pilgrims after three years in Plymouth, the Pilgrims were also disappointed in the appearance of some of those who had accompanied their wives and children on the "Anne" and the "Little James." Bradford said of them: "some were so bad, as they were faine to be at charge to send them home again the next year." There were sixty newcomers in the whole party and among them Captain Myles Standish found a new wife, Barbara, to console him for the loss of Rose, who had died the first winter, and Priscilla, who preferred John Alden and told him so. Governor Bradford was also a fast worker and within less than a fortnight from the docking of the "Anne" one of the passengers, Mistress Alice Southworth, became the first lady of the land, if the wife of the governor was given that high-sounding term in those days.

Edward Winslow returned to England in the "Anne" to give his personal attention to some matters of business for the Plymouth Colony and among other necessities which he sent back to Plymouth the following year was four head of cattle, "the first beginning of any cattle of that kind in the land."

**Wild Turkey and Thanksgiving**—Agriculture in New England started with the first summer of Governor Bradford's administration, with twenty-one men and six boys to perform the labors. According to the records of Bradford, six acres were planted with barley, wheat, and peas, and twenty or more with corn. The twenty-six acres were fertilized by burying herring with the seed and this demanded the transportation by hand of many tons of herring from Town Brook to the fields. There were neither horses nor cattle; the only domestic animals at that time being dogs, some of which were owned by the Pilgrims and others by the Indians.

By fall, Leyden Street, as it is now called, contained seven dwelling houses, the meeting-house, and three storehouses. The results of their agricultural endeavors brought them a fair harvest and in contemplation of these rewards, Governor Bradford appointed the first Thanksgiving Day, "that they might after a special manner rejoice together after they had gathered the fruits of their labors." To this religious festival and feast of conviviality they invited Massasoit and his body-guard, which numbered ninety warriors. It is said that the feasting lasted for three days and that the *pièce de résistance* was a bountiful supply of wild turkey. Captain Myles Standish called out his entire army and put it through its military paces to impress and entertain the Indian monarch and his advisers. The Indians also contributed to the

holiday features and in the language of the present day, a good time was had by all. There is a record that the first taste of intoxicating liquor was given Massasoit and his chief advisers on a previous occasion, but undoubtedly a supply of the white man's fire water helped to make a merry day of the first Thanksgiving.

Thanksgiving was, as a matter of fact, the only holiday the Pilgrims allowed themselves to enjoy. It was many years before Christmas was observed. Any recognition of Christmas was forbidden by law long after the Pilgrims had gone to their reward.

The observance of Thanksgiving was very popular with the Pilgrims and it has been very popular ever since with their descendants and those who have come in other ships since the "Mayflower" quit running. It was an occasion, however, which was observed at different dates in different parts of the country, after the birth of the nation.

We owe to a New England woman, Mrs. Sarah Josepha Buell Hale, the fact that Thanksgiving became a national festival, observed in all parts of the United States on the same day. Mrs. Hale was editor of "The Ladies' Magazine," published in Boston, in 1828; and of Godey's "Lady's Book," published in Philadelphia, in 1837. For twenty years she advocated making Thanksgiving a day observed simultaneously throughout the country and in 1864, President Lincoln adopted her suggestion and made a proclamation accordingly. Mrs. Hale wrote "Woman's Record," "Mary's Lamb," and many other works. She was born at Newport, New Hampshire, October 24, 1790, and died at Philadelphia in 1879.

While it is generally supposed that Thanksgiving Day was an original idea with the Pilgrims, it is said on good authority that the Pilgrims, during their residence in Holland, found the custom among the Dutch, and that it was even then an ancient custom. The Pilgrims adopted it after coming to Plymouth.

The annual public Thanksgiving Day in 1776 was appointed by the Council, at the desire of the House of Representatives, to be observed December 12. The proclamation for that day reflects the convictions of the people of that year in words as follows: "With grateful devotion to offer solemn praises to the all-gracious Author of every good, for the various invaluable benefits conferred on and continued to this State in particular and to the United States in general; especially that, whilst British avarice openly claims and British tyranny vigorously endeavors to wrest from us the free exercise of those rights which Heaven alike bestowed on all mankind and without which human life is less a favor than the grave. He has given these States a just sense of their worth and of the impossibility of assigning those rights to man without the guilt of rebellion against God, treason to the present and treachery to



all future generations; that He has united these States in a resolved vindication of those rights, even to the last extremity; has given them a general council of patriots wise to direct; raised up generals faithful to execute the measures necessary for their defense; and animated so many of the sons of America to grasp the sword and with manly cheerfulness endure the fatigues of war in support of that freedom which is the birth-right of all; has led them by the hand from step to step till we have seen these States, compelled through oppression, to assert their native right to freedom and independence in a united declaration which the impartial world must justify; . . . has wafted to our shores most valuable cargoes of warlike and other stores necessary for our defense and support at the very time when most needed; returned our adventurers on the sea generally enriched and victorious; detected very dangerous conspiracies when at the crisis of their execution; . . . and to add fervent prayers . . . that our public councils and the general congress in particular may be inspired with wisdom, unanimity and firmness . . . that our brethren everywhere may be spirited to take the field, when called in so great a cause; that all the movements of our armies may be ordered in divine mercy, and that they may be victorious in every engagement; that our foes may be defeated in all their hostile designs, driven from our land, and permitted no more, either by bribery or corruption to sap our civil and religious rights, or by fire and sword to waste and destroy; that peace may be restored on a just and permanent basis, and the rights and liberties of America secured to the latest generation; that this people may be placed under the wisest and best form of government; that the union of the American States may be established by a confederation never to be dissolved: that the Spirit of God may be plentifully poured out, and a universal reformation of heart and life ensue . . . .”

**First County Farm Agent**—The Indians raised corn in a crude way and stored it to carry them through the winters between harvests. From them the Pilgrims learned much which was of value, especially from Squanto or Tisquantum whom Freeman Tilden has facetiously called the first county agent. The great American agriculture had its beginning in the Plymouth Colony and the county agent system has had much to do with its development and continues so to do.

Indian corn deserves to be called the typical American product and it dates from the Pilgrims and their employment of herrings, under the instruction of Squanto, in lieu of ordinary fertilizer. It is still the leading American crop. Its annual production exceeds that of any two other food crops combined. The Pilgrims rendered thanks to God for their annual crop of twenty bushels of corn and carefully preserved their seed corn. Could they have looked ahead three hundred years they might

have seen two billion, three hundred million bushels of corn being harvested,—an amount of grain sufficient to give a bushel and a half to every man, woman and child on the face of the earth. According to Dr. Arthur W. Gilbert, commissioner of agriculture of Massachusetts, corn is the largest single American product of any kind, agricultural, mineral or manufactured. In addition to this, it is the only important product, aside from cotton, of which the United States produces more than all the rest of the world combined. And the great cotton industry was made possible by the invention of a Massachusetts man, Eli Whitney.

**Worthy Successors of Squanto**—The history of the Plymouth County Extension Service dates back to the formation of the original organization in 1915. It was then incorporated under the name "Plymouth County Farm Bureau, Incorporated, Massachusetts, 1915." The object of the Farm Bureau was "to promote all interests which have for their purpose the advancement of agriculture and rural life in Plymouth County." It was supported by United States Government, State, town, and county appropriations, individual donations and subscription fees of one dollar for membership. Any resident or farm landowner in the county could secure a membership for the payment of not less than one dollar, or a contributing membership on payment of over one dollar. Non-residents or farm landowners in Plymouth County could secure an associate membership on payment of one dollar.

Farm Bureau work was established in accordance with the Act of Congress known as the Smith-Lever Bill of May 8, 1914, an Act of Congress H. R. 13679 "for farmers' coöperative demonstration work outside of the cotton belt," and the Massachusetts Act of 1914, Chapter 707, an Act "to authorize counties to aid corporations organized to promote agriculture and rural life."

Burtram Tupper was employed as the first Plymouth County Agent. Desk room was had with the Brockton Chamber of Commerce. During the year 1916, Miss Helen Norris was employed as Home Economics Adviser and Miss Annie L. Burke as part-time supervisor of the club work.

Upon the resignation of Mr. Tupper in May, 1917, Warren S. Baker was employed to begin work June 15, 1917. Miss Mary S. Dean was appointed Home Demonstration Agent in November, 1917, to succeed Miss Norris, upon her resignation.

Lyman P. Thomas of Rock was the first president of the Farm Bureau Advisory Board. Mr. Thomas resigned on December 27, 1917, because he was not in accord with the views generally held by the other members. He believed, he said, that too much machinery was being built up. He believed in a simple form or organization, with the agent



spending most of his time in the field, giving aid to the farmers mainly in marketing, believing that the two needs of farmers were "to be assisted in marketing their products and to be let alone." W. H. Wyman, Abington, succeeded Mr. Thomas as president on March 31, 1918.

The impetus which the war need for all possible sources of food gave to the work made it seem advisable on June 1, 1918, to employ Frank L. Davis as Assistant County Agent. Mr. Davis resigned January 1, 1920, and no successor was appointed.

The change from the Farm Bureau organization to the present one occurred in 1918, in accordance with Massachusetts General Laws, Chapter 273. The work which had been carried on under the Advisory Board of the Plymouth County Farm Bureau, hereafter was to be under nine Plymouth County Trustees for County Aid to Agriculture. In the new organization there is no membership. All citizens of Plymouth County, however, have equal rights to benefits from the work. It is supported entirely by appropriations from the United States Department of Agriculture, the State, county, and towns. It still continued to operate, however, under the name Plymouth County Farm Bureau.

A monthly publication, with the exception of short intervals, has been issued since the beginning of the organization, under the name "The Plymouth County Farmer." The first copy appeared October 15, 1915, in stapled form, nine inches long by six inches wide. In the year 1919, the form changed to a four-page paper, nine inches by twelve inches. It became an eight-page paper, eleven inches by fifteen inches in January, 1923.

The Trustees for County Aid to Agriculture voted on April 20, 1922, to change the name of the Plymouth County Farm Bureau to the Plymouth County Extension Service, because they found that the Farm Bureau organization still lived in each county, apart from the Extension Service. Their work, since the separation, has been confined chiefly to the reducing of costs of materials to farmers by coöperative buying and securing beneficial legislation. They have been one of the most influential agricultural organizations in the State and county in obtaining legal support for farmers.

The Trustees voted in November, 1922, to employ a full-time club agent. Hitherto Miss Annie L. Burke had been employed for part-time service. Stanley L. Freeman was appointed County Club Agent in April, 1923, as a result.

Gardner C. Norcross was appointed County Agricultural Agent on February 1, 1924, following the resignation of Warren S. Baker on January 1.

The first home of the Plymouth County Farm Bureau was with the Chamber of Commerce at No. 23 Main Street, Brockton. In 1918 the

offices were moved to No. 31 Center Street, and in June, 1923, to the Home Bank Building, where they are now located.

**County Extension Home Section**—The story of the Home Section of the Plymouth County Extension Service begins back in the days shortly after the Federal Smith-Lever Act of 1914 gave such an impetus to extension work in agricultural and home economics. It goes back to the time before the Plymouth County Farm Bureau re-organized and federated with the American Farm Bureau, giving over its educational program to the Plymouth County Extension Service, with authority vested in Trustees, County Aid to Agriculture. There was no break in program with this change since the directors of the original Bureau became the Trustees for the Extension Service.

On June 1, 1916, Miss Helen M. Norris began her duties with the Plymouth County Farm Bureau. Her title was County Adviser of Women. At that period, war activities were greatly influencing home problems. Miss Norris' chief activities with the homemakers concerned themselves with food production and conservation—gardens, canning and drying, storage. This was before the day of the club agent, and Miss Norris' most notable achievement was with boys' and girls' clubs, supplementing in the county the work of Miss Annie L. Burke, whose chief concern was with home and school gardens. Miss Norris organized and carried on food, clothing, canning, potato, corn, and market garden clubs with such success that when an assistant was needed in the Junior Extension Department of Massachusetts Agricultural College, she was elected to the position. She left Plymouth County June 1, 1917.

On November 19 of the same year, Miss Mary S. Dean came to the county as the first Home Demonstration Agent under the coöperative agreement between the United States Department of Agriculture, Massachusetts Agricultural College, and Plymouth County Farm Bureau, now Plymouth County Extension Service.

This was the beginning of Home Demonstration work in the county as we know it today. It is true that up to 1923, when a full-time club agent was added to the Extension staff, junior home economics clubs were organized and carried on by the home demonstration agent and that club work was a most important project in her program, but from the beginning her chief responsibility was to the women home-makers of the county.

Organization of a Home Section was begun. Among those serving on the first Advisory Council were Mrs. Nathan D. Loud of North Abington; Miss Helen Holmes, Plymouth; Mrs. Amelia C. Brown, Brockton; Mrs. Dorothy H. Thayer, Pembroke; Mrs. Abbie F. Jenkins, Whitman; Mrs. Granville Tillson, Middleborough; and Mrs. Grace M. Poole, Brock-



ton. Mrs. Brown was also our first woman trustee, serving until 1926, when she was succeeded by Mrs. Edith Garniss, Brockton. This council, which met at first monthly, and more recently four or five times a year, gave active assistance in planning and carrying out the county program. Mrs. Nancy I. Perkins of Brockton and Bridgewater is the present chairman. Mrs. Theron Fisher, Elmwood, acts as vice-chairman, and Mrs. George W. Alger, West Bridgewater, as secretary.

From the start nearly every town in the county has had its local leaders and organization chairmen who have been responsible for initiating the home extension program in the town or community, and have helped in carrying the program through. In many instances, local leaders, trained by the State extension specialist and the county agent, have carried the whole program with the local group. In 1926, seventy volunteer women leaders were actively engaged in forwarding the extension program and nearly five hundred women were enrolled in extension projects.

The program of work reflects our changing home problems during the last ten years. In December, 1918, the agent wrote: "Plans for the coming year will include further development of the conservation project, with special work on meal planning, food for young children, and the conservation of time, energy, and strength in the preparation of food, especially through good kitchen arrangement and the use of labor-saving devices." A year later, clothing work had found a place on the program. In 1926, the agent's report showed active work in foods, nutrition, clothing, home management and house furnishing, as well as miscellaneous activities including special work at fairs and in coöperation with various organizations in the county. This program has been carried out in part through groups or classes organized for special study, and practice of improved methods in food, clothing, or home management, and in part through home visits. Two kitchen contests have been conducted, one in 1924, one in 1926. These contests have resulted in rearranged kitchens all over the county. Photographs and slides have carried their story far afield. Kitchen tours have given first hand information and suggestions to many a home-maker.

Annual home-makers' day has become an event in many a county home. This is usually observed in June. The day is given in part to portrayal of the year's work by the way of tableau, "stunt," playlet, or pageant, in part to social intercourse, and in part to an inspirational address by some such speaker as Mrs. Elizabeth MacDonald of Boston University or Dr. Caroline Hedger of the Elizabeth McCormack Memorial in Chicago, both of whom have spoken in recent years. On this day, too, the extension leaders meet with our State extension specialists to discuss plans for the coming year.

In the ten years of its existence, the Home Section has passed from its preliminary stage of emergency work needed because of war conditions, to its present status as an educational factor which is playing a large part in keeping constant those standards of home making and ideals of home life which have made many a community of our county the "old home town" to preëminent home builders throughout our nation.

**The 4-H Clubs**—Before the Boys' and Girls' 4-H Clubs in Plymouth County became a recognized department of the Extension Service, then known as the Farm Bureau, the county agent worked to some extent with the boys and girls, giving assistance to the Brockton school gardeners and organizing contests for the schools of the county in collecting nests of tent and brown-tail caterpillars. Agitation throughout the county for a club agent resulted in proposals to the Farm Bureau by George L. Farley, then superintendent of schools in Brockton, and Le-Baron Atherton, both members of the Farm Bureau advisory board. June 1, 1916, Miss Helen Norris was appointed adviser to women with the understanding that she should give a part of her time to teaching home economics, especially canning, to girls. That same summer the services of Miss Annie L. Burke, a teacher in the Brockton schools, who had charge of the school gardens, were obtained for part-time work in the county schools.

Miss Burke and Miss Norris established both agricultural and home economics clubs in many of the towns in the county. Although Miss Burke's work was mainly with garden clubs she started poultry, pig, and dairy clubs. The Plymouth County Trust Company gave many pigs away and loaned the money for the purchase of others by the boys and girls. The garden work was most timely. Boys and girls who had available land and would agree to certain conditions relative to caring for the garden until harvest time, were enrolled. As a result, in 1917, while our country was at war, prices high, and foodstuffs scarce at any price, there were more than 6,000 boys and girls in Plymouth County who had gardens to whom the appeal of the President of the United States to produce more food could be issued. Even though many of these gardens were small, in the aggregate their products amounted to considerable food stuffs. Not only was that food valuable but, as Miss Burke reported at the end of that season, "When men for years, unused to hoe or shovel, undertook the cultivation of some land, the young people were a most encouraging factor. Knowledge of what they had done and were doing made it easier for father to take a hand."

Among the boys who became especially noted for their garden work at that time were James Spadea, Gust Anderson, George Erickson, Leo J. Fitzpatrick, Charles F. Oliver, Jr., all of Brockton, and Harry A. Ball of Bridgewater. Local leaders were of course necessary. Principals



of schools saw the need for help and its value and responded to the need. In addition to the work in Brockton the principals and teachers of the schools in Abington, Middleborough, Mattapoisett, Bridgewater, Plymouth, Wareham, Rockland, and Whitman helped many young gardeners. Miss Norris left the county in June, 1917, and Miss Mary S. Dean became home demonstration agent in November of the same year. Their work with the girls in food, clothing, and canning clubs made such clubs permanent organizations.

April 1, 1923, Stanley L. Freeman was appointed full-time county club agent. He picked up the organization of girls' clubs and that of the agricultural clubs, interest in which had waned with other post-war weakening of enthusiasm. Projects most valuable to Plymouth County, those showing a possibility of offering lessons to the people of the county and those offering opportunities for profit to the boys and girls,—garden, poultry, clothing, food, and canning, were emphasized. Twenty or more towns out of the 26 in the county have had enrollments in club work each year since. Club work was not emphasized in Brockton because of the lack of need for it with the school garden work continuing and the home economics courses offered in schools.

Four-H Clubs organized separately and studied definite subjects. Each of the members put into practice at home those things taught about chickens, gardens, cooking, or sewing. In addition, through camps, fairs, and county-wide organizations, a club spirit was developed with ideals of service to others and better citizenship and leadership. Outstanding club members who not only did excellent club work themselves but led clubs and taught others what they had learned, were Ralph Sturtevant, Howard Waterman, and Elizabeth Grover of Halifax, John Dennett and Elizabeth Fillebrown of Plympton, Grace Dean and Miriam Burgess of Plymouth, Edward Loomer of Abington, Eileen Whelan of Hingham, and May Beary of Whitman.

Local leaders, because of the number of club members and the size of territory in Plymouth County, are the most valuable cog in the 4-H club machine. Men and women, older boys and girls, have responded marvelously to this call. Some of them have been a big factor in the success of the clubs for a period of several years and have helped many boys and girls in that time. Some of the long-time local leaders were Ruth Burr, Esther Benson, and Marguerite Lamson, Hingham; Charles Frahar, North Abington; Ruth Sturdy, Whitman; Edith Schweitzer and Margaret Cornealy, Halifax; Ina M. Curley, East Bridgewater; and Rose McDonald, West Bridgewater.

The agricultural projects for the 4-H Club members of Plymouth County in 1926 included poultry raising and gardening. From the standpoint of value of products, of number of commercial plants, and of

results from the teachings, the poultry project was the most valuable in this county. The larger flocks kept this year made it necessary for the boys to consider more carefully the problems of the poultrymen and made it possible to make a fine income. In the seven months in which this project was carried on, the boys and girls were successful enough to make a profit of \$5,788.37. According to their records, they adopted advised practices in hatching, disease prevention, size of flocks, quality of birds, and egg production. Because of their activities at the poultry shows, the Plymouth County Egg Show, fairs, and county-wide gatherings, we know that on that part of the boys and girls and parents there is a great interest and firm belief in the value of poultry clubs.

Successful gardening was the result of the garden project this year more than in any previous year. All the club members with their home gardens paid more attention to a family vegetable budget, planting more of the most healthful vegetables. The boys and girls with larger gardens were more successful as market gardeners. They produced \$2,354.48 worth of vegetables. By using the information sent to them in bi-weekly letters throughout the season and that given by the county leader during his visits, the garden club members became more successful in controlling pests and diseases and in proper cultivation and fertilization of the gardens.

The home economics projects, food, clothing, and house furnishing, taught the girls several important practices and, according to the records of their successful accomplishments, succeeded in having them use their teachings. The food clubs gave considerable prominence to nutrition, emphasizing good food habits. They also taught cooking and standards for their products. The amount of work done by the food club members indicates that they must have used the information they received. They prepared 1,596 meals, made 521 bakings of bread, 2,012 other dishes, and packed 12,095 lunches.

The clothing clubs taught the girls how to sew and also standards for clothing, with ideas as to the most suitable kind of clothing to make or to buy.

The house furnishings project, carried on in one club and in one county-wide contest, showed to those who were able to watch the progress of the clubs closely, the greatest accomplishments on the part of the club members of all the projects, and yet this is the least adaptable to reporting by figures or words. The changes made by the girls were remarkable for showing the use of the ideals of house furnishing as they had been presented and as the club progressed many definite cases of the spread of influence were noted throughout the county.

The 4-H Clubs have developed in size and numbers the past year. Of the 27 towns in the county, twenty-four of them carried on some 4-H



project this year. Enrollments increased from 524 in 1925 to 629 in 1926, and completions increased from 396 to 478, with the percentage of completions remaining just the same, seventy-five. The 4-H clubs have not only increased in numbers but have truly become valuable to the county as trainers of future farmers and home-makers, and more valuable citizens.

**Reclamation of Waste Lands**—It may not be especially strange that nearly all the work which has been done in the State to reclaim low land has been done in Plymouth County, but that the Pilgrims themselves should have started a project of that character three hundred years ago, which has been kept alive ever since and is still active but not quite completed, is remarkable, to say the least. The Pilgrim Fathers had the inherent fondness of Englishmen for landed possessions and early became restless in Plymouth, wishing for possessions far away, even though they took their lives in their hands when they became separated from the army of defense, under command of Captain Myles Standish, and ceased to reside under the protection of the two guns which frowned upon the savage foe from the imposing fort at the top of Burial Hill.

One of the first migrations was to Marshfield, shortly after 1627 as there is a record of the church at Plymouth, in the margin of which appears a notation as follows: "In the beginning of the church at Marshfield was the second church of God that issued out from the church of Plymouth." In those same church records, under date of 1632, appears the following:

But to touch this sad matter of the church's parting, as hath been said, and to handle things together that fell out afterwards to prevent any further scattering from the place of the town of Plymouth and weakening of the same, it was thought best to give out some good farms to special persons that would promise to live at Plymouth and likely to be helpful to the church or commonwealth; and so to tie the lands to Plymouth as farms for the same, and there they might keep their cattle, and tilling by some servants, and retain their dwellings here, and to some special lands were granted at a place usually called Green's Harbour, where no allotments had been in the former division, a place very well meddowed, and fit to keep and rear cattle; good store; but, alas! this remedy proved worse than the disease, for within a few years those that had got footing there sent themselves away partly by force and partly by meeting, the rest with importunity and pleas of necessity for as they must either suffer them to go, or live in continued opposition and contention, and others still as they conceived themselves straightened or to want accommodation, broke away under one pretense or other, thinking their own continued necessity and the example of others a warrant sufficient for them, and this I fear will be the ruin of New England,—at least of the churches of God there,—and provoke the Lord's displeasure against them.

This church at Marshfield, above called Green's Harbour, was again and afterwards carried on by the help and assistance under God or Mr. Edward Winslow, who at the first secured several Welsh gentlemen of good note thither, with Mr. Blinman, a Godly, able minister, who unanimously gathered together in hold

fellowship, or at least were in a likely way thereunto. But some dissension fell amongst them, which caused the parting not long after and so the hope of a godly society as to them was frustrated. Not long after, those that went from Plymouth with that godly gentleman, Mr. William Thomas, keeping up a communion, it pleased the Lord to send unto them, a suitable and able preacher of the gospel named Mr. Edward Buckley, who was chosen their pastor and officiated in that place very profitably divers years, but at last he left them and went to a place called Concord in the Government of the Massachusetts, and a considerable time after the Lord raised up and sent another faithful servant of his, who proved able and well-fitted for the work of the ministry, Mr. Samuel Arnold by name. He remained with them for their special comfort in the work of the ministry.

The matter of reclamation of the land in the vicinity of Green Harbor or Cut River is referred to in the first reference made to Marshfield in the Plymouth Colony records. It is the recording of an order passed by the General Court July 1, 1633, and reads as follows:

"That unless Mr. Gilson, John Shaw, and the rest that undertooke the cutting of the passage between Green's Harbour and the bay, finish it before the first of October next ensuing, according to covenant, they be amerced in ten pounds; but if any of them will doe it, the fine may be exacted of the rest and they paid for their labour."

Why some of those men who had departed from Plymouth in search of land possessions as far away as Marshfield should have deemed it necessary to reclaim land from the sea instead of helping themselves abundantly to the vast areas which were all about and could be obtained for little or nothing from the Indians, is hard for us of the present day to understand, or just what the idea was. Nevertheless it was ordered by the General Court, January 3, 1636, that "the cut at Green's Harbour for a boat passage shall be made eighteen foot wide and six foot deep, and for the manner how the same shall be done for the bettering ordering thereof, it is referred to the Governor and assistants, with the help of John Winslow, Jonathan Brewster, John Barnes and Christopher Wadsworth, as well to proportion every man equally to the change thereof, as also to order men that shall work thereat that ten men may work together there at once, and that the Governor, or whom he shall appoint, shall oversee the same that it may be well performed."

In the present year when it seems probable that the work is to be completed, after having engaged the attention of some men in every generation for three hundred years, it is hard to understand what special benefit would have been obtained by the colony in having the cut made, sufficient to enlist the attention of the General Court. It seems probable that it was believed that the land in the vicinity of Green Harbor possessed some unusual characteristics which would help supply the demand for vegetables at Plymouth, and that the engineering problem was entered into to furnish the most direct route between Green Harbor and Plymouth for transportation of the harvest. It was evidently



not for the purpose of furnishing a harbor, as the name itself suggests that a harbor already existed sufficient for the boats which were at that time in use.

Authority was given by the General Court in 1807 for the incorporation of the Green's Harbor Canal Company, with authority to erect dikes and remove obstructions, for the improvement of the marsh on Green's Harbor. Prominent men interested in the matter at the time were Isaac Winslow, Luke Wadsworth, Judah Thomas and Benjamin White. Provision was made for forming a company, making assessments, collecting same and selling the land of such proprietors as did not pay the assessments.

A canal was dug through the marsh but the flow of water was not sufficiently swift to keep the mouth clear from accumulations of mud and sand, and at high tide the canal backed up and the tide flowed in and made a considerable tide pond with a narrow strip of land separating it from the open sea. This condition appealed to some sportsmen in 1810 who shovelled through the narrow arm of land when the tide was high, enabling it to find a new passage back to the ocean. The tide rushing through the new canal cut it deep and nature claimed it for its own.

In 1870 owners of marshes covering some 1,450 acres had been made to believe that their land could be drained and converted into rich, agricultural land which would yield better than any other land of the same acreage in Plymouth County. There were various theories put forth in substantiation of this claim, and permission was sought from the harbor commissioners to erect a dike. The commissioners investigated and reported to the General Court in 1871 that whatever damage would be occasioned to the harbor would be more than compensated for by the reclaiming of the land for agriculture.

The Legislative committee on agriculture reported favorably and an act was passed by which a dike was built across Green Harbor, near Turkey Point, with sluiceways and gates, for the purpose of draining the harbor and shutting out the tide water from the sea. The dike was constructed in 1872 at a cost of about \$30,000 which was assessed on the owners of the improved lands. The town of Marshfield built a highway across the dike at an expense of \$2,832. This was expected to provide an easy town way to Brant Rock and to be of considerable value to fishermen and to farmers who used the road to draw kelp to their farms for fertilizer. It was before the days when summer homes on the ocean were much in vogue and house lots on the shore were not regarded of any value, as compared with the prices paid for them in this generation.

Green Harbor marshes had been protected from the inroads of tide

water but there were many owners of property in that vicinity who considered the injury to the harbor more of a detriment than the reclaiming of the land was a benefit to the town or county. Consequently T. B. Blackman and others, in 1877, petitioned the General Court to take measures to remove the obstructions in the Harbor, the principal obstruction being the dike.

This petition was referred to the judiciary committee, which reported that it ought not to pass, on the ground of its unconstitutional feature of impairing the obligation of contracts. A bill was enacted "that the Supreme Court, sitting as a court of equity, shall have full jurisdiction to hear and determine the rights of all parties under Chapter 303 of the Act of 1871 (the dike act) and to enforce the provisions of said act." The bill also provided for compelling to remove the shoaling or other obstructions in the channel of Green Harbor River. In 1878, the General Court authorized an expenditure of \$2000 to enforce the provisions of the dike act.

All of these sessions with the General Court and contrary opinions expressed around the stoves in the grocery stores and wherever the men of Marshfield chanced to meet for public discussions, aroused considerable feeling in the community. One morning it was learned that someone, during the night, had blown up the dike.

For many years there was a toll gate on the dike and the schedule of rates called for one cent from each pedestrian and three cents for each horse. A gate was swung across the way and the toll gate-keeper occupied a small building, like the shanty supplied a crossing tender. A generation ago when bicycle riding was very popular, before the days of automobiles, a number of young men pedalled to the gate and started to make their arrangements with the toll gate tender before proceeding. There was a controversy between the official and the young men concerning the rightful fee, as the price was arranged not for a vehicle but for each horse. The ready wit of the keeper came to the rescue and he collected one cent from each cyclist providing they would walk through the gate and carry their bicycles clear of the road, making themselves pedestrians carrying a bundle. There was no fee for bundles.

When this toll gate was abolished a quarter of a century ago it was the last toll gate in Massachusetts.

**Opposition by Fishermen and Politics**—Concerning the Green Harbor dike, the story is best told in the "History of Marshfield," written by Lysander S. Richards, a prominent citizen of that town, and published in 1901. He says:

Nothing has occurred in any town in Plymouth County in the past century that has probably created more contention, opposition, and bad feeling than the building and continuation of the dike across Green Harbor River in Marshfield.



Year after year it has been a bone of contention in our town meetings. It has entered our politics, and the question was obliged to be solved whether a man up for office was a Diker or an Anti-Diker. The feeling became so intense against the dike that about a decade ago the dike was blown up and severely damaged. It finally became necessary to keep a watchman there night and day to guard it, lest it be blown up again.

The reason of such intense opposition was that the fishermen in the vicinity of Green Harbor River claimed that the diking of the river nearly ruined the fishery business, as the lack of a sufficiently strong current to carry off the sand accumulating there year after year resulted in the filling up of the river. Most of the residents of Green Harbor and Brant Rock are Anti-Dikers. Some others, who owned a portion of the salt marsh affected by the diking of the river, claimed that they preferred their salt meadows without a dike, desiring the crop of salt hay therefrom, rather than bearing their portion of the expense in the construction of the dike.

The Dikers claimed it was for the public good, that the meadows diked would produce good, fresh hay, garden and fruit crops in abundance without a particle of manure of any description.

Mr. Richards mentions in his history that Edmund Hersey of Hingham, for many years editor of a prominent agricultural paper in New England, a man of ample knowledge and wide experience in the science and art of agriculture, made a thorough investigation of the claims of the Dikers and Anti-dikers and he quotes from Mr. Hersey's report the findings of Dr. C. A. Goessman, State chemist at the Agricultural College at Amherst, who said:

While visiting the Marshfield meadows on April 19, 1897, I found asparagus already up, very nearly high enough to cut. I was surprised at this, because my own asparagus had but just appeared above the surface of the ground, although growing in land so warm that I am usually the first to ship native asparagus to Boston markets. I was also surprised at the size of the stalks, they being much larger than the first set of stalks which appear on my land. When I consider the fact that the land on which this asparagus was growing, has produced large crops every year for twenty years, without fertilizers of any kind, and still produces better crops than my land, which has had six hundred dollars worth of fertilizers to the acre applied to it during the last twenty years, it convinces me that this land, for garden purposes, surpasses any which I have ever examined. I noticed on the meadow, strawberry plants which had passed through the winter uninjured and were looking well; thus indicating that the strawberry will grow well on this land after the top soil becomes decomposed . . . . The lower levels of this land, if not high enough to be readily drained for small fruits, grain and vegetables, I have no doubt can be profitably used for the growth of the cranberry . . . . The onions were rather above an average crop grown by market gardeners who use large quantities of fertilizer . . . The soil is in the best condition for the production of large crops of small fruits and garden vegetables . . . . The whole 1,400 acres can be utilized for various crops at a large profit.

**Present Reclamation Board**—The new State reclamation board consists of Gordon Hutchins of Concord, representing the State Department of Health; Leslie R. Smith, representing the Department of Agri-

culture, serving as secretary and executive of the board; and Colonel Richard K. Hale of the waterways division of the Department of Public Works. Percival M. Churchill of East Bridgewater is the consulting engineer and D. C. Curran their attorney.

The board expects that crops worth hundreds of thousands of dollars will be grown on land on which present work is nearly completed, which a few years ago was practically worthless. Nearly 5,000 acres of fertile land will be restored to agricultural use by straightening out the beds of streams, clearing away obstructions and in other ways properly draining these areas.

One of the important projects in Plymouth County is at Carver, where 2,500 acres of land suitable for cranberry culture is being put into shape, so that this important industry in the county will be greatly increased. Obstructions have been cleared from the channel of the stream and dams erected to provide for flowing the bogs at times to protect the growing berries from frosts.

A flood gate has been constructed at Green Harbor in Marshfield, allowing tide water to flow out but not run back onto 1,400 acres of good land. There is a drainage project at Whitman which will bring back into cultivation some of the soggy land near the railroad running to Plymouth. Other important drainage work is being carried on in other parts of the State, but the most important work thus far has been done in this county. The channel of the Assabet River at Westboro has been straightened and cleaned out, making possible the agricultural use of 400 acres of land. Work on Cherry brook in Greenfield reclaimed 600 acres of fertile land, heretofore almost a total loss. Similar work is under way at Arlington and Milford.

The reclamation board was organized in accordance with a law passed by the General Court in 1926. Before that time the work was in general charge of a board of two men, one representing the Department of Agriculture and the other representing the State Department of Health. The property owners who are benefited by the work of reclamation have fifteen years in which to pay for the benefits received. They organize a drainage district and petition the State Board to make a survey and do the work. There are several ways in which the project can be financed. Drainage district bonds are usually issued, with a provision that the improvements will be apportioned out in increased taxes spread over a period of fifteen years. It is expected that the value of crops which reclaiming the land will make possible will be sufficient to pay the taxes many times over. By arrangement with the towns, the taxes thus collected are turned into a fund which will retire the bonds at the end of the fifteen-year period. Once having gone into it, the owner assumes a binding obligation and the regular city or town col-



lector receives the money. There is a provision in the law which forces the minority of landowners into the plan when a great majority of the owners form a drainage district.





## CHAPTER XXIV

### FROM DAYS OF '49 TO CIVIL WAR.

**Ship-Minded People Became Impatient for Speedy Transportation and Even Considered Navigating the Air—Available Wealth in California Gold Fields Led to Building Famous Clipper Ships—Fishing and Shipping Foundational Industries in Massachusetts—First Whaler to Round the Horn—Fortunes and Bravas Were Brought—"Old Ironsides" Ends "The Terror of the Seas"—Later Movements for Freedom—People Began to Ask With William Lloyd Garrison, "Is It Wright or Wrong?" and Stand by Their Convictions—The Labor Movement—Vision of Wendell Phillips and John Boyle O'Reilly—"Largest Ship Owner in the World"—Wreck of the "St. John"—Teeth Filled With California Gold.**

There came a day when people not only wanted to go somewhere but wanted to get there with the least possible delay. So far as Plymouth County and Southeastern Massachusetts was concerned, many had taken part in the emigration to the Middle West, over the trail in the "covered wagon," and it was a long tedious trip, fraught with danger and promising adventure of the most thrilling kind; but the discovery of gold in California in 1849 caused thousands of people hereabouts to be seized with an intense desire to be transported immediately from one ocean to the other. The desire for rapid transit was born in the world and took a firm hold in Plymouth County.

There were no railways across the continent and no combination of them which made it practical to attempt to reach the goldfields by that means of transportation. There were rumors of strange and startling inventions, including an aerial locomotive which would go, under favorable conditions, from ocean to ocean in two days, and, with head winds negotiate it in five days. These stories were given some credence, as it was considered stranger still that gold had been discovered in such quantities, available for the digging, and the belief in anything else came easily.

So excited and impatient were many of the young men who had the gold fever that they easily believed all kinds of extravagant stories which were printed concerning the fortunes to be had on every hand, once the long journey across the continent or around the Horn was negotiated. One of the stories, which was printed in the "Old Colony Reporter," among other papers, in February, 1848, at a time when the wild yarns were abundant, was the following: "A runaway soldier in California

discovered a rock of gold that weighed 899 pounds and, as he was afraid to leave it, he mounted guard upon it; and at the last account, he had sat sixty-seven days and had offered \$27,000 for a plate of beans and pork; but his offers had always been indignantly refused, and the poor fellow only laughed at for the niggardliness of his offer, by parties going on, where the article was said to be more abundant."

In that same month the "Old Colony Reporter" contained an item that Dr. Bennett of Plymouth had been tendered the post of surgeon in the regiment forming in New York for California at a salary of \$2,000. Other physicians were endeavoring by every possible means to get to California and were most envious of the opportunity which had come to a physician of the county seat to go and at the same time obtain a salary which was in those days munificent.

The files of the "Old Colony Reporter," a county newspaper published in the "Days of Forty-nine," show that it contained in its issue of March 30, 1849, an item which is typical of many which appeared in newspapers of the county about that time. This item reads: "The bark 'Yeoman,' which has been up for California for several weeks past, sailed on Sunday morning of last week, and with a fine fair wind commenced her long and perilous voyage. As she swept out of the harbor several guns were fired by her crew who were principally natives of Plymouth, and all appeared in good spirits." We subjoin the names of the persons constituting the 'Yeoman's' company:

James M. Clark, captain, Rochester; George Collingwood, mate; Nathaniel C. Covington, president of the company; Francis H. Robbins, secretary; Robert Swinborn, Nathan G. Cushing, John E. Churchill, Henry Chase, William Collingwood, William M. Gifford, A. O. Nelson, Franklin B. Holmes, Nathan Churchill, James T. Collins, Nathaniel S. Barrows, Jr., Henry M. Hubbard, Henry B. Holmes, Alfred Doten, Ellis Rogers, Ellis B. Barnes, George P. Fowler, William Saunders, Richard B. Dunham, Henry M. Morton, Caleb C. Bradford, Silas M. Churchill, Elisha W. Kingman, Ozin Bates, Chandler Dunham, James T. Wadsworth, Winslow B. Barnes, Thomas Rogers, Edward Morton, William J. Dunham, Augustus Robbins, all of Plymouth; Sylvanus Everson, George A. Bradford, Kingston; Seth Blankinship, John Clark, Thomas Brown, Rochester; and John Ward, Brooklyn, New York.

There are people still living who remember when the "Yeoman" left and when many other barks and schooners were used to transport the people from the Old Colony district who had been thrilled with the stories from California, of its inexhaustible supply of gold to be had for the digging, or washing out of the rivers, or even turning up the sand with a knife.

It may be recalled that just two weeks before peace was declared and Mexico surrendered California to the United States, gold was discovered, whole mountain sides and river beds of the precious metal. Cali-



ifornia became the richest part of the Union and everyone who possessed the daring and spirit of adventure wanted to take a chance. A man named Marshall saw some glittering specks in the mill race when he was working as a carpenter for an old Swiss named Sutter, who had started a sawmill on the American River. Marshall hammered out the yellow specks, found they were bright and heavy and he shouted to a fellow-workman that he had discovered gold. The other carpenter said: "You are off your head" and went on with his work, but Marshall leaped on a horse and rode to Sutter's ranch, where he and his employer took down an old encyclopedia and read what it said about gold. They decided the sample was gold and they and the other men stopped work on the sawmill and began to wash gold out of the river. Soon everyone in California began to wash gold and their former lines of employment were abandoned. The fever spread all the way from ocean to ocean, from Golden Gate to Plymouth Rock.

So far as the people on the Atlantic seaboard were concerned, they could not get to California quickly enough. There were no railroads and no roads worthy the name; only Indian trails or beaten paths across thousands of miles of plains, and mountains and deserts. Water holes were few, Indians were murderous and crafty, but all the dangers had been braved before by those who founded homes in the West, and again the "prairie schooners" started on their long journeys, with slow-going locomotion. Most of the people hereabouts, however, were ship-minded, as it is said Massachusetts has always been, and took the journey 'round Cape Horn, as did the "Yoeman" and its little company.

Even going by sailing vessel took a long time and the voyage was perilous. One can conceive of the excitement which was caused in March, 1849, when, according to the "Boston Signal" there appeared a large handbill on State Street, Boston, announcing in large and bold letters that the aerial locomotive would leave New York on the fifteenth of April for a flight to California. "The price of passage, including board, is fixed at \$50, and the trip from that city to some point in California is expected to be made in two days, against head winds five days is allowed. Messrs. Porter and Robjohn of New York are the proprietors of the enterprise, and we understand they propose stopping by the way for companies of not less than twenty."

The "Old Colony Reporter" reprinted this item from the "Boston Signal," commented on the story as worthy of investigation, and added, "Captain J. Taggart is building a 'flying machine' in Charlestown, which will 'take flight' from Bunker Hill early next June." In the wisdom of more up-to-date knowledge about airplanes, the self-satisfied person of today may indulge in a smile about the credulity of the people in this county and vicinity in 1849, but the incredible was already

a fact, in the quantities of gold which had already been found in California, and generous quantities of it or its equivalent. Necessity, we are told, is the mother of invention, and a strong desire to get to California quickly was taken almost as a necessity. People worked seriously to perfect the airship which would do the work and, of course, no one thought of going anywhere else in it but to California, the land of sudden wealth for all who could get there in time!

The county papers printed stories which had come back from those who had negotiated the distance and announced that the amount of gold obtained was astonishing. One item stated: "Every article of food and necessity is of course very high at the mines. Flour has been sold at \$2.50 a pound, boots at \$75 a pair, wages of carpenters are \$10 per day, a cook \$60 to \$100 per month. Pork is \$250 a barrel. Lumber is worth \$150 per thousand."

Undoubtedly the people of Plymouth County of those days regarded the possibility of the aerial locomotive carrying people to California as announced much more probable than that the time would come that carpenters in Plymouth County would be getting larger wages than they were getting in California, the same for cooks, and that Massachusetts builders would be paying \$150 for lumber, produced in New England or California, as is the case today.

By October of 1849, the number of people from this county in California or on the way there, amounted to a considerable percentage of the population. The "Old Colony Reporter," under date of October 26, 1849, said: "Plymouth has been very effectually drained, some seventy or eighty having left in all. Late letters from the 'Attila' (which carried the first company from Plymouth) announce the death of Lewis Finney and S. T. Lanman of Plymouth, and bring discouraging news from some of the remainder, but as a general result, the prospect looks cheering . . . . Our little town has, until within a few weeks, been very slightly affected (North Bridgewater) but now many are preparing to go, and among those already on their way, or at the promised land, are several of our enterprising citizens. We recollect at this moment the names of Albert Carr, W. H. H. Hebard, Bradford Stetson, S. C. Stetson, John P. Shepard, James Bennett, James Magoun, Richard Rounds and Welcome Howard."

An editorial was printed in the "Old Colony Reporter" and "North Bridgewater Union" February 2, 1849, in which it was said: "Never in the history of any other country has the fever of speculation risen to such a height as now. Hundreds of vessels have already departed for California and hundreds more will ere long be upon their ocean way to the same destination. Representatives of every class are hastening thither, the laborer, mechanic, lawyer, physician and clergyman, all are



smitten with this epidemic, all impatient of delay in their efforts to gather the golden harvest."

All this section participated largely in the commercial activities created by the discovery of gold in California and all that it entailed; also the discovery of gold in Australia. Wealth, no doubt, is a relative thing and the adventurous youth of '49 considered it worth the sacrifice of everything else to start on the long journey to the gold fields, singing or humming as they pushed forward over the plains or sped onward by the sailing vessels around the Horn,

I'll scrape the mountains clean, old girl,  
I'll drain the river dry,  
I'm off to California;  
Susannah don't you cry!

The aerial locomotive or airship did not come into existence for three quarters of a century, but the clipper ships, built in Plymouth County shipyards, were brought to perfection under the stress of the desire for speed, by virtue of the skill of craftsmen of enthusiasm and ability who made the ship building industry in this section famous.

The tonnage owned in Boston in 1855 was larger than ever before or since,—541,644 tons. The clearances from that port during the excitement were: In 1852, 98; 1853, 149; 1854, 59; 1855, 16; 1856, 54; 1857, 47. Plymouth County clearances were in proportion but there are no satisfactory records.

**"Old Ironsides" Wins a Hat for Captain Hull**—The frigate "Constitution" was nicknamed "Old Ironsides" because of her heavy timbers, cut in the oak forests of Plymouth County, in Abington and vicinity. She became the most renowned of all the ships that ever had the American flag fly above a deck. She was the largest and most heavily armed frigate of her day and the pride of the American Navy in those days of wooden hulls and sails when the ironclads propelled by steam were some time in the future. The "Constitution" first took to water in Boston in 1797. Like all frigates, she was built for speed in order to prey upon the commerce of the enemy. Her armament consisted of thirty 24-pounders on her gun deck, twenty-two 32-pound carronades on her quarter-deck and forecastle deck, and three long guns, called bow-chasers, to use when pursuing an enemy. Most European frigates carried from thirty-two to fifty guns of lighter weight than those on the "Constitution" and the "Constitution" with fifty-two outclassed them.

"Old Ironsides" had lower sides and higher bow and stern than the line-of-battle ships of earlier build, such as the "Victory," Lord Nelson's flagship at the battle of Trafalgar. She was also of finer design and built of sturdy timbers calculated to stand the shock of cannon

balls to a much greater extent than any other fighting machine afloat. There was, therefore, much impatience on the part of Captain Isaac Hull and his crew when they sailed from Boston, August 2, 1812, in search of some English frigate against which a battle royal could be waged and possibly a lesson taught the officers of the British navy who spoke with derision of "the fir-built Yankee frigates flying a piece of striped bunting at their mastheads." She cruised north in the hope of intercepting some English vessels bound for Quebec but was obliged to head out to sea before finding an enemy worthy of a combat. August 15, 1812, five ships were sighted. Captain Hull crowded on all sail, overhauled the largest ship, and was much disappointed to find it was an English merchant vessel in the hands of an American prize crew, but the other vessels of the fleet, now scurrying to leeward, were British ships which would have re-captured the merchantman, if the "Constitution" had not reached them as she did.

That same day the "Constitution" caught up with the British sloop-of-war "Avenger" which had taken the American brig "Adeline" and had a prize crew on board. Captain Hull re-captured the brig and ordered the merchant vessel to proceed with its American crew and British prisoners to Boston. This was the first day's work for "Old Ironsides" which next sailed south, looking for enemy frigates in the Bermudan water. She, however, soon changed her course, as Captain Hull learned from the American privateer "Decatur" that on August 17th an English frigate had been sighted. When nearly opposite the port of Halifax, a sail on the horizon was discovered. She proved to be the "Guerriere," commanded by Captain Dacres, and carrying thirty-eight guns. Here was a chance for the Yankee crew to avenge the arbitrary impressment of American sailors by British commanders, and the lash on their backs which some of them had felt.

The English frigate seemed as anxious for a battle as the Yankee, as she shortened her topsails, foresail, jib and spanker and braced her main topsail to the mast, evidently waiting for her opponent to come up. Soon the English frigate fired a few shots at the "Constitution" to get the range and the two ships exchanged broadsides, but the shots fell short. There was considerable maneuvering on the part of both to secure a raking position, but eventually the "Constitution" steered directly toward the enemy, for a yardarm fight.

The English frigate continued her firing but Captain Hull ordered his men to cease firing and prepare to deliver the next broadside with the most telling effect. The guns were loaded with round shot and grape. A shot struck the "Constitution's" bulwarks, sent splinters flying among the crew which stood at attention, but no command came from the quarter-deck of the Yankee frigate. Three times First Lieut-



enant Morris asked permission to return fire but the answer each time was "Not yet, sir."

The "Constitution" belched forth a storm of shot from her guns when she had obtained a position about forty yards off the enemy's port quarter. The English gun crews, veterans of many sea fights, scattered when the broadside ripped through the bulwarks, wood flying in splinters in every direction at once. So rapid and accurate was the American fire that the English frigate's main yard was shot away, her hull rigging and sails badly slashed, her mizzenmast cut away by a twenty-four pound shot, so that the mast fell over the quarter and knocked a large hole in the hull. In spite of her helm, the frigate was brought to the wind, the wrecked mast acting as a rudder. The jib boom of the English frigate passed over the American's quarter-deck. The crews of both frigates came on the main deck and the riflemen exchanged volleys at close range. The frigates were about to foul but the ships were rolling so that neither side found it practicable to board the other. Soon the English frigate was left without any masts standing. She was useless for further fighting and the American commander, drew off to repair the damage to his own rigging, as another British frigate or a squadron might appear and it were well to be prepared for another battle.

This matter of preparedness being attended to, Captain Hull sent Third Lieutenant Read alongside the English ship to receive her surrender. First Lieutenant Morris had been shot by a British sharpshooter during the battle.

Captain Hull and Captain Dacres had frequently met before hostilities began between the two countries and Dacres had wagered a hat with Hull on the outcome of any engagement between their two frigates, should such an encounter ever occur. When Captain Dacres went over the side of the "Constitution" to surrender his sword, Captain Hull noticing his opponent had been wounded, helped him to the deck. Dacres offered his sword but Captain Hull replied: "No, no, I will not take a sword from one who knows so well how to use it; but I will trouble you for that hat."

Eventually the "Guerriere" was blown up, as she was in a sinking condition. The English prisoners had been transferred to the "Constitution." At the time of the fight the "Guerriere" had from two hundred and sixty to three hundred in her crew, commanding forty-nine guns. The "Constitution" carried fifty-five guns and a crew of four hundred and sixty-eight. The duration of the engagement had been forty minutes.

The "Constitution" reentered the harbor of Boston August 30, with news of her victory over the "Guerriere," "the terror of the sea,"

which had been captured from the French by the English frigate "Blanche" in 1806. The "Constitution" won a place as the idol of the American navy by that fight and has never lost that place of honor, although steel has replaced wood in vessel construction, and steam long since took the place of sails.

The replacing of wooden war vessels by steel in the United States Navy was largely through the influence of the late Judge Benjamin W. Harris of East Bridgewater, for which distinction and service he was known as "the father of the steel navy." He was a resident of Plymouth County and one of its justly honored sons.

**Abolitionists Who Would be Heard**—There was a decade previous to the Civil War in which several ideas entered into the thought of the people in this section which paved the way not only for the war itself—for this was the home of the anti-slavery agitations—but for the change in industrial and economic conditions which moved with rapid action following the war. The course of development was interrupted by the war on one hand and quickened into action by the war and its results on the other.

The discovery of gold in California, the rapid development of the West, partly through colonization and financiering from this part of the country, and the reconstruction of the South, led to building of railroads, construction of ships, the factory system and collective operations in industries, associations for mutual helpfulness on the part of capitalists and workmen.

In all of these things the people of Eastern Massachusetts were vitally concerned. Hon. Oakes Ames, M. C., of North Easton, was prominently identified with the building of the Union Pacific Railroad, and a mammoth monument in his memory, especially for that achievement, towers across the face of the Rocky Mountains. There were other citizens and neighbors of Plymouth County whose work is not to be forgotten. This chapter will therefore deal with some of the events in that period of national history and tell something of parts performed in the territory between Plymouth Rock and the Gilded Dome.

For thirty years previous to the Civil War, while four millions of slaves in the United States were toiling under taskmasters in unpaid servitude, there were a constantly increasing number of brave souls breathing the air of freedom in the vicinity of Plymouth Rock and Bunker Hill who were asking in their conscience the one question which William Lloyd Garrison asked concerning that institution, "Is it right or is it wrong?"

This question was easily answered and, being wrong, as a matter of conscience, the conviction was that it ought to be relinquished. But the slave was a black individual and a black man was unattractive, igno-



rant, without influence and, in some cases, without aspirations. The slaves were valued, at the outbreak of the Civil War, at about three thousand millions of dollars. The trade of the South was a big item in the economic scheme of things, even in Plymouth County. It was easy to find texts in the Bible upon which to preach, and upon which many clergymen were preaching, justifying slavery. "It always had existed and always would exist." Abolitionism was not popular in the parlors of the wealthy or to the crowds of low brows on the streets, then what was the matter with Wendell Phillips? Why should he displease the high society which he adorned by identifying himself with a movement intentionally disturbing? The press was against Abolition. Why couldn't William Lloyd Garrison conduct a paper like other papers instead of publishing such a disquieting sheet as the "Liberator," issued from what the mayor of Boston called "the obscure hole," and of which Oliver Johnson wrote

In a small chamber, friendless and unseen,  
Toiled o'er his types one poor, unlearned young man;  
The place was dark, unfurnished, and mean,  
Yet there the freedom of a race began.

Massachusetts like all the other States had held slaves. The same number of the "Boston Gazette," July 22, 1776, which contained the "Declaration of Independence," advertised a stout, healthy negro-man for sale. Rev. Cotton Mather, who was the most strenuous individual Massachusetts ever had in purging the colony of all that was iniquitous made an entry in his diary in 1706 that he "received a singular blessing" in the gift of "a very likely slave," which was "a mighty smile of heaven upon his family." If Cotton Mather couldn't find anything wrong in slavery, it must be permissible, to say the least, for he was the most zealous in finding something wrong with everything of any one who ever found anything wrong.

True, Massachusetts ended slavery within its borders in 1783, by the decision of the Supreme Court, which held that the declaration inserted in the State Constitution of 1780, that "all men are born free and equal," abolished slavery forever, but why meddle with the South, which had its own decisions to make?

But there were men and women who possessed a New England conscience and it wouldn't lie down and go to sleep, as long as New England had a responsibility in making the United States and keeping over it a flag which stood for freedom.

Anti-slavery agitation was carried on enthusiastically more than thirty years before the outbreak of the Civil War. The Island Grove at Abington was one place of meeting and all the towns in Plymouth County had halls in which these meetings were frequent and in which those whose convictions were definite and uncompromising had no

hesitation in expressing those convictions and their contempt for those who upheld the iniquitous system of human slavery.

Parker Pillsbury, almost as pronounced in his anti-slavery agitation as William Lloyd Garrison, spoke in Tyler Cobb's Hall in North Bridgewater in February, 1850, and in the course of his speech said "Every minister fellowships with slaveholders as practical Christians; not one preaches against it as a sin." Perhaps he was right. Anyhow the list of anti-slavery speakers and workers does not seem to contain the names of many clergymen at that early date.

In a report of a town meeting held at Plymouth in November, 1848, the "Plymouth Rock," a weekly newspaper of that town, said editorially: "We shall never after this have any faith in prayers for the abolition of slavery after seeing a clergyman vote for Taylor, Slavery and War. Two men whose views were favorable to free soil were followed up to the ballot box by a corporation pimp and forced to vote for Taylor. Quite a sensation was created at seeing a colored man vote for Taylor. This man was formerly a slave, and is said at this time to be endeavoring to obtain money sufficient to purchase his wife from slavery. What means were used to induce him to this act we know not but we are very sure no party but the Whig would be guilty of either hiring or deceiving such a man to vote for a slaveholder! It is a sin against all the ten commandments in one! Seven scattering votes were cast, only one of which the selectmen decided to count. The vote of the town, if these had been counted, would stand: for Van Buren, 542; for Taylor, 284; majority against slave whigging, 258."

A writer in the "Old Colony Reporter" from South Abington wrote March 10, 1850: "Rev. W. F. Stubbett declared before his congregation and in our hearing that the subject of the slaves' redemption from bondage was one irrelevant in their meetings and that the Gospel could be preached here without the question being introduced, and its consideration on the first day of the week was a desecration of the Sabbath."

It must not be inferred, however, that clergymen were not early in the anti-slavery movement. Among those in Boston, the centre of the movement, were Amos A. Phelps, Samuel J. May, Samuel J. May, Jr., and Charles Follen. It was Rev. Amos A. Phelps who defined slavery as "the holding of a human being as property," and this definition was accepted by the Abolitionists as the basis of their action. An important accession to the anti-slavery movement was William Ellery Channing, who was in the movement as early as 1835. He wrote: "A body of men and women more blameless than the Abolitionists cannot be found among us," and such a statement changed some of his admirers and friends into revilers and opponents.



In August, 1835, a public meeting was held in Faneuil Hall "to denounce the agitation of slavery as putting in peril the existence of the Union." At this meeting men of influence charged the Abolitionists with being "disturbers of the peace and endangering the safety of the Country." The newspapers and pulpits took the same tone. The Abolitionists were, however, determined to rouse a sleeping nation. "The nation was deaf in regard to the evils of slavery; and those who have to speak to deaf people naturally acquire the habit of saying everything on a very high key," was the explanation of Margaret Fuller.

It was October 21, 1835, that a mob in the vicinity of No. 46 Washington Street, Boston, coiled a rope about the body of William Lloyd Garrison, evidently with the intention of dragging him through the streets, and possibly hanging him. Strong men gathered around him and he was taken to the city jail for temporary security, and shortly afterward returned to his office and took up his fearless utterances as though nothing had happened or been attempted.

In November, 1837, Elijah P. Lovejoy, an Abolitionist editor, was killed in Alton while defending his press from a mob gathered there to destroy it. William Ellery Channing was one of the petitioners for the use of Faneuil Hall to protest against this violation of the principles of liberty. The authorities refused, but citizens held a meeting and demanded that the mayor and aldermen reverse their action, which they did. At this meeting Attorney-General James T. Austin took the floor and declared that Lovejoy "died as the fool dieth" and that the men who killed him were as great patriots as the men who threw overboard the tea in Boston Harbor at the "Boston Tea Party." A large part of the congregation loudly cheered this sentiment and when Wendell Phillips arose on the platform he was hooted at and jeered.

Wendell Phillips stood calmly till he could be heard and said: "When I heard the gentleman lay down principles which placed the murderers of Alton side by side with Otis and Hancock, with Quincy and Adams, I thought those pictured lips would have broken into voice to rebuke the recreant American, the slanderer of the dead."

James Freeman Clarke said of the work of the Abolitionists:

To create the moral force which overthrew slavery was the work of the Abolitionists; and they accomplished this work in about thirty years, or in the life of a single generation. When we consider the resistance which was overcome, this result must be regarded as an unexampled triumph of pure truth . . . . It was not accident which made Boston the cradle of the Abolition movement, any more than it was accident which made it, sixty years before, the cradle of the American Revolution. A habit of independent thought, and a vigorous moral training, supplied the conditions necessary for both.

It is natural that Boston should be regarded as the centre of liberality and profound thinking and fearless action, but it has been the centre,

not the entire area or arena. Boston has been defined as "not a place but a state of mind." The Old Colony, Plymouth County, if you please, was the hope of freedom, the new light in human progress before the first house was erected in Boston; and, in the anti-slavery movement as in the Revolution preparations, Plymouth County had its Abington Grove and its Tea Rock in Marshfield, as Boston had its Faneuil Hall and Boston Tea Party. So it was with the beginning of public education, the Sunday school movement and other crusades. When Boston is referred to in history, it is typical of the bold profile of Massachusetts and all that lies between it and the extremities of the Berkshire Hills. Boston is the city of our pride and it has environs equally justified in their pride. As Schley said of the Battle of Santiago "There is glory enough for all hands."

**Labor Movement and Legislation**—James Freeman Clarke once wrote: "Prominent among the associates of Garrison, both by his unsurpassed ability as an orator, his ready dialectics, and his unswerving devotion to the anti-slavery cause, was Wendell Phillips." But human justice was the keynote of his conviction and he prophesied that a more equitable return for labor and better industrial conditions would press for solution before many years. Undoubtedly he had in mind the labor movement which has been especially strong and successful in Plymouth County, notably in Brockton.

As John Boyle O'Reilly once said:

A small class in every country has taken possession of property and government, and makes laws for its own safety and the security of its plunder, educating the masses, generation after generation, into the belief that this condition is the natural order and the law of God. By long training and submission the people everywhere have come to regard the assumption of the rulers and owners as the law of right and common sense, and their own blind instincts, which tell them that all men ought to have a plenteous living on this rich earth, as the promptings of evil and disorder.

If this has been the course of history, are there not lessons to be learned? Evidently there are and have been, for something has transformed this section into one of the most prosperous parts of the country, where labor comes nearer to getting its equitable share in human progress and development through the exertions of brain and brawn and the purchasing power and system of high standard of living.

The labor movement is about as old as history itself. The labor organizations, however, in this country that were in existence before the Civil War were mostly of a local nature, and the story of the rise and growth in Plymouth, Barnstable, and Norfolk counties does not materially differ from that in other sections. The fundamental reason is in the fact that, up to the time mentioned, we were an agricultural na-



tion, and probably ninety-nine per cent of the farm laborers owned their own farms.

In this section of New England that we are considering, they divided their labors between the farm and their little "shop," where they did the whole or part of the work that made a boot or shoe. A sample of these little shops that were once plentiful in our counties, now remains on the road between Natick and Framingham, and bears the inscription that therein vice-President Henry Wilson, as a boy, learned his trade as shoemaker. Some of them still remain in our counties. The farm laborers were independent of an employer. Moreover, manufacturing establishments were small and limited in capital. With the Civil War came the demands for increases in production, forcing concentration in capital, and the employment of labor manufacturing properties in New England; textile and woolen, as well as that of shoes, had individual owners, later two or more in partnership, then corporations absorbing and merging these properties into one management. When this change made its appearance, labor associated in production organized. The organizations grew with the drift from the farms to the shops, which occupied time previously given to farming. Individual affiliations or an increase in wages received little consideration. Naturally, came the uniting of efforts of wage earners to secure what they considered they should receive.

Controversies arising over wages, hours, and conditions of employment divided employers and employees into two camps. Strikes and lockouts and the consequent financial loss for both sides developed a demand for some form of legislation that would be effective in settling such differences, as soon as possible. The employees had adopted a system of arbitration and were its advocates. In the Legislature of 1886 the subject came before the Committee on Labor of that body. The hearings were attended in large numbers by both sides. Majority and minority reports were submitted by the committee. The late Hon. W. L. Douglas, then senator from Plymouth County and later governor of Massachusetts, was chairman of the committee submitting the minority report.

Herein was recommended the features that have made the board a successful department and these features have been embodied in legislation of other States, since that time. The bill in Massachusetts, as adopted, incorporated the minority recommendations for a membership in which both, employers and employees, were to be represented and balance between them to be held by one not identified with either. Conciliation was added to the end that future possibilities might be considered in making the award of settlement. Since the creation of the board, it has functioned not without criticism, but the influence has

created the present condition of production without interruption, while representatives of both sides settled differences.

It has also led to the present system of collective bargaining, necessitating the maintenance by the unions of business agents. Much of the business which at one time made large meeting of unions imperative is transacted by the methods now current, and peace reigns in place of strife.

One may visualize the country and some of its labor centers before that great change came by reading Charles Dickens, who wrote before the war a picture of peace and prosperity with none unduly rich and none unduly poor, a condition, which Jefferson once said was the best evidence of a well-governed republic. Labor was educated and sought the best of American surroundings, as a reward for its efforts. It soon found itself forced to compete with those who were content with much less and were attracted to this country by the wages which capital was willing to pay. There were International Unions having membership in a number of States—the iron molders, cigar makers, machinists, and the typographical union, but the organizing of shoe workers of which there were many in Plymouth, Barnstable, and Norfolk counties commenced in 1866. At that time Newell Daniels of Milwaukee and half a dozen other shoemakers organized the Knights of St. Crispin. That organization grew rapidly in this section. It accepted the law of supply and demand in its application to the number of shoemakers and proceeded to provide for limiting the supply of shoemakers. Every member was pledged not to teach any new help.

In a short period of two years wages went up twenty per cent. All of the boys and apprentices had disappeared in about four years. Manufacturers scoured the country for skilled workmen; the men refused to teach new help. Then came the help from abroad, who were shoemakers in the old country, but they joined the St. Crispins because they needed instructions on the methods of work here, which were different from those abroad. The Knights of St. Crispin were in control of the situation until 1873, when so many were thrown out of employment by the money panic, that they competed with each other for a job and the Knights of St. Crispin were forced out of existence.

In 1865 there had been a conference in Louisville, Kentucky, and out of it came an organization of labor on different lines. It departed from trades unionism to form a political organization. This school in labor methods insisted that progress and reform was a matter of legislation and through it wage workers could secure their just portion of their wealth production. This conference wrote a platform of political demands, some of which since have been enacted into law. The Louisville conference called a convention in Baltimore in 1866 and adopted



the name of National Labor Union. It was the beginning of labor in politics. Unions were found in various parts of the country including the Southeastern Massachusetts. Its membership was not confined to wage workers and it had many prominent men in its ranks. The local tickets nominated on this platform were many within the following four years. Several members of the Massachusetts Legislature in both branches were elected. The first labor bureau ever established in this country was in this State in 1874.

It was the first of the results that were obtained by the pressure of organized labor in politics, as early as 1832. Both labor and trade were subject to very stringent legal regulation at the beginning of the century. Labor legislation, if it may be so defined, began in 1832 to modify or repeal these regulations; but with these came a marked tendency towards government regulation of exchange of services. Incidentally, there was legislation for apprenticeship of boys, and establishing educational societies by the workers.

The conditions surrounding production again changed with the introduction of machinery, which could utilize unskilled labor; thus skilled labor found a new competing force. Employment of women and children commenced. It brought great social problems to be solved. With these new conditions came the agitation and demand for legislation to control the changes increasing with the growth of the unions organized for political action. Agitation for shorter hours of labor ripened into passage of the ten-hour or sixty hours a week for women and minors in 1874. Since that time, men and women, including many in these counties, have through their persistent devotion secured legislation that has contributed greatly to uplift the condition of the wage workers.

In 1877 came the "Knights of Labor" with an educational platform similar to that of the National Labor Union. In 1878 it polled over 850,000 votes for congressional candidates and elected thirteen members of Congress. The success added to the growth of the organization. It also made its membership general; only lawyers and liquor dealers were excluded. For twelve years it carried on its educational campaign and thus accomplished more than any other body that had existed. The trades union school continued its agitation against the school of political action. Without noting the other organizations, which contributed to the political upheaval in 1890, and the subsequent election of independent congressman, and the revolution in political thought, we turn to the great labor organization, which came into existence as the result of the agitation for unions, which should be organized by trades, and for the welfare of those who were employed in these trades. The Massachusetts State branch of the American Federation of Labor

was organized in 1887. The shoe-workers, as already noted, had been organized on this line. Cutters, lasters, edge-workers, stitchers, and others were assembled by their department of action. Organized in this form, it frequently happened that when one department went on strike for an increase in wages, other departments were forced to remain idle until the difference was settled. If the workers were successful, another branch soon went on strike with the same results. The American Federation of Labor is a federation of unions having recognized jurisdiction over wage workers in their respective trades. Conferences among the shoe-workers, beginning about 1890, resulted first in a temporary organization amalgamating some of the departments and, finally, on April 10, 1895, in the formation of the International Boot and Shoe Workers Union and its affiliation with the American Federation of Labor. This organization embraces in its membership the workers in seventy-five shoe factories in Plymouth County and ten in Norfolk County. Eleven factories in Plymouth and one in Norfolk County are making women's shoes.

In Plymouth County there are: 1 Allied Printing Trades Council; 2 Joint Shoe councils; 1 Building Trades Council; 2 Central Labor unions; 37 Boot and Shoe Workers unions; 51 other unions.

Norfolk County has: 1 Central Labor Union; 1 Building Trades Council; 9 Boot and Shoe Workers unions; 43 other unions.

Barnstable County has four unions.

The total membership of organized labor in Plymouth, Norfolk, and Barnstable counties is more than four times greater now than it was thirty years ago.

**Decade Before the Civil War**—It is interesting to take a retrospective glance at conditions in the county during the decade which preceded the saddest time in the history of the United States, the period of Civil War. Stagecoaches furnished the transportation facilities. There was a line from Cape Cod towns, through Plymouth to Kingston; a line from Kingston, through Duxbury and Marshfield, reaching Scituate and Cohasset and, via the Steamship line and the Old Colony Railroad, connecting with Boston. There was a daily mail over this line. The postmaster in Duxbury in 1849 was Zenas Faunce. Taking this town as typical of several in Plymouth County, there were manufacturers of shoes, fish lines, salt, tacks and tin ware. Bradford and Sampson, Holmes & Hunt and P. Chandler were manufacturing shoes, from one thousand to two thousand pairs a week. S. Sampson and S. Drew kept up the ancient manufacture of salt by the evaporation of sea water, one of the early industries of the Old Colony. Tin ware was manufactured by W. Clark, and sold from a wagon which trav-



eled long distances to reach customers. Dura Wadsworth was a manufacturer of fish lines which found a ready home market with the owners of vessels who sent fishing schooners to the Grand Banks. Samuel Loring was engaged in manufacturing tacks and had erected his handsome brick residence at Island Creek, still in existence, now called Mirimar, a school for the education of candidates for the Catholic priesthood.

Duxbury at one time was exceeded by only one other town in the State in the number of vessels built, and Ezra Weston of Duxbury was the "largest ship-owner in the world." The town sent sixty vessels one spring to the banks of Newfoundland; in 1849 there were few hailing from the town but a large number of captains and owners of New York and Boston vessels resided in the town. The Duxbury shipping consisted of three ships, the "Mattakeesett," "Hope" and "Manteo," of 430, 880 and 599 tonnage, respectively; two brigs, "Vulture" and "Lion," and eighteen schooners. The average wealth was about \$1,500 to each voter.

Hailing from Plymouth the next year were five ships, eleven barques, six brigs, fifty-one schooners and seven sloops. Of the above, forty schooners were engaged in the cod fisheries, employing three hundred and fifteen men, bringing in cargoes valued at \$88,241. In 1848 nine hundred and three barrels of mackerel were inspected in Plymouth.

The tonnage from Cohasset in 1850 was 4,202 tons, mostly schooners from twenty-three to ninety-eight tons each. Kingston and other towns on the coast had considerable shipping engaged in cod-fishing, and vessels were being built on the Jones River in Kingston and on the North River in Hanover to supply the demand.

All the vessels were not sent out for cod-fish, as has already been stated. There was an item which appeared in the "New Bedford Mercury," in May, 1849, characteristic of many which were printed about that time, which read: "Since the arrival of the 'Falcon,' whaler, at this port, a few days since, it has leaked out that the cook, who was shipped at Honolulu, brought with him \$12,000 in gold dust, keeping his secret until his entry at the Custom House yesterday compelled its disclosure. It was gathered by its fortunate possessor at the placers in California during the past year."

The same paper contained another item in the same month which read: "The ship 'Sarah Parker' which arrived at Nantucket on Tuesday brought on freight \$1,000 worth of California gold dust, consigned to a lady in town, by her son, one of the Nantucket b'hoys, who obtained it with his own hands at the 'diggings,' last year in twenty-five days."

Those who took their livelihood from another branch of fishing in

the sea were complaining, according to an item in one of the county papers of June 15, 1849, as follows: "The system of dieting adopted by the citizens of our cities has ruined the lobster business for this season, and the fishers on our coast who have in former seasons driven a laborious but profitable business in this line, are now taking up their pots and returning to their families, leaving the shell-fish to enjoy this summer in a great measure unmolested."

It was about that time that the "Plymouth Rock," a weekly newspaper then published in Plymouth, under the heading "Grub," stated: "Clams, eels, cod and halibut appear to be uncommonly plenty in these diggings about now. Lobsters are shy, although they will probably be green enough to be taken in the neighborhood of the Gurnet. Herring will soon come, it is confidently rumored. This is indeed a rich and thriving town, although we do have some trouble about schools."

**Distressing and Unusual Nautical Items**—One of the most distressing calamities for many years off the Massachusetts coast occurred in October, 1849, when the British brig "St. John," from Galway, Ireland, struck on the Grampus Rocks, near Cohasset, supposedly, according to the reports at that time, with one hundred and sixty-four passengers on board. One hundred and forty-five were said to have drowned, but Captain Oliver who, with other officers and crew took to the few boats, and were saved, reported that the total loss of life was ninety-one and the number saved was twenty-one. The sum of these two numbers is one hundred and twenty and that was the total number which the brig was allowed to carry under the existing laws.

The county newspapers of that time contained an item about a schooner, Captain Allen, which arrived at Kingston May 6 from Boston. When about three miles east northeast from Scituate Light, a pigeon was seen flying towards the schooner, and very soon came on board, apparently much fatigued. "Tied to the legs of the pigeon were sixteen pages of paper, making seventy inches in length, four inches wide, containing the news of the steamer 'Cambria,' which was then in sight, bound for Boston. The budget can be examined by calling on Benjamin Delano, Esq., of Kingston," said the "Old Colony Memorial."

The "Old Colony Reporter," May 31, 1850, stated: "Three schooners sailed lately from Kingston at the same hour, bound on the same errand, to the same place (the Grand Banks, fishing), and commanded by three brothers, Captains Thaddeus, George L., and Philip Washburn."

It was hard to keep California gold out of the items in the news-



papers all through that period. This was one item: "We would invite those of our readers who have teeth, and more particularly those who have not, to read and remember the advertisement of G. R. Whitney of Duxbury, a young man of much ability, and who is determined to preserve a place among the first in his profession. He will fill your teeth with California Gold and warrant it to 'stay put'."

Another item: "A Boston man named Tyler, son of a Boston auctioneer of that name, purchased a sort of shed, and started the first auction store in San Francisco."

**Stagecoach Drivers and Express Men**—When John Darling Churchill became the pioneer station agent of the Old Colony Railroad in Plymouth in 1845, he relinquished running a packet between Plymouth and Boston. The old order had changed and he became identified with the new. So it was with the stage-coach business, but the drivers merely were forced to adjust themselves to a swifter transportation age.

"The late Peleg T. Brooks of Kingston, a well-known citizen of Plymouth County, who served the town of Kingston twenty-eight consecutive years as town clerk, treasurer and collector, and was also a representative in the Legislature, passed through the various stages which were experienced in the express-carrying business. He was agent for the New York & Boston Despatch Company, once prominent in this section, but years before that he had driven a stagecoach from Duxbury to Kingston for twenty years. When the Old Colony Railroad from Boston to Plymouth was established in 1843, he took advantage of the new transportation facilities and transported merchandise from Duxbury to Boston through Kingston. The next local link in the local transportation chain of progress was building the South Shore Railroad, which forced him to abandon the stage line between Duxbury and Kingston, but he kept up Brooks' Express from Kingston to Boston, using the railroad, until it was consolidated with the New York and Boston Despatch Company. His case was typical of many others.





## CHAPTER XXV

### LEGAL PRACTICE AND PRACTITIONERS.

**How Early Conduct Was Regulated by Church and Town Meeting—First Lawyers and Development of Bench and Bar—Until Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay Colonies United, Lawyers Were Lean, Few and Out of Luck—Only Twenty-Five Lawyers in Entire State First One Hundred and Fifty Years—No Legally-Trained Judge Until 1712—This County Sent Many Legal Men of Prominence to Distant Practice—When Home, Daniel Webster Insisted He Was a Farmer, Not a Lawyer—As a Lawyer, William Cullen Bryant Was a Great Poet—Hingham's Distinguished Men of the Bar Included Two Governors of Massachusetts and a Secretary of the Navy—East Bridgewater Furnished "Father of the Steel Navy"—Constitutional Conventions.**

In writing a story of the bench and bar of Plymouth County it is well, first of all, to recall that on the day after the making of the treaty with Massasoit, the Pilgrims had enacted certain "laws and orders thought behooveful for their present estate and condition." The first law entered in the colony's record book was enacted in December, 1623, and provided that "all criminal facts and also all matters of trespass and debts between man and man should be tried by the verdict of twelve honest men to be impanelled by authority, in form of a jury, upon their oath." The town meeting had previously been the tribunal but it had become too large to deal with ordinary trials. This was the beginning of trial by jury in the colony.

The male inhabitants for several years formed a "general court" when needed for legislative, judicial and executive action. Those who signed the Compact in the cabin of the "Mayflower" and others who had been admitted to the franchise by a majority vote formed a sort of Supreme Court and no law or imposition was of effect without the consent of these "freemen." The Plymouth government drew its sole authority from the Compact and the consent of the governed. Just when the colonial court superseded the town meeting it is hard to clearly define. There was an order of the General Court "that the chief government be tyed to the towne of Plymouth, and that the governor for the time being be tyed there to keepe his residence and dwelling."

The World War was said to have been fought to "make the world safe for democracy," but three hundred years before the experiment was first tried in Plymouth County to make the world safe "through democracy."

In Baylies' "History of New Plymouth," it is stated: "Those who are strangers to our customs are surprised to find the whole of New England divided into a vast number of little democratic republics, which have full power to do all those things which most essentially concern the comforts, happiness and morals of the people. . . . Under the government of these little republics, society is trained in habits of order, and the whole people acquire a practical knowledge of legislation within their own sphere. To this mode of government may be attributed that sober and reflecting character, almost peculiar to the people of New England, and their general knowledge of politics and legislation."

According to Welman's "Church Polity of the Pilgrims," "the purely democratic form of government in the church at Leyden, already entrenched in the warm affections of the Pilgrims, led to the adoption of a corresponding form of civil government on board the 'Mayflower' for the colony at Plymouth."

The principle on which the Plymouth Colony was founded required that while the inhabitants of the town "should remain a part of the whole, and be subject to the general voice in relation to all matters which concerned the whole colony, they should be allowed to be what their separate settlements had made them; namely, distinct communities, in regard to such affairs as concerned none but themselves. There was no sharply defined line separating the powers which the town and the colony might respectively exercise until some emergency arose which called for action of the General Court, after which the limitation became recognized, as a legal decision."

In 1636 the task of codifying the laws was first undertaken by the governor and a committee chosen to assist him. There were certain police and military regulations. The code provided for the election of a governor, seven assistants, a treasurer, a clerk, constables and other officers on the first Tuesday of each March. The chief duties of legislation and administration were delegated to the freemen. Two years later, on the plea that the freemen were put to many inconveniences and unwarranted expense by their attendance at the courts, provision was made for the selection of deputies "to join with the bench" in legislation.

Previous to the union of the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies there were some differences in the modes of punishment and in the way of dispensing justice. The Pilgrims were more liberal and more merciful than the Puritans, but both were very watchful that nothing like heresy should creep in, and summary punishments were handed out on the merest suspicion of anything calculated, in the opinion of the authorities, to disrupt what they had set up.

A similar struggle with the selection of laws and their codification



was going on in the Massachusetts Colony at the same time the men of Plymouth were deciding upon what should be written law.

The thought of the early seventeenth century was different than that of the early twentieth century as regards obedience to authority. It must be remembered that the church governed in all things. It preached a relentless theology and governed with a relentless hand. Some light on carefulness to enforce good conduct is indicated on the punishment of early students in Harvard College.

**Early Judges of Probate Court**—By virtue of the Province Charter the governor and council had jurisdiction of the probating of wills and granting of administrations. Without the authority of any special law at that time, they ordered the appointment of a judge of probate. So the first judge of probate in Plymouth County was William Bradford, son of Governor Bradford of the Plymouth Colony, the first historian of the New World. The first judge of probate was the last deputy governor of the Plymouth Colony. He was born in Plymouth and his home was in what is now Kingston. He was appointed in 1693, resigned in 1702 and died in 1704.

Judge Bradford's successor was Nathaniel Thomas, who was a member of the Provincial Council, and resigned to become judge of the Probate Court. He held that position until his death in 1718. He was a grandson of William Thomas, who was one of the merchant adventurers who financed the coming of the Pilgrims in the "Mayflower." Judge Thomas was also a judge of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas. He was a member of a distinguished family. His father commanded one of the watches against the Indians in 1643, was a volunteer in the Pequot expedition in 1643—the year Nathaniel Thomas was born—was commissioned ensign of the Marshfield company of colonial troops. He was later its captain and, in 1654, became the successor to Captain Myles Standish in command.

The third judge of probate, Isaac Winslow, was a son of Governor Josiah Winslow of Marshfield. He had been a member of the council during a period of thirty-two years. He was appointed chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas in 1712 and was for a time its chief justice. He died December 14, 1738. His successor was John Cushing of Scituate.

Judge Cushing had been chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and afterwards judge of the Superior Court.

William Sever of Kingston succeeded Judge Cushing in 1775, at a most interesting period in the development of provincial affairs, just before the Revolutionary War. Mr. Sever had graduated from Harvard College in the class of 1745. He was the first president of the Plym-

outh Bank, organized in 1803. He was judge of probate about three years and died in 1809, at the age of seventy-nine. One of his sons, Captain James Sever of Kingston, was post-captain in the United States Navy. A member of the same family was Miss Martha Sever, volunteer nurse in the Civil War, in whose honor Martha Sever Post, No. 154, Grand Army of the Republic, is named.

Joseph Cushing of Scituate was the successor to Judge Sever. He took the office in 1778, and was succeeded by Joshua Thomas in 1793. The latter had served in the Revolutionary War as an aid to General John Thomas of Kingston, a kinsman. They were at Ticonderoga and Crown Point together. Judge Thomas served as representative and senator in the General Court. He was the first president of the Pilgrim Society, a descendant of William Thomas, one of the merchant adventurers, and a son of Dr. William Thomas of Plymouth. Like his predecessor, Judge Joseph Cushing, he was a graduate of Harvard College.

After the death of Judge Thomas in 1821, Wilkes Wood of Middleboro became judge of probate and filled the office capably until 1844, when he was succeeded by Aaron Hobart, a much respected resident of East Bridgewater. He had served in the General Court of Massachusetts and three terms as a member of Congress. He was a member of Governor Lincoln's Council. He wrote a "History of Abington," published in 1839, which is a valuable and carefully written record of 176 pages. He was a member of one or more of the Constitutional Conventions in Massachusetts. As a member of Congress, he witnessed the presentation of General Lafayette. He participated in the vote which made John Quincy Adams president. Judge Hobart died at his home in East Bridgewater, September 19, 1858. His successor was William H. Wood of Middleboro.

Judge Wood was a son of Judge Wilkes Wood, who held the office of judge of probate from 1822 to 1844. He was a graduate of Brown University and the Harvard Law School. He was one of the original founders of the Free Soil party. He served in the Massachusetts Senate and by his influence did much towards securing the election of Charles Sumner to the United States Senate. In 1853 he was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention, in 1857 was representative in the General Court, a year later a member of the executive council. His appointment as judge of probate and insolvency was by Governor Banks. This office he held until his death in 1883. In 1873 he was offered a position as judge of the Superior Court, upon promotion of Judge Devens, but ill health forced him to decline.

Judge Jesse E. Keith was appointed in 1884.



**Early Judges of Court of Common Pleas**—It seems strange to people of the present day to try to visualize courts, with judges sitting on the benches but no lawyers to say "May it please your honor," but with every Tom, Dick and Harry attempting to defend himself or his friend, with no further preparation than submitting to an oath he would practice according to the ethics of something about which he was not supposed to know anything. Before there were lawyers there were courts and for a time the judges outnumbered the lawyers, the judge sometimes having some legal education and sometimes not.

Among the early judges of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas in Plymouth County was Ephraim Morton of Plymouth. His grandfather was George Morton who landed at Plymouth from the "Ann" in 1623, and acted as the financial agent in London for Plymouth Colony. He early joined the Pilgrims at Leyden but did not come over in the "Mayflower," waiting till the "Ann" came three years later; in the meantime having published in London letters and journals from some of the Pilgrim Fathers informing the old country of the trials and problems of the Plymouth colonists.

Judge Morton became a freeman June 7, 1648, and was chosen the same day constable for Plymouth. Whether he was vested with all the pomp and glitter which went with that office later is doubtful.

Judge Morton served on the Grand Inquest in 1654, was representative to the General Court, a selectman, magistrate, lieutenant in the militia company and a member of the Council of War.

John Wadsworth of Duxbury was another early judge of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas. He was a descendant of Christopher Wadsworth, progenitor of the family in Massachusetts, including Henry Wadsworth Longfellow. Christopher Wadsworth's name appears on nearly every page of the early history of Duxbury, in which town he was constable, jailor, sheriff, crier to give warnings in church of coming marriages, etc. Judge Wadsworth was equally prominent in the same town in his generation.

Judge Isaac Little of Marshfield came naturally into the legal profession, his grandfather, Thomas Little, having been a lawyer in Devonshire, England, previous to his sailing for Plymouth in 1630. He became a freeman of Marshfield in 1650, settling in that town with his wife, a daughter of Richard Warren, who came in the "Mayflower." The Little family is one of the oldest and best known in Massachusetts and has a coat-of-arms which has been preserved by descendants of the worthy progenitor.

Another descendant of Richard Warren who became judge of the court was James Warren. He became judge in 1700. The previous year he had been sheriff of the county. Several other judges graduated from

the office of sheriff to the judgeship, among them being John Otis of Scituate, made a judge in 1723; and Isaac Lothrop of Plymouth, who was chief justice in 1738. Nathaniel Thomas, Jr., of Marshfield, became a judge after being register of probate.

Nearly all the early judges were graduates of Harvard College, including Josiah Cotton of Plymouth, son of Rev. John Cotton, who had been register of probate, clerk of courts, historian, collaborator with Rev. John Eliot in revising the famous Indian Bible; Nicholas Sever of Kingston, appointed in 1731; Peter Oliver of Middleboro, appointed in 1747, who planned and superintended the erection of the courthouse at Plymouth; Thomas Foster of Plymouth, appointed in 1756, afterwards a Loyalist; and John Winslow of Plymouth, appointed in 1762, having a conspicuous military record.

Judge Peter Oliver was a brother of Andrew Oliver, lieutenant governor of the province. He erected, in that part of Middleboro called Muttock, an iron foundry, known as Oliver's Furnace. In this foundry were manufactured heavy ordnance, such as cannon, mortars, howitzers, shot and shell, under large contracts from the Crown.

In 1756, Judge Oliver was appointed judge of the Superior Court of Judicature, the highest court in the province. In 1762 he became chief justice. This rank made him the second in importance in the colony, the governor alone outranking him. When he presided at court in Boston, he made the journey over the road from Middleboro in his coach, with outriggers, dressed in scarlet, in imitation of the elegance maintained by the judges of the highest court in Westminster, London, and with a natural dignity becoming to his rank and dress. He was a Tory in the days of the Revolution and sailed for England with General Gage. He received an honorary degree from Oxford, and died in 1782.

Another Loyalist, who had been judge of the Inferior Court of Common Pleas, was Thomas Foster, already referred to as having been appointed in 1756. He graduated from Harvard College in 1745, had been recognized as a leading, gifted citizen of Plymouth and honored by a seat in the Assembly and other positions of trust. His outspoken sympathy with the Crown caused him to become very unpopular in the days when Benjamin Franklin said all colonists "must hang together or they would hang separately." He took refuge in Halifax, Nova Scotia, in 1776, but returned the following year to Plymouth, where he died that year of smallpox.

There were numerous lawyers among the Loyalists in Plymouth County and other counties in this vicinity, possibly from the legal training of making decisions from the standpoint of accepted authority and precedence. One of them was Pelham Winslow, son of General John



Winslow of Plymouth, graduated from Harvard College in 1753, a man of culture who had occupied positions high in civil and social life. He joined the British Army at Long Island in 1776, and died there. Edward Winslow, clerk of the court, register of probate, collector of the port of Plymouth, left Plymouth, with his son, Edward, after the British evacuated Boston. The father died in Nova Scotia in 1784. The son became chief justice of the province of New Brunswick, and died in 1815. Others are referred to in the chapter on Loyalists, elsewhere in this history.

The Circuit Court of Common Pleas had, as justices, several men of distinction in the province. One of them was Francis Baylies of West Bridgewater, who for many years, in the opinion of many, stood at the head of the Plymouth County bar. Another was Kilborn Whitman of Pembroke, who became judge in 1811, remained on the bench a few years, and later was on many occasions attorney for the county.

One of the associate justices about the same time was Nahum Mitchell, best known as an historian of Old Bridgewater. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1789, was a student and writer on historical and antiquarian subjects, and much respected. He died in 1853.

Among other lawyers of distinction in Plymouth County in the early years of the nineteenth century, some of whom declined appointments to the bench, were Charles J. Holmes of Rochester, Zachariah Eddy of Middleboro, Nathaniel M. Davis and Joshua Thomas of Plymouth, Thomas P. Beal of Kingston. The latter was an especially skillful and effective practitioner before a jury, noted for his masterful advocacy.

**Successful for Practice Elsewhere**—Legal practitioners who have gone forth from Plymouth County and won distinction elsewhere are legion. In earlier days they included John Davis, the last surviving member of the convention which adopted the Constitution. He held the positions of United States Comptroller of the Currency, United States District Attorney, Judge of the United States District Court. He was one of the Fellows of Harvard University, its treasurer, one of its board of overseers, secretary of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, president for many years of the Massachusetts Historical Society, an orator, senator, editor, writer. Judge Davis was admitted to the bar at Plymouth in 1786, was appointed by President Adams, Judge of the United States District Court in 1801, resigned in 1841, and died at his home in Boston, January 14, 1847, aged eighty-six years.

Peleg Sprague, a native of Duxbury, April 27, 1793, took an active part in the movement which separated Maine from Massachusetts. He took up his residence in Hallowell, Maine, and was a member of the first two sessions of the Legislature of the State of Maine, in 1820 and 1821. He served the new State as congressman and senator. Returning

to Massachusetts in 1835, he practiced his profession and, upon the resignation of Judge Davis, was, by President Benjamin Harrison, appointed his successor in the United States District Court.

It is related of Judge Sprague that he gave an informal opinion one day in his court to a practitioner who expressed doubt, during the Civil War, if the crime of treason could be committed in Massachusetts, where no war existed. He is said to have replied in such a way that the opinion was considered a judicial decision. He said: "Bring me a man who, here in Massachusetts, has by any act, however slight, and however remote from the field of war, intentionally given aid to the rebels in arms, as by communicating to them information or advice, and I will not only show you that I can try him, but that I can have him hanged."

Austin Packard, born in North Bridgewater, January 15, 1801, after graduating from Brown University in 1821, studied law in the office of Hon. William Baylies of West Bridgewater, and was admitted to the bar in 1824. He opened an office in West Bridgewater and served that town in the Legislature, was trial justice for Plymouth from the creation of that office until his death, was selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor eighteen years.

Timothy Ruggles, born in Rochester in 1711 and graduated from Harvard College in 1732, had the distinction of being a tavern-keeper as well as attorney in the town of Sandwich. He moved to Hardwick in 1755 and in 1757 was made judge of the Court of Common Pleas for Worcester County. He was a Loyalist and following the evacuation of Boston went to Long Island and later to Halifax, Nova Scotia, where he died in 1798, at the age of eighty-seven.

William Cushing was born in Scituate in 1732. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1751 and studied law with Jeremy Gridley. In 1755 he went to Dresden, Maine, and is said to have been the first regularly educated lawyer in that province. He served as judge of probate for Lincoln County, was judge of the Superior Court in 1772 and was appointed chief justice in 1776. In 1789 he was appointed justice of the United States Supreme Court, and on the resignation of Judge Jay was made its chief justice. He died in Scituate in 1810.

Judge Sprague resigned, on account of failing eyesight, and lived the last years of his life in a darkened room at his home in Boston, where he passed away at the age of eighty-seven, October 13, 1880.

Another Plymouth County lawyer who won distinction in the district of Maine before it was set off from Massachusetts, was John Holmes, a native of Kingston. He was born in March, 1773, and at an early age went to work in the iron foundry of his father, Malachiah Holmes. One of the school teachers of the town noted his intelligence and



desire for knowledge and, through his advice, the boy was placed under the instruction of Rev. Zephaniah Willis, one of the best educated men of the town at that time. By 1793 he was able to enter Brown University and was graduated in 1796. The study of law appealed to him and he entered the law office of Benjamin Whitman in Hanover. His admission to the bar was in 1799 and he at once left for the District of Maine, and started his practice in the village of Alfred, not then incorporated as a town, and with eight hundred and fifty peaceful citizens constituting its population. Mr. Holmes became the forty-fourth lawyer in the whole District of Maine, and identified himself with the enterprising community which was incorporated as a town in 1808.

In politics he was a staunch Federalist. He was a member of the General Court in Massachusetts in 1802 and 1803, again in 1811; a member of the Massachusetts Senate in 1813. In 1815 he was appointed by President Madison a commissioner, under the fourth article of the Treaty of Ghent, to make a division between the United States and Great Britain of the islands in Passamaquoddy Bay. He was a member of Congress from 1816 to 1833, before and after Maine was separated from Massachusetts, and took an active part in making Maine an independent State.

President Harrison appointed Mr. Holmes United States Attorney for the Maine District in 1841, and he held the office until his death July 7, 1843.

Hon. Abraham Holmes, born June 9, 1754, was admitted to the Plymouth County bar in April, 1800. He had been president of the Court of Sessions and was not regularly educated for the legal profession, but was admitted in consideration of "his respectable official character, learning and abilities, on condition that he study three months in some attorney's office." In June, 1834, when eighty years old, he delivered an address at New Bedford, to the bar of Bristol County, on the rise and progress of the legal profession in Massachusetts, with anecdote and traditional lore which made it especially enjoyable.

His son, Hon. Charles Jarvis Holmes, was admitted to the Plymouth County bar in 1812; was a member of the General Court nine years, state senator two years, member of the executive council, presidential elector, collector of customs at Fall River. He wrote his own epitaph: "By profession a lawyer; by practice a peacemaker."

**William Cullen Bryant Admitted to Practice**—William Baylies of West Bridgewater, in whose office several other good lawyers studied, was a brother of Francis Baylies, the author of a comprehensive history of the Old Colony, a member of Congress and minister to Buenos Ayres during the administration of Andrew Jackson. He served as repre-

sentative to the General Court, as state senator, and was regarded as the head of the county bar. One of his pupils was William Cullen Bryant, who was admitted to the bar in Plymouth County but much preferred to be a poet. A letter from Bryant to his father, after his appearance for examination at Plymouth, August 8, 1815, is still in existence, and reads as follows:

"Dear Sir: I went to Plymouth last week, where I stayed four days, and might perhaps have been obliged to stay a week, had it not been for good luck in finding a Bridgewater man there with a vacant seat in his chaise. I have received a certificate in the handwriting of A. Holmes, Esq., and sprinkled with his snuff instead of sand, for which I paid six dollars, according to the tenor and substance following:"

These certify that William Cullen Bryant, a student-at-law in Brother Baylies' office, has been examined by us, and we do agree that he be recommended to be admitted an attorney at the August term, 1815, he continuing his studies during all that time.

Joshua Thomas  
Abraham Holmes  
Committee of the Bar.

Zachariah Eddy of Middleboro was one of the prominent lawyers of the State, following his admission to the bar in 1806, and as a counselor in 1810. He had studied in the office of Joshua Thomas at Plymouth. He was a personal friend of Daniel Webster and associated with him in different cases. More than three hundred cases which he argued in the Supreme Court are given in the Massachusetts Reports. In 1833, he wrote to a friend that he had seventy-one cases on the docket for the Plymouth Court. He practiced forty years and was offered a place in the Supreme Court of Massachusetts but declined. Some valuable historical writings found in libraries in Southeastern Massachusetts were from his pen. He died in 1860 at the age of eighty years.

Some of his contemporaries at the Plymouth County bar were Nathaniel Morton Davis, of Plymouth; Kilborn Whitman, of Pembroke; Jared Whitman, of Abington, now Whitman; John Boies Thomas, of Plymouth; Thomas Prince Beal, of Kingston; Charles J. Holmes, of Rochester; Nahum Mitchell, of Bridgewater; and some others who held offices as members of the General Court, members of Congress and in various other civil and social capacities which testified to their recognition by their fellow-citizens as men of merit and dependability.

Conspicuous in his day was Ebenezer Gay of Hingham, who was one of the first to explore the field of admiralty law, little understood at that time. He was a state senator but gave most of his time and thought to his extensive law practice. Governor Gore appointed him



as a justice on the bench of the Court of Common Pleas but he declined the office. He died in Hingham, February 11, 1842, at the age of seventy-one years.

Sidney Bartlett and William G. Russell, leading Boston lawyers at an advanced age, both of whom declined appointments to the highest court in the State, were natives of Plymouth.

Of the lawyers whose practice distinguished the early years of the nineteenth century the list would not be complete without mention of James Hovel and Pelham Winslow, of Plymouth; Oakes Angier, John B. Thomas, William Thomas, John Thomas, Jacob H. Loud, William Davis, all of Plymouth; Samuel Stetson, of Duxbury; Charles K. Whitman, of Pembroke; Ebenezer T. Fogg, of Scituate; Solomon Lincoln, of Hingham; Eliab Whitman, of North Bridgewater, now Brockton; Austin Packard, of West Bridgewater; Benjamin Hobart, of Abington; Benjamin Whitman, Alexander Wood and John Winslow, of Hanover; Welcome Young and Bartholomew Brown, of East Bridgewater; Williams Latham, of Bridgewater; Thomas Burgess and Seth Miller, of Wareham; the former judge of the Court of Common Pleas and judge of the Municipal Court of Providence; Tristram Burgess, of Rochester, afterwards chief justice of Rhode Island, member of Congress, "The Bald Eagle of the North;" Zephaniah Swift, a native of Wareham, member of Congress, secretary of the mission to France in 1800, chief justice of the State of Connecticut, publisher of legal digests; Bartholomew Brown, native of Danvers, Massachusetts, who practiced law in Plymouth County many years, was one of the earliest members and president of the Handel and Haydn Society of Boston, composer of many musical pieces; Hon. Welcome Young, of East Bridgewater, who opened an office in Halifax, immediately after being admitted to the bar, was commissioner of insolvency, state senator, for a short time a partner of Benjamin W. Harris; Hon. Aaron Hobart, of South Abington, now Whitman, congressman, judge of probate; and Daniel Webster.

**Daniel Webster Believed His Tongue Mightier Than His Pen**—Daniel Webster was a Plymouth County lawyer and resident for twenty-five years. He had come from his native State, New Hampshire, to perfect himself in the study of law in the office of Hon. Christopher Gore, the distinguished counselor, in Boston. In the Boston office he studied diligently the principles of the common and municipal law, the laws of nations, and the science of special pleading. Hon. Mr. Gore made a motion that he be admitted to practice, speaking of the remarkable attainments and uncommon promise of his pupil.

Mr. Webster's father was at this time one of the judges of the county

court in New Hampshire, and the clerkship in that court was tendered to his son. The income was fifteen hundred dollars per annum. Daniel Webster's brother, Ezekiel, was teaching school in Boston in an effort to help pay off a mortgage which their father had put upon his property in New Hampshire to give them an education. To accept the appointment as clerk was a temptation, but Daniel Webster hired a horse and sleigh and drove two or three days to explain to his father that: "I mean to use my tongue in the courts, not my pen—to be an actor, not a register of other men's actions." He then placed in his father's hands sufficient money to discharge the mortgage. This money had been loaned him by a friend, Rufus Green Emery, who had urged him to go on with his studies and practice, decline the appointment and make the trip to New Hampshire to explain the matter fully to his father, who had set his heart upon having him as his clerk. Daniel Webster returned to Boston, where the court at which he was licensed to practice was in session, and took the oaths of office.

His first law office was in Boscawen, New Hampshire, near the home of his father. Mr. Webster's first plea in court was heard by his father and it was the only one which his fond parent ever heard from his eloquent lips, as the aged man died shortly after. The case was founded on a tavern bill for twenty-four dollars, and the jury awarded Mr. Webster's client seventeen dollars. From that beginning Daniel Webster was engaged in some of the most important cases ever tried in the country and became the acknowledged leader of the bar, as students of his biography are well aware.

This is no place for a biographical sketch of Webster, the orator, the expounder, the statesman, or even the lawyer, for he was not, strictly speaking, a member of the Plymouth County bar. But as a citizen and resident of Marshfield, the town he loved so well, he has a rightful place in this sketch of the county of his adoption and in which he died and in the soil of which his body was buried on his Marshfield estate.

This extensive estate first greeted the eyes of Daniel Webster, Mrs. Webster and their son Fletcher, destined to become Colonel Fletcher Webster of the 12th Massachusetts Volunteer Regiment in the Civil War, when they were returning from a fishing trip on Cape Cod. Daniel Webster drove into Marshfield with a trunk lashed to the axle of the old-fashioned chaise, Mrs. Webster sitting beside him, and Fletcher riding on a pony. Marshfield had been mentioned to them by Samuel K. Williams of Boston as a very attractive town for a lover of nature, such as Mr. Webster. He was told to call on Captain John Thomas, who had a farm of about one hundred and sixty acres and a comfortable home.

Sitting on the piazza of this home, Captain Thomas greeted the



Webster family, made them at home, and entertained them as his guests two or three days. Eventually Mr. Webster became the owner of the farm. It had belonged to Nathaniel Ray Thomas, father of Captain Thomas.

The elder Thomas was a Loyalist, fled to Halifax, Nova Scotia, after the British army left Boston, and his estate was confiscated, all except these one hundred and sixty acres which were saved as his wife's right, and were handed down to Captain John Thomas, the only child who did not accompany his father. The original Thomas estate was a grant by the Plymouth Colony Court, January 7, 1640, to William Thomas, one of the merchant adventurers who financed the Pilgrims' trip on the "Mayflower." He finally cast in his fortunes with the Pilgrims, arriving at Plymouth on the "Mary and Ann" from Yarmouth in 1637, and settled in Marshfield.

Adjoining the Thomas grant was the land of Edward Winslow, granted to him December 4, 1637. Both together comprised 2,700 acres. It was evidently the intention of Mr. Webster to purchase both of these original tracts, from various owners to whom they had been conveyed. There are numerous deeds in record at the Plymouth County Registry which denote his progressive purchases, the sum total being about 1,200 acres, for which his payments in the aggregate were \$34,644. Captain and Mrs. Thomas were reluctant to part with their land and domicile, but Mr. Webster purchased their possessions with the understanding that they should continue on the place and treat it as their own as long as they lived.

One of their sons, Ray Thomas, became Mr. Webster's confidential secretary. The elder son, Charles Henry Thomas, of Duxbury, represented him in most of his business transactions in Marshfield and vicinity.

Immediately in front of the Webster mansion in Marshfield stood two elm trees, which were taken from a remote part of his estate by Mr. Webster and replanted with his own hands, in the presence of his son, Fletcher. After completing the work he turned to his son and said: "My son, protect these trees after I am gone; let them ever remind you of Julia and Edward." He was speaking to his only surviving child about two others who had died. The elm trees were their living monuments.

When the house was remodelled, after its purchase from Captain Thomas, Mr. Webster's daughter Julia designed that part which contained the library.

The Webster family burial ground was set apart adjoining the burial ground of the Winslow family, abutting his estate. It is upon the summit of a hill, from which may be seen the ocean and the wide stretch

of marshes from which the town derives its name; the site of the first church erected in the town, and a far view in every direction. Not long before his death, Mr. Webster visited the Webster lot with Charles Lanman, his secretary, and pointing to the tomb, which he had fashioned, said impressively: "This will be my home; and here three monuments will soon be erected—one for the mother of my children, one each for Julia and Edward, and there will be plenty of room in front for the little ones that must follow them."

The monuments are simple columns, with granite bases and marble shafts, containing the following inscriptions:

GRACE WEBSTER,  
Wife of Daniel Webster:  
Born January 16, 1781;  
Died January 21, 1828.  
Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.

JULIA WEBSTER,  
Wife of  
Samuel Appleton Appleton:  
Born January 16, 1818;  
Died April 18, 1848.  
Let me go, for the day breaketh.

MAJOR EDWARD WEBSTER:  
Born July 28, 1820;  
Died at San Angel, in Mexico,  
In the military service of his country,  
January 23, 1848.  
A dearly beloved son and brother.

During his last illness Mr. Webster dictated an epitaph to be engraved upon his monument and his desire was carried out, the epitaph reading:

Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.  
Philosophical  
argument, especially  
that drawn from the Vastness of  
the Universe, in Comparison with the  
apparent Insignificance of this Globe, has some-  
times shaken my Reason for the Faith which is in me;  
but my Heart has always assured and reassured me that the  
Gospel of Jesus Christ must be a Divine Reality. The  
Sermon on the Mount cannot be a merely human  
Production. This Belief enters into the  
very Depth of my Conscience.  
The whole History of Man  
Proves it.

DANIEL WEBSTER.



Mr. Webster found much pleasure and relaxation in trout fishing and was well acquainted with the brooks frequented by the wily trout throughout Plymouth County and Cape Cod, doubtless elsewhere. One day, in a speech at Syracuse, New York, he introduced the following passage: "It has so happened that all the public services I have rendered to the world, in my day and generation, have been connected with the general government. I think I ought to make an exception. I was ten days a member of the Massachusetts Legislature (laughter), and I turned my thoughts to the search of some good object in which I could be useful in that position; and after much reflection, I introduced a bill, which, with the general consent of both houses of the Massachusetts Legislature, passed into a law, and is now a law of the State, which enacts that no man in the State shall catch trout in any other manner than in the old way, with an ordinary hook and line. With that exception, I never was connected for an hour with any state government in my life."

Mr. Webster enjoyed hunting and fishing but was by no means an expert sportsman. His great love of nature and outdoor life was back of his excursions with rod and gun and sometimes the game might roam in his vicinity unharmed, or even unheard, if something in the bright sunlight or the wonderful colorings had turned his thoughts to lines of poetry or oratory. The Plymouth woods were a delight to him and he often went hunting in them with Isaac L. Hedge, Thomas Hedge, George Churchill, "Uncle Branch," Daniel Fuller, of Kingston, known as the "hermit," or Uncle Harvey Ransom of Kingston. All of these men and many others told interesting stories of their hunting and fishing trips with the great statesman.

On the morning of the first of April, 1852, as he was being driven by Seth Peterson to join Isaac and Thomas Hedge for a day in the Plymouth woods, the linch pin of his carriage broke while descending the hill near Smelt Brook in Kingston. Mr. Webster was thrown to the ground and taken into the house of Captain Melzar Whitten. Later in the day he was taken home. He never recovered from the effects of the fall, and his health gradually failed until his death, October 24 in that year.

There are two items in the last will and testament of Daniel Webster which show something of his character:

Item. My servant William Johnson is a free man. I bought his freedom not long ago for six hundred dollars. No demand is to be made upon him for any portion of this sum, but so long as is agreeable, I hope he will remain with the family.

Item. Monicha McCarty, Sarah Smith and Ann Bean, colored persons, now, also, and for a long time in my service, are all free. They are very well deserving, and whoever comes after me must be kind to them.

This will was written by himself, seated before his fireplace on the 19th of October. After affixing his signature, he folded his hands together and said impressively: "I thank God for strength to perform a sensible act," after which he engaged in audible prayer, closing with the Lord's prayer.

Monicha McCarty was the family cook, born and raised as the slave of Judge Chanch of Washington. Mr. Webster purchased her freedom for six hundred dollars with the understanding that she was to work it out, but the indebtedness was never again mentioned and he paid her wages. It is said at his death she had saved, from her wages and gifts from the family and guests, nearly \$2,000.

In June, 1852, the United States Agricultural Society, headed by its founder-president, the Honorable Marshall P. Wilder, called at the Webster farm, in Marshfield, to pay their respects. Mr. Wilder addressed Mr. Webster as the "Farmer of Marshfield." In reply he said:

You do me no more than justice when you call me "Farmer of Marshfield." My father was a farmer and I am a farmer. To you farmers of the West and South, the soil of Marshfield may look barren and unfruitful. Sometimes the breezes of the broad Atlantic fan you; sometimes, indeed, unkindly suns smite you, but I love its quiet shades, and there I shall love to commune with you upon the ennobling pursuit in which we are so happily engaged.

When some thirty years ago, I was at Marshfield, some of my kind neighbors made a call to inquire the state of a matter involving a bit of law, but I told them, "I have come to reside among you as a farmer, and here I talk neither politics nor law."

On the day in Kingston that he was thrown from his carriage, his head cut and his right arm and hand which he had put out to check the force of the fall, badly injured, he was taken into the home of Melzar Whitten at Rocky Nook. After the wound on his forehead had been dressed, Mrs. Whitten entered the chamber, somewhat embarrassed in her anxiety. This was noticed by Mr. Webster who set her at ease by saying: "Madam, how diversified is the lot of humanity in this world! A certain man, passing from Jerusalem to Jerico, fell among thieves, and was ill-treated. A man passing from Marshfield to Plymouth, fell among a very hospitable set of people, and was taken care of."

It is said that Mr. Webster prepared a part of his famous address on Bunker Hill while trout fishing along the Plymouth County streams, and that it was a couple of lusty trout which first heard, as they were being transferred to his fishing basket: "Venerable men! You have come down to us from a former generation. Heaven has bounteously lengthened out your lives that you might behold this joyous day."

**War Governor of Massachusetts**—Of the Plymouth County lawyers whose practice in the courts has been confined to the last one hundred years, one of the earliest was John Albion Andrew, governor of Mas-



sachusetts during the entire period of the Civil War, a resident of Hingham, in which town his body lies buried. Governor Andrew entered the law office of Henry H. Fuller in Boston in 1837, and for twenty years practiced his profession, becoming deeply interested in the anti-slavery agitation. In 1854 he defended the parties arrested for the rescue of Anthony Burns. In 1859 he presided at the meeting in Tremont Temple for the relief of the suffering family of John Brown, declaring that whether Brown's raid at Harper's Ferry was right or wrong, "John Brown himself is right." An indication of his convictions was expressed in one of his speeches in which he said: "I know not what record of sin awaits me in the other world, but this I know, that I never despised a man because he was poor, because he was ignorant or because he was black."

He used his influence as a delegate to the Republican convention at Chicago in 1860 for the nomination of Abraham Lincoln and the following year was elected governor of Massachusetts. At the beginning of the Civil War, when the Massachusetts troops were killed in Baltimore, he sent a telegram to the mayor of that city: "I pray you, let the bodies of our Massachusetts soldiers, dead in Baltimore, be laid out, preserved in ice, and tenderly sent forward by express to me."

John A. Andrew will always be remembered as the great war governor, his patriotic work far outshining the record of his work as a lawyer, although he was one of Plymouth County's shining legal lights.

Another Hingham lawyer of eminence whose services outside of his profession made him great was John D. Long, who served as governor of Massachusetts, as Congressman and, during the Spanish War, as Secretary of the Navy. John Davis Long first saw the light of day at Buckfield, Maine, October 27, 1838. His parents were, however, of Massachusetts stock, and, after fitting at Hebron Academy, he entered Harvard College at the age of fourteen. He taught school in Middlesex County, took a course at the Harvard Law School and practiced in his native town, also in Boston.

East Bridgewater is one of the Plymouth County towns which has furnished some notable lawyers. Among the early ones of the last hundred years was William Latham. He was especially active as a trustee and in the settlement of estates. Aside from his legal practice he gave much time and study to Old Colony history and antiquarian research. He possessed remarkable knowledge of genealogical history of this section. He collected the data and had printed a record of the ancient burying-grounds of this vicinity. He was a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, also of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society. The valuable historical material which he collected was voluminous, and his collection of ancient and modern musical

publications would be the delight of many. He was a member of the Old Stoughton Musical Society, the oldest singing society in the United States. It has been said of him: "A greater portion of his life was spent in an effort to rescue from oblivion the few facts now left to us of the ancient settlers of the Old Colony." Mr. Latham passed away November 6, 1883, at the age of eighty years.

One of those who read law in the office of Ebenezer Gay of Hingham was Jacob Hersey Loud, also of that town, who was born February 5, 1802, graduated from Derby Academy in Hingham and Brown University, and was ready to receive the instruction of Mr. Gay shortly after his university training. He was admitted to the Plymouth County bar in August, 1825, and took up law practice in the shire town. He succeeded Beza Hayward as register of probate in 1830 and held that office until 1852. He served as State treasurer three years. He was president of the Old Colony Bank and its successor, the Old Colony National Bank, for eleven years, and was also president of the Plymouth Savings Bank the last few years of his life.

Mr. Loud was a member of the first board of directors of the Old Colony Railroad Company, from 1845 to 1850. In 1868 he was again chosen a director and remained on the board till his death. He served as representative to the General Court, also as senator. From 1865 to 1871 he was again State treasurer and receiver general. He was actuary of the New England Trust Company from the time of its organization in 1871 till 1879. He died at the age of eighty-eight years, February 2, 1880.

Hon. William H. Wood, son of Judge Wilkes Wood, already referred to as judge of probate, was a native of Middleboro, educated at Pierce Academy in that town and at Brown University. The date of his birth was October 24, 1811. For a year he was principal of the Coffin Academy at Nantucket and then entered the Harvard Law School, and studied under Judge Story and Horace Mann. For a time he practiced in Boston but from 1840 until his death, March 30, 1883, his law office was in Middleboro. More concerning his career has already been given in connection with his incumbency of the office of register of probate.

**"Father of the New Navy"**—On the tenth of November, 1823, in East Bridgewater, was born Benjamin Winslow Harris, a gentleman of the old school, well remembered by many people of Plymouth County and beyond, for his geniality, integrity and sterling qualities. He is remembered as the "father of the new navy," as a distinguished Congressman, for many years judge of probate, and for many important law cases in which he had a part. He was father of Judge Robert O. Harris, a distinguished son, who died in 1925.



Benjamin W. Harris served ten years in Congress and his title of "father of the new navy" was attained owing to his activities in measures for the upbuilding of our present naval system. For eight years he was district attorney for Plymouth County and for twenty years was judge of the Probate Court, retiring on account of ill health. He died February 7, 1907, leaving one son, Judge Robert O. Harris, and two daughters.

He was graduated from the Harvard Law School in June, 1848. He was admitted to the bar in Boston April 12, 1850. He opened a law office in his native town which was maintained, with a branch office a part of the time in Brockton, until his death. His appointment as district attorney in 1858 was by Governor Nathaniel P. Banks. He served in that capacity for Southeastern Massachusetts until June, 1866, when he was appointed collector of internal revenue for the second congressional district. He resigned as district attorney and moved to Dorchester. In the fall of 1872 he was nominated for Congress from that district and served four years. As a member of the Committee on Indian affairs, he became very much interested in the Indians' welfare and was a member of the commission that investigated the management of affairs at the Red Cloud Agency in 1875.

He took up whole-heartedly the work which led to abandoning the old wooden ships in the naval service, as he recognized that steel ships were the proper thing for war service. Under the plan suggested by Congressman Harris the wooden vessels were condemned and replaced by those of steel construction.

Judge Harris retired from Congress in 1882 and was succeeded by John D. Long of Hingham, a lifelong friend, who afterward became Secretary of the Navy under President McKinley.

One of the important criminal trials during the time Judge Harris was district attorney was that of George C. Hersey of Weymouth for the murder of Betsey F. Tirrill, May 3, 1860, at Weymouth. The evidence was largely circumstantial but it was collected with such care and put before the jury so strikingly that the accused was convicted. The death warrant, signed by Governor John A. Andrew, was executed August 8, 1862, in the Dedham Jail and the execution was preceded by a written confession of the deed by Hersey.

**Charged With Treason in Rhode Island**—Hon. Perez Simmons of Hanover had the distinction of having the first warrant for treason, issued by the old Legislature of Rhode Island against him. This was an offense punishable by imprisonment for life and was occasioned by his having called to order the first Legislature, under the new constitution, of which body he had been chosen a member. He left Rhode

Island to escape arrest and returned to his former home in Hanover, learned that the governor of Massachusetts would surrender him upon requisition from the governor of Rhode Island, so moved on to Maine, a safer haven. He resided in Portland until a change in government in Massachusetts brought about a change of policy. He then again became a Hanover resident and practiced law there forty years.

Mr. Simmons was born in Hanover in January, 1811. He was graduated from Brown University in 1833, taught school for a few terms in Plymouth County towns, then returned to Providence and began his law studies. He also acted as newspaper correspondent for several papers, was a reporter on the staff of the "Providence Journal," and drifted into political activities, destined to end his career in Rhode Island, as already stated. A convention was held which formed what was known as a Free Suffrage or People's Constitution. The old charter government would not recognize this convention. The people of Rhode Island gave in their votes for a new constitution by a large majority, but the old government would not recognize the new and it was the act of calling together the Legislature of the new constitution's creation which sent Mr. Simmons back to Hanover, with a temporary sojourn in Maine.

The town of Hanover, after his return home in 1844, honored him with the offices of selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor and re-elected him as long as he would give a portion of his time to the town's welfare. His growing practice made it desirable for him to decline further town office. At one term of court at Plymouth he was retained in every case, civil and criminal, on one side or the other. He served in the General Court and in the Constitutional Convention of 1853. He served on the recess committee from the General Court which established the General Statutes of Massachusetts. He was on the committee which brought about the abolition of the Court of Common Pleas and the establishment of the Superior Court. He was prominent in the "Know nothing" movement and was commissioner of insolvency of Plymouth County when that party carried the election.

Hon. Jonas R. Perkins, a native of Braintree, Massachusetts, was a graduate of Brown University and previous to becoming a lawyer was principal of Rochester Academy. As a lawyer he was first associated with Hon. Timothy Coffin, of New Bedford, in whose office he studied. Mr. Perkins became thrilled with the spirit of adventure which found its outlet in going to California as a "Forty-niner." He sailed for the Golden Gate July 10, 1849, and remained in the State of climate and gold until July, 1852, when he returned and opened a law office in North Bridgewater, now Brockton. He became prominent in various lines



of community life, was captain of the North Bridgewater Dragoons in 1857, selectman in 1864, was trial justice for a number of years, then justice of the First District Court, beginning July 16, 1874, and continuing many years.

The present generation of lawyers easily recall with admiration the qualities possessed by the late Hosea Kingman, for many years the acknowledged leader of the Plymouth County bar. A native of Bridgewater, he made that town his home. He attended Bridgewater Academy, also Appleton Academy at New Ipswich, New Hampshire, and entered Dartmouth College. He left college to enlist in Company K, Third Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers, at the outbreak of the Civil War. He accompanied his regiment to Newbern, North Carolina, was detailed on signal service, and went to Port Royal, South Carolina, from there to Folly Island in Charlestown Harbor, and was mustered out in June, 1863. He returned to college and was graduated in 1864.

He studied in the office of William Latham and later entered into partnership with his instructor, the partnership remaining until the retirement of the senior member in 1871. He was a prominent citizen of Bridgewater, officer in several of the town's banking and educational institutions, was special justice of the First District Court of Plymouth County, served as district attorney, commissioner of insolvency, and in various other capacities. His death removed one of the most respected members of the profession in this part of the State.

Eliab Ward was a native of Carver, graduated from Amherst College, studied law in the office of Jacob H. Loud at Plymouth and was admitted to the bar in 1836. He practiced in Middleboro. In the Civil War, through successive promotions, he became a brigadier-general. He served in both houses of the Massachusetts Legislature.

Jacob B. Harris was the lawyer who defended William Everett Sturtevant, convicted of murder of Simeon and Thomas Sturtevant and their housekeeper, Mrs. Mary Buckley, in Halifax, Massachusetts, in 1874. His plea was a masterly effort. The same year the District Court was established and Mr. Harris was appointed justice but failing health compelled him to resign after one month's service. He died early the following year.

The vacancy caused by the death of Mr. Harris was filled by Jesse E. Keith, then the only lawyer residing in Abington, where the court was held. He had been a lawyer about twenty-five years, had held town office, served in the Massachusetts Legislature, had been postmaster of Abington. In the Harvard Law School he was a classmate of Benjamin W. Harris, and, like him, was a native of East Bridgewater. In 1883, upon the death of Judge Wood, he was appointed by Governor Benjamin F. Butler, judge of probate and insolvency.

Mr. Keith associated with himself John F. Simmons, a son of Hon. Perez Simmons of Hanover, as a partner. He was a graduate of Phillips Exeter Academy and Harvard University, class of 1873. He later became a partner of Harvey H. Pratt.

Hon. Solomon Lincoln, born in Hingham, February 28, 1804, was graduated from Derby Academy and Brown University and studied law in the office of Ebenezer Gay in Hingham. He was admitted to the bar in 1826. As a young man he wrote a "History of Hingham" and was a frequent contributor to newspapers and magazines. Among other offices which he held was member of the Massachusetts Legislature, United States Marshal, master in chancery for Plymouth County, bank commissioner, cashier of the Webster Bank in Boston, director of the Hingham Mutual Fire Insurance Company, afterwards its president; director of the Hingham Cemetery Corporation, trustee of Loring Hall, of Hingham Public Library, of Hingham Agricultural and Horticultural Society. He gave numerous notable orations and addresses, and was author of several publications.

Many of the lawyers of today remember when Hosea Kingman, William Henry Osborne and Judge Charles G. Davis constituted the board of examiners for admission to the Plymouth County bar. Mr. Osborne was a native of Scituate but lived nearly all of his life in East Bridgewater. He was graduated from the State Normal School in Bridgewater and taught school parts of three years, until May, 1861, when he enlisted as a private in Company C, 29th Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers. He had a notable army record, taking part in numerous battles. His regiment was made a part of the famous Irish Brigade under command of General Thomas Francis Meagher, which was at the front nearly every day for several weeks.

At the battle of Malvern Hill, July 1, 1862, Mr. Osborne was struck in the chest by a musket ball and was carried off the field insensible and left as dead. He was, however, restored to consciousness, and, unobserved, seized the gun of a dead comrade and, in the darkness, found his way to the front. Again he was wounded severely, this time in the left leg by a fragment of shell. He became one of some five hundred wounded soldiers who were taken prisoners, carried to Richmond and exchanged July 18, 1862. He was under treatment at St. Luke's Hospital, New York, until January, 1863, when he was discharged as unfit for service.

Returning home, Mr. Osborne again taught school and entered the office of Benjamin W. Harris to read law. He was admitted to the bar in 1864. He served in the Massachusetts Legislature and held numerous official positions.



Hon. John F. Andrew was a worthy son of Hon. John A. Andrew, governor of Massachusetts during the Civil War, a graduate of Harvard University, and admitted to the bar in 1875. He served in both houses of the Massachusetts Legislature, was delegate to the National Republican Convention at Chicago in 1884.

Joseph Sampson Beal, a prominent attorney of the county, resided in Kingston, his native town. He was graduated from Harvard University in 1835, and was admitted to practice in 1838. He served in both branches of the Massachusetts Legislature, was Register of Probate for the county, served as a member of the Kingston school committee, was auditor of accounts for the Old Colony Railroad Company, and held other offices with credit.

Bradford Kingman, well remembered as author of the "History of North Bridgewater" and the "History of Brookline" among other publications, was also a lawyer, admitted to the bar April 21, 1863. He was a native of Brockton. He served several years as trial justice for the trial of criminal cases in Norfolk County. He became a resident of Brookline May 1, 1856. He was editor and proprietor of the "Brookline Transcript" some over two years, and was a contributor to newspapers and magazines many years. He was a member of numerous historical and genealogical societies.

Ellis Wesley Morton, a native of North Bridgewater (now Brockton), was born October 8, 1848, educated at the Adelpian Academy in North Bridgewater, Classical High School, Providence, Rhode Island; and Cambridge Law School, and admitted to the bar October 8, 1861. He served as assistant United States attorney for Massachusetts, as a member of the United States Circuit Court for Massachusetts, and was admitted to the bar of the United States Supreme Court at Washington, District of Columbia, in March, 1864.

Eliab Whitman, born in East Bridgewater, May 30, 1788, was graduated from Brown University, studied law in the office of Hon. Nahum Mitchell, and practiced law in Lisbon, Maine, two years after being admitted to the bar. In 1813 he settled in North Bridgewater and was the only attorney in the town for several years. He served the district in the Massachusetts Legislature in 1840 and 1841.

Jonathan White was born in East Randolph, August 22, 1819, fitted for college at Phillips' Academy, Andover, was graduated from Yale College in 1844, and opened a law office in North Bridgewater (now Brockton) in 1849. He was a member of the House of Representatives and later the Massachusetts Senate, much interested in the Old Colony Congregational Club of which he was president, and especially interested as trustee of the Brockton Public Library.

**Courthouses and Jails at Plymouth**—In the early days, it was rarely that even the judges had had the advantages of a legal education. By 1701 attorneys were recognized as officers of the court, and were required to take an oath before practicing. Apparently no study or examination was required and the ordinary man had as good a chance before the court, pleading his own cause, as depending upon an advocate. This condition whetted the Yankee shrewdness and it has been said, as late as 1746, that the people were especially "addicted to quirks of the law. . . so that a very ordinary countryman in New England is almost qualified for a country attorney in England."

When the Plymouth County courts were provided for there was, according to the English custom, a Government House, which stood on Town Square in Plymouth, at the foot of Burial Hill, and on the first street in the Plymouth Colony. It was surrounded by a generous tract of land and the County Prison occupied a part of the land. These two institutions provided accommodations for the new court and those who received the courtly administrations, by order of the General Court, until Plymouth County purchased, in 1773, the land now occupied by the Court House, in Court Square. In the rear was erected the county jail or house of correction, and this or a later building were used until a comparatively few years ago when, during the term of office of High Sheriff Henry S. Porter, the present larger house of correction was erected at Obery Heights, two miles farther south in the town in Plymouth. The first jail was built in 1778.

Additional land was bought of the town of Plymouth by the county in 1819 and a stone jail was erected, at a cost of \$11,500. A keeper's house was built at the same time at a cost of \$2,000. The following year the county built the present courthouse, after removing the former jail and keeper's residence. The cost of the courthouse was \$12,000. It was enlarged in 1857 at a cost of \$24,000. A new House of Correction had been built in 1852.

After the courthouse was erected in 1821, the town of Plymouth purchased the former courthouse on Town Square for a Town House. The House of Correction was enlarged and remodelled at a cost of approximately \$30,000.

There was considerable agitation in 1819, before building the courthouse, in favor of moving the shire of the county to some town nearer the centre of Plymouth County population. Claims were presented by several towns, setting forth their individual advantages. The town occupying the geographical centre was then, as now, Halifax. Although one of the smallest towns, as regards population, its central location was especially desirable from the standpoint of travel, as most transportation in those days was necessarily behind a horse, over sandy or



muddy highways, according to the season. How Halifax itself voted on the question, earlier historians neglected to set down, but the vote in Carver, nearest town to Plymouth, was one in favor of Halifax and one hundred and forty-seven against. Marshfield, Hanson and some other towns put up rival arguments and it was finally left to vote of the towns. Every town voted for itself and Plymouth, being the town with the largest voting strength, saved for itself the honor and advantages of remaining the shire town.

The Plymouth County Agricultural Society was organized in the old Plymouth courthouse. The society was first projected at a meeting held there in 1818. A large number of men interested taxed themselves \$10 each to get the society started. Later life memberships were sold for \$5 each. The society was incorporated in 1819 and is still in existence, holding its annual fair in Bridgewater, where for many years it had the largest and most pretentious agricultural fair grounds and equipment in this part of the country.

Among the objects of interest transferred to the new courthouse was the original charter of the Old Colony, framed and hung in the county clerk's office. It measures twenty by twenty-six inches and has the remnants of a seal of brown wax, which measured four and one-half inches across. The seal has for many years been in fragments but it is easy to trace its original outlines.

Of the original records "Russell's Recollections" stated:

The records are now arranged chronologically, and in such a manner that the legislative proceedings or court orders form six separate volumes, the wills and inventories four, deeds six, laws one, acts of commissioners of United Colonies two. There is also an imperfect volume of the records of these commissioners, being as is supposed, their original minutes. There is also one volume of Indian deeds, bound with the treasurers' accounts and lists of freemen; one volume of actions, marriages, births and deaths; making in the whole twenty-two volumes of original deeds.

Copies made from the above were deposited in the office of the secretary of state, and form eleven folio volumes, and are indexed like the originals. All the laws and legislative proceedings are copied, with such parts of the other records as were thought to be useful. The parts not copied are most of the private deeds, wills and inventories.

**Recent Constitutional Conventions**—The Constitutional Conventions in 1917, 1918 and 1919 considered the entire redrafting of the Constitution of 1780 and its amendments. The present constitution runs through all court decisions since 1780. It is the oldest constitution in the United States, has a prestige which no other constitution has and is the source of suggestion for all the other States.

The total membership of the Constitutional Convention of 1917 consisted of three hundred and twenty persons. There were sixteen

delegates from the state-at-large, sixty-four from the Congressional Districts, four from each; and two hundred and forty from the legislative representative districts. Each representative district had the same number of delegates as representatives in the Legislature. The Plymouth County members were Walter L. Bouve, of Hingham, chairman of the Committee on Military Affairs; E. Gerry Brown, of Brockton, a member of the Committee on Labor; Dr. Ezra W. Clark, of Brockton, member of the Committee on Liquor Traffic; A. Webster Butler, of Brockton, member of the Committee on Public Affairs; Elmer L. Curtiss, of Hingham, chairman of the Massachusetts Civil Service Commission; Robert T. Delano, of Wareham, member of Committee on County and District Government; Clarence W. Harding, of Whitman, member of Committee on Liquor Traffic; Judge George W. Kelley, of Rockland, member of Committee on Social Welfare; Edward A. MacMaster, of Bridgewater, member of Committee on Judicial Procedure; Patrick Peterson, of Brockton, member of Committee on Elections; Walter F. Russell, of Brockton, who died from illness which prevented him from attending the convention; Ernest H. Sparrell, of Norwell, member of the Committee on Social Welfare; Harry R. Talbot, of Plymouth, clerk of Committee on Labor; Albert H. Washburn, of Middleboro, member of Committee on Amendment and Codification of the Constitution.

Just how much the convention accomplished is a matter of opinion but the representatives from Plymouth County gave to the work conscientious attention and devoted attendance. It is a matter of record that many times business had to be suspended for lack of a quorum, and other business was done with a narrow margin above a quorum. As a matter of fact there was an order, offered by Arthur B. Curtis, of Revere, a member of the Committee on Contingent Expenses and Pay Roll, providing for a waiver of salaries for conscience' sake on the part of absentees who had not performed adequate services to make payment equitable. Coming up on the question of adoption, August 13, 1918, Mr. Curtis said it was "only an appeal to honor and conscience, but it gives an opportunity for such delegates as have for various reasons not been present at very many of these sessions, if they so desire, to turn over their compensation, their salary, either to the treasurer for general purposes or for the purpose of the Red Cross. \* \* \* I have no special interest in what they may turn it to, but I thought the Red Cross, 'the greatest mother in the world,' whose munificent hand stretches all over the world, might appeal to some of those men. I thought too, it might be, Mr. President, that some of those men remembered the admonition of old, 'Labor to keep alive that little spark of celestial fire called conscience.' \* \* \* \* It is all a matter, Mr. President,



of the conscience and of the honor and the financial condition of each delegate." After being amended to mention the Young Men's Christian Association, the Knights of Columbus, the Salvation Army and the Jewish War Relief, the order was adopted.

Of the three hundred and twenty delegates, only three returned anything, although there is no record that there was any opposition when the order came up for adoption. Two of the three were soldiers, absent in the World War, Charles P. Curtis, Jr., of Boston, absent in 1917, and Charles P. Howard, of Reading, absent in 1918. Each of them returned \$500. The third to act in response to the order was a Plymouth County delegate, Judge George W. Kelley, of Rockland. His record of attendance was one of the best in the entire list. On account of absences in 1917 he returned \$42.15; and on account of absences in 1918 \$27.76, a total of \$69.91. Presumably he reckoned the amounts proportionate to absences from roll call. There were thirty-five roll calls on questions and twelve roll calls on quorums, a total of forty-seven. Judge Kelley answered to all but one each, a record surpassed by only twelve in the entire convention and equalled by only seven others. Some were present at one, others only two and so the record went.

Remembering that the total number of roll calls was forty-seven, the Plymouth County delegates were absent from the following numbers: Bouve, of Hingham, nine; Brown, of Brockton, six; Butler, of Brockton, ten; Clark, of Brockton, two; Curtiss, of Hingham, twenty-eight; Delano, of Wareham, eight; Harding, of Whitman, three; Kelley, of Rockland, two; MacMaster, of Bridgewater, twelve; Peterson, of Brockton, three; Talbot, of Plymouth, six; Sparrell, of Norwell, twenty-five; Washburn, of Middleboro, five. It will thus be seen that the Plymouth County members were conspicuous in their faithfulness to the duties in hand, compared with the delegations as a whole.

Raymond L. Bridgman, author of "Ten Years of Massachusetts" and other valuable books, for many years legislative reporter for numerous newspapers, among them the "Brockton Enterprise," wrote a book entitled "The Massachusetts Constitutional Convention of 1917," in which was contained valuable history outside of official record. He was present at the convention every hour of its sittings in 1917, 1918 and 1919, and had personal knowledge obtained from close touch with controlling persons and events before, during and after the convention, so that some quotations from his book are the most enlightening of anything which can be given of the convention. A few, taken at random, concerning members of the Plymouth County delegation follow:

"A considerable group of members could be selected who came to the convention without a state reputation, of whom Mr. Washburn, of Middleboro, is a type, who shone steadily and brightly, if not brilliantly,

with their light of mental clarity and moral principle. More of them would have improved the convention."

"Mr. Washburn, of Middleboro, held that a percentage of voters was a better standard for signatures to an initiative petition than a fixed number and moved to make it four per cent of the total vote for governor at the preceding election, instead of the 20,000 names as it stood. Washburn quoted Theodore Roosevelt on his side, and Mr. Walker, of Brookline, retorted that this draft had been approved by Roosevelt. The roll call on the Washburn motion ended with 112 yeas and 112 nays. Then President Bates had his name called. He voted 'yes' and thus the official record was 113 yeas and 112 nays."

"Next in order on the November ballot was the amendment to change the method of selection of officers of the militia. The success of this proposition was due, in decisive degree, to the strength of the case made out by Mr. Bouve, of Hingham. His report from the Committee on Military Affairs, July 16, 1917, was unanimous, on its face. Afterward, Mr. Newhall, of Stoneham, was recorded as a dissenter. It was July 12, 1918, when the matter was reached for debate. Mr. Newhall moved to strike out the words:

'and all such officers entitled by law to receive commissions shall be commissioned by the governor, but no officer shall be appointed unless he shall have passed an examination prepared by a competent commission or shall have served one year in either the Federal or State militia or military service.'

"It was a long and hot debate which followed. Mr. Bouve, loaded with a battery-charge of documents and with his head and heart full of facts, figures and patriotic enthusiasm for his cause, went from his seat in the rear of the second division down to the front and poured out his argument to the edification of the listeners. Concerning this speech, the 'Boston Herald' report said:

" 'No speaker before the convention, not excepting the military men who have addressed it as guests of honor, have shown such knowledge of the Massachusetts militia, past and present.' "

"So important did he make to appear his contention against the old method of popular election as destructive to military efficiency, that the convention granted an extension of time for his argument, continuing it to the next session. Friends of popular (by soldiers) election threw their strength against him. But they could not persuade the convention after the clear and forceful demonstration which had been given. The pending amendment of Mr. Newhall had thirty-four yeas to eighty-five nays, and then the amendment as a whole was ordered to a third reading by ninety-nine to fifty-two, by rising vote. That settled the



controversy. It was given its next stage unanimously, without debate and was voted to be submitted, on August 15, to the people.

"Following this amendment came one in the same class, defining the legislative power over the military and naval forces of the Commonwealth and making the governor the commander-in-chief. It was reported by Mr. Walker, of New Bedford, under the same rule as the previous amendment. Mr. Bouve was its principal champion, and his prestige carried it through to an easy victory, in spite of slight opposition."

"Mr. Clark, of Brockton, spoke at length to establish the point that the law of supply and demand is not operative under modern conditions. \* \* \* Debate on the following day was continued by Mr. Brown, of Brockton, in a speech of nearly an hour, arguing that the Legislature could be trusted and that the State ought to regulate business in the necessities of life.

"One of the signs of the times regarding the changes in the theory of ownership of property is the large majority in the convention for the amendment which came to be called 'the natural-resources amendment.' Contrary to the plural authorship of many of the propositions submitted to the convention as embodiment of modern ideas and progress, this had but a single origin. E. Gerry Brown, of Brockton, introduced the matter under the head of 'Resolution Defining Private Property Title to Natural Resources.' It came out from the Committee on Public Affairs with the title. 'Resolution Relative to the Public Interest in Natural Resources.' The form introduced by Mr. Brown was this:

"'The properties of water, coal, iron and oil in their original states are among the essential rights of the collective body of people as a common heritage; and therefore cannot be held by any title as private property except as a trust to be exercised and administered equitably with a recognition of a common ownership.'

"The form reported by the committee was this, Mr. Anderson of Brookline being in charge of the report:

"'The conservation, development and use of agricultural, mineral, forest and water resources of the Commonwealth are matters of public interest. The General Court may therefore authorize the taking, by purchase or otherwise, of such lands or easements or interests therein, including water and mineral rights, and may enact such legislation as may be necessary or expedient for securing and promoting the proper conservation, development and use thereof.'

"Hearings on this subject were assigned for July 2, 3 and 9, and this solitary document, No. 231, was in the list with a large number bearing on the necessities of life. Yet, so absorbed were the people by the war and private affairs that the 'Boston Transcript's' introduction to the story of the hearings of the day says:

" 'Few persons representing the general public took occasion today to visit the State House to attend the various committee meetings of the constitutional convention.'

"And for this particular committee, which was to hear such vital subjects as the public control of the necessities of life and the private ownership of natural resources, the same record says:

" 'Hardly more than ten persons were present at the continued hearing before the Committee on Public Affairs on the public production, sale and distribution of the necessities of life.'

"This vital question of the private control of natural resources had no attention whatever, not being mentioned in the report of the hearing. The report of the committee, in the form quoted above, was unanimous. It was made July 17, 1917. (The report went through its various stages.)

"On August 7, the resolution came up for its next stage. Mr. Warren in the 'Boston Herald' the next morning, sketched the main incident of the debate so artistically that it is well worth quoting:

" 'Few sessions have seen in two successive speeches a contrast more striking than that between Mr. Luce's organ-toned plea for the natural resources resolution and Mr. Choate's quiet analysis of its dangers. Mr. Luce's stand was not expected by all the friends of the measure; still less by its opponents. Perhaps for that reason it counted the more. He spoke with all the dignity, foreboding and prophetic fire that must have marked Jonah's effective preaching in the streets of Ninevah. I mean to ask Mr. Luce some day if Jonathan Edwards was in any of his ancestral lines.'

"On referring the resolution to the people, as it finally stood, there was a roll call of one hundred and thirty-six yeas and eighty-six nays."

"One of the positions stoutly held by the labor men was that labor is a personal right, not a property right. \* \* \* \* Mr. Brown, of Brockton, followed for the labor men and moved this substitute:

" 'The labor of a human being shall not be deemed to be a commodity or article of commerce, and the Legislature shall not pass a law nor the courts construe any law of the Commonwealth contrary to this declaration.'

"Mr. Brown's substitute was rejected without count and then the voice vote, sustaining the committee, was so strong that no one asked for a count."

"Mr. Richardson, of Newton, offered the resolution upon which this amendment was based. (Advertising in public places.) It was referred to the Committee on Social Welfare and their report was that it ought to be rejected. Mr. Kelley, of Rockland, the member of the convention who earned distinction by returning a portion of his salary because



he was not present all the time, though his record of attendance was exceptionally good, moved a substitute in behalf of a minority of the committee, much more concise than the original form. But he withdrew it later, to make way for a preferable form proposed by Mr. Dutch of Winchester."

"Of the three hundred and twenty elected members of the convention, Walter F. Russell, of Brockton, died just before the first session."

The Civil Service incident of the convention was occasioned by Elmer L. Curtiss, of Hingham, chairman of the Massachusetts Civil Service Commission, introducing the resolution

"providing that appointments and promotions in the civil service shall be made because of merit and fitness ascertained through open competition."

"Debate, led by Mr. Curtiss turned largely upon giving liberal opportunity to returning soldiers to secure public employment. There was shown also, some of the chronic contempt and opposition for the merit system which is always more or less evident in the Legislature and among candidates for office. Various amendments were advanced, but only to be defeated. It seemed to be popular to attack the merit system. The Curtiss resolution had thirty-six yeas to ninety-eight nays."

Much time and oratory in the Constitutional Convention was given to consideration of the principle of the initiative and referendum. There were many who heroically and persistently championed the cause of full democracy in place of representative democracy, which had been the legacy and practice handed down by the fathers as the general Massachusetts practice. The initiative and referendum provides facilities for originating or validating statutes and there were petitioners galore who argued along the same line as Grenville S. MacFarland, editorial writer for the "Boston American," when he said in a personal letter to each candidate for the Legislature in representative districts:

"In my judgment and I hope in yours, that convention will be a failure if it does not enable us to obtain the initiative and referendum, by which the direct powers of the whole body of citizens may supplement the present form of representative government and keep it free from those vices which the unequal distribution of wealth and the resulting concentration of financial and political power, through the rise of powerful public service and industrial corporations, have introduced into our body politic and are now threatening our representative form of government."

In this initiative and referendum struggle one of the Plymouth County members, E. Gerry Brown, of Brockton, took a prominent part. It was a familiar plaything for Mr. Brown. He could take hold of it anywhere

and feel at home and he helped keep it in the air during the long period it seemed to be the only measure deemed worthy of serious consideration by the large number of delegates.

Mr. Bridgman truly said in his book: "If a convenient, correct and historic name is wanted for the Massachusetts Constitutional Convention which first met in 1917, the name of 'the I. & R. Convention' would have high claim for preference. From the beginning of the convention the element which wanted the initiative and referendum amendment was the controlling factor, or their subject was the dominating subject. After the matter was disposed of, the hiatus left by its omission from the program had its influence upon all subsequent proceedings in way of reduced attendance and comparative want of interest, accompanied by lack of devotion to duty."

While the initiative and referendum resolutions were under consideration debates went on day after day. One morning the Boston "Daily Advertiser" said:

Rioting seems to be about the only thing left for the constitutional convention to indulge in, and yesterday's session brought all the long-hidden bitterness between the I. & R. proponent and opponent to the surface. At one time a free-for-all looked imminent. The session went through its last two hours amid a continual bedlam of shouts, catcalls, booing and hissing. The chairman, former Attorney General Pillsbury, was powerless to stop the disgraceful scene.

To quote that alert and faithful historian, Raymond L. Bridgman, again:

But there was a crisis in the debate when Mr. Loring of Beverly replied to the labor argument. This speech was one of the marked incidents of the entire discussion because the speaker had not claimed the attention of the members previously. He was an unknown quantity. He spoke without oratorical ambition, but made such a forcible and direct argument that he held the attention of the members to an unprecedented degree, for being the head of the well known Plymouth Cordage Works, which had been having trouble with its employees, he was recognized as a man with practical experience, while his subsequent position as author of the famous "Loring amendment," changing the form of the entire proposition and making it possible for members to vote for it who could not have supported it otherwise, put him in the position of being one of the master minds of the entire I. & R. debate.

The delegate referred to, Augustus P. Loring, of Beverly, was not only at the head of Plymouth County's great rope-making industry, the largest rope-making concern in the world, but he became a member of the Massachusetts Senate, following the Constitutional Convention, and it was Senator Loring who, as a member of the Legislature in 1920, petitioned that the Constitution of 1780 be repealed and that the rearrangement of the constitution adopted by the people, November 4, 1919, be adopted as the constitution of the Commonwealth. The



Supreme Judicial Court, to which the approval and ratification by the people at the State election, in November, 1919, had been referred, returned a unanimous reply, signed by each justice separately, concluding with the words:

"We therefore answer that, in our opinion, the 'rearrangement of the constitution' described in the order of the governor and council is not 'the constitution or form of government for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts.' "





## CHAPTER XXVI

### THE FOURTH ESTATE.

**First Copy-Maker Was William Bradford Who Should Have Packed a Printing Press Instead of So Many Bureaus on the "Mayflower"—Winslow and Brewster Were Printers in Holland—First Printing Press Came to Harvard College in 1654, but is Not the One the "Lampoon" is Printed On—Early Journals Included Boston "News-Letter," Published by Postmaster—Benjamin Franklin Tried "Yellow Journalism"—Oldest County Weekly Passed Century Mark Six Years Ago—Two Dailies but No Sunday Newspaper—Notable Members of the Profession Who Have Passed Away—Men Who Owe Fame to Reporters—Tramp Printers Recalled Who Became Eminent—Magazine in Interest of Shoe Industry—Newspaper Men Signed Declaration of Independence, Became President, Governor, "Rough Riders," City Officials, Private Secretaries, Consuls, War Correspondents and Tramps.**

"All I know is what I read in the newspapers." Thousands of times we have read articles by Will Rogers which started with that confession and if we were as honest in giving credit where it belongs it might be uttered by everyone of us to a much greater extent than most people ever stop to think. About the only occurrence of any great account that ever took place in this country of which the newspapers did not give us the first account, and from which history has been written, was the landing of the Pilgrims on Cape Cod and Plymouth Rock. There was on that historic ship of about one hundred and eighty tons burden a good newspaper reporter, William Bradford. He did not know he was a good newspaper reporter any more than half a hundred of his fellow-passengers knew they were good ancestors, and all were equally oblivious of the fact that three hundred years after they began to live good newspaper copy, the events in their daily lives would prove interesting reading to generations beyond their reckoning.

William Bradford had his note-book always at hand and in that book he wrote faithful reports of what he saw and heard, considerable editorial matter, copy for the sporting page, the shipping column, the household page, department of finance, health hints, religious intelligence, politics, comment on the military and men in public life. In fact William Bradford was capable of writing "all over the paper," and evidently he covered his district thoroughly and was only "scooped"

on some stories which have since proven to have been untrue. William Bradford wrote no copy concerning the feminism of Priscilla Mullins or her leap-year proposal to John Alden, and did not include in his story of the wedding a description of Priscilla's wedding trip on a white bull, a year and a half before there were any domestic animals in this new world. That was one "bull" William Bradford cannot be accused of making.

But this first newspaper reporter kept a well-filled note-book and began writing copy while the "Mayflower" was tossing on the waves. No one knew where they were going or whether they were ever going to get there, but Bradford was a typical reporter. He stuck diligently to his note-taking and, in case he landed anywhere there was a newspaper, his copy was ready, up to the time of the next edition, and he hadn't missed a bet.

It is unfortunate that there was not a newspaper artist on the "Mayflower" as well as a reporter. However many pictures we have seen of the "Mayflower," the only way the artists had of preparing them for our optical pleasure was to draw them from accounts of other ships of about the same size and class. The "Mayflower" was one of the larger ships of the merchant service of England, heavy-built, with high poop and forecastle; broad of beam, short in the waist, low between decks, of square rig with a lateen sail upon her mizzenmast. In all probability she had three masts. With high stem and stern she was what was known as "a wet ship." There was considerable cabin space and overhead floated the flag that King James of England ordered in 1606 to replace the English ensign of earlier date. It was one of the early voyages under the Union Jack, which represented, and still does, the uniting of the Kingdoms of England and Scotland; the red cross of St. George superimposed upon the white cross of St. Andrew, on a field of dark blue. James I was a Scotchman who didn't hesitate to change things, if he wanted to, even though his predecessor, Queen Elizabeth, for whom the first English colony in America had been named, had tried most everything once, as the expression goes, and got away with it. James had the New Testament written to suit him and whether he was entirely satisfied with the whole work or not, he surely had no reason to be otherwise than delighted with the very flattering introduction to the King James version, which is still printed in the first pages of that world's best seller.

William Bradford, however, included in his manuscript as much as any good reporter could, aside from illustrations, and for his faithful work deserves the gratitude of every Pilgrim and descendant of every Pilgrim in America, whether they were Pilgrims of 1620 or came by any of the later boats or by airplane. This manuscript was kept for



many years in the old Bradford House in Kingston, which is still standing. The house was nearly burned by the Indians on one occasion and the manuscript later fell into the hands of the British in the War of 1812 and was taken to England. Many other valuable records were wilfully destroyed by the British in that war, but the Bradford manuscript seems to have been providentially preserved and a quarter of a century ago was printed by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, so that everyone who wished to do so might read it or have a copy of his own.

Many students find it very easy to agree with May Alden Ward in her opinion expressed in her book "Old Colony Days," in which she says, "As Americans we can never be grateful enough that in the little band of men who first set foot on Plymouth Rock was one who realized that they were making history, one who felt that the rock was to become the cornerstone of a nation. He saw that from the moment when they first resolved for freedom's sake 'to tempt the dangers of an unknown sea, to plant a home in an unknown wilderness,' their lightest acts became important and worthy of recording. To him we owe the chart by which we follow this heroic band step by step, day after day, through the long privations, the terrible sufferings, and the crushing sorrows which attended the birth of New England.

"Now that Forefathers' Day is celebrated from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and a splendid monument marks the scene of their martyrdom; now that great paintings of the embarkation and of the landing adorn not only the walls of Pilgrim Hall at Plymouth, but the Rotunda of the Capitol at Washington, and the Peers' Corridor of the House of Parliament,—we are apt to forget what very unimportant events these were at the time of their occurrence. We cannot realize how little noise they made in the world, and how easily all record of them might have been lost. England took no note either of the embarkation or of the landing; and the Peers would have been mightily amused had it been suggested to them that the departure of that little band of stubborn 'Separatists' was an event of historical importance, worthy to be perpetuated on the walls of the House of Parliament. Painters, poets, and historians would have been dependent on imagination and tradition in portraying these scenes were it not for the pen of William Bradford, to whom belongs, unquestionably, the title of 'The Father of American History.'

"By this opinion no slight is intended to his famous contemporaries. Their greatness lay chiefly in other directions. Some touches, it is true, were added to the history by Edward Winslow; but his sketches, rare treasures as they are, narrate only detached incidents. To Bradford alone belongs the credit of having written a connected history

of the 'Old Colony' during the first quarter century of its existence, while it was still doubtful whether it was to exist at all. He must be placed first in that great triumvirate of Plymouth men of whom it has been said that Standish was the hand, Winslow the tongue, and Bradford the guiding brain."

**No Chance for a Free Press**—Edward Winslow and William Brewster had been printers in Leyden, Holland, and the latter had issued from his press books and pamphlets for some years before starting for the New World. Governor Bradford, in his history of "Plimmoth Plantation" says: "He (Brewster) also had means to set up printing, (by ye help of some friends), and so had imploymente inough, and by reason of many books which would not be allowed to be printed in England, they might have had more than they sould doe. But now removeing into this countrie, all these things were laid aside againe, and a new course of living must be framed unto; in which he was no way unwilling to take his parte, and to bear his burthen with ye rest, living many times without bread, or corne, many months together, having many times nothing but fish, and often wanting that also."

If William Bradford had only had a printing press at his disposal after arriving at Plymouth he would, undoubtedly, with his faithful enthusiasm for keeping records and describing events, have kept as busy in his native line as did Captain Myles Standish in matters of military life. He might have established the "Patuxet Colonist," or a newspaper of some such name, Patuxet being the Indian name for Plymouth at that time. Surely there were interesting occurrences in the early days for a newspaper, even though the readers would have been few. Strangely enough the third printing press to be set up in the colonies was established by a William Bradford in Philadelphia in 1685. The first press was brought from England by Rev. Joseph Glover in 1638, but he died at sea. The press, however, and the required type and print paper arrived and started its mission in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Harvard College came into possession of the press in 1654. A printing press was set up in Boston in 1674.

It was farthest from the intention of the British rulers to have anything like a free press get started in the colonies. The first newspaper established in Boston by Benjamin Harris, "Publick Occurrences, Both Forreign and Domestick," September 25, 1690, was soon suppressed by the governor and his council, charged with having "contained Reflections of a very high nature" and "sundry doubtful and uncertain reports." According to C. A. Duniway's "The Development of Freedom of the Press in Massachusetts" each of the colonial governors sent over between 1686 and 1730 had included in their instruc-



tions: "And forasmuch as great inconvenience may arise by liberty of printing within our said territory under your government, you are to provide by all necessary orders that no person keep any printing-press for printing, nor that any book, pamphlet or other matter whatsoever be printed without your especial leave and license first obtained."

Benjamin Harris was an exiled English newspaper publisher and, while he was permitted to get out only one issue, that issue contained about twenty paragraphs of news and only two of them were devoted to foreign affairs. It was put together well and it was many years before another newspaper as good in its make-up was produced. Harris had a better sense of news values than the postmasters and printers who attempted to get out newspapers after him.

The "Boston News-Letter" was the second newspaper and it continued seventy-two years. The first eighteen years it was published by John Campbell, postmaster at Boston. The newspaper was "Published by Authority," by virtue of Postmaster Campbell "waiting on His Excellency or Secretary for approbation of what is Collected." The "News-Letter" was a copy of the style of newspapers published in England in those days. It was a financial struggle for Campbell and grants were received twice in 1706 from the government. At the end of fifteen years the circulation was about three hundred copies. Campbell was most painstaking and apologetic in his conduct of the "News-Letter." In one issue he explained that, in a report of a fire in Plymouth in the preceding issue "whereas it is said Flame covering the Barn, it should be said Smoak."

Of the "Mayflower," Thomas Carlyle wrote: "Hail to thee, poor little ship 'Mayflower'—of Delft Haven—poor, common-looking ship, hired by common charter-party for coined dollars,—caulked with mere oakum and tar,—provisioned with vulgarest biscuit and bacon,—yet what ship 'Argo' or miraculous epic ship, built by the sea gods, was other than a foolish bum-barge in comparison!"

This is the ship which brought over the man who deserves to be called the first American reporter, the man who gave his fellow-voyagers the name of Pilgrims, the man who started writing the history of America day by day, and is not that what the newspapers are doing, nothing else? Let's therefore open a bottle of ink or consecrate a typewriter or do whatever the proper journalistic thing it is to do, in honor of William Bradford, America's first news-writer and, in that connection, recall and echo his own words: "Out of small beginnings, great things have been produced; and, as one small candle may light a thousand, so the light here kindled hath shone to many, yes, in some sort to our whole nation."

William Bradford was "one small candle" which kindled the light

of journalism in the New World. It would be eminently fitting if the newspaper men of America should erect a monument to his memory in that connection.

The only important war which has ever taken place in America without a war correspondent was King Philip's War. A quarter of a century after the dethroning of this king of the Wampanoags, there appeared in the united colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay the first newspaper in New England which lived any length of time, the Boston "News-Letter." A copy of the first number is one of the valued possessions of the Massachusetts Historical Society. It bears the date of April 24, 1704. William Bradford did not live to see this new light. If he had he would have been in his one hundred and fifteenth year and it so happened that he died at the age of sixty-seven, May 9, 1657, at Plymouth. He was governor of the Plymouth Colony from 1621 to 1657, except in 1633-34, 1636, 1638, 1644. His "History of the Plymouth Plantation" covered the events from 1602 to 1647, as he covered the doings of the "Separatists" while they were at Leyden in Holland and remained on the assignment when they were moved by "a hope and inward zeal of advancing the gospel of the kingdom of Christ in the remote parts of the New World; yea, though they should be but as stepping-stones unto others for performing so great a work."

**Ben Franklin, Boston's First Newsboy**—Two years after the first appearance of the Boston "News-Letter," there was born in a little house which stood at No. 17 Milk Street, Boston, Benjamin Franklin, destined to be the first real newspaper reporter to liven up the old town of Boston. Benjamin Franklin was Boston's first newsboy. It was a part of his job, as an employee of his brother, James Franklin, to sell the newspaper which his older brother published in the vicinity of their home. Benjamin Franklin conceived the idea of turning in some real news and printing something in the paper which would sell it, since he was responsible for increasing the circulation on the streets. Having had the same experience with editors that many others newspaper men have had since, and having accumulated rejected manuscripts to a distasteful degree, Ben Franklin wrote some live copy and slid it under the office door one night, to hide the identity of the writer. In this way the report was read without prejudice and pronounced good. It had some references to the Mather family, at least Rev. Increase Mather and his son, Cotton Mather, chose to believe the coat fitted them and put it on. One of the Mathers, who had been in the habit of practically being the Mussolini of early Boston, met James Franklin on one of the crooked streets of Boston and proceeded to bawl him out



with eloquence and without mercy. James Franklin took the rebuke in true journalistic style by reprinting the article and appealing to his readers if the name of Mather was mentioned in it anywhere or if there was anything in it which, by any means, indicated that Rev. Mr. Mather of either generation was the man under discussion. Subsequently, however, James Franklin and his cub reporter had a private session, as the editor and the printer's devil have many times had since. The result of this heart-to-heart talk caused Benjamin Franklin to move to Philadelphia where, among other things he did, was to become editor and proprietor of the "Pennsylvania Gazette" in 1729.

Acting on the suggestion of Major Patrick F. O'Keefe, a delegation of newspaper men placed a wreath on the statue of Franklin in Boston, January 17, 1927, on the two hundred and twenty-first anniversary of his birth. Mayor Nichols, of Boston, himself a newspaper man, made an appropriate address.

While Governor Bradford was in advance of his time as a newspaper man, another William Bradford was one of the first American journalists. Born in Leicestershire, England, in 1663, he became an American printer, the founder of the "New York Gazette." This was in 1725, two years before the first newsboy in the Plymouth and Bay colonies started his newspaper venture in Philadelphia. Both Franklin and Bradford printed almanacs as well as newspapers, Franklin his "Poor Richard's Almanac" and Bradford his "America's Messenger." The latter was, however, first in the field, the first almanac being for the year 1686, twenty years before Franklin was born.

The Bradford name has been much associated with newspaper work and history. Alden Bradford, born in our own county, at Duxbury, in 1765, edited the "Boston Gazette" in 1826. He wrote a "History of Massachusetts" for the period between 1764 and 1820. He was secretary of state for Massachusetts twelve years, following the War of 1812, and possessed many of the characteristics of his distinguished ancestors, as well as carrying the names of two of the prominent Pilgrims.

John Alden, it will be remembered, was a writing man, acting as secretary to the military commander at Plymouth, Captain Myles Standish, while a member of his household, and it was from him that Alden Bradford received his surname.

Plymouth County is today rich in the possession of two daily newspapers, both in Brockton, the only city in the county; and numerous weekly papers, several of the larger towns having more than one each. There is a bi-monthly magazine, "The Brockton and South Shore Magazine," published at Brockton, which carries the message of the

shoe industry in that section which produces the most high-grade shoes in the world. The State Normal School at Bridgewater, several of the high schools and some other institutions of learning, issue worthy publications, the work of the student body. The publicity representative of the Brockton Agricultural Society has printed during the days of the Brockton Fair each year a daily newspaper, "The Brockton Fair Periscope." The Brockton Fair is the only fair in America in the interest of which a daily newspaper is printed.

The first daily newspaper printed in the county was the Brockton "Daily Enterprise," which made its first appearance January 26, 1880. The first edition consisted of five hundred copies which were eagerly purchased by the 13,000 people who constituted the population of the town in that year. It was the following year that Brockton became a city. A more extended history of the "Daily Enterprise," the outgrowth of the "Weekly Enterprise," and the story of the other county daily, the "Brockton Times," are given on a later page, in chronological order.

**Newspapers Sold the Idea of Freedom**—A congress of representatives of the English colonies was called to meet at Albany in 1754, in anticipation of the French and Indian War. Benjamin Franklin printed in his "Pennsylvania Gazette," a one-column, two-inch wood cut of a snake divided into eight segments, each of which bore the initials of one of the colonies. Under the cut were the words, "Join or die." Four other newspapers, including those in Boston, printed practically the same cartoon, and it had its effect upon the people, same as cartoons have had ever since. When the war came, Massachusetts and New York imposed a stamp tax of one-half penny on every copy of the newspapers printed in the colonies, and this extra tax had to be met by the publishers in Massachusetts for two years. Later a tax of two shillings was imposed on every advertisement, which caused some newspapers to suspend.

It was largely through the "Boston Gazette" that the idea of freedom from England was sold to the colonists, by such writers as Samuel Adams, James Otis, Joseph Warren, Josiah Quincy, Samuel Cooper, and John Adams. The "Massachusetts Gazette" and "Boston News-Letter," published by Robert Draper, who introduced the Royal Arms into the head to indicate its official character, was employed by the Loyalists as their organ. The "News-Letter" was published by Richard Draper until his death in 1774 and continued to be the organ of the Tories. It was carried on by Richard Draper's widow for a time and later by John Howe. It was the only paper printed in Boston during the occupation of the city by the British. A few weeks before the



British evacuated Boston it went out of existence, after having been published seventy-two years.

Shortly before the Revolution the "Massachusetts Spy" was published by Zachariah Fowle and Isaiah Thomas. Fowle withdrew in November, 1770, and Thomas made the paper almost as outspoken in behalf of the colonists' cause as the "Boston Gazette." Both were compelled by the authorities to suspend about the time of the Battle of Lexington, but the "Spy" resumed publication in Worcester and the "Gazette" in Watertown. When hostilities began in 1775, there were thirty-seven newspapers in the eleven colonies and fourteen of them were in the four New England colonies, five of them in Boston. This fact, as well as many others given in this chapter, are given in "Main Currents in the History of American Journalism" by Willard Grosvenor Bleyer, Ph.D., published in 1927.

The early newspapers deserve much credit for their contributions to the spirit of unity and instruction to the colonists which led to the successful prosecution of the Revolutionary War for liberty. There was only one newspaper published for every 70,000 freemen. During the war the shortage of paper made getting out a paper exceedingly difficult.

Thomas Paine was an influential newspaper writer during the Revolution and it is well to remember that that newspaper man, as early as 1775, came out, not only for independence for the colonies but for the abolition of slavery. This surely entitles him to be remembered by the American people with gratitude rather than by what Theodore Roosevelt called him, "a dirty little atheist." Indeed his contribution in the "Pennsylvania Journal," in 1775, does not sound especially atheistic, as he said:

. . . . I hesitate not for a moment to believe, that the Almighty will finally separate America from Britain—call it Independency or what you will—if it is the cause of God and humanity, it will go on.—And when the Almighty shall have blest us, and made us a people, *dependent only upon him*, then may our first gratitude be shown, by an act of continental legislation, which shall put a stop to the importation of Negroes for sale, soften the hard fate of those already here, and in time procure their freedom.

Thomas Paine's famous writing "Common Sense," his famous "Crisis," "one after another, caused Samuel Adams to declare that they "undoubtedly awakened the public mind, and led the people loudly to call for a declaration of independence."

The first illustration which appeared in an American newspaper was a wood cut of a new flag to be used by the United Kingdom of England and Scotland. This appeared in the "Boston News-Letter" of January 19-26, 1707-8.

Postmaster Campbell, its publisher, was superseded in the Boston postmastership in 1719 by William Brooker, who wanted to get control of the "News-Letter," but Campbell would not relinquish it. So Brooker started a rival paper, the "Boston Gazette," and hired James Franklin, older brother of Benjamin Franklin, to do the printing. Campbell kept on with his "News-Letter" three years, and then turned it over to Bartholomew Green, who had been the printer. The "Gazette" first appeared December 21, 1719 and, after Brooker, four other postmasters had it as a side issue. It was as dull and uninteresting as the "News-Letter" and, like the first, "Published by Authority."

**Franklin's "Wicked Paper" Landed Him in Jail**—James Franklin lost the printing of the "Gazette," through one of the successive changes in postmasters, and was persuaded by three men who were at odds with the influential Puritan leaders in Boston, to start a newspaper representing more liberal ideas. This was the "New England Courant." Its appearance August 7, 1721, started something decidedly new in Boston and in America. Benjamin Franklin, in his autobiography, says his brother James "had some ingenious men among his friends, who amus'd themselves by writing little pieces for this paper." The "Courant" printed essays, verses and letters and was a paper avowedly in opposition to the recognized leaders in the colony. The first issue declared the "Courant" as a fortnightly paper but in its issue August 28-September 4, 1721, the second from the press, Franklin explained that "at the desire of several Gentlemen in Town, this Paper is to be published weekly." There were two other papers in Boston and a fourth one in the colonies, the "American Weekly Mercury," published in Philadelphia.

Of course the new editor had to take a crack at one of the rival editors early in the game, to make things brotherly and interesting, after the manner of newspapers in the good old days. John Campbell had made an attack on him and Franklin's reply, August 14-21, 1721, was a few lines of verse addressed to Campbell:

We need not tell you where you're flat and dull;  
Your Works declare, 'tis in your empty skull.  
In reading, hearing, writing, and Pains taking,  
You set your Reader's Heads and Hearts on aking.

From a file of the "Courant," it appears that John Checkley, an Episcopalian, who had been forbidden by the authorities two years before to publish a religious tract, was the editor. In the third issue Checkley stated "the chief design" of the paper was "to oppose the doubtful and dangerous Practice of inoculating the Small Pox."



Boston physicians with one exception, were said to be opposed to inoculation and three of its opponents wrote articles against it which the "Courant" published.

Rival factions, quarrelling principally over inoculation, waged a journalistic battle, the "Boston Gazette" being used by those who were in favor of inoculation and the "Courant" by the opponents. Personalities were indulged in and Checkley printed an article which charged Rev. Thomas Walter of Roxbury, a grandson of Rev. Increase Mather, with immorality and drinking to excess. Franklin expressed regret in the next issue that this article had been printed and announced that he had "changed his author" (editor.)

Rev. Increase Mather gave "Advice to the Publick" in the "Boston Gazette," in which he said: "I that have known what New-England was from the Beginning, cannot but be troubled to see the Degeneracy of this place. I can well remember when the Civil Government could have taken an effectual Course to suppress such a Cursed Libel! which if it be not done I am afraid that some Awful Judgment will come upon this Land, and that the Wrath of GOD will arise and there will be no Remedy.

"I cannot but pity poor Franklin, who tho' but a Young Man, it may be Speedily he must appear before the Judgment Seat of GOD, and what answer will he give for printing things so vile and abominable? And I cannot but Advise the Supporters of this "Courant" to consider the consequences of being Partakers in other Men's Sins, and no more Countenance such a Wicked Paper."

Mather Byles, another grandson of Rev. Increase Mather, printed a letter in the "Gazette" reflecting on the "Courant," and Franklin, in his reply, referred to him as "a young scribbling Collegian, who has just Learning enough to make a Fool of himself." The Mather family had been in the habit of having its own way in affairs in general in Boston and vicinity and "young Franklin" disturbed the family immensely.

One morning in March, 1722, James Franklin found on the floor in his print-shop a communication which had evidently been thrust under the door. It was signed Silence Dogood, was humorous but straightforward in its statements, and found a place in the "Courant" which caused the people of the colony to arise in considerable inquisitive excitement as to the identity of the author. This was from the pen of the sixteen-year old apprentice, Benjamin Franklin. James Franklin was evidently ignorant of the identity of the writer at first but every two weeks for six months these communications appeared, and were among the best features.

If an announcement in the "Courant" were correct, two women were admitted to its staff early in its career and gave the "Courant" the

distinction of being the first American newspaper to have women in its editorial department.

The "Courant" criticized the government for laxity in suppressing pirates on the coast, and for this offense Franklin spent a month in prison.

Six months later he published an essay on hypocrites and other articles which gave offense and a committee was appointed from the Council and House to consider his case. The Council ordered his arrest, after the committee had recommended he be "strictly forbidden to print or publish the 'New England Courant' or any Pamphlet or Paper of the Like Nature, except it be first supervised by the Secretary of this Province."

In the next issue James Franklin announced that following such a course would cause him so much inconvenience he had "intirely dropt the Undertaking." He had substituted the name of Benjamin Franklin for his own as publisher, and Benjamin, the seventeen-year old apprentice, printed a characteristic editorial in the first issue which bore his name as publisher. It stated that: "The main design of this Weekly Paper will be to entertain the Town with the most comical and diverting Incidents of Humane Life, which in so large a Place as Boston, will not fail of a universal Exemplification."

Benjamin Franklin did not remain long with the "Courant" or with his brother. He ran away, first to New York, then to Philadelphia. He became editor and publisher of the "Pennsylvania Gazette." James Franklin continued with the "Courant" until 1726, when he moved to Newport, Rhode Island, and, in 1732, started the "Rhode Island Gazette," the first paper in that colony.

One of the successors to the "New England Courant" was the "New England Weekly Journal," published by Samuel Kneeland, who had been the printer of the "Boston Gazette" but lost it through a change in postmasters. Soon there were newspapers in New York and elsewhere in the country and they began to take on more or less individuality, rather than being copies of the English papers. To the extent that they showed originality, they had trouble with the authorities but in those days it was almost impossible to live without violating some law made for the colonists, so the newspaper publishers enjoyed no special distinction. The physical handicaps and small income were discouraging. The wooden hand-presses and type had to be imported from England. Only one or two pages could be printed at a time. The ink was rubbed over the forms by hand. Each sheet was placed on the type by hand and, after an impression, was removed by hand. About one hundred and twenty-five papers, printed on both sides, could be run off in an hour.



Advertisements appeared in the early newspapers and hardly an issue appeared without an advertisement of slaves for sale or of some runaway slave to be returned to his master. The "Boston Gazette" contained an advertisement which read: "Good Red Herring and Fine Negroes, to be sold by Jacon Royall, Merchant, in Boston."

Examining the files of the old newspapers, one comes to the conclusion that things were not so far different in former days. Very early the appeal in behalf of remedies of all kinds was made through the advertising columns, even as today, excepting the present-day craze for reducing systems, and "cures." The "Boston Gazette" in December, 1727, advertised:

"To be sold, an Excellent Medicine, which cures the Cholick, Dry Belly-ack, Loss of Limbs, Fevers and Agues, Asthma, Coughs, and all sorts of Obstructions, Rheumatism, Sickness at the Stomach, Surfeits by Immoderate Eating and Drinking, Weakness, Trembling of the Heart, want of Appetite, Gravel, Melancholy and Jaundice, and is excellent for the Gout; Which is now Publish'd at the desire of several Persons of Note (who have been wonderfully reliev'd by it) . . . ." Of course, in these days, new names have been given but the advertiser went as far as he could.

There were amusements advertised, and again it appears there is nothing new under the sun, as one of the Boston weeklies let it be known that there was "to be seen at the Grey Hound Tavern in Roxbury, a Wild Creature, which was caught in the woods about 80 miles to the westward of this town, called a Cattamount, it has a Tail like a Lyon, its Leggs are Like a Bears, its Claws like an Eagle, its Eyes like a Tyger, its Countenance is a mixture of every Thing that is Fierce and Savage, he is exceedingly Ravenous and devours all sorts of Creatures that he can come near; its Agility is surprising, it will leap 30 Foot at one jump; notwithstanding it is but three Months old. Whoever inclines to see this creature may come to the Place aforesaid, paying a Shilling each, shall be welcome for their Money."

The show game soon came into popularity and Salem was one of the towns in which these shows seem to have been very popular, perhaps because the hanging of witches and other unpopular people had declined and something was needed to satisfy the jaded appetites of the Puritans who flourished in that historic burg.

Massachusetts has always been the nursery for good newspaper men and, if this was a history of the wider area, it would be interesting as well as consistent to show how the list has included conspicuous examples in every generation. Benjamin H. Day, who launched the "New York Sun" of September 3, 1833, was a Massachusetts boy who

learned his trade on the "Springfield Republican." Frederic Hudson, who joined James Gordon Bennett in getting out the "New York Herald" in its early days and remained with it thirty years, was a Massachusetts boy, recognized by his contemporaries as the outstanding managing editor of his day. New York has received from Boston brilliant newspaper men, many of whom were earlier employed on the county or small town weeklies or dailies; several of them from Norfolk, Plymouth or Barnstable counties. There are today on several metropolitan newspapers in New York, Chicago, Washington and in other cities from the Atlantic to the Pacific men and women doing some of the cleverest work whose earlier days were spent on the staff of the "Brockton Enterprise," "Brockton Times," "Old Colony Memorial," "Middleborough Gazette," "Quincy Ledger" or one or more of the Cape Cod weeklies. There are also newspaper men and women from the three counties who have taken up authorship and magazine writing with good success, and, equally important, there are in Plymouth, Norfolk and Barnstable counties news-writers and editors who have remained in this vicinity, instead of seeking other fields, and have done and are doing as brilliant and important journalistic work as is being done anywhere.

**Some Plymouth County Newspapers—**The oldest Plymouth County newspaper, the "Old Colony Memorial," has been published continuously in Plymouth since May 4, 1822, when it was established by Allen Danforth. Mr. Danforth conducted the paper until 1836, and then devoted himself exclusively to financial institutions. In 1829 he was elected treasurer of the Plymouth Savings Bank, then the Plymouth Institution for Savings, and served in that capacity forty-three years, until his death.

North Bridgewater (now Brockton) had a newspaper in 1835, published by George H. Brown, which was called the "Bridgewater Patriot and Old Colony Gazette." The plant was removed later to East Bridgewater. The next venture was the "Old Colony Reporter," which made its appearance in 1848, with Bartlett & Stetson as publishers, and this paper continued until 1851. The "North Bridgewater Gazette" made its initial bow in that year. The first editor and publisher was George Phinney, who sold the paper to Augustus T. Jones. Under Mr. Jones the "Gazette" became a regular town institution and continued until the growth of Brockton became sufficient to support a daily paper, when the "Gazette" appeared every afternoon instead of once a week. Many newspaper men, who afterwards attained prominence, had their first schooling on the "Gazette."

Among them was George W. R. Hill, at present, and for some forty



years past, connected with the "Boot and Shoe Recorder," one of the leading trade magazines devoted to the great shoe industry in the world. Mr. Hill has left his impress upon the public as an actor, newspaper reporter, editor and manager through many years, for such a young-looking and active man. He has won and deserved well of public support and regard and has always been a real newspaper man.

Beginning with Mr. Hill, not because he is the oldest of the newspaper fraternity still chronicling the daily haps and mishaps of life, but because he was early associated with one of the papers of early origin, it is harder to write than of those whose lives have been written and with the mark of "30" attached to their record. It is always harder to tell a man to his face that he is a good fellow and pronounce a well-deserved encomium in his living presence. Except in a few instances, where circumstances seem to make it especially appropriate or unavoidable, it is the intention to allow those still in harness to go on their way making and recording history, without our comment.

In North Bridgewater, under date of October 27, 1848, appeared Volume 1, Number 1, of the "Old Colony Reporter and North Bridgewater Union" "devoted to politics, education, agriculture, temperance, morals, local and general intelligence." Another explanatory line on the front page stated "Eternal hostility to the perpetuation or extension of human slavery on God's free soil." It announced that it would be "Published every Friday morning by Bartlett & Stetson, one door north of the Post Office." That its mission and convictions might be clearly set forth it carried conspicuously its choice for president, Martin Van Buren; vice-president, Charles Francis Adams, of Massachusetts, and the line: "Will be devoted politically to the dissemination and defense of the principles and measures of the Free Soil Party." The leading editorial in the first issue was on Martin Van Buren. Although the first page bore the date of October 27, the date on the second page was November 3, 1849, with the following explanation: "To our great disappointment and regret, we have found it impossible to issue the first number of this paper at the time indicated on the first page. An unexpected delay in procuring a printer, as also in obtaining various necessary articles, has led to this unpleasant postponement."

This paper continued the out-spoken organ of the anti-slavery societies during the early years of the decade previous to the Civil War, and a file of the paper contains much interesting information of that period which was set forth in becoming journalistic manner. A typical advertisement in an issue of June 22, 1849, announced an anti-slavery convention to take place at Island Grove, Abington, July 4, under auspices of the Old Colony and Massachusetts Anti-Slavery

Societies, the speakers announced being William Lloyd Garrison, Wendell Phillips, P. Pillsbury, Theodore Parker Brown, the box-man, and several others. These are names of men greatly revered today but considered by most self-styled "best citizens" of those days as general disturbers or impractical visionaries.

The firm of Bartlett & Stetson, which published the "Old Colony Reporter and North Bridgewater Union," consisted of F. W. Bartlett, who withdrew from the firm after one year, and Thomas D. Stetson of Kingston. The latter, after the withdrawal of Mr. Bartlett, associated himself with Rev. William Whiting in the publication of the papers operating from Colonel Edward Southworth's Hall until 1851. In the winter of 1850 and 1851, Dr. Cawdell used the same printing office to get out a few numbers of the "Bay State Clipper," a short-lived sheet. Beginning about the same time and continuing about two years, the young ladies of the Adelphean Academy published the "Adelphean," a literary paper, under the supervision of Messrs. Loomis, principals of the academy.

The "North Bridgewater Gazette" was transferred by Augustus T. Jones, in 1863, to A. M. Bridgman, who was afterwards connected with newspapers in Haverhill and Stoughton and was also for many years legislative reporter at the State House, serving a long list of newspapers in and outside the State. The "Brockton Evening Gazette" was started by Augustus T. Jones in 1881. This was continued by Mr. Bridgman, as well as the weekly issue. The name of the daily was changed April 13, 1891, to the "Daily Despatch," and it was made a one-cent newspaper. After a few months trial at one cent, the price was changed back to two cents and there were changes in the ownership until the paper suspended publication May 5, 1894, the name at that time being the "Daily News."

A stock company owned the "Despatch," for a time, under the management of E. K. Dunbar, and it had been issued as a morning paper, called the "Morning Sun," published by L. E. Lounsbury and the Gazette Publishing Company. As the "Daily News," the paper was published for three months by Elmer C. Linfield, who was at the time the publisher of the "Bridgewater Independent," "West Bridgewater Times," "East Bridgewater Star," "Whitman Reporter," "Kingston News" and "Duxbury Breeze." He also published for a short time daily editions of the Whitman and Bridgewater papers, the "Bridgewater Sun" being the only daily newspaper ever bearing the name of that town. Lacking financial backing to carry on, the daily papers were suspended and Mr. Linfield continued the publication of his list of weeklies several months from a location on Centre Street, in what had previously been called the Little Gem Hotel.



From that same office a daily paper called the "Brockton Herald," was published eight days by M. F. Roach, formerly of the "Boston Herald." Its first issue was dated August 27, 1894.

George F. Andrews of Plymouth had been successful in weekly newspaper publications in Plymouth, and in 1874 started a weekly paper in Brockton called the "Old Colony Press," which had a brief existence.

Dr. Loring W. Puffer published the "Brockton Eagle," a weekly paper, for a short time, beginning February 20, 1884.

The "Brockton Trades Bulletin" appeared for a short time in 1872, but was not a success. It was issued from a Stoughton office.

G. A. Goodall, a Campello printer, conceived the idea of issuing a paper for free circulation, called the "Campello Press," which he later sold to Augustus T. Jones at the time the latter was publishing the "Gazette." Mr. Goodall also published the "Campello Herald" a short time.

The "Campello Leader" continued sixteen weeks, beginning March 8, 1883. It consisted largely of pictures of local scenes, and cartoons drawn by A. F. Poole, a clever artist, who was its publisher.

The first sporting extra ever issued by a newspaper in Brockton was in 1886 when a paper called "Our Home Club" appeared at the end of a baseball game conducted on the ball grounds at Campello. Andrew E. Randall at that time ran a job printing office in the Old Tavern Building, not far from the ball grounds. There was unusual interest in the local ball games at that period and Mr. Randall conceived the plan of furnishing those who attended the game with a full account of it as they were leaving the grounds, a very ambitious piece of work when type was set wholly by hand and there was no telephone at the ball grounds, and most of the facilities which now make such a plan possible were lacking.

Clarence L. Randall, now connected with the real estate and insurance office of S. F. Packard & Son, as he has been many years, was the reporter for "Our Home Club." At the end of each inning he dropped his copy over the fence into the waiting hand of a good runner, who took it to the office in the Old Tavern Building by efficient footwork. The effort was a success, but "Our Home Club" only appeared once.

In 1888, the "High School Stylus" was a good school paper, with Warren P. Landers editor. J. Frank Davis was an ambitious reporter on the "Stylus" and, by secreting himself at a rehearsal of the graduating exercises the day before, was able to furnish a report which was available at the close of the graduation, much to the surprise of faculty, parents and the student body.

Both men have since done conspicuous newspaper and literary work. Rev. Warren P. Landers has written several books, among them the "History of Brockton" at the time of its one hundred and fiftieth anniversary a few years ago, has been connected with secular and denominational publications and has been a clergyman for many years. J. Frank Davis has added to years of conspicuous newspaper activities in various parts of the country, a fame as a writer of short stories for magazines and is author of "The Ladder," the play which created a sensation in New York in 1927.

Albert H. Fuller was well-started in the card-printing business in 1876 and believed there was room for a second weekly paper. He associated himself with Walter L. Hathaway, under the firm name of A. H. Fuller and Company, and the firm employed W. J. Jenks as editor.

The initial number of the "Brockton Advance" made its appearance May 6, 1876, and under the heading of the paper appeared the line "Independent in all things," a distinction which it lived up to as long as it remained in the journalistic field. It was "Published every Saturday by A. H. Fuller & Company." A sketch of Deborah Sampson, the Plympton Revolutionary War heroine, for whom Deborah Sampson Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, of Brockton, is named, appeared in the May 20th issue of the "Advance." An extra was issued May 31, giving a report of the Memorial Day exercises the day before. The orator of the day was Hamilton L. Gibbs, in whose honor Hotel Hamilton on Belmont Street, Brockton, is named. There was also, on that occasion, an address by Patrick Gilmore, an honored citizen of that day, concerning the part taken by the Irish soldiers from this vicinity in the Civil War. He was father of the late Edward Gilmore, who served this district in Congress and the city of Brockton as alderman and later as postmaster.

A friendly notice appeared in the "Advance" concerning a neighboring newspaper, which changed January 1, 1877, from the "Every Saturday" to the "Bridgewater Independent," one of the weekly papers of the county which is still in existence.

The "Brockton Advance," of August 26, 1876, issued a "Firemen's Edition" with a sketch of each fire company in Brockton. The paper made considerable headway and was sold to Isaac Folger and S. Heath Rich of Nantucket, who began its publication, under the new ownership, in September, 1878. The paper attained a circulation exceeding two thousand but was not sufficiently remunerative to satisfy Messrs. Folger and Rich. The next proprietor was Arthur E. Fessenden, who took charge March 15, 1882, but discontinued the paper after a few months.



The "Brockton Sunday Times" appeared for the first time September 8, 1889, attesting the belief on the part of its publishers, Parmenter & Cook, that Brockton would support a Sunday newspaper. The firm had a change of heart a few Sundays later.

The Courier Publishing Company of Bridgewater issued a Campello paper May 23, 1891, called the "Campello Courier." Its term of existence was three weeks.

The "Weekly Diamond," still published by E. Gerry Brown, first made its appearance December 18, 1892. It has always been devoted to the cause of organized labor, and is at present the official organ of the many labor unions in Brockton. Mr. Brown has done a vast amount of good newspaper work since beginning as a reporter on the "Boston Post" more than half a century ago. He was, before coming to Brockton, publisher of a weekly newspaper in Charlestown.

The "Brockton Shoe" was a monthly publication in the interest of the shoe trade, the first issue of which was dated February 1, 1890. The publisher was Allston C. Ladd. It was a very attractive publication and withstood the obstacles of magazine life for three years.

Michael Moran began the publication of a weekly paper called the "Brockton Democrat and Workingmen's Advocate" in the fall of 1897. With two or more suspensions for considerable periods, it continued until the summer of 1926, when serious illness of Mr. Moran compelled another suspension. It had always reflected the good-natured raillery of its popular editor, publisher and owner, and no one has attempted to carry it on, as it had been a more or less personal organ.

One of the proprietors of the "Plymouth County Journal" was Charles Franklin David, founder of the C. F. David Advertising Agency. Mr. David was several years a resident of Abington and eventually sold the "Plymouth County Journal," after building it up from a languishing condition to a state of prosperity, to F. W. Rollins.

**Some Valued Contributors**—Captain Henry B. Maglathlin, who commanded a company of Massachusetts volunteers in the Civil War, wrote much for newspapers in his day, but his principal literary work was writing textbooks for school use. He was a resident of Kingston, in the Silver Lake neighborhood, and served several years as a member of the Kingston School Committee. In 1849 a Boston publisher brought out for him an educational work which went through twenty-five editions. He was associated with Benjamin Greenleaf, the well-known mathematician, in rewriting the "National Arithmetic," and in composing the "Elementary Algebra, Geometry and Trigonometry" in the Greenleaf series. He edited the "New Higher Algebra" and, in 1866, brought out the "New Elementary Arithmetic" and the "New Practical Arithmetic."

Several other textbooks with which many people struggled in the mastery of the three Rs were the work of his hand and brain.

He was prominently identified with the early labor movement and was a member of the Sovereigns of Industry, Knights of Labor and other like organizations. He was a strong advocate of coöperative measures and was president of the Co-operative Store at Silver Lake, under the Rochdale Plan, which prospered under his management more than twenty-five years, the longest American trial of the Rochdale plan. In 1895 he founded the Co-operative Union of America and was a member of its Central Board.

Edmund Hersey of Hingham, who was instructor in farming at the Bussey Institution in Jamaica Plain, the School of Agriculture and Horticulture connected with Harvard University, and superintendent of the Bussey Farm, some years ago, included among his useful pursuits experience in journalism. He also invented a machine for the manufacture of boxes, which revolutionized that industry.

For eight years he was agricultural editor of the "Massachusetts Ploughman," and also was one of the editors in charge of the annual preparation of the "Old Farmer's Almanac."

Charles O. Ellms will be remembered as a contributor to the "Boston Transcript" who signed some of his writings "Scituate." He was also a frequent contributor to the "Massachusetts Ploughman," the "New England Farmer" and other publications given to agricultural literature. He was a resident of Scituate and had a collection of antiques which was one of the best in the country. His article on the early days and inhabitants of New England were read with great interest during the years of his newspaper writing.

Another valued contributor to newspapers and an author was the late Lysander S. Richards of Marshfield Hills. For a number of years he engaged in scientific study and research and one of his contributions was a treatise on cosmography which was published in the "Banner of Light" of Boston. He published philosophical and scientific papers and articles on his travels in the Far West, in the "Boston Commonwealth."

Among the books which he published were "The Beginning and End of Man," "The Birth, Development and Death of the Earth and Its Satellite in Story," and "Vocophy." He also published a history of Marshfield.

Flavel Shurtleff Thomas, M. D., LL. D., of Hanson, has a more extended mention in that part of this history devoted to the medical fraternity. He also has a place among the newspaper contributors and magazine writers. The files of the "New England Medical Monthly," the "Boston Medical and Surgical Journal," the "School Bulletin" of



Syracuse, New York, the "Boston Journal of Health," the "Youth's Companion; the "Old Colony Memorial," the "National Magazine," the "University Magazine of New York," "Education," the "American Journal of Education" of St. Louis, and other publications, will show that Dr. Thomas was a writer on a long line of topics, all of which he handled skillfully, with educational value.

Nearly every reader in Plymouth County who takes any interest in historical matters has read some of the works of the late William T. Davis of Plymouth, who practiced law early in life, was for twenty years president of the Plymouth National Bank and held many positions of honor and trust. Among his literary works were "The History of Plymouth," "Ancient Landmarks of Plymouth," "A History of Newburyport, Massachusetts," "Historical Sketches of Some Massachusetts Towns," and "History of the Bench and Bar of Massachusetts." He edited many historical books and series of records, among the latter the "Plymouth Town Records" and "A History of the New England States." He was a lecturer on historical topics and a contributor to the "Old Colony Memorial" and numerous other newspapers.

A contributor to newspapers for many years was the late Caleb Bates of Kingston, who had the faculty of telling his stories in an interesting manner and injecting into them a line of humor especially delightful. Mr. Bates was a farmer, inventor, philosopher, fond of doing things in an original way. His articles in the "Old Colony Memorial" a generation ago, included the intelligent consideration of local topics and reminiscences of earlier days.

**Beginning of the County Dailies**—The "Brockton Weekly Enterprise" made its appearance in 1879, carrying a story of the observance of Independence Day in the old town under the new name of Brockton, as the date was July 5. It was a four-page paper of thirty-six columns and was a little over six months old when the publisher, Albert H. Fuller, decided that he would try his hand at daily journalism. Consequently the "Brockton Daily Enterprise" was issued January 26, 1880, with an edition of five hundred copies, printed on the press of its rival, the "Brockton Gazette." The capital is said to have been \$500, supplemented, as a former employee once said, "by an unchangeable determination on the part of the publisher that all weekly bills should be paid before a dollar profit should be divided, a keen perception on the part of the editor to discover what the public would read, and a versatility which enabled him to write all over the paper, from the advertising notices up to the Fourth of July oration; and a nose for news on the part of the reporter which enabled him to locate

both the church sociable and the sensational occurrences of the day." The three men referred to were Albert H. Fuller, who remained publisher to the time of his death in 1926; S. Heath Rich, still editor-in-chief, and the gentleman who heads the list of the advisory board of this history; and Herbert S. Fuller, the first of the three to pass away, nearly twenty years ago.

These three men made a strong trio and the "Brockton Daily Enterprise" became a Brockton institution which encouraged everything which made for the upbuilding of the community, recognized the potential possibilities and assisted in bringing them to fruition, and mirrored the daily life of the community faithfully and brilliantly.

For many years there was another daily newspaper, causing a keen rivalry in the bid for public popularity and support. This was the "Brockton Daily Gazette," under various managements and ownerships, for a few years under the name of "Brockton Daily Despatch," and in its final days called the "Brockton Daily News."

Connected with the "Gazette" or "Despatch" at various times were notable newspaper men, among them A. M. Bridgman, later of the "Haverhill Gazette," for years editor and publisher of the "Stoughton Sentinel," and many years legislative reporter at the Massachusetts State House for various newspapers; George W. Penniman, for many years connected with the Boston "Globe;" managing editor of the "Boston Standard" during the life of that paper in the last years of the nineteenth century, a well-known writer and lecturer.

It was a long time after the establishment of the "Brockton Daily Enterprise" that the weekly profits amounted to twenty dollars, to be divided between the three proprietors. When that day of affluence arrived there was a triangular dinner in Boston and the only regret was that Boston hotels were too provincial to furnish a menu commensurate with the importance of the occasion. The average earnings of each of the proprietors during the first year was less than \$7.50 a week.

The original office was a small room on the second floor of a building on Centre Street, but the present Enterprise Building on Main Street was erected for the newspaper in 1887, by Frank E. White, at that time a prominent Brockton shoe manufacturer.

In May, 1898, the ownership of the "Enterprise" was changed into a stock company, called the Enterprise Publishing Company, with a capital stock of \$10,000. None of the shares passed from the three original owners. The "Weekly Enterprise" was continued until 1896. Since that time the Saturday issue of the "Daily Enterprise" has contained a review of the week which has made that week-end number



practically answer the purposes of a weekly for those who do not care to subscribe to a daily.

The newer daily paper in Brockton was founded by William L. Douglas, for many years "the world's greatest shoemaker," one of the early advertisers to seize upon the idea of including his picture in all his advertising, and thus making his face and his Brockton-made shoes known from the Atlantic to the Pacific. It was on February 4, 1895, that the "Brockton Daily Times" made its appearance, following advertisements in most of the papers, great and small, in the East that it was to be a newspaper "which would grind no man's axe and had no axe of its own to grind." William L. Douglas engaged as his general manager Colonel J. Amory Knox, who was already known throughout the country as previously associated with Alexander Sweet in the publication of "Texas Siftings." The first home of the "Times" was in Church Block, on Main Street, next door to the historic Church of the New Jerusalem, in which the first volunteer company was organized to answer the call of President Lincoln after the firing on Fort Sumpter.

Colonel Knox remained with the "Brockton Daily Times" six months and during that period excavation work began on a new home of its own for the journalistic new-comer. This home was erected on the historic training ground, from which the local companies had gone forth to the War of the Revolution, the War of 1812, and the War of the Rebellion, corner of Main and Pleasant streets. Within a year from the time the excavation began, the "Times" was in its new home and remained there as long as Mr. Douglas remained its owner.

The "Brockton Times" was the first newspaper in the county to install typesetting machines, in fact the first newspaper in this part of the State. William L. Douglas served as city councilman, mayor, governor of Massachusetts, and was prominent in several other lines, but always a shoemaker. It might hardly be consistent with his character and inclinations to refer to him as a newspaper man, although he started a worthy daily which leaped, full-fledged, into the journalistic arena, looking as if it had always been in the field. Mr. Douglas presumably never thought of himself as a newspaper man, but his name belongs in that category in recognition of his contribution. He was one of the first great newspaper advertisers in the United States and continued to pin his faith and his face to printers' ink as long as he lived.

When he was mayor of Brockton, he hired as secretary a newspaper man, John Grainey, upon whom he depended to a great degree, as many other mayors, in this county and all over the country have ever since. When William L. Douglas was a candidate for gubernatorial

honors his campaign was managed by another newspaper man, William R. Buchanan, who acted as his secretary while he was governor, and to whom he sold the "Times" later.

Mr. Buchanan had general experience as a newspaper proprietor and editor many years previous to coming to Brockton. He sold the "Times" to its present owner, John D. Bogart, and has since made his home in Florida. The business office of the "Times" is still housed in the Times Building but the mechanical plant and editorial rooms are on Court Street, close at hand. The plant was moved on both occasions without the suspension of an edition.

Both Brockton dailies are independent in politics and both are given to a dignified and accurate presentation of the news of the Old Colony District and vicinity, with a devoted editorial policy of promoting the general good of the community, without fear or favor. Few cities of equal size possess newspapers which will compare favorably with them.

**Tributes to Publisher of County's First Daily**—The Enterprise Publishing Company, owners and publishers of the "Daily Enterprise," have as president S. Heath Rich, who has been editor-in-chief during the near half-century the "Enterprise" has been published. The treasurer is Charles L. Fuller, son of Albert H. Fuller, the latter being one of the three original owners of the "Enterprise," and the man who started the "Brockton Weekly Advance" in earlier years.

Albert H. Fuller passed away March 20, 1896, and the following day the "Enterprise" contained the following tribute from the pen of his associate of more than forty years, S. Heath Rich:

A personal friendship and business association spanning nearly forty-seven years is broken today by the death of Albert H. Fuller. With him as publisher and I as editor the "Weekly Enterprise" was launched in July, 1879; the daily edition the following January. All these years we have worked shoulder to shoulder, with mutual confidence and forbearance, with never a serious difference of opinion and with but one aim and ambition—that each issue of the paper might in some degree attain our ideals of what it should be. All these years we have been good friends as well as co-workers.

My associate had lived and labored beyond the allotted threescore and ten. Up to within a year he had been a remarkable example of sustained good health and vigor. When a malady developed he was impatient with it and himself. Perhaps he did not realize soon enough the advisability of getting away from his desk and taking care of himself. He had never learned what it was to be sick. While in Arizona in the early part of the winter he wrote: "I only hope I have not waited too long." Who can say that he had? Those years of glorious health were bound to run their course some time. Let us be glad they were his almost to the finish.

Our friend would not wish to be eulogized, even in the newspaper he created and that was so dear to him. He never sought publicity for himself. It was enough to be the force in the background that brought results. He had no liking



for public office or for prominence in welfare movements. He felt he could serve the community helpfully in his own ways without being in the spotlight. He was a good citizen, a devoted son, husband and father, a kindly, considerate employer. His favorite recreation was travel, and when he set out on a journey he liked to go to regions out of the beaten paths. Nearly always Mrs. Fuller was his companion and pal on such adventurings.

Albert Fuller was a dreamer. Always there was much about him of the spirit of youth that has visions. And always those visions included his newspaper and plans for its perpetuation and betterment. A dreamer—but a doer as well.

Those on whom may fall the task of "carrying on" now that he has stepped down from the captain's bridge have the inspiration of his example, his never swerving from the right, his sustained interest in his work, to hearten them for daily striving. His heart was in this newspaper. It must continue to measure up to his ideals.

S. H. R.

A friendly eulogy was given at the funeral of Mr. Fuller by Rev. Dr. Horace F. Holton, pastor of the Porter Congregational Church. He said in part: "More and more he came to conceal himself behind his newspaper, preferring to make that his medium of contact with the community. He had a high ideal for his paper, to which he always held his associates. The 'Brockton Enterprise' is probably the best expression of what Albert H. Fuller was in his heart—clean, honorable and sane."

The passing of Mr. Fuller recalled his entrance into the newspaper business. The "Weekly Enterprise" was first issued under date of July 4, 1879, and the daily was started in the following January. For the first few months the "Enterprise" had no press of its own. After the type was set on the second floor of a little building on Centre Street, the type forms were placed in a wheelbarrow and carried to the "Gazette" office, corner of Main and Ward streets, and printed on the "Gazette" press, by arrangement with Augustus T. Jones, who published that paper.

After a time a press was purchased and housed in a building built by Frank E. White, the present Enterprise Building, now owned by the Enterprise Publishing Company, which has recently made a substantial addition to the plant. Strangely enough the month in which Albert H. Fuller died, March, 1927, the "Enterprise" attained its highest record in circulation up to that time, 24,325. It was the first month the paper had ever exceeded 24,000.

Mr. Fuller was a member of several newspaper publishers' associations and treasurer of the New England Daily Newspaper Association.

**Some Old-Timers of Pleasant Memory**—The sudden death in January, 1927, of George W. Penniman in Washington was a shock to many friends in Plymouth County who remembered him as prominent

in fraternal organizations, also as a newspaper man of many years' experience in good work. Mr. Penniman was a resident of Brockton many years but was known throughout the county, and it might be said with equal truth, throughout the State, owing to his many connections and activities. He was a prominent lecturer and after-dinner speaker, Sunday-school worker, temperance orator, Memorial Day orator and prominent in every one of more than twenty fraternal organizations. It has been said without dispute that he was a member of more fraternal organizations than anyone else in Plymouth County, but more remarkable than the number was the interest and work which he devoted to each one. He was a great "jiner" and a popular fraternal associate.

Mr. Penniman served as editor of the "Brockton Gazette" as a young man and later was assistant editor of the Boston "Globe" and city editor of the Boston "Traveler." He was at one time assistant sporting editor of the Boston "Globe" and was an authority on cricket. He was prominent in the old Longwood Cricket Club, which later became the Boston Athletic Association, or B. A. A. He was managing editor of the Boston "Standard" when that paper flourished about 1896, for a short time.

Mr. Penniman is also remembered as the man who recommended the late George Clarence Holmes as correspondent of the Boston "Globe" for Brockton. Mr. Holmes held that position many years and Holmes' Sunday letters in the Sunday "Globe" were widely read and bristled with his vigorous and definite personality. Even when his coal and stationery and periodical business grew to such proportions that he had to relinquish chasing elusive items to a large extent, he continued to write the Sunday letters or to write the "front end" of those which his assistants wrote in his name. Several bright newspaper men of the present day "did Holmes' work on the 'Globe,'" until he resigned and Albert G. (Dan) Smith, the present Brockton correspondent of the "Globe," became his successor.

"G. C.," the name by which he was generally called, was "Globe" correspondent and doing his own work in that capacity forty years ago, to use a round figure, when Arthur F. Sproul was "Boston Herald" correspondent and William H. Bryant covered the local field for the Associated Press. Later Edward M. Thompson, the present treasurer of the Brockton Agricultural Society and president of the Brockton Savings Bank, to mention two of many of his activities, became the Associated Press correspondent. In the "Old Days" Holmes, Sproul and Bryant, or Holmes, Sproul and Thompson had many a royal battle in news-gathering and all gave good individual accounts of themselves.



G. C. Holmes was for many years press agent of the Brockton Agricultural Society, originated and was the first editor of the "Brockton Fair News." His father, George N. Holmes, was one of the incorporators of the society. Edward M. Thompson succeeded Holmes as Brockton Fair press agent.

The "Brockton Enterprise" had been coming along rapidly and winningly in the hustling days of Holmes, Sproul, Bryant and Thompson. Of the publisher, Albert H. Fuller, and the editor-in-chief, S. Heath Rich, considerable appears elsewhere in this history. Mr. Fuller was still at work until his death in March, 1926, and Mr. Rich still directs the editorial policy of the "Enterprise" and contributes a full and brilliant day's work at the office. The third member of the Enterprise Publishing Company, up to about 1900, was the late Herbert S. Fuller, city editor. Like Mr. Rich, he came from Nantucket, was a thorough newspaper man, an energetic worker, considerate employer and possessed a personality which left its impress wherever he went. After retiring from the "Enterprise," he was for a time secretary of the Brockton Board of Trade, engaged in the engraving business in Boston and conducted a weekly paper, the "Westfield Enterprise," the latter part of his life.

Beginning in his school days, Louis E. Rich, younger brother of S. Heath Rich, was a fellow-worker on the "Enterprise" and as brilliant a newspaper man as ever sat at an editorial desk in this part of the country. The younger Mr. Rich learned the newspaper business thoroughly, beginning in the composing room, but the editorial sanctum provided the atmosphere and opportunities for the display of his best talents. For many years he wrote editorials for the "Enterprise" which helped place the "Enterprise" editorial page in the proud position which it has held for the greater part of its existence. He was a student of theatrical life and his criticisms were among the gems in the paper which are well worth searching out today in the files for re-reading.

The pursuit of live news and the treatment of it as an actuality, to be set forth right, with the skill and artistry of the expert, appealed to Louis Rich as much as his editorial treatment of the history of the community day by day. Some years ago, his older brother left the news department of the paper in the hands of the younger man, changed his own editorial-page sanctum to another floor in the building, and this arrangement continued until Friday noon, December 28, 1924. Louis E. Rich had written an editorial to be printed for New Year's Day. He had closed his desk to go out for a light lunch and incidentally to call at a news-stand for the New York papers which he made it a practice for many years to read daily. Standing on

the steps of the Enterprise Building chatting with an acquaintance, he broke off the conversation with the words "I might as well go now as any time." A few minutes later he dropped dead at the newsstand, "on the job."

Saturday, October 20, 1923, Stephen Dalton, who had been on the staff of the "Brockton Enterprise" twenty-three years, eighteen years of the time as city editor, resigned to become one of the editors of the "Boston Evening Telegran." Robert E. Riordan, his assistant, succeeded him on the city desk. At that time Louis E. Rich was editor; D. Murray Travis, news editor; Herbert L. Wood, country editor; Joseph A. Messier, telegraph editor, and James H. Burke, sporting editor, with S. Heath Rich, editor-in-chief, and Albert H. Fuller, treasurer, and Charles L. Fuller, business manager.

Since that time Albert H. Fuller and Louis E. Rich have passed away, Mr. Dalton has returned to the "Enterprise" as an editorial and feature writer, associated with the editor-in-chief; Charles L. Fuller has succeeded his father as treasurer of the corporation and the others mentioned hold their same respective positions and constitute the managerial staff, with competent assistants.

Since the "Brockton Times" was established, with William L. Douglas as proprietor and J. Amory Knox as managing editor, there have been numerous changes in its editorial force. William R. Buchanan became general manager after Colonel Knox and later proprietor, disposing of the paper a few years ago to the present owner, John D. Bogart. Mr. Buchanan was manager of the political campaign which terminated in Mr. Douglas winning the election as governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts and was his private secretary during his term in that office.

When Mr. Buchanan was proprietor, he had, among others, as managing editor, for a time, Arthur J. Chase, who has since been president of the Brockton Chamber of Commerce, and is one of the board of managers of the "Brockton and South Shore Magazine" and one of the executives of the George E. Keith Company. An earlier managing editor was Herbert Davidson, afterward secretary of the Worcester, Massachusetts, Chamber of Commerce.

Aside from Mr. Chase, one of the best-known men connected with the "Times," as reporter, city hall representative, city editor and managing editor, was the late George M. Gifford. He terminated thirteen years' work on the "Times," the latter part of the period as managing editor, October 18, 1922. He had also been executive officer of the Brockton Board of Health.

In June, 1905, the "Brockton Searchlight," a local weekly paper, first appeared with William D. Dwyer as editor and publisher. This



paper continued, with one or more suspensions at intervals, until April 12, 1924, when Mr. Dwyer took a position on the staff of the "Fall River Daily Globe." The "Searchlight" was an outspoken periodical, especially concerning labor union matters, as it for several years took an aggressive attitude against the Boot and Shoe Workers' Union. It consistently and persistently editorially rapped the heads of those with whom the editor did not agree but kept itself free from personalities which reflected upon the character of the persons mentioned. Consequently most people took the verbal chastisements of the vigorous editor in good part and the paper had the effect of making things lively in seasons which might otherwise have become monotonous. Mr. Dwyer is a good writer, still wielding a skillful pen, not forgetting or being forgotten by his friends and former associates in Plymouth County's city and vicinity.

Frequently a clergyman sees the error of his ways and finds a haven in journalism. One of the clergy who was prominent in Plymouth County newspaper work a generation ago and had had a previous experience elsewhere was Rev. Joshua R. Bartlett. He had been a Methodist preacher and a zealous worker for prohibition. His father, William Bartlett, had been a butcher and market-man, a member of the firm of Nash & Bartlett, who had a market at the corner of Main and High streets in North Bridgewater. The other member of the firm was Daniel Nash. They established the second market in North Bridgewater. It was in honor of William Bartlett that Bartlett Street, in what is now Plymouth County's only city, was named.

Joshua R. Bartlett was a veteran of the Civil War, having served in Company K., Fourth Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, assigned to the defense of the Capitol. As a clergyman he held pastorates in New Hampshire and Vermont and was a member and secretary of the Prohibition Party State organizations in both states, also later in Massachusetts.

He was editor of the "Vermont Christian Messenger." In 1886, he purchased the "Standard Bearer," a prohibition paper, changed the name to "The Protest," and continued the publication until July 1, 1890, when he merged it with the "Worcester Daily and Weekly Times," which he published at Worcester for two years in the interests of the prohibition movement. He moved to Brockton in 1892, for two years was a member of the staff of the "Daily Despatch," in January, 1893, was made Brockton correspondent of the "Boston Herald," was one of the group employed on the "Brockton Herald" during its brief existence; and, when the "Brockton Times" started in February, 1895, became connected with that paper as City Hall correspondent and editorial writer.

Mr. Bartlett was a member of Fletcher Webster Post, No. 13, Grand Army of the Republic.

**Clever Women in Local Journalism**—There have been, and still are, numerous women who have engaged in newspaper work in Plymouth County, as reporters on the daily papers in Brockton, and as correspondents for daily and weekly papers in and out of the county. Perhaps the most prominent newspaper woman is Miss Fannie Fitzgerald of Brockton, although a few years ago she abandoned newspaper work for life insurance solicitation. In both fields she has been conspicuously successful and deserves all the success she attained by faithful, intelligent work. Much of Miss Fitzgerald's newspaper work was done in Brockton, largely on the "Brockton Times," although she was a member of the staff of the "Worcester Telegram" and other newspapers and literary ventures at various times. During her newspaper connections, Miss Fitzgerald possessed the ability to cover any assignment, whether a social, political, or sporting event to the satisfaction of the city editor, as she kept well-informed about a multitude of plans and activities, knowing, as every newspaper representative should, much about a few things and a little about everything.

There have been others whose work has compared favorably with that done by newspaper men, who, like Miss Fitzgerald, have given up journalistic pursuits for other lines of endeavor. There is at the present time an especially capable corps of newspaper women whose writings add much to the excellence of the county press.

Two of the women who conducted newspapers in the county in past years who will long be remembered for their out-spoken, conscientious, good work for their respective communities were Miss Hulda Loud and Miss Floretta Vining. Miss Loud was proprietor and editor of the "Rockland Independent" for many years.

Miss Vining combined with her duties as proprietor and editor of a chain of weekly papers on the South Shore the duties of club-woman and real estate operator and was a success at all three. She was born in South Scituate (now Norwell), May 21, 1849. Her father, Alexander Vining, proprietor of the Nantasket Hotel and Mansion House at Pemberton, left her a comfortable fortune. In 1885 she established residence in Hull, the smallest town in the State, and began to make it the biggest little town on the South Shore, with a newspaper called the "Hull Beacon" to shed its light. Eventually Miss Vining had nine weekly papers and used them all to promote Nantasket and the South Shore. It was largely through her persistent publicity that the life-saving station at Stony Beach was established. She sponsored the State reservation at Nantasket and her influence in bringing it about



was recognized by Governor Roger Wolcott when he signed the measure and presented her with the pen. Miss Vining was known as "the mayor of Hull." She was a friend of Theodore Roosevelt, Henry Cabot Lodge, Miss Hetty Green, and hundreds of other people of prominence in her day; was the first regent of John Adams Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution; the second New England woman to be elected to the Sorosis Society, the exclusive New York woman's club; was prominent as a member of the New England Woman's Press Association. She was far in advance of her time when she advocated at the Woman's Club convention at Los Angeles admitting colored women as members of women's clubs.

Miss Huldah Barker Loud, after graduating from the high school in East Abington, now Rockland, her native town, taught school in that town thirteen years with remarkable success. In 1884, E. C. Osborne and W. J. Barry started a newspaper in connection with their job printing office and secured Miss Loud as editor. She named the paper the "Rockland Independent," edited it for the original proprietors until 1889 and then purchased the business. In the first issue of the "Independent" under her proprietorship as well as editorial management, she announced that she had bought the business "to help save the world; that it was not a business venture in any sense of the word; that the business would always be in charge of a foreman; that she desired a medium through which she could convey her best thought to the world, unhampered by worldly interests," and her whole newspaper career was strictly in conformity with that announcement.

In addition to the "Rockland Independent," she published the "North Abington News" and the "North River Pioneer."

Miss Loud was one of the early advocates for woman's suffrage and often spoke in public in that cause. She was also an advocate of the Knights of Labor, representing that organization in 1888 at the Women's International Council in Washington. She gave an address there which was one of the brilliant features of the convention. While in Washington she gave an address before the Anti-Poverty Society of that city and the Washington branch of the Knights of Labor.

Miss Loud was several years chairman of the Board of Trustees of the Rockland Public Library, served as a member of the Rockland School Committee and was a regular speaker on town topics at the town meetings. She was never married. Late in life she adopted two boys.

**"Old Colony Memorial" Aged One Hundred and Six**—The Old Colony had a newspaper as early as 1786, when one was printed in Plymouth by Nathaniel Cleverly.

The oldest newspaper in Plymouth County, still in existence, is the "Old Colony Memorial," now in its one hundred and seventh year. A remarkable fact concerning this paper is that the publishers have the complete files for the one hundred and six years it has served the Old Colony district and those who have moved from this vicinity to all parts of the world. For a time there was a weekly paper published in Plymouth with the name "Plymouth Rock" but about the time of the Civil War the "Old Colony Memorial" and "Plymouth Rock" were consolidated and published by George F. Andrews. This was a union of the old Democratic with the old Whig organ of the county. At the same time the "Old Colony Sentinel" was published by Moses Bates, "as an independent conservative journal, devoted to the interests of the people."

The "Plymouth Free Press" was for many years published by the late Daniel W. Andrews, a brother of George F. Andrews, but March 12, 1904, it was consolidated with the papers already mentioned. This same fate befell the "Kingston News," "Duxbury News," and "Marshfield News," May 1, 1913. The "Old Colony Memorial" and various papers which it has absorbed are now published as one by Fritz John Bittinger, business manager; and Paul Bittinger, editor. For many years before the Bittinger family came into possession of the newspaper and its extensive book and job printing plant, the institution was owned and conducted by Avery & Doten. W. W. Avery, the senior member of the firm, was afterward postmaster of Plymouth. The junior member of the firm was Captain Charles C. Doten, who took the Plymouth volunteers company out at the first call for volunteers in 1861. He served as editor of the "Old Colony Memorial" many years.

For about two years, beginning in 1835, a paper was published in Bridgewater entitled, "We, the People." The editor and proprietor was Christopher A. Hack.

After its suspension Bridgewater was for a long time without a journalistic representative publication. Henry Thomas Pratt who, during the Civil War was clerk in the office of his uncle, Colonel Henry C. Pratt, paymaster in the army, was connected with Joseph Carver, cotton gin manufacturer, after the war. He determined to engage in an independent business and set up a printing office in Bridgewater. From this office, March 11, 1876, appeared the first issue of "Every Saturday," a twelve-column weekly newspaper. In December of that year he changed the name of his publication to the "Bridgewater Independent."

Mr. Pratt was one of Bridgewater's representative citizens. In 1897 he reprinted Mitchell's "History of Bridgewater." He served the town



of Bridgewater as town clerk from 1875 through 1878, was secretary of the Bridgewater Social Club, and, in 1893, was one of the town auditors and held that position until his death in 1898.

The "Bridgewater Independent," which he founded, is still in existence, with John Dickinson as editor and proprietor. It was transferred by Mr. Pratt to Joseph Tooker, by whom it was enlarged. Mr. Tooker was an energetic citizen with his own ideas of fearlessness in his editorial columns, and the paper was quoted extensively. Mr. Tooker, however, disposed of it December 1, by sale to James M. Coombs, of Middleboro. The latter held the editorial reins a few months, and sold it to Elmer C. Linfield, by whom it was run until 1894. From this same office was issued the "East Bridgewater Star" and "West Bridgewater Times" and finally the "Whitman Reporter," after Mr. Linfield purchased the latter from Frank W. Gurney.

The "Whitman Reporter" had been started several years previously by William C. Gurney of Whitman, as a side line. He was at that time and still is (1927) correspondent for the Boston "Globe" in Whitman and several other Plymouth County towns. Mr. Gurney announced himself as a "temperance editor" and conducted the "Reporter" as a prohibition paper, acknowledging himself a "crank" and occasionally referred to several lines in which he claimed to be as much of a crank as on the subject of prohibition. Mr. Gurney, through the "Reporter," added considerably to the "gayety of nations" and occasionally stirred some of the people of whom he wrote humorous items to a condition bordering on peevishness. One of these sensitive sons of Whitman encountered Gurney on the street one day and, shaking his fist indignantly in the editor's face cried: "Will Gurney, you're a liar!"

"Very true, as a general statement. But what's the question?" was the rejoinder.

After stirring up the animals in a little different way than anyone in the local newspaper business had before or since, "Willie Calamity" Gurney, as he became widely known, disposed of the "Reporter" to Frank W. Gurney. The younger man of that well-known Whitman name conducted it along similar lines, and added much originality of his own. He was ambitious, however, to engage in daily newspaper work in Brockton and, finding that Mr. Linfield wanted to add it to his chain of weeklies, parted with it for a consideration and joined the staff of the "Brockton Despatch," and later the "Brockton Enterprise."

**Newspaper Men as "Rough Riders"**—Frank W. Gurney was a member of the "Enterprise" staff in 1898 at the outbreak of the Spanish War. One of his associates on the "Enterprise" was Conrad F. Goss. Both young newspaper men were fortunate enough, largely through the

influence of the late Colonel John J. Whipple, mayor of the city; and the late Dr. Wallace C. Keith, a classmate in Harvard Medical School of General Leonard Wood, to become members of the famous "Rough Riders" Regiment, and serve under Colonel Theodore Roosevelt. A few years later Mr. Goss was drowned from a dory on a vacation trip off Nantucket, greatly mourned by all his associates in the newspaper fraternity and a host of other friends who recognized in him some of the finest traits of character which characterize the best of men.

The "Rough Riders" or First Volunteer Cavalry, was one of the five regular regiments which made up the cavalry division at Santiago. Gurney and Goss were the only members from Plymouth County and of the few from Massachusetts. They were attached to Troop B, Captain James H. McClintock, and through an error in Colonel Roosevelt's book, "The Rough Riders," are credited to Tampa, Florida. All but one of the officers of Troop B and most of the troopers were from Arizona. The exception among the officers was Corporal Dudley S. Dean of Boston. The only New England trooper, aside from Gurney and Goss, was Wellman H. Saunders of Salem, Massachusetts, who died of fever at Santiago.

Of the "Rough Riders" Colonel Roosevelt wrote: "My men were children of the dragon's blood, and if they had no outland foe to fight and no outlet for their vigorous and daring energy, there was always the chance of their fighting one another; but the great majority, if given the chance to do hard or dangerous work, availed themselves of it with the utmost eagerness." He also quoted from a letter written by George Rowland of Troop G, who received a gunshot wound in the left side June 24, 1898, and wrote of Tom Darnell, "he who rode the sorrel horse of the Third Cavalry." Rowland wrote: "There ain't much news to write of except poor old Tom Darnell got killed about a month ago. Tom and another fellow had a fight and he shot Tom through the heart and Tom was dead when he hit the floor. Tom was sure a good old boy, and I sure hated to hear of him going, and he had plenty of grit too. No man ever called on him for a fight that he didn't get it."

The two Brockton comrades enjoyed their associations with these "children of the dragon's blood," and considered themselves fortunate to have been numbered with the famous outfit.

They returned to Brockton and to newspaper work on the "Enterprise." Conrad F. Goss met his fate as already stated. Frank W. Gurney served in the Brockton City Council, was for a time a shoe manufacturer in Marlboro and in 1927 was an advertising creator and salesman.

There had been a paper issued in West Bridgewater in 1867 called the



"West Bridgewater Times." Rev. J. G. Forman was the local correspondent and the paper continued about two years. It was printed in Middleboro.

William Fay published the "West Bridgewater News" for a short time in 1882.

Middleboro, owing to its location, seemed to be a good field for a weekly newspaper and in 1835, nearly a hundred years ago, Major Benjamin Drew, Jr., moved the "Old Colony Democrat" from Plymouth to Middleboro, and was its proprietor and editor. It was not successful very long. Samuel P. Browne became editor and proprietor of the next venture in Middleboro journalism, appearing with the "Nemasket Gazette" October 7, 1852. He was a local printer but the newspaper took too much of his attention, so he sold it to Rev. Stillman Pratt in 1854. The new proprietor and editor changed the name to the "Middleboro Gazette and Old Colony Advertiser." After the death of Rev. Mr. Pratt, his son, Stillman B. Pratt, conducted the paper until February, 1869, when it was sold to James M. Coombs, who enlarged it. The "Gazette" has continued ever since. It has been one of the good newspapers issued in Plymouth County. It was purchased in August, 1894, by Lorenzo Wood and Wallace Tinkham, the present publishers, who also publish the "Wareham Times."

The "Middleboro News" was started in October, 1881, by Henry H. Sylvester, who made a good newspaper of it from the start. Marcus M. Copeland was owner of the "News" several years. He finally moved to Onset and the "News" suspended publication.

The "Hingham Journal," the weekly newspaper which admirably serves its clientele at present, was established by James H. Wilder in 1850. Mr. Wilder had previously been associated with the publication of the "Hingham Patriot." This paper was started July 2, 1838, by Jedediah Farmer, who published it until July 3, 1841, then sold it to Wilder & Gill. Just one year later William Wilder became the publisher and two years and ten days later the publisher was John Gill. Three years later he took into partnership J. Franklin Farmer, and the paper was enlarged and improved. It is strange how many changes there were in ownership, all occurring in the month of July as the years rolled around, and the Gill and Wilder families passing the paper from one to another. The following July, in 1848, John Gill again became sole publisher and ownership again changed in December of that year to James H. Wilder, who two years later established the "Hingham Journal."

It has continued to be a good newspaper under successive managements and a few years ago became the property of Heman Eldredge, formerly connected with the "Brockton Enterprise" and "Worcester

Post." Mr. Eldredge brought to the paper an all-round experience, a winning personality and integrity which were bound to succeed. The "Journal" is always easy reading and a dispenser of sound intelligence.

The "Hingham Gazette" was, however, the first newspaper in town, established by Farmer & Brown, January 5, 1827. The entire management was taken over by Jedediah Farmer, October 2, 1829, and continued until January 6, 1837, when the management was assumed by Thomas D. Blossom. There was a new editor, Albert A. Folsom, April 6, 1838, and the name of the paper was changed to "Gospel Witness and Old Colony Reporter." The paper was discontinued in October, 1839.

In 1874 there was a paper called the "Abington Journal," edited by Arthur P. Ford, and another in the south part of the town called the "South Abington Times," the editor of which was Arthur W. Sherman. South Abington is now Whitman. It is represented in the journalistic field by the "Whitman Times," which also issues from the same plant the "Abington Journal." Samuel Burleigh is proprietor, publisher and editor of these papers and in 1926 began the publication of an edition for East Bridgewater.

The "Whitman Times" and "Abington Journal" were for many years owned by the late Rev. Leonard B. Hatch, D. D. Much of the editorial and reportorial work was delegated to George A. Dorr, who also became the Whitman correspondent of the "Brockton Times," when the "Times" was started, and has continued in that capacity ever since, more than thirty years.

Many people recall William H. Marden, for many years a newspaper man on the South Shore. He died in Plymouth in October, 1924. He was born in East Weymouth in 1855. In addition to his work as a newspaper correspondent, he served as court officer of the East Norfolk district, also as bail commissioner.

**Some District Men and Good Fellows**—A newspaper man who was known personally by nearly every prominent citizen of Massachusetts and by hundreds of people in the South Shore and Old Colony districts, and well-liked by everybody, was Walter Cobb. Mr. Cobb was correspondent for the "Boston Herald" for many years and covered the district from Quincy to Middleboro on both lines of the railroad, Boston to Cape Cod and Boston to Plymouth. Much of the preparation of his copy was done with a lead pencil while riding on the trains, and he always had a good showing for his trips in readiness to be laid on the editor's desk when he arrived at the "Herald" office. No more conscientious, accurate or thorough news-writer ever handled copy. He was not a voluminous writer but had a faculty of telling much in a few words and no piece of news was too trivial, providing



it would be acceptable to his newspaper, to set him on a most painstaking quest, not satisfied until he possessed every essential detail.

Harvey H. Pratt is much better known in this section as a former district attorney of Plymouth and Norfolk counties, a brilliant lawyer, member of the famous Sea Serpents' Club and generally good fellow, than a newspaper man, yet he was for a considerable time correspondent for the Associated Press and did other newspaper work. A story is recalled of one occasion when Mr. Pratt failed to secure the elusive news item which the Associated Press expected in advance of publication in the Boston newspapers, and was informed that his services would no longer be necessary to the success of the A. P. In those days many of the Associated Press correspondents telephoned their news and were seldom seen at the Associated Press headquarters. Pratt took his discharge in good part but asked if he might recommend "a bright young fellow in Scituate as his successor." Granted this favor, he recommended Harvey Hunter, and instructions were sent from the Associated Press to Harvey Hunter for several weeks before it was known that he had merely brought his middle name into prominence and kept on the job.

Among the bright young fellows who secured their early training on the "Brockton Enterprise" was Edwin Reynolds, son of the late Enos Reynolds of Brockton. He possessed a delightful sense of humor and used it to the best advantage in all his newspaper work, with a certain turn and twist hard to imitate but easy to enjoy. For a few years he was a member of the staff of the "Boston Herald" and, during one of the periodical shifts in management and staff personnel, went over to the "Globe." He fitted into the "Globe" scheme of things as one born to the job. Soon a "So They Say" column was a regular feature on the editorial page and one of the first features to which many people turned after buying their "Globe." It showed Reynolds' special gift of humor, and after he was lent by the "Globe" to the United States Shipping Board, during the World War, no one attempted to keep up the column. It was in a class by itself and Reynolds was the only one who could keep it at the head of the class.

Edwin Reynolds was a victim of exposure to weather conditions and unusual strain in his conscientious duties for the Shipping Board, went to California in an effort to stay the ravages of tuberculosis and put up a brave fight, characteristic of all his work, but passed over to the instruction of the Supreme Editor of Divine Mind in the veritable Sanctum Sanctorum.

A quarter of a century has rolled by since Frank H. Perkins was correspondent for the "Boston Globe" in Plymouth and vicinity and did considerable writing as a side line on the "Plymouth Free Press,"

which was conducted by the late Daniel W. Andrews for several years at the county seat. The "Free Press" was an iconoclastic paper, Democratic in politics and, especially when Mr. Perkins had a hand in its writing, a paper good to read for entertainment as well as for information. Mr. Perkins had been employed on the "Boston Globe" previous to locating in Plymouth. He had the gift of a sympathetic touch with humanity and a beauty of expression which made his newspaper writing as well as his courteous bearing and brilliant personality win him numerous friends. Hundreds of people felt his passing a sad, personal loss when he died suddenly a few days after leaving Plymouth to take a position on a newspaper in New Hampshire.

Mr. Perkins possessed considerable histrionic ability and whenever he took part in theatrical performances the announcement of his being included in the cast had much to do with filling the Davis Opera House in Plymouth, in which he made numerous appearances. Edward E. Rose, playwright, theatrical manager and actor, urged Mr. Perkins to take up a stage career and, during the summer Mr. Rose had his school of acting at Marshfield Hills, the Davis Opera House was used for the production of several plays with Mr. Perkins in the leading rôles.

There have been many newspaper men who got their early training on the "Old Colony Memorial," Plymouth's newspaper of considerably more than a century existence, but the man who wrote "What We Know About Town" thirty and forty years ago, when Avery & Doten were the publishers, and still continues to dish up the Plymouth local news in very creditable style, the man who knows every nook and corner, historical fact and dream of the future about Plymouth, is Charles Monroe Doten, a gentleman and scholar, every inch a newspaper man, a worthy son of a revered father, Captain Charles C. Doten.

The first newspaper in Kingston was established in 1889 by Elroy S. Thompson, then a student in the Kingston High School. It was called the "Kingston News" and was published from the office of the "Bridgewater Independent" in Bridgewater until, through financial difficulties on the part of the publisher of the "Independent," the "Kingston News" omitted a few issues. The Kingston weekly paper then appeared under the name of the "Kingston Press" and was published by Elroy S. Thompson until 1895. Later, for a short time, another Kingston weekly paper was published by John Parks.

At the same time the "Kingston News" was flourishing, the "Duxbury Breeze" was also published, under the management of Elroy S. Thompson. Duxbury had at that time another weekly paper, one of a chain of South Shore weeklies, called the "Duxbury Pilgrim."



There has for many years been such a chain of weekly papers on the South Shore and at times more than one, with changes in make up and in names for the various towns.

The "Plymouth County Farmer" is a newspaper which appears monthly from the offices of the Plymouth County Extension Service in Brockton, and is devoted to the agricultural interests of the county and vicinity. It is conducted jointly by Gardner C. Norcross, County farm agent; Miss Mary S. Dean, home economist; and Stanley L. Freeman, County club agent. It is recognized as one of the best county papers issued by the agricultural interests in the State and enjoys well-deserved popularity.

One of the most readable weekly papers of the county is the "Wareham Courier," edited by Lemuel C. Hall, a representative citizen of Wareham. Other weekly papers, covering towns in the vicinity with their own editions, constitute a chain of newspapers issued from the same office. Mr. Hall has also been editor of the "Cape Cod Magazine," devoted to Cape Cod interests. He served in the Massachusetts Legislature, beginning in 1926.

Even the town of Halifax with its small number of inhabitants had a weekly newspaper a year or more, starting in 1887. The "Halifax Record" was printed at the office of the "Bridgewater Independent" and the local editors were C. Morton Packard and George Orrock. The paper gave the town news, advocated improvements, and in every way was a credit to the enterprising town which it represented. There was, of course, little advertising patronage available in a town with a population of about five hundred and so when the two enthusiastic young men who started it moved out of town, the paper was discontinued. The first issue of the "Halifax Record" contained an interesting story of the incident of riding the Tory tavern-keeper, Daniel Dunbar, on a rail out of town, in the days just before the Revolutionary War. In addition to the local news, some story of historical happenings appeared in each weekly issue.

Nearly all of the Plymouth County towns have had weekly newspapers bearing the names of the towns, either a paper originated especially for each separate town or one of a chain of papers, regardless of the small number of inhabitants. Hull, the smallest town, has the "Hull Beacon," and for several years the "Nantasket Breeze" was published weekly in the summer months when that popular resort was densely populated with summer residents. There has been a commendable pride taken in the papers which have represented the towns and, in most instances, it has been justified. Plymouth County people have always had much of interest and importance to tell each other and to tell the world. The county newspaper men have been

good examples of the journalistic profession and many of them have risen to high positions in literary attainment.

**"Nothing But Newspaper Talk"**—At a banquet twenty years before the Civil War, one of the speakers responding to a toast to the press, said: "The newspaper is the intellectual spring into which everybody dips his bucket, whilst few thank the fountain for its supply." There is truth in every word of that, yet journalism has its rewards as well as its trials, like any other profession. These rewards are akin to those which come to any other teaching profession, for the newspaper is the world's greatest educator, from the time one first learns to read until the undertaker is called. There is no profession which calls for greater loyalty, devotion, personal sacrifice, intelligent and resourceful efforts, knowledge of human nature and fearlessness. The profession in Plymouth County has always been supplied with men and women who have possessed these qualities. In this county as elsewhere, there have been people connected with the profession who brought no credit to it and reflected none of its real characteristics, but with them this volume has no concern. On the contrary, it is a pleasure to pay tribute where honor is due.

The newspaper man knows his community as no one else knows it. To him alone every fact concerning everybody is a part of his business, not necessarily to broadcast, but to file away in his memory for the bearing it may have on other facts and events which will some day appear as copy. The newspaper man secures so much inside information that it is impossible for him to stand in awe of any man. Before him is paraded every day the weaknesses, the foibles, the vanities, as well as the strength, nobleness, honesty and faithful devotion on the part of common citizens of which the world-at-large knows little. Such first-hand knowledge dispels illusions but makes enduring confidences. The newspaper man more than any other man penetrates the mask of wealth, influence and arrogance and tries to hide his amusement behind a poker face when he sees the average citizen groveling or becoming servile in the presence of unworthy assumption.

History must concede to the newspaper workers much credit for keeping the public right with the world. When Will Rogers says all he knows is what he sees in the newspapers, he is the representative of a tremendous army. The newspaper is the sole source of information for a vast multitude and, while newspapers contain inaccuracies, even careless newspaper reports are usually more authentic than the statements of casual eyewitnesses. The newspaper man is trained to observe things accurately and impersonally and check up first impressions. Some one once said: "O that mine enemy would



write a book." The newspaper men are writing books continuously and they are being reviewed mercilessly by all sorts and conditions of readers continuously. There is no other worker who invariably lays his cards on the table for everyone to see, and plays his game under a spotlight.

The shallow thinker reads his newspaper and says worldly-wisely: "That is nothing but newspaper talk." "Newspaper talk" is all they know about anything outside the little microscopic orbit in which they resolve and receive impressions from the antennæ of their five deceitful senses.

A generation ago, President McKinley wanted someone to find General Garcia in Cuba, and a man was found who received a wonderful amount of credit because he started on his mission without asking questions but exercised his resourcefulness and found his man. The man, Lieutenant Andrew S. Rowan of the Secret Service, was a success, but it was not what he did but the way in which Elbert Hubbard wrote the story that brought him fame. Many years before that James Gordon Bennett of the "New York Herald" wanted to get a message to Livingstone, somewhere in "Darkest Africa." Finding Garcia in Cuba in 1898 was a picnic compared with the task of finding David Livingstone, somewhere in Africa in 1869, but Henry M. Stanley, an American newspaper reporter, received the assignment, and he located Livingstone in Ujiji, in spite of the Manyema and the devil himself. It was merely "reasonable service" in the interest of his newspaper.

The newspaper is the Archimedean lever of intelligence which moves the world another day ahead every twenty-four hours in common knowledge and understanding. It is the persuasive voice of commerce and transportation. It creates desires for better things which leads the world on to a more abundant life. It prevents more crimes than the police and brings to justice more criminals than the detectives. It makes hygienic watchfulness and preventive medicine a condition and not a theory nor a prescription. It does much to dispel ignorance of the law and does not excuse it, even in a lawyer. It assays the pretensions of explorers, discoverers, clergymen, politicians, and prizefighters and leaves mere assumptions as naked as a rain-washed bone. The newspaper is the greatest bargain in the world, the liveliest thing in the making and dead the instant it appears, for something newer has occurred while the ink was being spread. It is only "newspaper talk" to be sure but the public itself is the tail of the journalistic kite, just a little behind, can't let go.

Sometimes the newspapers have printed a hoax and how successful have been such delusions! Two or three generations believed the Chicago fire resulted from the playful action of Mrs. O'Leary's cow.

Just a year or so ago three reporters who mentioned the bovine as the cause of the conflagration confessed that Mrs. O'Leary's cow, if she ever had one, never kicked a lantern. It was more likely she kicked the bucket and added to the Chicago beef supply.

**Many Men Owe Their Recognition and Fame to Reporters**—It was Michael Ahern, the last surviving reporter who covered the great Chicago fire, who told the true story of this long-believed fake, after it had been associated in the popular mind with the Chicago fire half a century. Ahern with two other reporters, John English and James Haynie, used their imagination about the cow. The fire started in the O'Leary barn, presumably from spontaneous combustion, but the popular mind associates a barn with a cow, and in those days electricity was not the method for illuminating barns, but the kerosene lantern. Cows kicked and sometimes kicked over lanterns. Therefore Ahern originated the theory and before he died, February 19, 1927, at St. Augustine's Home for the Aged at Chicago, aged seventy-seven, told how he and the other two reporters agreed upon the alleged explanation. At the time of the fire Ahern was a police reporter for the "Chicago Republican."

The innocent fake, done in the spirit of play, has sometimes confused history and should not be too highly defended, although it has undoubtedly made many a story better than the facts and so added to the gaiety of nations. In all justice, however, it must be admitted that the stories told by newspapers following any important happening are invariably much closer to the facts than those told by any bystander.

There is a code of ethics which goes with the newspaper profession and it includes as its principal tenet keeping confidential anything which a reporter receives as such. If the newspaper men ever told even a small part of what they knew about people, it would be the day of chaos. Much should be forgiven of the reporter for what he prints because of what he knows full well but refrains from printing.

On the other hand many brilliant men owe a debt of gratitude far beyond what they usually are willing to acknowledge to the newspapers for telling the world about their attainments and capabilities, and by the telling placing them in positions which they would otherwise never have attained. On the front page of the "Boston Transcript" in May, 1927, appeared an allusion to a visit made by President Lowell of Harvard University to Governor Alvan T. Fuller. It was at the time of the appeals from all sides in behalf of Sacco and Vanzetti to the governor, and the fact that neither party took the newspaper men into their confidence regarding the nature of the call at the State House, caused President Lowell to say: "I have nothing to say. I never talk to reporters. It has been my custom for years. Good day."



Suppose the reporters should have matched President Lowell's "Good day" with "Good night," so far as making any further allusions to him were concerned. Suppose they had chosen to put the president of a great university into the position of the president who was never mentioned, what would have been the effect? Better still, suppose the brilliant, scholarly A. Lawrence Lowell had been severely let alone by the newspapers in those days when Dr. Charles W. Eliot presided at Cambridge. Brilliant and able as he was, his talents had not included those of selling himself to the public or the Fellows of Harvard University, so that he entered their minds as the successor to Dr. Eliot. The newspapers did that for him, whether he would or no.

"Bob" Washburn some days later, in the "Transcript," included in his interesting column, regarding what he called Mr. Lowell's "epochal statement:" "Because of this statement, Mr. Lowell should not be harshly judged, although his opportunities for progress and entertainment are thereby materially circumscribed. For Mr. Lowell has successfully fought the disabilities of ancestry. The Cabots and the Lowells, it has been established, once chatted with the Deity and themselves only. Mr. Lowell is now known, in a democratic way, to blend with all, except the representatives of the press, or in the vernacular, the reporter. Why this exception, in days when even the silent Calvin has developed this practice, only Mr. Lowell can say, though this he will not say, that is, to the press.

"If a reporter should happen to be rowing in midocean and find Mr. Lowell clinging to a spar, would the latter then remember his principle or forget it and cry for succor? May I say, on my part, without heresy to my academic Mother, that I never began to live until I came into a close communion with the press. I have myself at times submitted to an interview, I confess with some shame. Some folks feel that the United States Senate runs the country. No, it is the reporters who sit in the chamber over the clock."

"Uncle Joe" Cannon, near the close of his long career in Congress, said in a speech:

I owe to the Washington correspondents' corps my reputation as a wit and critic. When I came to Washington I learned that you men possessed the magic power of making fame for men in public life. Some of your number discovered that Joe Cannon enjoyed publicity and would never repudiate any newspaper story. So, for a quarter of a century, I have been quoted on every conceivable subject. Sometimes I have been a trifle shocked by the words you have put into my mouth, but I have always "stood pat." Until this moment I have never complained to you, the real authors of my fame.

We wonder if Benjamin Franklin actually answered John Hancock at the signing of the Declaration of Independence, when the latter said that the signers "must all hang together," "Yes, or we shall all

hang separately," or was it some other newspaper man who put it into his mouth? Did Admiral Dewey actually give the order at Manila Bay in the words: "You may fire when you are ready, Gridley?" Some of those who fought with General Sheridan say that his language, at the end of his ride from "Winchester, twenty miles away" was emphatic, optimistic and decidedly plain but "Come on, boys, we are going back," was a mild paraphrase of the real utterance.

**Days of the Tramp Printer Nearly Over**—Until the typesetting machines came into general use, even in the smaller towns if they were large enough to be the home of a country newspaper, the tramp printer was always going the rounds. One of the last, well-remembered in Plymouth County and vicinity was a soldier of the Civil War named Conway. He accounted for the fact that he was on the road, instead of a stationary craftsman, by explaining that he started marching in the war and had been marching ever since. Conway was typical of the tramp printers of his own and an earlier day. How much schooling had fallen to his lot it was hard to guess but he had picked up a workable education in his travels and, with stick in hand, frequently took the liberty of correcting the grammar of the writer whose "take" fell to his lot from the "copy hook."

Perhaps it is fair to consider Benjamin Franklin as at one time a tramp printer. Having difficulties with his brother in Boston, he left that printing office and went to New York, from New York to Philadelphia, from Philadelphia to France and England, and always he was a printer. Whatever other things he contributed to the service of humanity he wanted to be remembered as a printer, with a printer's outlook on life. That this should be the case he composed his own epitaph, dated 1728. The original manuscript was once in the old and noted Aspinwall collection and eventually found its way in the magnificent Franklin collection of William S. Mason of Evanston, Illinois. The epitaph follows:

THE BODY OF B. FRANKLIN,  
PRINTER,  
LIKE THE COVER OF AN OLD BOOK,  
ITS CONTENTS TORN OUT  
AND  
STRIPT OF ITS LETTERING & GILDING,  
LIES HERE  
FOOD FOR WORMS.  
BUT THE WORK SHALL NOT BE LOST;  
FOR IT WILL AS HE BELIEV'D  
APPEAR ONCE MORE  
IN A NEW AND MORE ELEGANT EDITION  
REVISED AND CORRECTED  
BY THE AUTHOR.



Thomas Nuttall, who became curator of the Botanic Gardens at Harvard, author of "North American Sylva," and many other botanical treasures, started as a tramp printer. Wherever he traveled he studied the trees of North America, even working his way, by means of the printer's "stick," to the Pacific Coast.

Whoever he was and how long he might chance to stay, no questions were asked of the tramp printers when they appeared in the local newspaper offices. Usually they carried their "stick" with them and made themselves at home in the office. They took copy from the "hook," if there was a vacant place at the case, put up their "take" and left it largely to the sense of justice or generosity of the "boss" what would be coming to them at the end of the day. Usually they slept in the printing office and, if paid a little to enable them to have food and tobacco, would remain until "pay day." If the newspaper owner wanted his tramp printer to remain longer than that day, it were well not to pay him all that was coming to him; otherwise he would be missing the next morning. A five-dollar bill, all at one time, was equivalent to bidding one of this gentry "good-bye." That was sufficient to stake one of them till the next "station."

Artemas Ward, once a printer, left a large share of his property to establish an asylum for indigent printers. They were a "devil may care" lot of fellows, usually made what they were by a liking for liquors, plus a wanderlust; both habits are hard to break. They were, as a class, interesting story tellers and, unlike most itinerants, faithful guardians of confidences. They always had plenty of good stories from experiences on the road but would close up like a clam whenever questioned concerning inside information which came to them by their positions at the case of a rival newspaper.

The old-time tramp printer is not yet extinct, although now a rare specimen, redolent of the past. Early in the year 1927 a Texas paper, the "Kyle News," told of the visit to that office of one of the fraternity, one Waterhouse. He had visited all parts of the country and might have been as far from what he might, as a matter of courtesy, call "home" when in Texas as though he were sitting on Plymouth Rock. The "News" printed its announcement of this wandering type and said:

Weary Willie Waterhouse  
Of Walla Walla, Wash.  
A peregrinating printer,  
And a good one, too, begosh!

This little scrap of verse was written by one of his pals—all the printers and country newspaper folks long in harness know him.

The tramp printers used occasionally to hold a "convention" when

any number of them got together, and the ode of the fraternity was:

And when I die, don't bury me a-tall:  
Just pickle my bones in alcohol.  
Put a bottle of booze at my head and feet,  
So this body of mine will always keep.

True enough all the fraternity were much addicted to the "little brown jug," and that is how most of them got that way.

There was a time when tramp printers seemed to run in pairs, at least if one called another would soon appear. Sometimes their calls overlapped, if one of them happened to stay as long as four or five days in one office. When a country shop in former days got into a tight fix, it seems as if the tramp printers could get a sniff of the trouble and came along to help out. Some over thirty years ago the "Bridgewater Independent" ran a big special edition at the time the Normal School was observing its bi-centennial anniversary. The paper was owned by Elmer C. Linfield at that time and he was anxious to make the "Independent" carry the story of the celebration better than any other paper, but picking up extra compositors was next to impossible for a few days. The writer was beginning to "stick type" and assisted Arthur L. Willis, who is still a printer in Bridgewater, and the rest of the "gang," but the novitiate was of little use—a novitiate in a newspaper office is always called "the devil" and usually with good reason. Working all night was one way and this was done. Then along came Conway, took his faithful "stick" out of the pocket of his reefer, grabbed a "take" from the "hook" and went to work as if he had been sent for. That is the way in which the old-timers seemed to appear. They were a type separate and distinct and served their purpose, and we miss them, for most of them are gone. New print-shop methods prevent them from having any successors.

**The "Brockton and South Shore Magazine"**—The shoe industry in Brockton and all the neighboring towns, usually referred to as the South Shore District, is especially represented by the "Brockton and South Shore Magazine," which appears bi-monthly, setting forth the quality of the footwear manufactured in this shoe centre, noted for having reached the highest state of perfection for the covering of human feet of any community since babies were born barefooted. The magazine is an unusually good sample of the printer's art and circulates with its messages, creating a desire for the latest and best in footwear, among shoe buyers far and near. The magazine is issued from the plant of the "Tolman Print" in Brockton, one of the largest printing and advertising concerns in the East, employing one hundred and fifty persons and operating sixty machines.



The "Brockton and South Shore Magazine" stated in its first issue: "The purpose of this magazine is to acquaint the American people with the facts about this great industrial community in which various shoe companies are capitalized for about \$100,000,000. Brockton and the South District is the cradle of the shoe industry. More good shoes are made in Brockton and the South Shore District than in any other place on earth. Hundreds of years of quality workmanship by born craftsmen make our shoes the best in the world. We are a community of the most skillful and most intelligent people on earth. We know more, do more and live on a higher plane than the people of any other part of the world. That is why our products are the best."

The magazine first stepped into the arena of shoemaking journalism in May, 1926. The board of management consists of president and director, Arthur J. Chase; vice-president and director, George B. Hendrick; treasurer and director, Bernard B. Winslow; assistant treasurer and director, Albert R. Ewell; clerk and director, Lester D. Morse; director, Harold C. Keith; director, John S. Kent; director, William T. Card; and director, George M. Rand. These men represent manufacturing, banking, and advertising institutions in Brockton and the South Shore District. The magazine reaches 20,000 retailers and jobbers and carries the message of the shoe and allied industries of the Abingtons, Avon, the Braintrees, the Bridgewater, Brockton, the Eastons, the Hanovers, Holbrook, Middleboro, Randolph, Rockland, Stoughton, the Weymouths and Whitman.

**Secretaries to the Great**—Some Plymouth County newspaper men have enjoyed political preferment and others have added to the laurels of other officeholders. Joseph F. Reilly, secretary of the Brockton Chamber of Commerce, was secretary to Congressman Richard Olney in Washington, and was also vice-consul in Cuba for a considerable time. Previously he had been a reporter on the "Brockton Enterprise" and other newspapers.

Albert Henry Washburn, a graduate of the Cornell University School of Journalism, was private secretary for President Andrew D. White of that university, later private secretary for the late Hon. Henry Cabot Lodge, previous to becoming Commercial Agent of the United States at Magdeburg, Germany; a noted international relations lawyer, and ambassador to Austria. His home is in Middleboro, and he has a summer residence and handsome, extensive estate at Falmouth.

Edward C. McAdams was a member of the "Brockton Enterprise" staff when Congressman Robert O. Harris wanted a good secretary and his good luck was the "Enterprise's" loss. McAdams started, in March, 1927, the first daily newspaper in Everett. He had previously gone from the "Brockton Enterprise," via Washington, to responsible

positions on the "Boston Post," "Herald" and "Telegram," then to the "Lynn Telegram-News," of which he was managing editor.

Some of the old-timers can recall when Grover Cleveland became president of the United States, breaking the hold of the Republicans on the chief executive's chair. Plymouth County furnished his private secretary, Robert Lincoln O'Brien of Abington, then a reporter on the "Boston Evening Transcript." President Cleveland was not permitted to remain in his position at Washington many years but O'Brien remained as Washington correspondent for the "Transcript" and other papers, until he returned to become managing editor of the "Transcript." Later he acquired an interest in the "Boston Herald" and is at present its editor-in-chief.

John Gleason O'Brien, a reporter on the "Brockton Enterprise," went to Washington and became Washington correspondent for several newspapers, proved to the great and near great in the nation's capital that he was a real fellow and one day found he had been appointed vice-consul in Italy, and was expected to find out why sour wines and olive oil from that part of southern Europe were in a class by themselves, and other diplomatic intelligence. While in Italy, carrying with him the military title of major from the United States Army, he received a decoration from the king of Italy, and might, possibly, have been in line for Mussolini's job had it not been for the call of the press of America. He became identified with the plan of Cornelius Vanderbilt to conduct a chain of "something different" in newspapers, and has been an associate of the journalistic member of the Vanderbilt family ever since.

Will Irwin had become a Plymouth County resident at Scituate before the German Army started marching through Belgium on their way to Paris and other places which they never reached. Richard Harding Davis had also adopted Plymouth County, having his home in Marion. Mary Boyle O'Reilly, daughter of John Boyle O'Reilly, the relationship being mentioned not because she had not attained sufficient fame through meritorious achievements of her own, but to add one additional cubit to her worthy stature, was also a Plymouth County resident, at Marshfield. They all met in Germany, in a freight car, into which they were thrust by German soldiers. Miss O'Reilly was given her reservation first and, as she told the story, "While wondering what was to be done with me, the door opened and into my apartment was assisted someone whose very legs looked American; and I beheld the calm but indignant countenance of Will Irwin. We had hardly asked each other 'how did you get here?' when the door was again rolled back and we were joined by Richard Harding Davis. It was a real reunion. Then the train started and when it came to a stop we were on the border of Belgium. We were told that newspaper



correspondents were not allowed with the German Army and we were to leave Germany. We walked across the Belgium line, halted, executed a right-about-face, and with our faces toward the country from which we had been excluded fervently repeated what have since become historic words: 'To hell with Germany!' "

There was another Plymouth County man in the war area in those days who, perhaps, knew as much about the causes, preparations, plans, and intentions of the war parties as any one individual in the world, outside of the war lords themselves. William Morton Fullerton, Paris correspondent for the "London Times," had served years of apprenticeship under the renowned Blowitz before succeeding him as the Parisian representative of "The Thunderer," knew and practiced the methods of his diplomatic chief, and had "inside information" regarding most of the supposedly secret diplomacy of the Old World. He has been quoted as saying that had the German motor divisions and cavalry pushed forward without interruption, instead of remaining to help punish Belgium, they would have gotten into Paris. How long they would have been able to remain there, he is not quoted as giving an opinion.

From the few instances which have been mentioned, it has been made clear that Plymouth County has had a far-flung line of newspaper reporters. Wherever anything interesting has been going on in the world from the time of Benjamin Franklin to this morning, there has been a newspaper man on the job, and Plymouth County has been represented in a surprisingly large number of such places. There was only one reporter with the Yankee Division in the World War, but that one was Frank Sibley of Hingham, Plymouth County, representing the "Boston Globe." Plymouth County reporters have been up in balloons and airships, down in submarines and coal mines, have been knighted by kings and the confidantes of the Bolsheviki, and remained "on the level."

Since newspapers began in America, not very long after the landing of the Pilgrims, they have helped materially in the marvels of progress in Plymouth County and wherever the printing press has taken any printable language. Today more than ever, to quote an editorial from the "Colorado Springs Gazette and Telegraph," "the newspaper is the sole source of information and knowledge for that vast multitude which limits its daily reading to one or more papers; and a great majority of those who do not limit to the newspapers, turn elsewhere only for entertainment, depending upon their paper to keep them informed on the economic, political, scientific and social state of the nation and world. In any issue of a representative American newspaper one will find reports from the scientists, surveys of economic and political conditions, graphic pictures of all strata of contemporary society, a sum-

mary of current history and a mirror of the wit and humor of the times. To the seeing the modern newspaper is a magic crystal in which the gazer can see the world pass before his eyes."

Into each newspaper edition are condensed hundreds of current events without geographical limitation, the essential portions of the writings and utterances of the day, and the latest addition to the "sum of human knowledge." If society is better informed today than ever in the past it is because there are more newspaper readers.

Communities are very much what newspapers make of them. Plymouth County has been fortunate during all the years in having newspapers and newspaper men of the right sort, and what has been true in the days that have gone is especially true at present. The living editorial and news-writers constitute a county asset surpassed by no other profession.



## CHAPTER XXVII

### HOME OF THE SHOE INDUSTRY.

Development of Shoemaking from Cowhide Boots to Twenty-one Faultless Styles for Modern Demands—Why a Weaver Rather Than a Shoemaker Was Hanged in Colonial Times—Style Show at Brockton Fair is Show Window for New England's Greatest Industry—The "Woman Shoe Worker is the Best That the Twentieth Century Has Produced of Her Type"—Machinery and Measuring Stick Revolutionized Processes—"Whipping the Cat" and "Bespoke Work"—Labor Unionism and Shoemaking Psychology—Early Markets in West Indies—California and Australia—Cape Cod Boy Who Built a Hundred Million Dollar World-wide Business—Half of Boys in Blue Wore Abington Shoes—Brockton First Became Famous for a Dollar Shoe—Some Present-day Leaders.

Robinson Crusoe was monarch of all he surveyed. Walking one day upon the strand, wondering whether he would have fish for dinner or some wild beast would choose meat for his or hers, and, if so, whether he would be the "meat" his cogitations were interrupted by noticing a human footprint in the sand. Instantly, Robinson Crusoe began to think in terms of social intercourse. There was a human foot somewhere and something must be done about it!

Plymouth County was the Robinson Crusoe of the New World. There were plenty of human beings roaming about the country before the coming of the Pilgrims and they provided themselves with foot covering in the same manner as Robinson Crusoe, by making moccasins. But the first bare feet on a white man was a challenge to someone in the Plymouth Colony to make boots and shoes. Perhaps there were bare white feet in the Virginia Colony also, but the people who landed there were in better financial circumstances and, for the sake of the argument we will admit the possibility they came with an extra pair of boots made in England, and so did not need the ministrations of a shoemaker as early as someone in Captain Myles Standish's army was drafted to prevent the Plymouth population from going on their uppers.

#### MAN AND HIS SHOES.

How much a man is like his shoes!  
For instance: both a soul may lose;  
Both have been tanned, both are made tight  
By cobblers; both get left, and right;  
Both need a mate to be complete,  
And both are made to go on feet,  
They both need heeling, oft are sold,  
And both in time will turn to mould.

With shoes, the last is first: with men  
The first shall be the last; and when  
The shoes wear out, they're mended new;  
When men wear out they're men-dead too!  
They both are trod upon, and both  
Will tread on others, nothing loth!  
Both have their ties, and both incline  
When polished, in the world to shine,  
And both peg out. Now would you choose  
To be a man, or be his shoes?

—J. J. McNally

It is a far cry—or should we say a long walk—between the time when father pulled off his cowhide boots at night, with the help of a bootjack or the assistance of the boys of the family, placed them before the open fire or in close proximity to the kitchen stove, and sat around with his carpet slippers on his feet while the cowhides were getting dried, to the year 1927 when fashion dictates that a gentleman's wardrobe shall contain twenty-one pairs of shoes. Father was strictly in accordance with the times and actuated by methods born of experience when he sat a saucer of mutton tallow near the fire with his boots. When the tallow was warm and the boots were dry, he "greased" the boots in readiness for "putting on" the next morning. Tallow made the leather pliable and water-resisting. The boys of the family, and, perhaps, the girls, placed their boots or shoes near father's and all were "greased" to make the process of putting them on the next day less burdensome and, by the way, to preserve the leather. That was father's last "chore" at night, to "grease" the family footwear.

In the days of cowhide boots, the first essential was to have them made of leather which would wear, stoutly sewed or pegged. In the case of the boys of the family, the boots were sometimes "copper-toed," that is to say there was a tip of copper where the wear came when steering a sled in the process of coasting down the hills of the county in winter, and as a protection against kicking things in general. Some of the boots had red leather tops as a concession to the desire to social distinction and elegance.

But father has "greased" the family boots and gone to bed for the last time. A new day is here and one of its essentials is various pairs of shoes, each pair designed for a specific social need, as well as for purely utilitarian purposes. The first footwear made in Plymouth County was suitable for its days and generation and was made according to the customs of manufacture in vogue when Pilgrims packed a gun when they went to church. Now Plymouth County manufacturers turn out the twenty-one varieties demanded by social usage and they have in years past turned out footwear in all the styles and for all the uses which have marked the progress of the people for more than three hundred years.



A few years ago there was a call for summer-weight or feather-weight shoes, as soon as the dandelions had been converted into wine and the voice of the turtle was heard in the land. A generation before sneakers had filled the bill fairly well, and there was a time when "baseball shoes" were in vogue, with their straps across the instep made of something else, causing the foot of the wearer to resemble a cranberry pie with an upper crust neither open-faced nor hunter-cased. But featherweights were formally introduced to the public in Plymouth County in the spring of 1926, when the Old Colony Advertising Club wished a pair on to the feet of Mayor Harold Bent of Plymouth County's only city. They have been popular for summer wear ever since.

There are smart sport shoes in various hues and weights and some distinctly "doggy" shoes, popular with collegians and the younger set generally. In these days of golf and other outdoor sports the average man has one or two pairs of shoes in his locker at the golf club or at the Y. M. C. A., if he plays a set or two of tennis preparatory to taking his plunge and shower. There are shoes with spikes and rubber knobs for various purposes on the links and courts, and another type of shoe affected by some of the men when they appear in the clubhouse or on the veranda. There are tans for the bridle path, walking shoes and yachting shoes for vacation purposes and slippers for Pullman wear, to say nothing of the footwear which will perhaps be in demand for airplane traveling by the time the ink is dry on these pages. So the shoe manufacturers have prepared to meet the demand for twenty-one pairs of shoes for the individual without going out of the county, and then a man may consider himself "all set" for business, dress, semi-dress, golf, sports, riding, home and travel.

Along with the manufacture of footwear the Plymouth County shoemakers have educated the public fairly well to have several pairs of shoes to wear, merely as a matter of economy, since the more pairs of shoes a man has the longer they will keep their shape and the more comfortable they will be to the feet, if worn in succession, and those not in use kept on "trees." This rule applies particularly to high-grade shoes, and high-grade shoes are the kind which are manufactured in Plymouth County and vicinity, as the world has often been told and the assertion proved, until it has ceased to be contradicted.

While this is true for the men, as regards a variety of styles and kinds of shoes for various purposes and in sufficient numbers to give them time to rest, women demand as many kinds of shoes and in various colors, since hats and hosiery as well as gowns call for complementary colors in footwear. The smart appearance of apparel in general requires corresponding smartness in footwear for both sexes. Shoe manufacturers find it a part of their business requirements to cater to these demands as

well as all the others which enter into the problem. As has been said by a famous editor of the present day "Clothes do not make the man but they are about all one can see of a man to judge him by, in business hours, except his face and hands;" and many men are judged today by their footwear. Furthermore it is claimed that there is something about the footwear made in this section which has a distinction and finesse all its own which marks the well-shod man, and it is as much a recommendation in sartorial distinction to say a person wears shoes made in Brockton and the South Shore District as to say a woman gets her gowns from Paris.

**First Shoemakers Arrive**—Plymouth County has looked to "Home talent" to supply its needs in footwear ever since Peregrine White was born barefooted on the "Mayflower." All the babies born since have followed Peregrine's example in the New World. There is no record that there was a shoemaker on the "Mayflower" on its first trip, but when it made its second voyage there were at least two who set that down as their occupation. These two, Thomas Beard and Isaac Rickerman, were the earliest shoemakers on record in this country. They set up their benches, cut the upper and sole leather from the hide with a shoe knife, stitched the upper with awl and waxed end, hammered the sole on a lapstone, sewed it on by hand, and put on the finish with a wooden shoulder stick. This was seven years after the "Mayflower's" first arrival at Plymouth, and most of the boots and shoes brought over from Holland had become sadly worn. As a matter of fact this was the story in regard to all the clothing and, had it not been for the shoes, left by those who died in the general illness the first winter, many of the Pilgrims would have been walking "on their uppers" before the arrival of Messrs. Beard and Rickerman.

As time went on there were more weavers than shoemakers in proportion to the requirements, especially from the fact that weaving of cloth was one of the household industries in every log cabin. The "Newport News" of a date of February, 1849, says: "In the days of the blue laws of New England a shoemaker was condemned to be hanged for something he had done; but, on the day appointed for his execution, they discovered that he was the only shoemaker in the place; so they hanged a weaver in his stead, for they had more weavers than they knew what to do with." This story may not be historically correct in its details but it is a good illustration of the demands of the times—for shoemakers, and not to be denied a victim to furnish entertainment on the day of a Thursday lecture, when church and state were one.

Shoemaking retained for a hundred years after the coming of Thomas Beard and other early shoemakers, the methods which had been in use in Europe. The hammer, awl, knife, lapstone and shoulder stick for



finishing edges were practically all the tools used. The present factory system has been largely developed since the Civil War. Previous to that time, little door-yard shops were scattered throughout the county, in which neighbors gathered and bottomed the shoes or boots from the fitted uppers and understock, secured from the manufacturer in a nearby city or larger town. Everything was done by hand, whether lasting, pegging, trimming, edge setting or what-not. Today, with modern machinery, many with individual motors, the process of making shoes is as much the antithesis of former methods as can be shown in any industry.

Brockton, in Plymouth County, is the centre of a district which produces more good shoes than any other district in the world. This locality is the cradle of the shoe industry. New England stands supreme as the shoemaking section of the United States, producing the greatest quantity and best quality of footwear; Massachusetts continues to hold first place among the shoe-manufacturing States, with a yearly production of approximately 72,000,000 pairs; and Brockton and the South Shore District set the style and furnish the cream. There have been statements made in other parts of the country about the decadence of the shoe industry in Massachusetts, where the wish has been the father of the ludicrous statements. It may help some to remember that in 1926 Massachusetts produced nearly one-fourth of all of the shoes that were manufactured in the United States, exclusive of rubber footwear. It made 24.2 per cent of the men's shoes, and 27.7 per cent of the women's shoes, and a comfortable percentage of both were manufactured in Plymouth County and neighboring towns.

To speak in round figures, Massachusetts employs an average number of 80,000 shoe workers, representing approximately half the number in the country-at-large. There are 10,000 more employed in the industries closely allied with shoemaking, stock and findings. Both men and women are employed in the factories and it is one of the best-paid industries for wage earners in the country.

There are seven towns in Plymouth County in which there are shoe factories and the total number of factories is fifty-six, according to a recent trade directory. Half this number are located in Brockton and it is a city of large factories. Some time ago there were thirty-two factories in Brockton making the complete shoe product and, in addition, forty-three factories producing shoe and leather findings and cut stock. In the factories making the complete product about twenty-seven per cent are women. In the factories devoted to findings and stock a larger percentage of women are employed, nearer thirty-six per cent.

Brockton holds chief place in Massachusetts in the production of shoe factory tools and supplies. Bridgewater, Rockland, Whitman, Hanover, Middleboro and Abington in Plymouth County, and Avon, Braintree,

Easton, Holbrook, Randolph, Stoughton and Weymouth in Norfolk or Bristol counties are connected with Brockton and with one another by railroads or trolley lines, bus lines and good roads, over which well-paid employees drive their own cars to and from work; and well laden motor trucks take the products to market. A large part of the local industrial energy in the towns mentioned is devoted to shoe manufacturing and allied industries.

**Brockton Fair Style Show**—The best opportunity to get a real impression of the shoe industry in Plymouth County and surrounding towns is afforded at the Shoe Style Show given annually at the Brockton Fair. For three successive years a model shoe factory was operated in the Educational Building on the fair grounds, with the coöperation of the United Shoe Machinery Company, which equipped the factory with the last word in shoe-making machinery. All the processes were shown in operation and much better than they could have seen in any other factory, as every machine was placed in position with the thought in mind of having the process observed by the many thousands of people who daily passed through the aisles.

The entire main floor of the Educational Building is each year devoted to exhibiting the footwear and findings and the faultless apparel which consistently deserves to be worn with such creditable creations; and to an exhibit of men's and women's shoes in action, worn by models who show them in the process of walking, if they are walking shoes; in dancing if they are dancing shoes. The Brockton Fair furnishes the best graphic expression of the shoe industry in America and that distinctive feature has an international reputation.

**Women in Shoe Industry**—The Shoe Style Show forces upon the attention of thousands of people every day and evening during the week of the fair, the prominent part played by women in the shoe industry in this vicinity. An investigation was made in 1911-12 by the Women's Educational and Industrial Union of Boston "to obtain first-hand knowledge with regard to certain aspects of an occupation long held to be exceptionally desirable for wage earning women." The conditions have not been changed materially since the report was published in 1915 as a bulletin of the United States Bureau of Labor Statistics. The report stated that "the work of women has been so long an important factor in the evolution of shoe-making that the industry has special interest in connection with inquiries as to the advantages a long-established factory trade offers to women at the present time. . . . More women work at shoe-making in Massachusetts than at any other factory trade except the textile industries." To set forth this phase of shoe-making some quotations from the bulletin referred to will be presented.



"When in 1846 Elias Howe of Boston invented the sewing machine, he doubtless had in mind relief for the busy housewife, but some years later his invention was utilized in the shoemaking shops for the stitching of uppers. The various processes of shoemaking were now for the first time gathered under one roof, and the 'factory' system as applied to this particular manufacture was complete. The heavy machines worked by foot, sometimes by horse power, could be managed only by men. This fact for a time threw women out of the industry, since the work on uppers, for more than a century largely turned over to them, was now done in the factory by men."

"Among women long accustomed to depend upon this work as a means of supplementing personal or family income the distress was acute, and was emphasized on the platform and in the pulpit of the time as among the social disasters consequent on the introduction of machinery into manufacture. 'Hannah at the window binding shoes' was as shamefully underpaid as was her sister stitching shirts, but Hannah without shoes to bind was not paid at all. With the gradual perfection of the single-process system in the factories, through the progressive inventions dividing and simplifying each step in the building of a shoe, women slowly regained a place in the trade. By the year 1860, the stitching machines were universally attached to power belts driven by water or steam, and, as they no longer required great strength in manipulation, could be worked by girls or women, who would take lower wages than men."

"In the forty years succeeding the beginning of the Civil War, in 1861, the gain in numbers of women shoe workers was rapid.... In 1870, twenty per cent of the shoe workers in Massachusetts were women and girls; in 1900 this had grown to nearly thirty-two per cent.... In 1905 married women, including in that term widows and divorced and deserted wives, formed 26.4 per cent of the total female shoe workers of Massachusetts."

"Brockton is among the cities of Massachusetts showing large increase in population. In 1910 its people numbered 56,878, an increase of nearly thirty per cent in ten years. The original American element was, in accordance with the condition in Eastern Massachusetts cities twenty-five years ago, modified mainly by the Irish. But if at present a factory superintendent in Brockton is questioned as to the nationality of his working force, he is apt to reply, 'We have everything but a Chinaman.'"

"The statement is scarcely an exaggeration. About thirty years ago French-Canadians began to arrive, shortly followed by Swedes. More recent additions are the southern European and semi-Oriental people, with some from Central Europe, and the inevitable Russian and Polish Jews. English and Scotch from Canada and the British Provinces are less numerous than in Lynn. A few Portuguese are found, with faces almost as dark as those of the Negroes from families who settled in Plymouth County before the Civil War. Colored women work in many shoe factories.... The Swedes, at first largely employed in shoe findings shops, have made their way up to the regular factories, where in all the skilled processes they are valued workers...."

"The shoe factory draws the immigrant to Brockton, and if he is not inefficient, it keeps him; industrial reasons seldom drive the steady worker from this centre.... Employees in shoe factories own ninety per cent of the houses in Brockton. Children to make these houses complete are frequently wanting.... The homes of Brockton shoe workers are many and, on the whole, show good standards of comfort.... Brockton offers many advantages to the sheltered, home-loving woman, but few to her sister forced to an isolated life."

It must be remembered that these statements were published in 1915 and many

agencies have since sprung up to make the lot of the working woman whose home is elsewhere much more suitable.

"The question of equal rewards for equal work for men and women has already been settled in the shoe factories by the method of piece payment. When men and women are doing the same work they are paid at the same rate. But it is only in exceptional cases that they are doing the same work. It has been clearly pointed out by social economists that men and women, even when working under the same factory roof, are usually not competitors in a true sense. Women get lower pay than men for various reasons, but mainly because they are doing a work of a lower grade. In the shoe industry the general rule is carried out, but it has conspicuous exceptions. Women's work is mainly in the stitching and packing rooms. It requires as much manual dexterity as that of the men, but less physical strength, and on the whole less mental ability. Therefore the whole scale of wages for women is lower than that for men."

"In their ability and intelligence, in their relatively high earnings, in the permanence of their relation to the communities of which they form a part, in the uniformity of their social ideals and training, the Massachusetts shoe worker is the best that the twentieth century has produced of her type."

**Early Sewing Machines For Shoemaking**—The manufacture of boots, shoes and leather were recognized industries before 1650. Within ten years after the settlement of Boston, shoes became an article of export from that port. Shoemaking was carried on in this country two hundred years before Elias Howe of Cambridge invented the sewing machine. It was a very imperfect machine and several others had a hand in improving it. Elias Howe brought out the machine in 1846 but it did not have an automatic feed until three years later and that contribution was the work of John Batchelder of Boston. A rotary shuttle for making the lock-stitch was invented by Blodgett and Lerow the same year.

Messrs. Grover and Baker, two Boston inventors, put a sewing machine on the market in 1851 which soon became the leading sewing machine. There were five establishments for the manufacture of sewing machines in Massachusetts in 1855 and in that year 3,385 machines were produced, but the machine controlled by Grover and Baker stood at the head in 1858. This machine embodied a new principle. It made a double loop-stitch by means of a circular rotary needle, and without the employment of a shuttle. The Singer sewing machine, invented by I. M. Singer in 1850, was first manufactured on Harvard Place in Boston, but was later transferred to New York.

In Colonial days a family usually raised the cattle and tanned the hides in preparation for making the shoes for the family and, when the cattle were not raised on the farm, a calf-skin would be purchased, a "side of upper" and a side of sole leather, in readiness for some traveling shoemaker who would come along and live with the family until the year's supply of footwear had been made.

Sometimes women were traveling shoemakers. Such was Hannah Reed whose home was in Middleboro. She was noted for her energy and



strength and Thomas Weston tells in his "History of the Town of Middleboro" how two clerks in a store saw her coming and one bet the other that he would not dare to kiss her. As the woman was making some purchases from one of the clerks the other kissed her. "The indignant shoemaker turned, seized him by the collar and seat of his trousers, dragged him to the door, and pitched him out. He won his bet, but never tried that trick again." Mr. Weston also relates concerning Hannah Reed: "She frequently walked to Boston and back the next day, to purchase leather, etc., for her work. She made 'good substantial shoes, well fitting to the feet'."

**The "Shoe City," Plymouth County's Own**—While many Plymouth County towns have from the earliest days and still are engaged prominently in shoe manufacturing, Brockton is known all over the world as "The Shoe City," and shoemaking constitutes the dominating industry of that lively municipality. A few years ago Brockton observed its centennial anniversary and Rev. Warren P. Landers, a native of that city, prepared a memorial volume, briefly sketching the history of the city and its days as the town of North Bridgewater. In that part of the book devoted to the shoe industry the story was so well told that numerous quotations appear in this volume, and the author wishes to acknowledge helping himself to numerous paragraphs, in some cases with no other changes than leaving out some facts which appear elsewhere, avoiding repetition; or changing the tense or grammatical construction when required to make the borrowed sentences fit the context.

Rev. Mr. Landers reminds us that the "deed by which Massasoit transferred the Duxbury plantation, out of which territory have been carved the towns of Bridgewater, and East—and West—and Brockton, was given for numerous articles, totaling in value about \$30. Included were four moose-skins which Myles Standish, one of the signers, may have brought back from his adventures in the wilds, and which would be used for protection of feet as well as for clothing. We have then a starting point in 1649, a reference to that which makes Brockton outrank all other cities, the footwear of the original inhabitants, as well as that of the colonists.

"The Log of the 'Mayflower' (Bradford's 'History') tells us that in 1628 the Plymouth settlers sent Isaac Allerton to England on an important mission, including the purchase of supplies. He thereby probably became first importer of shoes and leather. But before that day (1623), according to Seth Bryant of Ashmont ('Shoe and Leather Trade of a Hundred Years,' 1891), Experience Mitchell, a passenger in the 'Ann,' reached Plymouth. Later he moved to Duxbury, and as one of the earliest settlers in the Plantation came to (East) Bridgewater at a place locally called Joppa. There he established a tannery in 1650. His son, En-

sign—later Colonel—Edward, and after him Cushing Mitchell, carried on the business for sixty years. So we may account for the fact that when North Bridgewater was incorporated as a town in 1821, it was already the center of a leather-working people.”

**Shoemaking Ride of Micah Faxon**—Boot and shoe manufacturing has been a distinctive business with the people of Brockton from its earliest days. The first veritable manufacturer was Micah Faxon who came to Brockton from Randolph in 1811, and commenced manufacturing shoes for the wholesale trade. His first work was done in a house on Crescent Street, which was known as the “Matthew Packard House.” It was afterwards torn down. Mr. Faxon replaced it with a house which was built for his occupancy, with suitable provision made to carry on his business in a more convenient manner. Mr. Faxon did the cutting, but at that time there was no one to bind the vamps and put the shoes together. They were sent to Randolph to be completed.

“The first lot of shoes manufactured by Mr. Faxon for the wholesale trade consisted of one hundred pairs of fine calf spring-heel shoes. He bound them upon the back of his horse and rode astride the animal through the streets of Boston to a firm on Long Wharf. The firm was among the first to send goods to the South, and Mr. Faxon’s shoes were included in the shipload of goods which was sent for the patronage of the rich planters. Somewhat later Mr. Faxon purchased a carriage in which he carried his shoes to Boston to market, and returned with sufficient material to get out his next lot. Soon after it became apparent that Mr. Faxon’s business was a successful one, Messrs. Silas Packard and Colonel Edward Southworth became engaged in the same line of business in connection with their store, which stood where the Whipple-Freeman block now stands.

“Others took up the business and found market for their goods in various directions. The firm confined its efforts principally to getting out sailors’ pumps, which were shipped to New Bedford and sold to the whalemens. Small shoe shops sprang up throughout this section, and nearly all the towns in Southeastern Massachusetts had a sprinkling of dooryard shoe shops, in which from one to nine or ten men were employed.” Shoes were handsewed, then pegged and nailed. Machines were introduced in 1846. Early trade was largely controlled by the village shoemaker in his annual or semi-annual visits to “shoe” the entire family. His “kit” was not so different in 1880 from that of the first Christian era or even earlier. Out of the Revolutionary War came Thomas French of Randolph, a personality figuring in the beginnings of local industry. A tanner and currier, he settled on the Blue Hill Turnpike. Mr. French employed others who had learned the shoe trade in camp or fort.



"Micah Faxon, who carried to Boston on horseback his first hundred pairs of fine calf-skin, spring-heeled shoes, sold them to Monroe & Nash, Long Wharf, for the southern trade. Quick successors and competitors were Silas Packard and Colonel Edward Southworth in a store that stood at the corner of Main and Court streets. In 1820, William French engaged in shoe manufacture. Others early in the business were Zopher Field and Charles Southworth; John May and Sidney Howard; Zenas Brett, Benjamin Kingman, Nathan Jones, and Charles & Azra Keith at The Plains (Campello). Markets were nearby, owing to lack of transportation facilities. "The Keiths, the Packards, and the Leaches" have built up the City of Brockton—wrote Seth Bryant, who on his own voucher knew all the shoe dealers since 1800, at least through a period of seventy-one years. According to that authority, more shoes were made in the Second Congressional District than in any other in the United States.

"Brockton is not the home of small plants." (Isaac H. Bailey, article C, Volume 1, "New England States," William T. Davis, Editor.) Yet in the beginning this was not true. Little shops in many yards suggested a winter trade to fill the time and supplement the fish and farm of summer. "Among early manufacturers in the larger shops were those named Keith, Howard, Packard, Reynolds, Copeland and Kingman, all well known in the trade to the present day. It is said that in 1855 the boot and shoe interests of Massachusetts were the largest of any in the State, and the backbone of the industry was in this section. There were 176 boot, shoe and leather dealers in Boston in that year, forty-three hide and leather dealers, and fifty-one leather dealers.

"Many of the Brockton manufacturers now have stores of their own in the principal cities of the country, for the sale of their goods. Excellent facilities for the disposition of goods are provided by the corps of traveling salesmen who go from Brockton to all parts of the country and even the other side of the ocean.

"The year 1855 has been already mentioned in regard to boot and shoe manufacture. In that year the number of boots manufactured was 66,956 pairs. The number of shoes was 694,740 pairs. The value of these boots and shoes was \$724,847. There were 692 males employed in their manufacture and 484 females. In 1865 there had been a great increase in the number of manufacturers, and new machinery for making shoes had been introduced. The number of boots manufactured that year was 103,066 pairs. The number of shoes was 1,009,700 pairs. The number of males employed was 1,059 and the number of females 208. The total value of the goods was \$1,466,900. From these figures it is seen that there was an increase in that decade of the manufacture of boots and shoes to the value of \$742,153, or more than double the value of the goods manufactured in 1855.

"The firm of Messrs. A. & A. B. Keith was the first in the country to adopt machinery for nearly every part of boot and shoe manufacture. The firm had a large factory at Campello and another at Raynham. It manufactured goods in large quantities for the southern market, and had a store on Pearl Street in Boston."

Steam power became introduced in several of the factories about this time, and from its advent, there was a great increase in the production of boots and shoes. Previously shoes were "given out" 100 pairs at a time to "fit and make" and were kept thirty days to two months. Fitting the upper to the last, with lapstone and hammer, pounding the wet sole, fastening with nails, pegging sole and inner sole together—constituted the major processes. In 1837, North Bridgewater produced 79,000 pairs of boots and 22,300 pairs of shoes and employed 1,125 "hands." Then began the enlargement which today shows thirty thousand workers in sixty factories.

George W. Bryant and Daniel S. Howard (1848-1888) were pioneers, as were Charles R. Ford, Martin L. Keith, Enos H. Reynolds, and others. In the early '60's, Peleg S. Leach engaged in business in a shop on the site of the present Police Station and later had large factories on Crescent and West Elm streets. In 1865, 103,066 pairs of boots and over a million pairs of shoes were made. The increase over 1837 was of course due in a large measure to the sewing machine. Readiness to adopt new methods and machinery seems to have characterized the town. A. & A. B. Keith were prominent in this respect, as were the Thayers, Samuel Herrod and George Stevens.

**"World's Greatest Shoemaker" Starts in Business—**"In 1870, William L. Douglas came from Plymouth and for some years was foreman for Porter and Southworth. With a capital of \$875 he opened a factory for himself in 1876. Preston B. Keith had started five years before and M. A. Packard began manufacturing in 1877. The late George E. Keith commenced his notable career in 1868 in company with William S. Southworth and in 1870 opened a shop on his own behalf. Daniel W. Field entered the employ of D. S. Howard in 1876. And it should be stated, as one recognizes the general amicable relations in so large an industrial center as the Brockton of today, that from the beginning of the town a very considerable group of manufacturers has either come up from the bench or has had close associations with the mechanical end of the business. The number of cases shipped from Brockton in 1876 was 142,010. In 1919, the value had become by war needs and prices, \$146,378,500. Even in the pre-war year of 1915, it was sixty millions. Now great plants with every modern facility are taking the place of the old-fashioned home shops. Resourcefulness and versatility, as well as a reputation for reliable goods, have brought this marked development.



"When William Cullen Bryant re-visited the community in which he had lived while completing his law studies, he wrote: 'The whole place resounds, rather rattles, with the machinery of shoeshops, which turn out millions of shoes, not one of which I am told is sold in the place.' The last statement would be hardly true today, though the output is even more widely distributed than fifty years ago. The city has developed a great trading center. A writer on the shoe industry raises the question, 'Are we nearing the end of the growth which may safely be built on one great industry?' (Seth Bryant.)

"It has often been observed that in great shoe towns education is above the average. Schools, libraries and neighborhoods so testify. 'Peaceful and law-abiding (Bailey) they live in and for each other.' This picture—so far as it described the city, is drawn from two interesting facts: Brockton had an annual no-license record covering a period of thirty years. Further the community has learned the better way of settling disputes. In her industrial life, labor has been carefully studied from many angles. Each side has recognized the point of view of the other. They have seen that through conciliation and arbitration they could as well serve their own ends. This is among the high gifts of Brockton to the country."

The first manufacturers to use steam were Charles R. Ford, who manufactured in a large building on Main Street a short distance north of the centre; Daniel S. Howard, whose manufactory was on Montello Street; F. A. & H. B. Thayer, whose factory was on Centre Street; Samuel Herrod, who did a large business on North Main Street; and George Stevens, who was one of the Campello manufacturers on Montello Street.

During the Revolution, Massachusetts supplied a large share of the shoes worn by the patriot army. During the Rebellion it was again Massachusetts, and largely Plymouth County, which supplied the demand for army boots and shoes for Northern troops in the South.

**Importance of Newman's Measuring Stick**—Adhering to the antiquated methods of making shoes which were centuries old when the first shoemakers landed in this county, there was little hope for improvement as long as each pair of shoes or boots were made from individual measures taken, in the same way a suit of clothes is made by a tailor. No two shoemakers had the same measure and to call a shoe a certain size meant nothing until one knew who the shoemaker was. William Newman of Stamford, Connecticut, brought with him from England a measuring stick which he offered to the General Court and the court adopted it in 1658 as the standard, fair between buyer and seller.

This adopting of a standard measure brought about a revolution, virtually the beginning of shoemaking by factory methods, although the factories were far from what they are today. Standard sizes enabled

shoemakers to make up a stock in readiness for a customer instead of waiting for an order.

Abington was the first town in Plymouth County to make shoes by the system of gathering workmen around an employer, making the entire shoe under one roof but not by one man. This plan was early adopted in Abington and in Randolph, Holbrook and Quincy. The "ten-footer" shoe shop became scattered through all the towns in the county. Sometimes boys and girls were taught to peg shoes. On many of the farms, in the winter time, shoes were bound and stitched by women at home and lasted and pegged by men and boys. All was hand work.

The first machine-made part of a shoe was the wooden peg, invented in 1815, but it was driven by hand. The shoe pegging machine came later.

Army shoes have been made in large quantities in Plymouth County for the Revolution, the Civil War, the War of 1812, Spanish-American War and the World War. As Rev. Dr. Edward Everett Hale said in "The Story of Massachusetts:"

In a certain sense it may be said that the victories of the war at the front were won in the workshops at home. A single shoe-factory would supply in a day more shoes than a whole regiment would wear. The machine shops and foundries were capable of the best work needed for improving artillery and other munitions of war. And it proved, for the thousandth time, that a nation which means to be fit for war, must develop on every line the processes of manufacture.

In the Days of "Whipping the Cat"—Shoemaking in primitive days was carried on by the head of the house, the father or oldest son, who made shoes for himself and other members of the family. Then came the traveling shoemaker, an individual carrying lapstone, hammer and awls, a few lasts and waxed-ends, who boarded with the family while he fixed the footwear. This was called "whipping the cat." Sometimes a journeyman of this type would find enough to do in a given community that his stay there would be sufficiently long to make a demand for his services come from the first ones served before he had moved on to some other place. Unless he desired to keep on traveling, he became a fixture, set up a cobbling shop and joined the community. Traveling cobblers were dated up in advance, much the same as dressmakers in later days and even today.

Bouck White tells in his book, "The Book of Daniel Drew," "We used to learn the news in a general way when the cobbler came to the house once a year to make up the year's supply of shoes and boots for the household. This visit of the cobbler was quite an event each year. Father would prepare for it by swapping a pair of cattle or a load of potatoes down at Foster's tan yard for a few sides of leather. Then the cobbler would come for a week or so and make the leather up into footwear. When the cobbler came, it was the boy's work to whittle out the



pegs for him." This was the case after 1811, for that was the first year wooden pegs were used. Hand-sewed shoes were in vogue in the earlier years.

Sometimes these shoemakers "whipping the cat" were apprentices who had been bound out to a master to learn a trade, and this was their first venture in search of a location. An apprentice was clothed, lodged and fed, given an opportunity to attend school, and, usually after serving his time was given a "freedom suit," a small amount of money mentioned in the indenture or verbal agreement as the case might be. William L. Douglas of Brockton, who became "the world's greatest shoemaker," a former governor of Massachusetts, was bound out as an apprentice in his boyhood and learned shoemaking under that system. The apprentice system was by no means confined to shoemakers. Benjamin Franklin was apprenticed to his older brother, James Franklin, as a printer in Boston.

When a shoemaker settled down in a shop for that purpose, his customers would bring leather to him, out of which the shoes were to be made. This was called "bespoke work." When the shoemaker furnished the leather his shoes, made up at odd times, were called "sales" or "shop" shoes. The cheaper kind were called "market" shoes, the kind made to sell instead of to wear, and disposed of in some market to which they were shipped in hogsheads, barrels, tea chests or sugar boxes. Regular shoe boxes or cases did not come into use until 1836. The leather was prepared by hand until 1830, when the first machinery was used for some of the shoemaking processes. As early as 1831 shoes were being made in Massachusetts and sold to the planters in the South, for slaves.

Shoes made entirely by hand and hand-sewed were necessarily expensive and pegged shoes were stiff and uncomfortable. In 1871 Goodyear made a machine which sewed shoes, not as well as they were sewed by hand but a great improvement over the pegged shoes. The patents issued for the Goodyear Welt Sewing Machine in 1871 and 1873 were the beginning of the now famous Goodyear welt system of manufacturing shoes. It was some twenty years later that the machine became really successful and improvements on it have come in rapid succession.

Gordon McKay perfected the McKay Sewing Machine. The first McKay machine was used in 1861 and for many years McKay sewed shoes were manufactured in Plymouth County and the South Shore district in great numbers. The system is still used in making some of the cheaper grades.

The cutting out of soles and tops, the sewing together of the pieces of the uppers and the fastening together of the two main portions, are the three main processes in shoe-making by the modern factory system, but there are from one hundred to one hundred and fifty different pro-

cesses which enter into the construction. There are about fifty separate pieces and they are handled by about fifty different operators from cutting room to packing room. In Plymouth County, where high and medium grades of shoes are produced, much of the cutting is done by hand, on linings, quarters, vamps, tips, tops, stays, tongues and other small parts of the shoe. Women are found in nearly every room in the factory but not to any great extent in the cutting rooms, unless skiving is done there. The stitching rooms are almost exclusively populated by women, except for vamping. Sometimes this process also is undertaken by women with reasonable success.

**Labor Union and High Wages**—The high wages that rule in Plymouth County towns and vicinity in the shoe industry is largely the result of labor union activities. Brockton is a union city which is known as such all over the world and it is also a city in which high wages are paid, money is freely spent for the things which promote and sustain high standards of living and the result is an especially happy and well-satisfied population.

The high wages demanded and received have, at times, especially since the World War, interfered with the growth and prosperity of the city to a certain extent. Brockton manufacturers claim it is practically necessary to turn out a high-grade product. Cheap goods cannot be profitably manufactured on so high a wage scale. "The Brockton-made shoe is manufactured by the highest paid shoe operatives in the world. This brings to her factories the most skilled laborers and the manufacturers cannot afford to set such labor to work on careless designs or poor material." The drawback has been that the demand for cheaper shoes has been supplied elsewhere, orders for cheaper grades being turned down in Brockton.

Organized labor has reached its greatest success in Plymouth County and vicinity in the shoemaking industry. Shoemakers were always jealous of their calling. As early as 1648 The Company of Shoemakers was in existence. Then came the Society of Master Cordwainers in 1789, the Federation of Journeymen Cordwainers in 1794, the United Beneficial Society of Journeymen in 1835, the Knights of St. Crispin in 1868, afterwards affiliations with the Knights of Labor, and the American Federation of Labor. The greatest prosperity in the shoemaking industry and freedom from strikes has come since the organization of the Boot and Shoe Workers' Union a generation ago.

The first strike in this country was by shoemakers in the early part of the nineteenth century, in Philadelphia. Laws were passed regarding the making of shoes and the price to be demanded for them in Philadelphia and vicinity in 1721. The manufacturers were compelled to make good shoes of good leather and sell them at a fair price, as they



were considered a commodity necessary to everyone. The making and marketing of them was something vitally affecting the public welfare. The better trained Boston cobblers and those in the Old Colony district, who had shops of their own, petitioned the General Court early against the nomad shoemakers and the "damage which the country sustains by occasions of bad wear."

Shoe manufacturers and labor unionists in this vicinity are optimistic and believe that the people will demand the highest grade footwear and will expect Brockton and vicinity to furnish it. They, therefore, seem to be satisfied to "sit tight" and wait for the slower but surer increase, rather than let down the standard and meet the demand for a cheaper shoe at the cost of losing their reputation for the best in the world. Hamilton Lowe, in an article on "Brockton, A City of Enterprise" in the "New England Magazine," September, 1911, penned a paragraph which is just as true today as then: "It is doubtful if any other industry in the United States, unless it should be the manufacture of steel, which is controlled by local conditions and a great trust, can show anything like the same centralization of skilled labor and manufacturing brains."

**Psychology of Local Shoemaking**—It is permissible to introduce in this connection a quotation from an article prepared by E. Gerry Brown for the "Brockton and South Shore Magazine" and printed in September, 1926, concerning "Personal Pride in Product." Mr. Brown said in part:

The Brockton and South Shore District is the fortunate center of a population that has a personal pride in the shoe that is the product of its industry. This shoe has a reputation that remains undisturbed by the varying incidents in the years as they go by. It is evident that such a reputation could not have been established wholly by the claims of the makers.

The other factor—and the most important one—in maintaining the stability of this reputation is the user of the product—those who wear shoes made in this district. At times the question is asked, "Why can Brockton and the South Shore produce a better and more attractive shoe than those offered by other centers?"

Psychology is a word often used to explain the effects resulting from the operation of certain causes. The psychologist would tell us that the growth and the permanence of the reputation of shoes made in this district are the effect and the result of natural causes. When the dials of a radio instrument are set for a broadcasting station that is in operation, it is practically certain that it will be heard from. When the working machinery of individuals is "tuned in" to the making of shoes, the result is better shoes than would be the case if the machinery were disturbed by "interferences!"

Brockton and the surrounding towns are and have been a centre for the shoe industry. From the little shops by the wayside to the more than half a hundred large factories with all the appurtenances for perfection in production was a natural evolution. The surrounding atmosphere was a potent force that vibrated

a good shoe. The "shop talk" outside of business hours is always shoes, because there is little other manufacturing.

The thirteen different labor unions having jurisdiction over all of the many operations in the making of shoes afford opportunities to consider the many details in the making of a shoe that are continually presenting themselves for settlement. The several joint shoe councils in the Brockton and South Shore District are made up of the agents and representatives of the unions. They are trained experts. There are creative forces in evolving ideas, the psychologists might tell you, that spell "Brockton Shoe" or "South Shore Shoe"—always attractive and lasting, lasting beyond the lasting in the factory, because all forces inside and outside of the factory operate with that intention as the motive power. Coöperation plus intelligence always produces results.

Mr. Brown has been a worker in the ranks and a leader in trade unionism and the promotion of the conditions of the workers some threescore years—as he began young. He was a reporter on the Boston "Post" more than fifty-five years ago and has been in the newspaper activities ever since, a large share of the time as owner and publisher of several newspapers, one at a time, in Boston and vicinity, and in Brockton. He is, perhaps, as widely known as any man living in Brockton today, and has enjoyed the personal friendship of scores of the most prominent public men in the United States during the last half century, which makes his opinion, quoted above, interesting reading in every State of the Union. And, in the language of the man in the street, when he penned it he "said a mouthful."

For a generation there has been no labor disturbance in Brockton and the South Shore District from strikes or lock-outs, on account of contractual relations with the manufacturers. Nearly all the shoeworkers, both men and women, are members of the Boot and Shoe Workers' Union, which is an association affiliated with the American Federation of Labor. The unions guarantee that there will be no strikes. The manufacturers guarantee that they will maintain an agreed-upon wage list, fixed by a joint conference. In case of misunderstanding, claims of changes in conditions or any other reason for dispute, the matter is appealed to the Massachusetts Department of Conciliation and Arbitration. Shoe workers continue at work while the matters are being put before the State Board by delegates and the decision of the board, after reviewing the case, dates from the time the matter was submitted. The State Board of Conciliation and Arbitration was created largely through the influence of the late Governor William L. Douglas, a native of Plymouth who manufactured shoes in Brockton.

The higher wages, good factory equipment and working conditions and permanence of business concerns in Plymouth County has been largely due to the intelligent and moderate management of the labor organizations and the sincerity with which contracts between employers and employees have been made and maintained. There is very little



absenteeism among Plymouth County shoe manufacturers. They reside in the city or towns in which they manufacture. Many of those of the two former generations worked at the bench and knew shoemaking from personal experience as former employees. The families have been in the shoe business for a century. The manufacturer respects his employees and is respected in return.

In many instances, they were schoolmates, and the children of both are growing up together and associating together. This is true even in the present generation to a remarkable degree. The worker at the bench expects his children to get a college education as good as any which the children of the manufacturer can get, and it is being done. There may be instances in the rising generation where the children of the bench worker will become the employers of some of the children of the manufacturers. It has already been done in the last generation. There are no great social distinctions between those who work at the bench and those employed in an administrative capacity. Sometimes the women employed as the office force show a conviction of apparent superiority in a social way but usually the women in the stitching rooms get the higher wages.

**Early Organizations of Shoemakers**—The first attempt to organize the shoeworkers in America was in 1648 when a "Company of Shoemakers" was incorporated, known as the Boston Guild. The incorporation was under a charter granted by the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, a copy of which appears in the records of the colony, Volume III, page 132. It was not an attempt at a closed shop but to prevent work being put out into families and the itinerant cobbler and pretended to be for the purpose of protecting the public against inferior work. It had its day and passed away and shoemakers in general were so well satisfied with the conditions under which they labored for themselves or their neighbors, that no further attempt was made to organize until 1868. In that year, when conditions following the Civil War were much changed, the Knights of St. Crispin organized in various towns.

Numerous machines had been introduced into the industry but the McKay sewing machine for sewing soles, run by power, "took work away from men who had been domestic workers". Skiving machines and sewing machines for the uppers were already in general use.

The Knights of St. Crispin had eighty-five active lodges at the end of 1870 and claimed a total membership of 40,000. That was at the height of its popularity and the year they had a strike in Worcester which lasted for three months, involved 1200 men and cost \$175,000. In 1872 there was a strike in North Adams which was broken by 107 Chinamen brought from California.

John F. Tobin, for several years general president of the Boot and Shoe Workers' Union, wrote in 1915 as follows: "I have never found anyone who could give me any connected history of the Knights of St. Crispin, notwithstanding the fact that I have made diligent search. I was a member of the organization some forty-three years ago, but at that time, did not accumulate any knowledge of its workings. I feel that its history was not of any great consequence and its achievements did not go beyond seeking higher wages through the old-fashioned strike method. At that time, employers were practically unanimous in opposition to organization of the workers, and the contests generally hinged upon a recognition of the Union in conjunction with the wage question."

Burrell and Maguire of Randolph acceded to one demand of the Crispins and then closed their shop. Washington Reed closed his shop in Abington, rather than submit to the organization. After Chinamen had been brought to North Adams to break a strike at the factory of Calvin T. Sampson, the order became lukewarm concerning its principal purpose to prevent the introduction of "green hands." In 1873 when the "hard times" came, shoemakers were glad to get work on any terms the manufacturers could offer and the Crispin Order dwindled to insignificance.

**On the Trail of the "Ten-Footers"**—It has been recorded how Marshfield was one of the early towns set apart from Plymouth and took care of the "overflow" when the traditional English desire for more land actuated some of the first comers to that town, to move away from Plymouth. Babies continued to be born bare-footed and so shoemakers followed the trail of the Pilgrims and their housefurnishings to where new settlements were made on the main Indian trail from Plymouth to Boston. In this way Randolph and Brockton originated, and both of them became shoemaking villages, and have always held that distinction. The former settlement was on Cochato River and Tumbling Brook, early in the eighteenth century. North Precinct of Bridgewater (now Brockton) became established as a settlement on the main road half way between Bridgewater and Randolph. Before the Revolution there were at least two vats and pits for tanning leather in Randolph.

It is said of Deacon Thomas Wales of the first Randolph church, that he operated bark pits for tanning and the "Bark house piece" of land on the Wales estate was named because it was the site of the early industry.

Brockton, by its former names, was at first an iron smelting and casting community. Shepherd Fiske, the agent for Governor Bowdoin of Massachusetts, had a blast furnace at Bridgewater from which were supplied cohorns and grenobles for use in the colonial wars as well as cast-iron kettles, spiders and other kitchen implements.



The original shoemaker in Brockton, who made "sale shoes" was a Randolph man, Micah Faxon, referred to elsewhere. Randolph led Brockton in manufacturing footwear for a long time.

Following the days of the itinerant shoemakers, who lived with a family while making the family shoes, and traveled from place to place with the required tools and a few lasts done up in his apron, came the "ten-footers," in which a shoemaker set up business, usually in his own yard, teaching and employing his own sons or a few neighbors. The little shops, called "ten-footers," came into use about the middle of the eighteenth century. Usually there was a garret, or cockloft, which became the catch-all for everything saved for future use. There were as many benches in a "ten-footer" as the space would allow, and they had to be placed a sufficient distance from the wall to enable the shoemaker to swing his arms at full length as he sewed the shoes with waxed-ends. Sometimes a "ten-footer" was a misnomer, as many of the shops were twelve and sometimes fourteen by fourteen. Some of them are still in existence, in some instances converted into modern bungalows, but, dig under the surface of the road which passes by, and one will find leather chips thrown out half a century or more ago.

**Lincoln Was a Pioneer Jobber**—One of the first men in this vicinity to become a "middleman" or entrepreneur in the shoe industry was Ephraim Lincoln of Holbrook. Beginning about 1816 he purchased stock in Boston, had it cut and put out to neighbors to make into shoes. The shoes he took to Boston when he went after additional stock. He conducted a general store but the shoe business eventually became larger than his store business. One of the neighbors who was an especially fast workman for him was Samuel Ludden, who sometimes made "15 pare" between Lincoln's trips to Boston.

Some of the pioneers in the shoe industry are considered by people of the present day as small business men, viewed by present-day standards, but Littlefield Brothers of East Stoughton (now Avon) marketed their product in New Orleans and Cuba and in 1836 or earlier invested \$80,000 in Aroostook County, Maine, where the potatoes come from. Harvey Reed, a brother of Quincy Reed, an early shoemaker of Weymouth organized the business so that the firm had a store in Boston, made custom shoes, and additional shoes for sale over the counter and in the West Indies, repaired shoes for customers, and sold such supplies as leather, blacking, awls and tacks to other shoemakers.

One of Harvey Reed's investments was the purchase of a whole township in Maine. Quincy Reed had, as a side line, a grain business which kept four schooners busy in the coastwise trade and over the deep-water path between here and Spain. It is said that Harvey Reed was one of the original promoters of the Union Bank of Weymouth and Braintree

and of the Weymouth Savings Bank. From 1833 to his death in 1859, he carried on a large lumbering business in Bangor, Maine.

Littlefield Brothers of East Stoughton, already referred to, were Nathaniel, James, Isaac and Darius. The latter became postmaster in 1822. In those days a postmaster could frank his own mail and this was a valuable concession, as he had extensive mail with New Orleans customers.

The part performed by James Littlefield was largely that of traveling salesman. He was one of the pioneer "shoe drummers" from this section and covered considerable southern territory, as the firm did an extensive business in Philadelphia, Virginia, New Orleans and Cuba. Considerable talk was made in the spring of 1927 about "the year without a summer," as there had been a prediction that 1927 was going to repeat such a year. The year referred to was 1816-17, and the peculiar climatic conditions were capitalized by James Littlefield. The crops in this vicinity were short and he took pay for the Littlefield shoes sold in the South in flour, which he had sent North and sold at the Littlefield store at a good profit. Many jobbers in the shoe business had grocery stores and obtained an additional profit by paying the shoemakers who made up their stock of leather in groceries and other goods. Shoes in those days were usually shipped to Cuba in casks instead of cases and the casks came back filled with molasses. The transportation facilities in those early days were exceedingly primitive. Noah Thayer of Randolph, in 1812, drove an ox team to Richmond, Virginia, to deliver a consignment of shoes. He returned with a load of corn and cotton and without a blowout or engine trouble.

**Important Trade With the West Indies**—There was a large trade with the West Indies carried on by several shoemakers in this section before the railroads were built. One such manufacturer was Seth Bryant who manufactured in that part of East Bridgewater called Joppa, specializing in men's heavy goods. He was of the firm of Mitchell and Bryant which had the first wholesale boot and shoe store in Boston. The shoes made by them for the West India trade were largely kip brogans and copper nailed shoes. These were hauled overland from Joppa to New York by way of Providence, Rhode Island.

All transportation from New York to the West Indies was by sailing vessels. The shoes were packed, seventy-five to one hundred pairs to a Havana sugar box, and the boxes returned, filled with brown and white Cuban sugar. The white sugar was again shipped to Russia, and Russian calfskins were taken in return, the calfskins coming in an untanned condition. The brown sugar was shipped to Trieste and exchanged for opium. What was done with the opium does not appear in the records or whether the sugar boxes served as containers for all the exchanges.



Shoes sent from Joppa to Haiti were exchanged for coffee, which was much in demand in Boston.

Others in this vicinity who were successful in the West Indies trade were Abner Curtis of Rockland, A. and H. Reed of South Weymouth and Littlefield Brothers of East Stoughton. Others engaged considerably in the South American trade, where the shoes were sometimes packed on the backs of mules and sent three to four hundred miles over the mountains.

**Making of Shoe Tools and Accessories**—When the shoe industry is mentioned it does not give as vivid an impression to the casual listener as the facts deserve of the allied industries. From earliest times shoe tools have been made in Plymouth and Norfolk counties and the shoe findings and accessories have constituted an important division of industry. Prior to 1830 the tools and processes of shoemaking were so crude or simple that only eight tools were considered necessary for cutting, fitting, lasting, bottoming, and putting the upper onto the sole. These eight tools were knife, awl, needle, pinchers, last, hammer, stirrup and lapstone. These were arranged around the shoemaker's bench or "seat" within easy reach. Given good materials and plenty of time he could make a good pair of shoes or boots. When the number of tools increased it was merely to add a few extra knives, to suit the several needs. With these eight or ten tools shoes were made in this vicinity for two hundred years, as there was no shoe machinery in 1830.

In 1835 North Bridgewater manufactured shoe tools in great numbers and supplied the shoemakers in neighboring towns as well as in the town itself. Lasts and boot trees were being made by Chandler Sprague. The old iron industry, so important from the beginning of history in the Old Colony, led naturally into tool making.

Looking back to those days—1837 for instance—we find that the largest town in Plymouth County was Middleboro, with a population a little rising 5,000. Hingham came next with 3,445 and about 125 people were engaged in shoemaking. The third largest town was Abington, with a population of 3,057 and manufacturing the largest number of shoes, in fact almost as many as all the other Plymouth County towns put together.

According to statistics compiled by John W. Barber and published in his "Historical Collections of Massachusetts," Abington, in 1837, produced 526,208 pairs of shoes and 98,081 pairs of boots, the total value being \$746,794, and the number employed in the industry 1,317. North Bridgewater, now Brockton, the only city in the county and the leading shoe city in the country, was at that time a town of 2,701 people, producing 22,300 pairs of shoes and 79,000 pairs of boots—considerably more boots than shoes—and the industry in the town employed 1,125

people. The value of the output was \$184,200. The town of Halifax was then considerably larger than it is today, with 781 inhabitants, forty of them shoemakers, turning out 30,600 pairs of shoes.

In that year Randolph, in Norfolk County, was doing more business in the boot and shoe industry than any town in Plymouth County. Its population was about the same as Abington but 1,475 of the total of 3,041 were shoemakers, who turned out 470,620 pairs of shoes and 200,175 pairs of boots, at a valuation of \$944,715.

The population of the whole of Plymouth County in 1837 was 50,399; and nearly one-tenth, or 5,259 persons, were engaged in shoemaking. Weymouth in that year, made 70,155 pairs of boots and 242,083 pairs of shoes, the value being \$427,679, and also curried and tanned \$42,500 of leather. Several of the towns in Norfolk County engaged in tanning and some in Plymouth County, but North Bridgewater tanned very little leather. It was a good customer of the tanneries in Weymouth.

Almost all shoemaking in those days was done by hand. Stephen Belcher of Holbrook saw pegged boots for the first time in 1827, according to an historian. A pegging machine had been invented in 1818 and used for brogans and cheap boots and shoes. In 1832 James Hall of North Bridgewater (Brockton) invented a machine for pointing pegs.

The manufacture of counters for boots and shoes was started by Sylvanus C. Phinney in Stoughton in 1845. He early realized that shoemaking by the factory system was going to consist of specializing to a large degree. Up to that time workmen fashioned counters and inner-soles from leather scraps. N. M. Capen was another pioneer in making counters. Several engaged in making leather shoe strings, among them J. Winsor Pratt of Randolph. Shoe blacking was a commodity made outside the factories and purchased.

The files of the "Massachusetts Spy" show in the issue of March 11, 1773, an advertisement of "patent cakes for making the liquid, shining, blacking for shoes." Rands, stays and patterns and cut leather for all purposes came on the market and manufacturers early saw the advantage of purchasing from those who specialized in these accessories. Lasts and shoe trees were made in North Bridgewater as early as 1836.

One of the early machines was run by hand for skiving. Then came the stripper, for cutting up sides of sole leather. In 1845 came a leather rolling machine, in place of the process of hammering the leather on a lapstone, which was a great saving in time and labor. Block lasts of various sizes and shapes, sole patterns, irons for polishing edges, a machine for cutting pegs, the sewing machines for uppers, and finally the McKay and Goodyear machines for stitching sole leather came along as the industry grew, until the factory system was complete.

The rest of the shoe machinery story is largely that of the United



Shoe Machinery Company and its inventions and the inventions of others which it controlled, which is a marvelous romance in itself, and brings into the picture a Cape Cod genius.

**He Learned the Business; Then Controlled It**—Sidney W. Winslow, who started the United Shoe Machinery Company and developed it into a hundred-million-dollar corporation, was born in Brewster. He first engaged in the shoe business in Salem and had a dream of organizing the industry to avoid the waste and unhandy methods used in the doorway shops, the processes of having various things done in many places, the transportation of which made it all too expensive. Shoe machines were being invented and as fast as one appeared which seemed to him to be the right thing he secured control of it. When the McKay stitching machine came along it brought him to the attention of the financial world and that world never lost sight of him afterwards, for Mr Winslow kept on organizing and making improvements in the industry, enabling shoe manufacturers to put their capital into stock and labor and rent the machinery on a royalty basis. The United Shoe Machinery Company eventually had factories all over the world to meet the demands.

Mr. Winslow many years ago erected a palatial summer home on Cape Cod and was the forerunner of the large colony of wealthy men who established homes in Orleans, bringing to that little town so much wealth in personal property that the tax rate was for several years three dollars on one thousand dollars of taxable valuation, and, even with such a low rate, the income was sufficient for the town to provide the best roads and other permanent improvements.

Sidney W. Winslow, founder and late president of the United Shoe Machinery Company, secured his first shoemaking knowledge in a "ten footer" operated by his father, Freeman Winslow. Nearly a score of modernly constructed buildings, covering over twenty-four acres of floor space, now house the manufacturing end of this industry. Branch offices, with complete service facilities, are located in every important shoe centre in the world.

**Romances of Some of the Old Guard**—Blanche Evans Hazard, professor of home economics in Cornell University, in a book published in 1921 entitled "The Organization of the Boot and Shoe Industry in Massachusetts Before 1875," tells how Quincy Reed of Weymouth expected to be a shoemaker "just as his great-grandfather William, who landed in Weymouth in 1635, and his grandfather and father had been." In 1809, the father was a master with custom work, doing some sale work for local consumption.

As Quincy tells the story: "My brother Harvey began it by taking

chickens to Boston. He had a pair of chaise wheels in the barn, and putting on a top piece, loaded her up and drove to town. He hung some shoes in the chaise and we sold them in Boston. We did not have a wagon then—I can remember when there wasn't a wagon in this part of the town, and between here and East Abington there was only one pair of wheels. All the shoes, before we began business, were carried into Boston in saddle-bags. We hired a store of Uriah Cotting, at 133 Broad Street, and fitted it up. . . . We moved into the Broad Street store with two bushels of shoes. . . . Most of the shoes were made by people in South Weymouth. We had nearly every man there working for us before long. Used to bring out the sole leather swung across the horse's back in those days."

The town of Halifax had its part in local shoemaking as well as the larger towns, like Abington, North Bridgewater and Plymouth. Levi Leach was born in Halifax in 1775, and early in life had a "ten-footer" in his "side front yard," in which he worked, with a few neighbors, until his own sons were old enough to help. Then he taught his three sons, George, Levi and Giles, to make shoes.

When the eldest son, George, became twenty-one, he moved to East Middleboro, built a "ten-footer" of his own, in his orchard, and divided his time between farming, teaching the village school and shoemaking, just as his father had done. He later formed a partnership with Deacon Eddy, who had the general store in town and had made considerable money by manufacturing shovels. It is said that Deacon Eddy invested \$10,000 and George Leach \$200, and engaged in the manufacture of brogans for the Southern trade. Deacon Eddy carried on the general store and post office on the lower floor and George Leach conducted the shoe factory on the second floor of the same building.

The business grew, as did the family of George Leach. He soon added a stitching machine for uppers; also two sons, who, at the age most boys of the present generation are becoming expert "marble-shooters" took full charge of the stitching in an ell added to the back of the building. This was one of the first stitching rooms in Plymouth County and measured fourteen feet each way.

Deacon Eddy retired at the outbreak of the Civil War but George Leach continued the business until 1874. His sons, George and Giles, moved to Raynham and worked as stitchers in that town and in Brockton, George continuing as a stitcher until 1889.

Another early shoemaker and jobber who was a native of Halifax was Perez Bryant. In 1796, Perez Bryant & Company had a shoe store in Boston and another in Savannah, Georgia.

Beginning about 1807, Ebenezer Belcher had a "ten-footer" in Brookville, not far from the present factories of the W. L. Douglas Shoe Com-



pany in Brockton. He had regular apprentices and journeymen in his employ and under his instruction, and continued in business more than forty years. Other pioneers of shoemaking in that vicinity were Silas Alden, Moses and Thomas French of Randolph. They were previous to the time of Micah Faxon who was probably the first person who manufactured shoes for the wholesale trade in North Bridgewater, now Brockton. Ebenezer Belcher was employed by the Faxon family. If Micah Faxon was the pioneer of the shoe industry in Brockton in 1811, "the shoe city" was twenty years later than Randolph in getting started in the business which has since made it internationally famous.

As a matter of fact North Bridgewater, as late as 1835, was more noted for shoe-making tools than for the shoes manufactured by them. In 1836 Chandler Sprague was making lasts and boot trees, and ten years later a long line of shoemakers' tools and devices were being made in North Bridgewater. By that time, however, the manufacture of boots and shoes had become important in the town and there was evidence that it was destined to play a leading part in the industry.

Both boots and shoes were being made in North Bridgewater in 1837 but records for that year show that the output of boots was 79,000 pairs and the output of shoes 22,300 pairs, showing that boots were much more in demand for the trade which early Brockton supplied. In the next few years there was a decided change. As a matter of fact in 1845 only 44,711 pairs of boots were made, while the output of shoes had risen to 115,476 pairs. A decade later (1855) 66,956 pairs of boots were made and 694,760 pairs of shoes, while in 1865 the records show the million mark exceeded in shoe manufacture. The pairs of boots numbered 103,066 and the number of pairs of shoes 1,009,700.

Women's pegged and common sewed shoes were manufactured in Randolph, Abington, Stoughton and Weymouth, and all of these towns also made boots. Tucker Brothers of East Stoughton, now Avon, made up boots and shoes on definite orders. They had a Boston office at which samples were shown to buyers from the South and West but they had no stores to dispose of made-up stock, as did some of their neighbors, notably Littlefield Brothers. The Littlefields manufactured considerably for the Cuban trade and were so well known in the Cuban markets that some of the traders from Havana and elsewhere came to their Boston office and made their purchases in person.

**When Heavy Boots Were Much in Vogue**—Where boots are mentioned in the records of 1830 and succeeding years it meant long-legged, heavy leather boots, instead of the ordinary boots of recent years. Such boots, with heavy sewed soles, were manufactured in Randolph about 1830 and for several years that town specialized in that kind of footwear. Randolph boots had a favorable reputation and were known in

the markets of California, Australia, and Texas as early as 1855 and possibly earlier.

In 1837, 200,175 pairs of boots were made in Randolph, which marked the beginning of specializing in boot-making. That same year Randolph manufacturers made 470,620 pairs of shoes. With the expansion of the West and the new frontier there was a market and demand for boots of the better sort which were produced about 1840 and later.

Many of the boots made in Randolph, Abington, Weymouth and other towns in their vicinity were marketed by Nathan Tucker of East Stoughton (Avon), who was taken into the boot and shoe-manufacturing concern of his brothers. His part in the development of the concern was largely on the sales end. In 1838 he started a store in Cincinnati, so it is not a recent thing for shoe manufacturers in Brockton and the South Shore District to have their own stores in distant cities and merchandising centres.

Among the large firms in the boot-making industry, were Howard & French and they employed many men and women to make and fit boots in their homes as well as employing a "gang" in a "twelve-footer." They began business in 1840. Gideon Howard, who lived in South Randolph, took out stock and brought back finished boots. His partner had a Vermont farm and part of his attention was given to agriculture. Many of the employees took time off for planting, haying and other work but there was a good average production to meet the demand. Blanche Evans Hazard, in her shoemaking book, already referred to as furnishing many facts mentioned in this chapter, says, in 1855 the treeing done in the shop of Howard & French, which was at the junction of Liberty and Main streets, Randolph, was done by Sylvanus Pratt, Ira Howard, Edwin Howard, Luther Rowe, and Henry Bangs. Mr. Pratt "did one hundred pairs a week on an average of seven cents a pair for regular length boots. Short-legged grained boots were easier to tree and the price was correspondingly smaller. Luther Rowe treed and varnished and earned more than Pratt did in any one week. He was young and vigorous in the 50's and one of his fellow-workmen has told me that Luther always put in a 'long day' when he could. This he explained was their expression for working as many hours as there were of daylight in summer and winter."

Howard & French got their share of the California trade. They had an agent in San Francisco, Jonathan Wales, in 1850, who sold their "Californian" boots for \$10 a pair.

The methods of manufacture in the "ten-footers" were wasteful and considerable scrap leather piled up. J. Winsor Pratt of Randolph was a purchaser of this scrap and from it made leather shoe-strings.



A square inch of scrap leather could be converted into a leather shoe-string, twenty-seven inches in length, by being cut into a spiral. Many times the roads in front of "ten-footers" were covered with leather scraps, and the proximity to a little shoe shop in those days was forced upon the attention of a person, jogging over the road in a chaise, by the odor of leather which had been thrown out as useless. There were shoe-string factories in various towns in Southeastern Massachusetts. Plympton, in Plymouth County, had a considerable local industry in shoe-string making.

**Some Eminent Graduates and Rapid Operatives**—There were many shoemakers of the early days who employed their minds in higher education while they were fashioning boots or shoes, with the eight original tools or a few others, before the advent of machinery in the industry. Some rose to eminence. Roger Sherman, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, was brought up in Stoughton in Norfolk County and apprenticed to a shoemaker. He worked at the trade until he was twenty-two, became a lawyer, member of the Continental Congress; a delegate to the convention which framed the Constitution of the United States in 1787, and later a Congressman and senator.

Henry Wilson, before becoming vice-President of the United States, was a shoemaker in a "ten-footer," and later manufactured brogans for Southern plantation slaves to wear.

Paul Hathaway was the first shoemaker in Middleboro and decided to "stick to his last" and make his customers bring their leather to him to be made into shoes, rather than spend his time gathering materials. By thus saving time and being always on the job, he was able to hire others to work for him, supervise their work and make surplus stock to be sold in the stores when there were not sufficient customers to keep him busy on custom-made shoes. Hathaway was, therefore, the pioneer in custom shoemaking, as contrasted with itinerant shoemakers; and also in making shoes to be sold in stores by sizes.

The question frequently arises how much work one of the old-time shoemakers could do in a given time. Samuel White of Randolph could make a thread and seam up a boot in fifteen minutes. His record in pegging was twelve pairs of boots in one day, said boots having double soles. He had a "ten-footer" on Union Street, Randolph, in the late forties. He held his supply of pegs in his mouth and, by the use of both hands, ran the dink, used the awl and drove the pegs.

When the Commonwealth shoe factory was opened in Whitman in 1883, the uppers of the first sample shoes made there were sewed by Mrs. Lucy Brown, a native of Hanson. Mrs. Brown first worked in the shoe industry as a messenger for her aunt, who sent her to a central factory in North Bridgewater to get boots to cord, wheeling

them to and from her aunt's home in a baby carriage. In 1861 she ran a wax thread machine for stitching mocassins, made of cloth, trimmed with leather and lined with buffalo skin or lamb's wool, soled with leather. The machine went by foot-power but Mrs. Brown was able to make four dollars a day at the work on a piece price of seventy-five cents a pair.

**Backing from Banks Won Distant Markets and Much Gold**—Norfolk and Plymouth counties started early and have persisted in being important in the boot and shoe industry. In the first place the soil of the two counties, taken as a whole, did not furnish the encouragement for agriculture that was true of some other counties. The counties in the western part of Southeastern Massachusetts and Middlesex engaged in the cotton and woolen industry while Norfolk and Plymouth clung to the fisheries, shipbuilding, and manufacturing boots and shoes, iron ware and numerous other things.

Banks came into the picture and discounts and loans were easily available for those who dealt in something as universally used as boots and shoes. After the hard times of 1837, shoemaking became an investment for capitalists, rather than the outgrowth of the "ten-footers" and small community interests. With capital to fall back upon, the genius of good business men was put into developing the shoe business with the whole world as a market, so far as transportation facilities were concerned, even though those transportation facilities seem exceedingly crude today.

As early as 1838, Tucker Brothers of East Stoughton had a store in Cincinnati, catering to the retail trade of that rapidly growing Ohio city, which increased in population from 24,831 in 1830 to 46,338 in 1840. Some of the Cincinnati people were wearing shoes made in Randolph and East Stoughton. In 1840, Chicago had less than 5,000 inhabitants but it was on the way to California and California became a possession of the United States, filled with gold and rumors of gold, before 1849. The boots which were being made in Randolph were just what the miners in California needed and many of the '49ers had them on when they made footprints in the mud as they panned the gravel beside the California streams in search of nuggets.

The discovery of gold in California and in Australia had a distinct influence on the shoe industry in Plymouth and Norfolk counties. To cater to the California market, Jonathan Wales of Randolph crossed the continent and established a store in San Francisco in 1851. He demanded prompt delivery of ordered goods and made it well worth the while of those who speeded up production to meet the demand. There were in Randolph, his home town, at that time manufacturing boots and shoes suitable for the California trade, Wentworths, Whitcombs,



and Howard & French, and for a time these firms supplied Wales with their product.

He entered the firm of Newhall & Gregory in San Francisco and was able to sell at auction many more boots and shoes than he could get from the Whitcombs, Wentworths, Howard & French, and so took additional product from about twenty firms in Randolph, North Bridgewater and Stoughton. It was good business, payable in California gold. Bags of this valuable commodity were sent home in payment for shoes, sometimes as much as \$20,000 in a single bag of white drilling.

The representative of this section in Australia was Frank Maguire who went to Melbourne, Australia, and marketed practically the whole output of the Randolph factory of Burrell & Maguire. Speed was added to good work and good materials. Twenty to thirty girls were employed by Burrell & Maguire to paste in straps and put pieces of bright-colored morocco leather across the upper part of the vamps, which was an embellishment appreciated in Australia. Machinery was used, anything to get quick production of salable goods.

Maguire became United States Consul at Melbourne. Randolph, his home town, in 1857 had a population of 5,000 to 6,000, a large share of which was making shoes for California and Australia, receiving in return bags of gold. In that year Randolph produced 345,100 pairs of boots, 363,300 pairs of shoes and employed 1,532 people. The value of the boot and shoe output was \$1,269,400; that of all other industrial pursuits of the town, \$129,483.

**Hard Times Showed Need of Machinery**—There were hard times in the shoe business in 1857. A Lynn concern, Baker & Brothers, failed for from \$100,000 to \$200,000, throwing five hundred employees out of work. Many firms were obliged to curtail. H. Bingley Alden's firm in Randolph failed, due to slow pay in the Baltimore market. A factory burned in Canton, on the Stoughton turnpike. News came by the steamer "John L. Stephens" from San Francisco, August 12, 1857, that the California markets were depressed and it would need a suspension of shipments for two or three months to relieve the situation. Western trading had become unreliable.

There were at that time 32,000 employed in boot and shoemaking in Massachusetts and of this number Randolph was supplying over 1,000. Randolph's population in 1855 was 5,538, an increase of 19.40 per cent in five years. In October that year the Randolph Bank paid a dividend of five per cent and printed a statement that it had a clear surplus of \$47,016.72.

The local shoe industry came through the financial depression of 1857 remarkably well, but the economic pressure had convinced the

manufacturers that the factory system was their salvation and installation of machinery a necessity.

**Abington Shod Half the Union Army**—In 1860 when the mutterings of strife were heard, followed by firing on Fort Sumter, and President Lincoln called for volunteers, factories in Plymouth, Essex and Worcester counties in Massachusetts together made more than one-third of the boots and shoes produced in the United States, in terms of value. There were \$23,000,000 invested in the shoe industry in the United States. New England had \$11,000,000 invested in the industry, and furnished employment for 52,010 males and 22,282 females. The product of their labor was worth \$54,818,148, which was nearly sixty per cent of the value of boot and shoemaking in the whole country. The number of manufacturing concerns in New England, making boots and shoes, was 2,439; and more than half, 1,354, were in Massachusetts. The Massachusetts male shoe workers numbered 43,068 and the females 19,215. The product of their labor had increased 91.8 per cent, since 1850 and was, in 1860, \$46,230,529.

The demand for army shoes came and more than one-half of the army shoes provided for the boys in blue were manufactured in Abington, in Plymouth County. This was the home town of Lyman R. Blake, the inventor of the McKay stitching machine. Seth Bryant, who had made shoes for the West Indies trade at his factory in Joppa, a village of East Bridgewater, took some samples of shoes, sewed on McKay machines, to Washington and displayed them before Secretary of War Edwin M. Stanton. They were the first machine-sewed soles that the secretary had ever seen on shoes and he was somewhat skeptical. He agreed, however, to award the contract to Mr. Bryant if he would guarantee the sewing. This Mr. Bryant agreed to, providing the secretary would issue an order that every pair of shoes accepted for army shoes would have the manufacturer's name stamped on the bottom. There was another large contract awarded to a Philadelphia firm with the condition suggested by Mr. Bryant imposed.

Oak tanned leather was demanded in the contracts and this was easily available for the Philadelphia concern, since oak bark was a natural resource in Pennsylvania. Hemlock leather was common in Massachusetts markets and Bryant was forced to pay twenty cents per pound more for oak soles, so that one contract cost him \$10,000 more than he would have had to pay for hemlock leather. Before the war was over oak leather became exhausted and a substitute was used, by permission. Abington shoemakers were kept busy making 300,000 pairs of army shoes and it proved the value of the McKay machine better than anything else which could have happened.

Mr. Bryant did not profit, however, from his contracts, one at the



opening of the first bid in New York and the last bid in Philadelphia, being as much as would have been the case if hemlock leather had been used. At the end of the war the United States Government turned back several thousand pairs of shoes, which was a great loss to him. Furthermore the government was very dilatory in making payments and contractors were forced to sell their vouchers at ten or fifteen per cent discount.

Many Plymouth County shoemakers volunteered for war service and those who remained secured high wages. Boys and women were admitted into the factories to take the places of those who had enlisted.

In Randolph a group of old men who had retired from shoemaking responded to a call for hand-sewed shoes, assembling in the shop of Hiram Alden, Sr. The young men were accustomed to pegging shoes and only the old men knew the stitch. They received good wages and turned out good work but the McKay machines stitched on most of the soles and there was great demand for these machines.

Lyman R. Blake, invented the McKay machine while employed at the factory of Gurney & Mears in South Abington (now Whitman) in 1857. He became a member of the firm and built the first machine with the understanding with his partners that he should build the machine with his own money and give the concern the use of it. In 1861, Mr. Blake joined with Mr. McKay in the introduction of the machines to public use, making many improvements and transferring the ownership to Mr. McKay. Mr. Blake claimed that "prior to my invention, no machine existed for sewing soles to boots and shoes."

Colonel McKay decided not to sell his machines but to rent them to manufacturers on a royalty basis, one reason being that he believed important improvements would be made and it would be hard to sell the perfected machines to the same customers who had once invested in the earlier models. So he attached a numbering device, rented the machine and sold royalty stamps to facilitate the payment of the royalties. It is claimed that the revenue of the McKay Machine Company rose to \$750,000 a year and continued until the fundamental patents on the machine expired.

**Dollar Shoe Made Brockton Famous**—Brockton's first millionaire was the late Daniel S. Howard, whose residence, now the Elks' Home, Main and Pleasant streets, was for years one of the show places of the country. It was Daniel S. Howard who, by creating a "good, low-priced shoe," started the fame of the Brockton shoe which has gone around the world.

Daniel S. Howard began business in North Bridgewater in 1848. Among his customers were Fisher & Baldwin of New York, who informed Seth Bryant that Mr. Howard "made the best shoe for one dol-

lar of any man in the country." This interested Mr. Bryant who had a large Boston wholesale shoe trade. He asked Mr. Howard to "put one hundred cents into a shoe and let me see it."

The sample aroused Bryant's admiration and he placed an order for one thousand cases, and with the Howard shoes got the lead in the New York trade. Howard was soon making more shoes in Brockton than all the other manufacturers put together. Mr. Howard continued in business until 1888. In 1884 there were fifty-nine shoe factories in Brockton, the aggregate production amounting to \$12,208,332. In 1890 Brockton had seventy-five shoe factories.

A few years after Daniel S. Howard engaged in the shoe business in North Bridgewater and the fame of "the shoe city" began to be built up on the foundation of a "dollar shoe," in 1855 for instance, there were in Boston, one hundred and seventy-six firms engaged in the trade in boots and shoes and leather. There were forty-three other firms engaged in hides and leather trade and fifty-one firms engaged in the sale of leather only. The annual products of the business in North Bridgewater aggregated 56,956 pairs of boots and 694,740 pairs of shoes, representing a value of \$724,847; and giving employment to 692 males and 484 females.

Ten years passed during which the Civil War was fought, and, in 1865, the North Bridgewater product was 103,066 pairs of boots, 1,009,700 pairs of shoes; with 1,059 males and 208 females employed. The valuation was \$1,466,900. The increase in the ten years was 37,150 pairs of boots, 314,960 pairs of shoes, and \$742,152 in the value of the product.

The production of North Bridgewater was "a good, cheap shoe." It was after the name of the town changed to Brockton that the manufacturers began to make distinctive shoes of the better sort, the kind which has justly given the city the fame of producing "the best men's fine shoes in the world." The manufacturers produced the superior article and advertised extensively. Since 1874 Brockton manufacturers have, in the main, produced medium or high grade shoes, largely for the retail trade, and the industry has been in the hands of energetic, progressive business men, many of whom were born in Brockton and most of whom, until twenty-five years ago, had been practical shoemakers, working at the bench. They not only knew how to take a shoe to pieces to see the quality of work put into it, but knew how to put one together.

**The World's Greatest Shoe Center**—While the late Daniel S. Howard was deservedly selected as the largest shoe manufacturer in this section previous to the Civil War and for some years following that struggle, among the latter-day captains of industry to keep Brockton and the South Shore District famous were George E. Keith, founder and, up to the time of his death, president of the George E. Keith Company, manu-



facturers of the Walkover Shoes; and ex-Governor William L. Douglas, founder and president of the W. L. Douglas Shoe Company, until his death a few years ago. Both have gone to their reward but the businesses which they built from small beginnings continue. These businesses were and are the two largest in shoemaking plants in the famous Brockton district.

The George E. Keith Company was the first to export shoes on a large scale and establish its own stores in foreign cities. Mr. Keith started in a "ten footer," when sixteen years of age and became an expert shoe cutter. He began business on his own account in 1874 on a capital of \$1,000, which represented great self-denial and patient savings. The sales of his company in one recent year were over thirty million dollars.

William L. Douglas, native of Plymouth, originator of the famous "Douglas three-dollar shoe," whose face became known in that connection internationally, was employed in several North Bridgewater shoe factories as a laster. He began business, on meagre savings and some borrowed capital, in 1876. He originated the Arbitration bill which created the Massachusetts State Board of Conciliation and Arbitration, and established the principle of arbitration in his factory in 1888.

He served as governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, and in numerous other important political and civil capacities.

More good shoes are made in the district of which Brockton is the centre than anywhere else in the world. In addition to the two leaders in the industry named, succeeded in their capacities as presidents of the two big corporations, by Harold C. Keith and Herbert L. Tinkham, respectively, leading shoe manufacturing concerns in Plymouth County and vicinity include the following: C. H. Alden Company, Abington; N. M. Arnold Shoe Company and L. A. Crossett Company, North Abington; J. E. French Company, Hurley Shoe Company, Rice & Hutchins, Inc., and E. T. Wright Company of Rockland; Regal Shoe Company and Commonwealth Shoe Company of Whitman; Richards & Brennen Company of Randolph; C. B. Slater Company of South Braintree; Stetson Shoe Company of South Weymouth; Upham Brothers Shoe Company of Stoughton; T. D. Barry Company, Brockton Shoe Manufacturing Company, Brockton Co-operative Boot & Shoe Company, Churchill & Alden Company, Condon Brothers Company, Craig, Reed & Emerson, Diamond Shoe Company, Doyle Shoe Company, C. A. Eaton Company, Field & Flint Company, A. Freedman & Sons, Inc., Givren & Blunt Shoe Company, Howard & Foster Company, C. E. Lynch Shoe Company, London Character Shoe Company, M. A. Packard Company, Bion F. Reynolds Company, Schwarz-Ruggles, Inc., Stacy, Adams Company, Stone-Tarlow Company, Inc., E. E. Taylor Company, Thompson

Bros. Shoe Company, Union Shoe Company and Whitman & Keith Company, Inc., all of Brockton.

An appreciative writer concerning the shoe district has left this record: "The workmanship in good shoes will always depend for perfection on the experience of craftsmen who see in their work ample incentive for making it a life calling. Records of workers in the factories show long years of experience and service. It is not uncommon to find a superintendent or foreman who has sons and grandsons working in the same factory. Pride in their work and devotion to their chosen trade inspire these men—and women too—to achieve the same expert craftsmanship as did the master shoemakers of old, who were, in many instances, their grandfathers and great-grandfathers. This is one reason why 'more good shoes are made in this district than anywhere else in the world.' "



## CHAPTER XXVIII

### FAIRS, HEALTH AND A NORMAL SCHOOL.

**Organizations Which Keep the County Keen, Safe, Sane and Well Instructed—Agricultural Fairs Among Educational Institutions—Brockton Fair Largest in North America of Those Unaided by Governmental Appropriations—Health Promotion for Children at an Outdoor Camp—Normal School Building at Bridgewater First in This Hemisphere.**

With all due respect and appreciation to the Chambers of Commerce of various towns in Plymouth County, also the Boards of Trade, Service Clubs and Community Welfare organizations by whatever name, there is no organization which is doing more for the betterment of the Old Colony district than the Brockton Agricultural Society. This is the organization which puts on the Brockton Fair as its special exhibition and achievement in the fall of each year. By means of this annual fair Brockton and the South Shore District are internationally known. It is a trite saying that Brockton is famous for two things: "its shoes and the most wonderful fair in America."

Moreover, the Brockton Fair is a New England institution, coöperating in every movement for the advancement of the northeast corner of the United States. The Brockton Agricultural Society maintains a city office in the heart of Brockton, open every business day in the year, and from which a publicity program is kept in action telling the world those things which cause the district which it represents to be better appreciated.

The purpose of the Brockton Agricultural Society, as stated in the preamble to its constitution adopted July 9, 1874, is "for the encouraging and promoting of the material prosperity of this community in every form of productive industry, in the cultivation of the soil, in the rearing and improving of domestic animals, in the mechanic arts, and in whatever pertains to these." The original directors and their successors have been faithful to this declaration more than half a century. With an eye single to the advancement and prosperity of the district the successive boards have worked without any other reward than the consciousness of doing their bit for the general good. Organized as a stock company, there has never been a dividend declared or even simple interest on the investment returned to the stockholders. The profits have been used to make succeeding fairs more indicative of the excellence of the productions of the community, more worthy of patronage and returning more educational value and enjoyment to the vast crowds drawn to the fairgrounds.

There are approximately 10,000 agricultural fairs in the United States and Canada, and the Brockton Fair is the one which stands at the head in every feature which goes to make up a great agricultural, industrial and educational exposition without an appropriation from any source or a building on the grounds contributed by any government, organization or individual.

Exceptional men, with wide-horizoned hopes and confident expectations brought to fruition, have had a share in building the Brockton Fair down through fifty-three years. No one has ever been elected to the directorate who has not reflected credit upon the community and its institutions, more especially the fair which has given the Old Colony District a pleasant fame and world-wide renown. But it is not the purpose of this article to glorify the men who combine vision with action and alert devotion, or deal with the Brockton Fair as something which is fired with the same unconquerable and progressive spirit as the shoe city which is its home. Rather is it the intention to deal with it as the large end of the cornucopia which shows the wealth of opportunities, the expression of broadmindedness, good citizenship and the joy of living constantly pouring forth from this local habitation which is Plymouth County.

To sketch the history of the Brockton Agricultural Society briefly, the first fair was held October 7, 8 and 9, 1874, with a baseball game on the morning of the third day, followed by a firemen's muster in the afternoon. The "Brockton Fair News," a publication devoted to the purposes of the society, made its initial appearance in September, 1887, with George Clarence Holmes as editor. An exhibition hall was erected in 1876 at a cost of \$7,000. In 1877, a Poultry Building was added and ever since the society has held the largest poultry show in the East. Since 1887 children have been admitted free the first day of the fair which has been called "Children's Day."

An amateur athletic meet has been held in connection with the fair every year since 1890. It is the largest outdoor meet held in New England, with the exception of those taking place at the Harvard Stadium.

The leading sensation of the fair in 1894 was breaking the track record by Gil Curry. The time was 2:11½, and was at that time the best record on a half-mile track.

In 1895 Professor Williamson headed "The best combination of air navigators which has ever appeared in the United States." He used a monster balloon which soared skyward with the professor, his wife and dog. From a high altitude each of the three descended in a separate parachute.

The first automobiles were seen on the fair grounds in 1896 and it was the first view thousands in attendance had ever had of a "horseless carriage." It was predicted in the "Fair News" of that year: "These



unique and speedy vehicles are coming rapidly to the front. In a few years they will be as common as bicycles are now." A few years ago the society purchased about seven acres of adjoining land, including several residences, had the latter moved away and enlarged its grounds. Now there are ten acres, inside the fairgrounds, devoted to the parking of automobiles, and practically all the front and back yards and roadsides for half a mile in every direction are used, during the days and evenings of the fair, for the same purpose.

Marion Mills, the pacing wonder, beat the world's record for pacing mares (2:06 1/2) held by Pearl C. and Lottie Loraine, in 1897, going the distance at ever-increasing speed, the last quarter being the fastest.

Since 1895 the society has had an emergency hospital on the grounds. There is also a fire station manned by a crew from the Brockton Fire Department, a police station, and other institutions of public safety, befitting a city of 100,000 persons. Such is the attendance on a big day of the fair.

The fair has had a Horse Show as a leading feature since 1898. It is one of the largest out-door Horse Shows in America, with entries from all over the United States and some from Canada, a worthy companion of the National Horse Show held in New York. Fred F. Field, president of the Brockton Agricultural Society, is also chairman of the Horse Show Committee. He has been a member of the committee ever since it was first appointed in 1898 and is the only survivor of the original committee. The Horse Show came as an absolute novelty in outdoor entertainment in Massachusetts and has never lost its popularity.

The first Automobile Show in connection with the fair was held in 1899. It was one of the first Automobile Shows in the world. In 1900 one of the novelties on the track was a race between a horse and an ostrich. Hitched to a bicycle sulky the bird paced against the equine and won at a two-minute clip.

One of the sensations at the fair in 1902 was firing a man from a cannon, suspended from a balloon, high in air. The "Charge" also included a parachute, used for wadding, and the professor sailed serenely to earth.

There was an exhibition over the grounds in 1903 of "the nearest approach to flying ever attained by mortal man." For the first time the parachute within a parachute idea was put into operation, the balloonist making two cuts. Since that time there have been numerous ascensions followed by six cuts.

Governor's Day has been a regular feature since 1905, when William L. Douglas, the Brockton shoemaker, was chief executive of the Commonwealth. Every governor since has had his day at the Brockton Fair, with a military escort, foreign consuls, the military in uniform

and distinguished civilians in formal dress, high-hatting the occasion.

The largest sum ever paid, up to that time, for a single attraction, was in 1905, when Roy Knabenshue, of Toledo, Ohio, was hired to ride his dirigible over the grounds and the city. Adverse weather conditions made it a disappointment, but the following year he was on hand and gave an exhibition, considered marvelous. He flew low, circled the track, leaped from the machine and placed the reins of the dirigible in the hands of Governor Curtis Guild, which caused the governor to remark "Wonderful."

Claude Graham-White, considered at that time the world's greatest aviator, was secured to make a flight daily at the fairgrounds in 1910. He was guaranteed \$15,000 for the appearance. There was a record-breaking attendance but a high wind blew every day and the flying was a disappointment. It was estimated that there were 3,000 automobiles at the fair in 1909, the largest collection of motor cars ever assembled up to that time in the world. The attendance in 1910 was 190,000 with 90,995 on the biggest day.

In 1911 Lincoln Beachey flew over the grounds upside down every day of the fair, furnishing the big crowds plenty of thrills. In 1912 Little Bonita dropped from a balloon, using six parachutes in her progress back to the soil, and never casting a shoe or losing a powder puff, showing that, in spite of the airplane sensations, the old-fashioned balloon still possessed some blood-tingling possibilities in its bag of tricks.

For many years bicycle racing was a popular feature at the annual fairs. Among the prize winners was the present governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Alvan T. Fuller. A diamond prize which he won at the Brockton Fair was sold to procure tuition expenses for a course at a business college. The prize proved genuine, as he was able to sell it for its advertised value. Evidently the business training which it purchased for him was genuine, as he is rated among the multi-millionaires in the State and is still a young man.

Bicycle racing was dropped in 1902, since which time the athletic programme has been more complete and has served to encourage athletics in grammar and high schools in this vicinity. Beginning in 1908 the fair management conducted a Marathon Race over a twenty-five mile course, starting at the Boston Athletic Club and finishing in front of the grandstand at the fair. This was continued until 1917, being given up that year on account of the World War and the absence of many of the swiftest contestants. Since 1919 a modified marathon of ten miles, all the distance on the track, has been the successor to the road course which would be impossible under present traffic conditions, with the highways congested with motor cars on their way to the fair.

The only president of the United States who has been a guest at



the fair at the time he was in office, was President William Howard Taft. President Taft was entertained in 1912 and on that occasion he said: "It is impossible not to feel real interest and pleasure in an exhibition of such magnitude, charm and diversity as the Brockton Fair. It seems to me truly wonderful that you assemble 80,000 people for such a fall carnival and maintain such perfect order. I shall always remember this visit with great pleasure."

The Automobile Show has become such a popular feature of the fair that in 1916 a building, two hundred feet long and one hundred and twenty-five feet wide, was built to contain it. Every year since a mammoth tent has been employed to take care of the overflow.

The fair in 1917 was conducted for the benefit of the Red Cross. Beginning that year, scholarships have been offered by the society for excellence in agricultural endeavor and achievements and home economics, on the part of boys and girls desiring higher education. At present there are more than a dozen pupils enjoying the benefits of courses in agricultural colleges or schools giving courses in home economics, notably the State Normal School at Framingham, assisted by Brockton Fair scholarships.

Since 1917 the Brockton Home and School Gardeners have made annual exhibits and have led the State in their achievements, under the supervision of Miss Annie L. Burke. After viewing one of these exhibitions, ex-Governor Channing H. Cox wrote to Miss Burke: "This morning I am still thinking of the wonderful exhibits which we saw in your department yesterday, and I wish to tell you once more how deeply I appreciate the splendid work you are doing. Nothing can be of greater importance to us here in Massachusetts, and I am sure that nothing will contribute more largely to the good citizenship of the future."

The Shoe Style Show, the feature most distinctive of Brockton and the South Shore District became a feature in 1920, the entire main floor of the Educational Building being devoted to that purpose. It has the backing of the Brockton Shoe Manufacturers' Association and the shoe manufacturers and accessory and allied industrialists of the community. It attracts shoe buyers from all over the country and is the best possible presentation of the goods which keep Brockton and surrounding shoe towns famous and prosperous.

Many thousands of dollars were expended in 1919 to prepare the fair grounds for Night Shows, with every part of the eighty-five acres brilliantly illuminated. One of the many superlative features of the Night Shows has been, every year, a fireworks display out-dazzling every other display of nocturnal pyrotechnics in New England.

Beginning in 1919 a Dog Show has been a feature of the fair, running four days, different dogs every day.

Fred F. Field became president of the Brockton Agricultural Society in 1919, following the death of William B. Cross, the third president of the society. Hon. Henry W. Robinson was the first president, holding the position from 1874 until his death in 1907. He was succeeded by Charles Howard who resigned in 1917, became honorary president, and was succeeded by William B. Cross.

President Field, the present incumbent, has worked wonders on the fair grounds in converting them into a beautiful park, which is open to the public all through the year. The buildings have been placed on new foundations, put into the best condition, improved, enlarged and made suitable for their respective purposes. Streets have been built, extensive lawns and flower beds, attractive shrubbery, suitable fences, gateways and other things supplied, so that there are no more attractive fairgrounds among the 10,000 in North America.

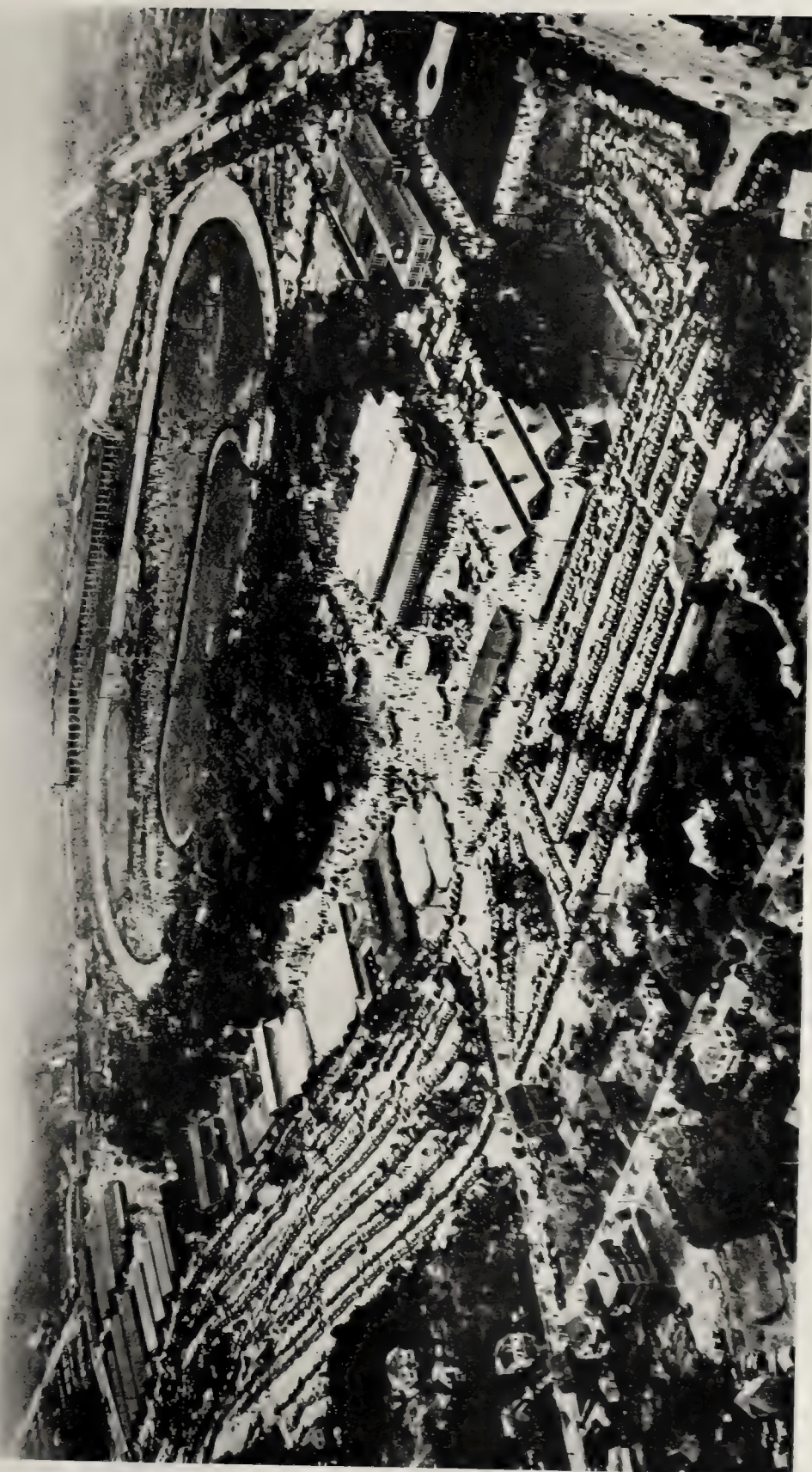
Since 1920 the State shows have been under the management of J. Joseph Cahill who has worked his part of the program up to such a state of perfection that a statement concerning so-called "free attractions" at the Brockton Fair a few years ago led to country-wide controversy. A statement appeared in one of the theatrical papers that the Brockton Fair offered "free attractions" costing \$10,000. The popular interpretations of the term "free attraction" covers those features of entertainment which became available to those who do not have to pay anything more than admission at the gate to enjoy. The editor of one amusement journal challenged the statement, and asked if it could be substantiated. He was furnished with details which proved to his satisfaction that the statement was far too conservative.

Attractions which cost \$225,000 that year, on the vaudeville stages, in the outdoor Horse Show rings, in the athletic field, on the track and elsewhere, were in full view of the 278,000 people who paid their admission fee at the gate. Many fairs have their buildings and fences so placed and constructed that inside admissions are required to see many of the entertainment and educational features. Nothing is hidden or charged for on the Brockton fairgrounds beyond the gate admission, making the fair justly entitled to its characterization as the place "where a single admission gives in return the greatest value for the money of any place of amusement in the country."

Not all of the attractions included in the \$225,000 purchases are under the supervision of Mr. Cahill, but he has general charge of the stage shows and track features.

The society observed its Golden Anniversary in 1923. One of the features was the dedication of its new Agricultural Building, the largest and handsomest building devoted to the exhibition of fruits, vegetables, flowers, Grange exhibits, Home and School Gardens harvests and aparian products in the United States.





AIRPLANE VIEW OF BROCKTON FAIR GROUNDS, THE GATHERING PLACE OF 300,000 PEOPLE  
THE FIRST WEEK IN OCTOBER OF EACH YEAR





The year 1924 will go down in history as the year of the exhibit of a \$150,000 necklace or electric novagem scintillator containing 30,000 jewels which rivalled diamonds in their entrancing brilliancy. With the aid of thirty powerful searchlights and the accessories of clouds of live steam and smoke bombs, the Night Shows furnished something never before exhibited in New England. It was also the year of the United States Government Aviation Meet, with all representative types of government airplanes on exhibition and in flight. It was the last word in airship displays between the two oceans.

This year the fair will hold the seventh annual pure food exposition as one of its features. When the Food Show, as it is popularly called, was made a feature of the fair in 1921, it immediately took on the proportions of the most largely attended food exposition in New England and has continued to grow larger each successive year, until in 1927 much additional space was demanded. It is an educational feature, exhibiting the best in food products and displaying the most approved methods of food preservation and most approved utensils and equipment used in cooking.

For several years there has been an exhibition of farm machinery in a big circus tent which has done much to educate the farmers concerning inventions which take much of the drudgery and backache out of agriculture and speed up production. One of the recently added educational departments is that devoted to Better Homes, teaching nutrition, home economics and better living conditions and attainments, through inexpensive means. In 1927 a building, 200 feet long and 125 feet wide, was first devoted to House and Home Exhibits of modern means of home equipment with gas and electrical devices, and all that goes into home-making and housekeeping.

The special features, aggregation of shows, and wonderful entertainment mentioned are largely in excess of the presentations of the ordinary fairs of the better sort. It has often been said that the Brockton Fair starts where others leave off, and with considerable truth. At the same time, it is still a "cattleshows," continues to exhibit the domestic animals and the folk of the barnyard, the expressions of the skill and talent of the farmer and the farmer's wife. It operates all the year round, doesn't wait for one fair to be over before plans are made for the next or one even farther in the future, through its city office keeps constructive publicity going the rounds and lends a helping hand continually.

The present officers of the Brockton Agricultural Society are: President, Fred F. Field; secretary, Perley G. Flint; treasurer, Edward M. Thompson; vice-presidents: Edward M. Thompson, Walter Rapp, Fred Drew, Horace A. Keith, Frank L. Crocker; hon. director, Abbott W. Packard; directors, Carlton R. Blades, William A. Boyden, Harry

C. Briggs, J. Joseph Cahill, Frank L. Crocker, Harold S. Crocker, Davis M. DeBard, Fred Drew, Fred F. Field, Fred F. Field, Jr., Perley G. Flint, Elmer E. Folsom, Alton B. Hastings, Jr., Ralph E. Hatch, William N. Howard, Horace A. Keith, James P. Keith, Albert F. Nelson, Everett T. Packard, Frank E. Packard, A. Roger Perkins, Charles H. Pope, Clarence C. Puffer, Walter Rapp, Horace Richmond, Edward M. Thompson, Edward H. Tindale, Herbert L. Tinkham, F. Harold Tolman, Harry C. Tolman.

The following is a list of the heads of departments: Advertising, Harry C. Tolman; Athletics, Horace A. Keith; Charitable Organizations, George H. Leach; Children's Sports, James P. Keith; Claim Agent, Clarence C. Puffer; Commercial Horse Show, Alton B. Hastings, Jr.; Concessions, Loyed W. Briggs; Dairy Show, Herbert L. Tinkham; Day Nursery, Mrs. C. S. Millet; Dog Show, Herbert L. Tinkham; Educational Building, Davis M. DeBard; Electrical Committee, Albert F. Nelson; Fair News, F. Harold Tolman; Farm Machinery, A. Roger Perkins; Food Inspector, Dr. Charles G. Miles; Food Show, Elmer E. Folsom; Fruits-Vegetables-Flowers, Edward H. Tindale; Gates, Henry Rapp; Governor's Day, Walter Rapp; Grange Exhibit, William N. Howard; Horse Show, Fred F. Field; Household Arts, Fred Drew; Industrial Exhibit, Joseph C. Crocker, Jr.; Junior Extension Club Work, George L. Farley; Muster, Frank L. Crocker; Police, Herbert Boyden; Poultry Show, Everett T. Packard; Publicity Department, Elroy S. Thompson; School Gardens, Miss Annie L. Burke; Sheep and Swine, Ralph E. Hatch; Special Exhibits, William A. Bullivant; Style Show, Frank E. Packard; Ticket Committee, Harold S. Crocker; Transportation, Carlton R. Blades; Trotting, Harry C. Briggs; Work, Draft Horses and Oxen, James F. Powers; Vaudeville, J. Joseph Cahill.

**Plymouth County Agricultural Society**—Until the organization of the Brockton Agricultural Society in 1874, the largest agricultural fair in this part of the country was carried on by the Plymouth County Agricultural Society on extensive grounds near the centre of Bridgewater. This grand old society was organized at the county courthouse in Plymouth in 1819. Its membership included many of the most prominent men and women of the county and it was the organization brought together most effectually, with a county significance and consciousness, of any which existed.

There was an exhibition hall on an eminence on the grounds, above Town River in Bridgewater, which was the pride of the society. This was destroyed by fire in 1890. The fair of 1891 was held with the exhibits shown in a large tent. The prominent feature of the fair in those days was the annual dinner, at which prominent men in Federal and State offices and in various other lines of activity made speeches. At the fair of 1891, Governor William E. Russell was the principal



speaker. There was an especially large attendance and much encouragement was given toward erecting a new exhibition hall. This was done the following year.

Some years ago it became expedient for the society to accept a tempting offer for its fairgrounds and they were converted into a brickyard. Since that time the annual fair has been held in several locations in the county, sometimes under special direction of the Grange in West Bridgewater, a few years on the historic green at Halifax and more recently at Grange Park in Bridgewater.

The present officers of the Plymouth County Agricultural Society include: President, Ernest Leach; secretary, Mrs. Alice G. Leach; and treasurer, William S. Beatty. The annual fairs are held on the park of Bridgewater Grange.

**Hingham Agricultural and Horticultural Society**—For many years a large number of farmers and gardeners in Hingham and vicinity were associated together for the purpose of holding an annual fair and otherwise promoting the interests of agriculture in the community. This organization styled itself the Hingham Agricultural and Horticultural Society after a preliminary meeting held October 1, 1858. The society was proposed by Fearing Burr who presented at a meeting October 27 by-laws which were adopted. The original officers were: President, Albert Fearing; vice-presidents: Solomon Lincoln, David Whiton and Charles W. Cushing; recording secretary, Edmund Hersey; corresponding secretary, Thomas T. Bouve; treasurer, Joseph H. French; directors: Albert Whiting, Seth Sprague, Henry Cushing, Henry Ripley, John Stephenson, Elijah Leavitt, Morris Fearing, Amos Bates, John Lincoln, Warren A. Hersey, John R. Brewer and Thomas L. Whiton.

The first annual fair was held September 28 and 29, 1859. The exhibition of domestic animals was on the open lot in Hingham Centre. Other exhibits were in the Town Hall. One of the features on the morning of the second day was a float bearing four groups of young ladies, representing the seasons, drawn by fifty yokes of oxen, driven by Charles W. Cushing. Captain Alfred G. Hersey was marshal of the parade, led by the Boston Brigade Band, and escorted by survivors of the old rifle company, under Captain John K. Corbett, of the Lincoln Light Infantry. This military organization a short time afterward answered the call of Governor John A. Andrew, a resident of Hingham, for Civil War duty. The parade ended at a large tent in which the first annual dinner was held with six hundred guests.

Fairgrounds were purchased, consisting of sixteen acres at the corner of East and Leavitt streets. An exhibition hall was erected and its dedication came September 25, 1867. Albert Fearing, who served as president of the society from its institution in 1858 till his death in

1875, gave six thousand five hundred dollars toward the erection of the hall.

The Hingham Agricultural and Horticultural Society still exists as a useful organization in the town but discontinued holding an annual agricultural fair many years ago.

**Marshfield Agricultural and Horticultural Society**—One of the local fairs in Massachusetts which remains true to the best traditions of the movement which has done so much for the promotion of agriculture and community service is that held at Marshfield each year, under direction of the Marshfield Agricultural and Horticultural Society. This society was organized in 1866 and the following year incorporated. It had three hundred and thirty-seven members when it made its first annual report in 1868. An exhibition hall was nearly completed when it was demolished by the severe gale of September, 1869. Another was completed shortly afterward.

The original officers were: President, George M. Baker; vice-president, Levi Walker; secretary, John Baker; auditor, Warren Kent; directors: Luther Thomas, Constant Oakman, Frank P. Arnold, Stephen Henry, Charles T. Hatch, Charles P. Wright, Joseph O. Cole, Jonathan S. Ford, Bailey Chandler, James S. Bates and Hiram Randall.

Among those who served the society as president was the late Thomas W. Lawson, the noted financier, author of "Frenzied Finance" and other books. During the time Mr. Lawson had his Dreamwold estate at Scituate he contributed generously the products of his extensive farm at the annual fairs, exhibited his show horses and took a special interest in the Marshfield Fair, which was the one nearest his home and heart.

The officers and directors for 1927 are as follows: President, Joseph J. Shepherd, Pembroke; first vice-president, Harold B. Vesper, Rockland; second vice-president, Gilbert H. West, Pembroke; third vice-president, Edward S. O'Neil, Duxbury; treasurer, Ralph C. Ewell, Marshfield; secretary, Shirley R. Crosse, Marshfield; auditor, Horace T. Fogg, Norwell; directors: Ernest H. Sparrell, Norwell; Joseph C. Hagar, Marshfield; Fred M. Lamson, Marshfield; John H. Gutterson, Norwell; Walter Shuebruk, Cohasset; Arthur L. Power, Norwell; Frank S. Alger, Rockland; Fred W. Cole, Scituate; Silas Wright, Marshfield; Everett S. Damon, Rockland; Charles C. Langille, Marshfield; Phillip B. Oakman, Marshfield; Horace C. Keene, Marshfield; Henry H. Cudworth, Marshfield; Frank Kenny, Winthrop; Bradford H. Pierce, South Hanson; Ralph W. Newdick, Marshfield; Milton L. Kerr, Cohasset; Walter S. Kerr, Cohasset; Herbert A. Ryder, Marshfield; Edgar C. Thayer, Pembroke; Joseph W. Parker, Marshfield; William A. Howard, Pembroke; Charles J. Hollis, Weymouth.



Woman's Board—Mrs. Joseph C. Hagar, Marshfield Hills, president; Mrs. Herman Kent, Marshfield, vice-president; Mrs. Edmond L. Damon, Marshfield Hills, secretary; Mrs. John Baker, Marshfield; Mrs. George P. Bryant, Brant Rock; Mrs. Herbert B. Chamberlain, Hanover Center; Mrs. George H. Chandler, Marshfield; Miss Lydia T. Chandler, Marshfield; Miss Alice Hatch, North Marshfield; Miss Lucretia Hatch, North Marshfield; Miss Florence L. Keene, Marshfield; Mrs. Claude R. Marvin, Marshfield; Mrs. Joseph W. Parker, Marshfield; Miss Catherine T. Phillips, South Hanover; Mrs. H. A. Ryder, Marshfield; Mrs. John H. Sparrell, Norwell; Mrs. Helmuth Weber, Marshfield; Miss Addie M. Williamson, Marshfield.

**Middleboro Agricultural Society**—Something new in the line of agricultural fairs was furnished by the Middleboro Agricultural Society when it held its first annual fair May 27, 29 and 30, 1927, as this was much earlier than any of the other fairs. It was the time for early planting rather than for harvesting, consequently there were no exhibits of fruits and vegetables but what was missing in "big pumpkins" was made up in other features. Particular attention was paid to the trotting and pacing events. There was a horse show, polo, motorcycle racing, style show and fireworks. The society has a good race-track and can take care of a large attendance.

The first fair was a success and the society expects to take its place with the other agricultural societies in the county and vicinity in promoting the interests of the community along agricultural, sporting and educational lines.

The officers of the society include: President, Dr. Leonard A. Baker; vice-president, Ezra F. Shaw; secretary-treasurer, Norman C. Smith.

**The Plymouth County Health Association** was organized in April, 1923, by a small group of people, which included a number of physicians and nurses actively engaged in public health work. The new organization was welcomed by the constituted health authorities and much interest in the movement was developed. It has been from the first affiliated with the Massachusetts Tuberculosis League. The object of the association is to coöperate with this league and "existing health agencies in the county, in the stimulation, promotion and coördination of anti-tuberculosis and general health work."

Membership in the association is open to all persons of the county interested in constructive public health work, members of the State Department of Health, county commissioners, superintendent of Plymouth County Hospital, and ex-officio members of the association. Each town in Plymouth County has a member on the board of directors chosen by its Nursing Service, and where the sale of anti-tuberculosis seals is conducted by an organization other than the Nursing Service,

such an organization also has one member on the board. Further representation is allowed: one member for each \$500 raised by seal sales in the town during the previous year, to be chosen by the same organization, and the chairman of the County Commissioners, the superintendent of the County Hospital and five members-at-large elected by the association.

There is a Field and Camp Committee whose duty it is to promote the holding of clinics in the various towns in coöperation with the State Department of Health; assist in obtaining nurses for public emergencies, and such other activities as may be of value; arrange for the operation of a summer camp on the County Hospital grounds with power to employ a director and other helpers for its maintenance within the appropriation fixed by the directors; study and report on the best method of doing year-round preventive work.

Dr. James H. Drohan, of Brockton, became its first president, and the board of directors included representatives of boards of health, superintendents of county and State tuberculosis hospitals, school physicians, representatives of visiting nurse associations, and others interested in public health work in the county. Miss Anna J. Foley, R. N., has been executive secretary since organization.

About the time the Plymouth County Association was organized, the State Department of Health began its ten years' program for the eradication of tuberculosis by holding school clinics for the examination of school children throughout the Commonwealth. Dr. Chadwick had demonstrated that about one-third of the school population was undernourished, and that eight per cent of this group was actually suffering from a hitherto unrecognized juvenile type of tuberculosis which under certain conditions was curable.

Here was an opportunity which the newly-formed association was quick to recognize. The most effective way to combat the disease in children was said to be placing them in a camp where they would live practically out-of-doors, get the required amount of rest and plenty of wholesome food.

In organizing the association one of the ways in which the founders hoped to make it useful was by coöperation with the County Hospital, and the friendly relations thus established proved to be most fortunate in the matter of the proposed camp. The County Commissioners were immediately interested and offered to provide a suitable location, medical supervision and equipment and to furnish nourishing food practically at cost. This offer was gladly accepted and the camp established, nine children enjoying the benefit of it during the month of August, 1923. The first camp was more or less of an experiment but the improvement in the condition of the children was so marked at the end of the month that its permanence was assured. During the summer of 1924 the



camp cared for eighty-three children, boys being admitted in July and girls in August. The results again were satisfactory but it was felt that four weeks was too short a period in which to build up a resistance to disease which should be permanent and on July 1, 1925, seventy children, boys and girls, were admitted for the full eight weeks of the camp. This plan was continued during 1926, boys and girls from six to twelve years of age being admitted on July first and remaining until August twenty-fifth.

The association sponsors an all-year health education program in schools and clubs, including the Grange and Industrial groups. The Modern Health Crusade is carried into the schools, and health plays and health poster contests encouraged. "Health days" and "health weeks" are promoted and valuable literature pertaining to the prevention of disease and the importance of good health is distributed.

The association also assists in the organization of public health committees and visiting nurse associations in towns in which such committees do not exist—particularly in these towns in which little or no health work is being done. It is hoped by this plan to have visiting nurse service eventually throughout the entire county.

In towns in which nursing service already exists the Plymouth County Association encourages and aids in the extension of the work to include "clinics" and "conferences" for the well baby and the pre-school child.

This association is the sole agent for the distribution of Christmas seals in Plymouth County and it is largely dependent on the money raised from the sale of these seals for the prosecution of its work. Fifty per cent of the money thus raised reverts to the towns for local health work.

Although much has been accomplished during the three and one-half years of its existence, the association faces an ever-widening horizon of possibilities for usefulness which can only be realized through the generous support of all those who believe in health as the foundation of prosperity and happiness.

**The First State Normal School Building in America** was dedicated in Bridgewater, August 19, 1846. On that occasion, Hon. Horace Mann, secretary of the Massachusetts Board of Education, a noted educator, said: "Among all the lights and shadows that ever crossed my path, this day's radiance is the brightest. Two years ago, I would have been willing to compromise for ten years' work, as hard as any I had ever performed, to have been assured that, at the end of that period, I should see what our eyes this day behold. I consider this event as marking an era in the progress of education—which as we all know is the progress of civilization—on this western continent, and throughout the world. It is the completion of the first normal schoolhouse ever erected in Massachusetts,—in the Union,—in this hemisphere. It belongs to

that class of events which may happen once but are not capable of being repeated. Coiled up in this institution, as in a spring, there is a vigor whose uncoiling may wheel the spheres."

In the winter of 1824-25, a series of articles was printed in the "Boston Patriot" over the signature of "Franklin." In one of these articles appeared the opinion: "The first step toward a reform in our system of popular education, is the scientific preparation of teachers for the free schools. And the only measure that will insure to the public the attainment of the object, is to establish an institution for the very purpose." The articles set forth the leading features of an institution for the training of teachers, under expert supervision and instruction. The writer was James G. Carter, of Lancaster. Public interest began to be aroused.

Rev. Charles Brooks, of Hingham, was among the enthusiasts, especially after he had taken a trip to Europe and investigated the Prussian system of normal schools. He appeared before the General Court of Massachusetts and gave addresses in most of the Plymouth County towns and elsewhere in the State, in advocacy of a normal school. He hoped it might be established in Plymouth County, in which the cause of popular education had its beginning. He carried on an editorial campaign twelve years before the Legislative Act creating the Board of Education was passed. Hon. Horace Mann was chosen secretary of the new board. The act creating the State board was signed by Governor Edward Everett, April 20, 1837. The board, at its second annual meeting, May 30, 1838, voted to establish a normal school in Plymouth County, as soon as suitable buildings, fixtures and furniture should be provided and placed under the control of the board. It was the intention to provide for the accommodation of one hundred pupils.

Hon. Artemas Hale, of Bridgewater, was made president of a board of five trustees. A public hearing was given to consider the claims of Plymouth, Middleboro and Bridgewater for proposed location, and the board voted May 20, 1840, "that the school be established in Bridgewater for the term of three years, on condition that the people of the town put the town house in a suitable condition for the use of the school; that they place at the disposal of the visitors of the school the sum of five hundred dollars, to be expended in procuring a library and apparatus; and that they give reasonable assurance that the scholars shall be accommodated with board within a suitable distance, at an expense not exceeding two dollars a week."

The first principal was Nicholas Tillinghast, a graduate of the United States Military Academy at West Point, and with six years' experience as instructor in natural science and ethics in that academy. He was a native of Taunton. Under his direction, the school opened September 9, 1840, with twenty-eight pupils, seven men and twenty-one women,



in the Town Hall, which had been rebuilt in some ways for the purpose and with a certain amount of equipment.

The experiment proved a success and the Board of Education, in 1845, appropriated \$2,500 for the school building in Plymouth County, provided the same amount should be raised by individuals. The town of Bridgewater appropriated two thousand dollars, individuals contributed seven hundred dollars and Hon. Horace Mann advanced seven hundred dollars to furnish the required sum to complete the building. It was erected on a lot contributed by Colonel Abram Washburn, of Bridgewater, consisting of one and one-quarter acres of land at the corner of School and Summer streets. George B. Emerson, of Boston, contributed the heating plant. At the dedicatory exercises, August 19, 1846, Governor George N. Briggs, of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Hon. William G. Bates, of Westfield, and Amasa Walker, of Brookfield, gave addresses. Mr. Tillinghast continued as principal thirteen years, being obliged to relinquish his duties at that time on account of illness.

His successor was Marshall Conant, who was recommended for the position by Mr. Tillinghast. Mr. Conant was born at Pomfret, Vermont, and taught his first school in his native town. He was greatly interested in mathematics and astronomy. When twenty-three years of age, he attempted the usual mathematical calculations of an eclipse of the moon, with the help of a quadrant which he extemporized for the occasion and a clock which he had made with his own hands to keep the time. He had the satisfaction of reaching the true results, and this was characteristic of him in all his efforts in life.

For several years he was publisher of the "Vermont Almanac." A few years later he opened a private school in Woodstock, Vermont, which he conducted five years, during which he pursued his studies and reached the point where he decided to move to Boston, to have an opportunity to secure the advantages of access to the noted libraries there. He enjoyed the sympathetic companionship of many noted educators, more especially Hon. Horace Mann.

Marshall Conant was principal of the normal school seven years, his resignation, at the end of that useful period, as had been the case with Mr. Tillinghast, being occasioned by illness. After resting for a time, Mr. Conant spent ten years in Washington, District of Columbia, organizing and carrying on the Department of Internal Revenue.

For six and one-half years, Mr. Conant had as assistant in the normal school, Albert G. Boyden, who had taught nearly every branch in the course of studies, and had been a pupil at the school, under the first principal. He had a broad knowledge of the school, and had even served as its janitor during a part of his student course, to help pay his way. He was considered eminently qualified for the position of third principal

and his service in that capacity amply justified the opinions of those who placed him in that position. He served as principal from 1860 to 1906, forty-six useful years. He had previously, following his graduation from the same school, taught in Hingham, served as an assistant to Nicholas Tillinghast, served as principal of the Classical and English High School at Salem, sub-master in the Chapman School in Boston, re-called to the Bridgewater Normal School as assistant to Mr. Conant.

The progress of the normal school from an attendance of sixty-seven students the first fall term after Mr. Boyden was appointed principal, with the addition of buildings, equipment and everything which marked progress in education, reflected great credit upon this leader in educational thought for half a century in Massachusetts. New courses were introduced, a story was added to the old wooden building in 1871, the first chemical laboratory was equipped for individual work in 1874. The boarding hall was built in 1869 and enlarged in 1873 to accommodate one hundred and forty students. The school building was again enlarged in 1881. In 1882, George H. Martin, for eighteen years an assistant teacher, was appointed agent of the Board of Education.

In 1881, Mr. Boyden purchased six acres of land on the opposite side of Plymouth Street from the school-buildings and laid it out for a campus for the school, at his own expense. This was taken over by the State in 1886 and is known as "Boyden Park."

A separate laboratory building was erected in 1881. It was a handsome structure, two stories in height. In 1883 sewage disposal beds were provided, utilizing the sewage for the irrigation of growing crops and grass land.

The semi-centennial of the normal school was celebrated August 28, 1890. At that time the institution had seven laboratories, "well supplied with typical, working and classified collections," to quote the words of Mr. Boyden in his historical address. "The grounds of the school had increased from one and one-fourth acres to fourteen acres, and include the school lot of three acres; Boyden Park containing six acres, Normal Grove, a half-acre of fine chestnut growth adjoining the park; the gift of Messrs. Lewis G. Love and Samuel P. Gates, of Bridgewater, alumni of the school; and a sewage farm of four and one-half acres."

A gymnasium for systematic, physical training was added in 1894. That same year admission to the normal school was confined to graduates of high schools of a standard satisfactory to the Board of Education, or to those who had an equivalent education. The Model School, a training school, was established in 1891. A kindergarten was established in 1893. In 1894, the Legislature appropriated \$75,000 for the enlargement of the school-building by the addition of a third section, mainly for the use of the Model School. In 1895 an appropriation of



\$59,000 was expended for the erection of a dormitory and a laundry and an athletic field on Grove Street. The new dormitory was named "Tillinghast Hall," in honor of the first principal.

For thirty-five years, the normal school had been under the united guidance of Mr. and Mrs. Boyden, when, October 1, 1895, Mrs. Boyden passed on, aged seventy years. She had begun work at the normal school at the age of twenty-three as a student and classmate of Mr. Boyden. After her graduation she, like him, taught in Hingham, Massachusetts. She also taught in Westerly, Rhode Island, and the Wheaton Female Seminary at Norton, Massachusetts, now Wheaton College. When Mr. Boyden was assistant teacher in the normal school, in 1851, their marriage took place.

In 1906, when the normal school was sixty years old, there had been enrolled from Massachusetts, 4,107 students; from twenty-three other States, 606; and from eleven foreign countries, forty-five. The first group of foreign students entered in 1885, under official arrangement with the government at Chile. There had been individual students from other countries graduate previously. Mr. Alvarado, one of the students from Chile, was elected by his government as a professor in the College of Santiago. Mr. Lopez, another from Chile, was appointed superintendent of schools for the northern provinces of Chile, after both had graduated from the Bridgewater Normal School. In 1896, five young men came from the State of Coahuila, Mexico, with Professor Andrés Osuna, one of the instructors in the normal school in Coahuila, and all six took the two years' course.

The Albert Gardner Boyden Memorial Gymnasium, as it was officially named by the Board of Education, was the last building erected under Mr. Boyden's direction. He resigned as principal August 1, 1906, and at the same time was appointed principal emeritus. He was succeeded by his son, Arthur Clarke Boyden, who had been vice-principal of the school for a number of years.

On the occasion of Mr. Boyden's eightieth birthday, a dinner was given in his honor at the Walpole Town Hall, Mr. Boyden having been born in that town and retaining throughout his fourscore years many friendships. Masters or sub-masters in the Boston schools, who had been pupils of Mr. Boyden, numbered sixty and were well represented. Congratulatory letters were received from President Theodore Roosevelt of the United States, Governor Curtis Guild of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, President Charles W. Eliot of Harvard University, and many others.

In 1907 Principal-emeritus Boyden presented to the normal school nearly two acres of land adjoining the campus for a natural science garden. In September, 1906, a new department of biology and school gardening was established. In 1910 an eighty-four foot greenhouse was

erected in connection with the natural science garden, a gift of Mrs. Elizabeth R. Stevens of Swansea, who graduated from the school in 1872. In 1911 "Woodward Hall," a dormitory adjoining South Field, erected at a cost of \$175,000, was ready and immediately the accommodations for one hundred and sixty-eight students were taken. In 1916 old Normal Hall, erected in 1869, was torn down and a modern brick building erected in its place, at a cost of \$237,000. The new building furnished the best modern facilities for a refectory with administration offices and reference library on the first floor and a large dining hall, service rooms and a dormitory.

The seventy-fifth anniversary of the founding of the normal school was observed June 19, 1915, with a pageant depicting the history of the school. Mr. Boyden had taken much interest in the preparations but he did not live to witness their culmination. He passed away May 30, 1915, but had been privileged to continue his teaching until very near the end.

When the Bridgewater Normal School was started there were only fourteen high schools in the State. The number nearly reached two hundred and fifty before Mr. Boyden's resignation as principal after forty-six years' service. Three hundred schools were in one year broken up by the insubordination of pupils, in those early years of education in Massachusetts, and enemies of the public school system continued their attacks until the Civil War. In 1860 there was a petition to the Legislature to abolish the school fund, the normal and high schools and the town system, but these petitioners were given leave to withdraw and this was the last serious attack of enemies of education in the Commonwealth which gave it birth in America.

At the seventy-fifth anniversary of the Bridgewater Normal School in 1916 there were among its graduates, thirty-five normal and training school principals, one hundred and fifty normal school teachers, one hundred and twenty-five superintendents and supervisors, one hundred and fifty-five high school teachers, fifty-eight masters of Boston grammar schools, two hundred masters of other large city grammar schools, twenty-eight teachers in colleges, two State superintendents, six agents of the State Board of Education, nine hundred and fifty-one men graduates with an average of thirteen years of teaching to their credit, 3,635 women graduates with an average teaching service of eight and six-tenths years, the whole number of years of teaching reaching the aggregate of 43,616 years. These facts are taken from a memorial volume concerning "Albert Gardner Boyden and the Bridgewater State Normal School," by Arthur Clarke Boyden, A. M., the present principal.

Many other facts mentioned in this story of the school are also taken from that work "done in loving memory of an honored father," by a worthy successor, of whom the late principal-emeritus wrote at the



time of his resigning the principalship: "I am greatly pleased that my son is to be my successor in the principalship, which gives the assurance that the school will move in the same spirit that has dominated it from the beginning, and with equally high ideals." This prediction has been fulfilled and the present principal, Arthur Clarke Boyden, graduated from the school in 1871, made an instructor in 1879, vice principal in 1898 and principal in 1906, is deserving of the honor of being classed with the three other principals, all four remarkable educators and leaders of men, Nicholas Tillinghast, Marshall Conant and Albert Gardner Boyden.

Principal Arthur C. Boyden, "Mr. Arthur" as he was affectionately called in his years as instructor, arranged for the World's Fair at St. Louis, an exhibit of the work done in the Model School in nature study. He had been an enthusiast on nature-work for twenty-five years and was the leading exponent of the subject in Massachusetts. The nature study movement was then at its height and the Bridgewater Normal School was taking a leading position in its development. Mr. Boyden was then an instructor. The exhibit received the grand prize at the St. Louis exposition and concerning it one of the educational papers said: "While it is true that the West is more strongly represented than the East, the exhibit from the State Normal School at Bridgewater is preëminently the fullest and richest and the most carefully prepared nature-work in the whole educational exhibit."

In the years of the Civil War, between 1861 and 1864, thirty-two per cent of the whole number of young men enrolled as students in the normal school entered the army. There were one hundred and fifteen names on the honor roll of the school, sixty-nine officers and forty-six privates. Of this number twelve gave their lives. James Henry Schneider, first assistant to the principal, was one of those who enlisted, was made chaplain of his regiment and died of yellow fever in Florida in 1864.

In the World War there were fifty-seven stars on the school service flag. Four gave their lives: Robert E. Pellissier, a sergeant, killed in action at the Somme, August 9, 1916; Jesse S. P. Matossian and Armenag Chamichian, victims of the Turkish atrocities on the Armenians; and Harold R. Blake, who died of spinal meningitis in France. An ambulance was contributed in memory of Sergeant Pellissier. It reached the front in September, 1917, on its errand of mercy. Those who remained in the school engaged in all the activities of those days and over \$1,900 was contributed for relief funds.

A few years ago a disastrous fire wiped out some of the buildings and there was talk of moving the normal school to some other town in the State, on the claim that the water supply did not afford adequate protection against a repetition of such a loss. Arrangements were made

to provide against insufficient water service in the future and the new buildings furnish ideal and safe accommodations for the commendable purposes of the institution.

The Bridgewater State Normal School was one of the three public normal schools which were created by the Massachusetts State Board of Education in 1838. The first was opened at Lexington, July 3, 1839, in the building which was erected for the Lexington Academy, overlooking Lexington Common, the battleground of the Lexington minute-men in the American Revolution. The building is still standing, although it has been considerably changed by remodelling. The second normal school was opened at Barre, September 4, 1839; and the third was the Bridgewater Normal School which was opened September 9, 1840. This group of three were the forerunners of one hundred and twenty-seven State normal schools and State teachers' colleges which are now established in the United States. The school first opened at Lexington is now located at Framingham.

It is stated in "The First State Normal School in America," made up somewhat from the journals of Cyrus Pierce and Mary Swift, with an introduction by Arthur O. Norton, that "a bitter controversy raged about these institutions during their early years, and especially during the years 1839-1842. They had been established after a fourteen-year campaign by the friends of public education, to meet the desperate need of competent teachers for the district schools of the State. Similar institutions had long been successful in Prussia, and they had been established recently in France. Their success in Massachusetts was uncertain; hence they were set up at first merely as a three-year experiment. A powerful group of enemies in the State and in the Legislature were determined to abolish these schools without delay, and lost no time in moving to the attack. Misrepresentation and abusive attacks in the newspapers, and propaganda in the Legislature, were employed against the normal schools. In Horace Mann's phrase 'Ignorance, bigotry and economy were arrayed against them.'"

When the normal school was opened in Bridgewater there were less than twenty high schools established in the State. The ungraded district schools were, with few exceptions, the only public schools there were. A few communities had schools graded as primary, grammar and high schools but these were rare exceptions. Railroads in the State were very few. Most travel was by stagecoach, horseback or by chaise or other form of vehicle. The State had been largely devoted to agriculture, with sea-faring in the counties from Cape Ann to Buzzards Bay. It was rapidly changing to a manufacturing State but the time had not arrived for large centres of population demanding graded schools sufficiently to have the general public think much about them.

Among those interested in the establishment of normal schools, that



instruction of the young might be carried on much better, were members of that distinguished group of thinkers at Concord, known as the Transcendentalists, such men as Ralph Waldo Emerson, Henry D. Thoreau, Nathaniel Hawthorne and A. Bronson Alcott. The latter was one of the most progressive teachers of his time. He conducted a private school in Boston from 1834 to 1839 which was many years ahead of the times.

It may be necessary to remind some of the people of the present generation that he was the father of the four "Little Women" mentioned in the book of that title written by his daughter, Louisa Alcott, and which was considered a part of the education of every girl fifty years ago to be familiar with. She also wrote "Little Men," the scene of which was a school for boys located in Plymouth. It is one of the interesting reminiscences of the early normal schools how A. Bronson Alcott lectured on "Transcendentalism" before the pupils and how few, even after his patient instruction, knew what it was all about.

Rev. Cyrus Pierce, the first principal of the normal school at Lexington, was, at the time of his selection for the position, teaching school at Nantucket.





## CHAPTER XXIX

### SUBURBAN LIFE AT ITS BEST.

**One City and Twenty-six Towns Enjoy the Best in American Institutions, Industries and Achievements—The Doorway of Freedom Swings Open to Unusual Prosperity and Happiness—Shoemaking an Important Industry from Earliest Times—Raising of Poultry an Ever-increasing Major Vocation—Pen Pictures of the Towns and Mention of Their Important Distinctions.**

Many histories have been written of the various towns, giving in detail the struggles of the early churches, industries, organization and growth of the societies of all kinds, leading up to a virtual directory of all of these things, lists of officers, past officers, property, activities and plans for the future. Many of these histories were written in the days when directories were seldom if ever published of their respective localities and such information, although a short time caused it to be obsolete, was more legitimate than now. No attempt will be made in the references to the towns to go into details concerning these personnels and annals. Rather facts will be printed of the latest information available to give means of comparisons, to show the relative importance of the different towns in the make-up of the county.

The writer does not consider it his assignment to write a Doomsday book, like a diary of events in Southeastern Massachusetts from the birth of Snorri to the bedtime story of last night. Neither is it his conviction that a history of three counties should be too much given to small town gossip of no interest outside the confines of the respective small towns. The beginnings of the various towns were much alike—gathering iron ore, providing for the herring fisheries, building meeting-houses, paying bounties for killing crows and blackbirds, shooting Indians and keeping out of the stocks or pillory, if one could possibly do so.

Later, when the country became governed by lawyers instead of ministers, wars came and the citizenry responded patriotically, every town nobly bore its brunt of the hardships of service. Rapid transit and new means for transportation were demanded and farmers left their ploughs to become manufacturers as well as to go to war. Whatever new conditions required, all the towns arose to the emergency and fitted into the new scheme of life. Consequently this volume departs somewhat from the old classics, generalizes in places where some others have itemized, and fails to plead guilty of being either an echo or a directory.

Before proceeding to take up each town in the county and present the local history which makes that town an important and interesting member of the group which makes up the county, it may be understood that the history is written in reverse order to the usual procedure. In nearly all histories, it has been the rule to begin at the beginning, telling when the town was incorporated and leading the reader through all its vicissitudes until the reader finds himself once more set down in the twentieth century where he was when he started. Perhaps that is the better way. At least it has the merit of convention and long-continuance and, naturally, satisfies the person who argues that the egg was before the hen, therefore the first inspection is due the shell and contents and one should perforce be compelled to grow up with the country.

On the other hand when you visit a new town in your motor car is it not your preference, as well as usual custom, to look over the town in all its grown-up appearance, before asking the guide to take you to the site of the home of the first inhabitant, or possibly to the scene of the activities of the aborigines?

Some superficial person asked "Of what use is a baby?" and the thoughtful person replied, "He might grow to be a man." When you are introduced to a real personage, do you have any pronounced longing to be shown his baby picture before you look him over as he appears since he has arrived at distinction?

Before you have a chance to say "Ask me another," and wonder why all the queries, let us understand one another. The facts or descriptions of the towns, as here projected, begin with their present appearance and fame and then hark back to the historical background. If to some this be questionable didacticism, it is the belief of the writer that it will be pleasing to others, and everyone has the privilege of reading the last chapter first in any book or the last paragraph first in this, if such be his choice.

### ABINGTON

**Abington Shod Half an Army**—Like that of Abou Ben Adhem, the name of Abington is bound to lead all the rest in any list of towns of Plymouth County or Massachusetts, if the alphabet is to determine the line of succession. It is not alone alphabetically that the town of Abington has, however, had that distinction in the history of Plymouth County. There was a time when it was the town having the largest population. During the Civil War it not only led all other towns in the county in its production of army shoes, but it furnished nearly half of the shoes worn by the entire Union army. Other distinctions which the town has had and some which it possesses at present, will appear as the story of the town progresses.



According to the two hundred and fourteenth annual report of the officers and committees of the town of Abington for the year 1926, the town had under its feet 5,960 acres of land. On this foundation were 1,343 dwellings and living in them were 2,341 voters.

Abington's total real estate value is \$4,435,650. The value of personal estate is \$769,168. The town spends \$3,500 for police protection; \$12,000 to maintain its fire department; \$50,000 for general highways, exclusive of those of State and county; \$10,000 for the support of its poor; \$6,000 for street lighting; \$66,000 for teachers' salaries; \$5,000 for its public library; \$45,000 for its water department. It has proportionate governmental expenses, consistent with those interesting items, which furnish more or less of an index by which a stranger can form an intelligent idea of what manner of town Abington is.

The year 1926 was one of special significance in the history of the school department, as, at the end of the first two months of the year, the old form of school administration closed. Dr. R. B. Rand, who had served as a member of the school board continuously for thirty years, resigned. Since 1908 he had acted as school physician for the Adams Street School. He was held in high esteem by all with whom he came in contact.

Until 1926 Abington had a part-time superintendent of schools, C. A. Record, who held that position, also being principal of the Dunbar Street School. He was made full time superintendent, and Miss Claire A. Crowley succeeded him as principal.

The Abington High School enjoys a certificate privilege to the State Normal schools, special certificate to Dartmouth College, as well as a certificate privilege to all those New England colleges which are represented by the New England College Certificate Board. The privilege also allows the school committee to certify through the Board of Regents of the State of New York as well as through the South, the North Central and other certificate groups.

An athletic association was organized in the Abington High School in 1925, and the last important act of the old school board in 1926 was to appoint Charles M. Frolio and C. F. Christianson faculty directors of this association.

In common with sixty-four public high schools in Massachusetts, the town of Abington has deans for girls. Miss Ella F. Wood is dean for girls and faculty advisor for the school paper. She also teaches four periods of English. As dean she follows up academic work which is unsatisfactory, instructs the girls in manners, conduct, good taste in dress, health and relationship with parents. The school department also employs two truant officers, two school physicians, a school nurse, supervisor of drawing, physical supervisor, dental hygienist and school nurse. The town adopted at the annual meeting in March, 1926, the State

Accountant System, which was immediately installed and placed under the care of John Shanahan for a term of three years. By virtue of this system there has been a stoppage of overdrawn accounts and a stimulation in the collection of outstanding accounts.

In order to give the stranger another side to a word picture of Abington, it might be mentioned that there were seventy-two marriages registered in 1926. Seventy-nine births were registered for the same time, and ninety-five deaths. The people of Abington have paid little regard to the threescore years and ten limitation in human life as, of the ninety-five deaths, thirty-four had passed the age of seventy. The oldest, Susan W. Nelson, lacked less than twenty-four hours of being 94 years of age.

The total taxable valuation of Abington is approximately \$5,000,000, according to the assessors.

The present Fire Department is in its forty-fifth year. At the beginning of the present year the manual force consisted of one permanent man and forty-one call men, exclusive of a volunteer call company at West Abington. The apparatus consists of one Seagrave 750-gallon triple combination and one Pope-Hartford combination chemical and hose car, located at the Brighton Street Station; one Seagrave combination ladder truck with Locomobile tractor attached and one Reo hose car, located at the Dunbar Street Station; and one Ford hose car located at the Hancock Street Station. The department has 3,650 feet of double jacket hose and 1,300 feet of single jacket. The fire alarm system consists of one Gamewell three-circuit switchboard and storage battery, one motor generator set, one steam whistle, two bells, two tape registers, twelve tappers, thirty street boxes and about thirty miles of wire. The forest warden has hand pump tanks, brooms, shovels and other equipment for forest fire fighting, as in some recent years as many as sixty grass and brush fires have called for the use of such implements.

**The Abington Public Library** has for half a century been a valuable asset on the educational side of the town. The Central Library had 15,592 volumes at the beginning of 1927, and the branch library, called the North Library, 9,150. Both coöperate with the public schools and the general student body of the town in furnishing supplementary reading. Art exhibits, scenic views of public parks and mountain trails, story hours and lectures are additional means of educational value furnished the public. The average daily delivery of books, both libraries being taken into account, last year was 149, for the 303 days the libraries were open.

The library work is assisted by two small funds, both for the North Library, the First Unitarian Fund and the Blanche Arnold Sylvester Fund. The latter was a recent gift from Mrs. William B. Arnold, the in-



terest to be used in the Department of Fine Arts with particular reference to painting and music.

**The Water Department** has its pumping station in Pembroke at Great Sandy Bottom Pond and its standpipe in Rockland, on Beech Hill. There is a joint water board of Abington and Rockland and it has before it a report of the State Department, which indicated the advisability of the joint board taking some step towards securing a ground supply either near Great Sandy Bottom Pond or nearer the two towns. For a number of years the Massachusetts Board of Health has advocated taking some steps to protect the water shed, since the number of summer cottages in that area is constantly increasing. There were, January 1, 1927, sixty cottages about the pond, and the cottagers enjoyed boating and fishing privileges, under rules of the Great Sandy Improvement Association.

Just beyond Great Sandy Bottom Pond is Little Sandy Bottom Pond and water from the latter flows into the former. Mayflower Grove and its amusement park, and a large number of cottages are on the shore of the smaller pond. These conditions are taken into consideration in the problem for a future water supply for the two towns. At present the analysis is satisfactory.

There were 3,326 water services in the two towns at the beginning of 1927, and the water rates totalled \$49,596. The joint board employed J. J. Van Valkenburgh of Framingham as consulting engineer to make a survey of the water works system in West Abington and advise as to the best method to adopt for improving the same. He recommended that an elevated steel tank of about 125,000 gallons capacity be erected, the top to have an elevation the same as that of the steel standpipe on Beech Hill.

**Town Officers**—At the annual town meeting in March, 1927, the town appropriations exceeded \$200,000. The officers elected for that year were: Town clerk, William J. Coughlan; selectmen and overseers of the poor, John Shanahan, Ira E. Wright and Howard W. Belcher; town accountant (appointed by selectmen) John Shanahan, term expires April 1, 1929; treasurer, George D. Witherell; tax collector, Frank A. Erickson; assessors, Everett D. Wilkes, William C. Brett and Clarence C. Somes; school committee, Belle F. Burnham, Stephen G. Stone, Mary W. Gomley, William H. Whiting, William J. Sheehan and George F. Garrity; superintendent of schools (appointed by school committee) Christie A. Record; water commissioners, George E. Gomley, Harrison C. Witherell and Frank L. Merrill; trustees of public library, Mabel A. Record, Flora A. Wyman, Abby N. Arnold, Leon F. Fairbanks, Henry E. Claflin, Catherine F. Coughlan, Frank N. Sanderson; park commissioners, Thomas F. Lydon, William H. Nash and Raphael F. McKeown;

trustees of the soldiers, sailors and marines memorial, William G. W. Holloway, Charles C. Murphy, Arthur H. Gillis, William J. Coughlan, Willard H. Thayer and John Shanahan; constables (appointed police officers by selectmen) Henry W. Nickerson, Frank C. Bates, Thomas Dorsey, John H. Manley, John W. Gillis, John H. Murphy; chief of fire department and forest warden (permanent tenure) John L. Casey; superintendent of moth department, C. Fred Shaw (appointed by selectmen); surveyor of lumber and bark and measurer of wood, William H. Garfield; sealer of weights and measures (appointed by selectmen), William H. Garfield; registrar of voters (appointed by selectmen), Henry C. Morrison, William J. Reardon, Bradford C. Powers and William J. Coughlan; board of health, John Shanahan, Ira E. Wright and Howard W. Belcher; inspector of slaughtering and animals, Bernice V. Blanchard (appointed by Board of Health); burial agent (appointed by selectmen), C. Fred Shaw; town physicians (appointed by selectmen) Dr. Richard B. Rand and Dr. J. Frank Curtin.

**The Abington Visiting Nurse Association** is a useful organization which holds baby clinics at Legion Hall, as well as furnishing a nurse for community service. At the beginning of 1927 one hundred and forty-eight babies had been examined at the clinic, a lecture on the eye and ear had been given, with illustrations, and plans were underway for an adult foot clinic.

The nurse, Miss Jessie Rutherford, last March, a typical month, made 239 calls, of which 150 were pay calls and 89 free calls. She visited seven old cases and twenty-eight new ones. The annual contributions amount to about \$3,000.

The officers of the association for 1926-1927 were: President, Mrs. James Morse; vice-presidents, Mrs. Windsor Wyman and Mrs. Joseph B. Casey; corresponding secretary, Miss Lena Whitmarsh; recording secretary, Mrs. William H. Whiting; treasurer, Miss Amelia W. Dyer; auditor, Miss Annie Leavitt; directors, Miss Lillian Cook, Mrs. Alvah Barbour, Miss Mildred Hunt, Mrs. Clarence Peterson, Mrs. S. M. White, Mrs. W. H. Lewis, Mrs. Thomas J. Griffin, Mrs. Thomas Lydon and Mrs. Mary W. Nash.

**Unusually Patriotic**—Reference has been made to the fact that Abington was at one time the largest town in Plymouth County, in population. Incorporated June 10, 1712, having previously been a part of Bridgewater, the town of Abington had only been in existence fifteen years when a part of it was taken in the new town of Hanover. March 31, 1847, the bounds between Abington and Weymouth were established. March 21, 1861, the bounds between Abington and Randolph were established; also on the same day the bounds between Abington and Hingham. March 9, 1874, a part of the town was established as the town of



Rockland. March 4, 1875, a part was included in the new town of South Abington, now Whitman. The month of March seems to have been the time for territory to be taken away from Abington on several occasions.

Regardless of the major operations which Abington has endured at times, it has always retained its patriotic fervor and integrity as a member of the Plymouth County family of towns. The town is associated, in the minds of many people, with the meetings of abolitionists which were held in Island Pond Grove, in the days when to speak against the institution of slavery was not only an unpopular but a dangerous proceeding. In all the wars the town has responded promptly and generously, and, at the close of the Civil War, the third Grand Army Post to be organized in Plymouth County was McPherson Post, No. 73, Department of Massachusetts, Grand Army of the Republic. It is named in honor of Major-General James Birdseye McPherson who was killed while superintending an advance of the skirmish line in the battle before Atlanta. He stood at the head of his class in West Point when graduating in 1853. The post was organized December 23, 1868. The charter members were F. P. Harlow, Charles F. Allen, E. P. Reed, W. B. White, T. S. Atwood, F. Foster, Jr., S. W. Bennett, Jr., Josiah Soule, Jr., H. L. Cushing and Henry B. Peirce. The latter was a lineal descendant of Captain Michael Peirce of Scituate, who was sent out by the governor and council of Plymouth in 1676, to stay the ravages of the Narragansett Indians and drive them back to Rhode Island. The command consisted of fifty first-comers in Plymouth and vicinity and twenty friendly Indians. They had a battle with the Narragansetts at Attleboro Gore and continued the desperate fight until Captain Peirce and every one of his command were killed.

Henry B. Peirce was assistant adjutant general of the Grand Army of the Department of Massachusetts for five years until he was elected secretary of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in 1875. He was re-elected to that office many times, the vote which he received in the election in 1880 being the largest ever received by any candidate for any office in Massachusetts up to that time. In 1870 Mr. Peirce was appointed a member of the commission for the care of disabled soldiers, and became secretary and treasurer of the commission.

Other charter members and early members of McPherson Post were prominent in the affairs of the Grand Army departmental affairs as well as in the local purposes of the organization. For many years it was the custom of McPherson Post to go into camp each year, in the vicinity of Brant Rock in Marshfield, a custom which was originated by the Abington Boys of '61 and taken up by numerous other posts in their younger days.

McPherson Post was one of the first to invite a woman to be Memorial Day orator. Mrs. Mary A. Livermore of Melrose, delivered the ora-

tion in 1872. This reformer, philanthropist, orator and writer, was greatly appreciated in Plymouth County. Previous to the Civil War she taught school in Virginia and attempted to teach the Negroes during her leisure hours but was not permitted to do so. She left Virginia and opened a school in Duxbury, in this county, and was also for a time teacher in the Partridge Academy in that town.

Mrs. Livermore was one of the founders and an active worker in the Sanitary Commission which did such magnificent work in the Civil War. Mrs. Livermore was sent to the front with stores for the hospitals. While coming from a camp in front of Vicksburg she made her first public address in one of the largest churches in Dubuque, Iowa, telling of the needs of the boys in the camps. This meeting was arranged by a chance acquaintance to whom she told her story on the train. He persuaded her to stop at Dubuque and tell the story to some friends of his. While she was resting at a hotel he secured the church, flooded the city with fliers, inviting the whole city to hear the story. That was the beginning of her brilliant platform work in the interest of the soldiers, woman's suffrage, temperance and many other causes for the benefit of humanity.

McPherson Post at one time contained one hundred and eighty-one names, representing sixty-seven distinct military organizations and twelve ships of war. The post observed its fifty-seventh anniversary January 31, 1927, with a banquet and entertainment at Grand Army Hall. It was also a celebration of the twenty-seventh anniversary of McPherson Woman's Relief Corps, the faithful auxiliary to the post. At that time there were only ten members of the post living and eight of them were at the celebration. They were: Comrades Calvin Baker, Charles W. Howland, James B. Johnson, Harvey Edson, Isaac K. Holmes, Albion Conant, Willard Gurney and John F. Hatch, the latter commander of the post. The two comrades unable to be present were William H. Nash and Henry T. Rochefort.

Among the members of the Woman's Relief Corps present was Mrs. M. Augusta Murray, the oldest woman in the town.

At the annual town meeting in March, 1927, James B. Johnson, a member of the post, suggested rechristening Lincoln street, Lincoln Highway, as a memorial to the war president. Comrade Johnson was a member of the personal body guard of President Abraham Lincoln. A committee, consisting of Charles E. Ford, commander of the Sons of Veterans Camp; Joseph Holman, commander of Lewis V. Dorsey Post, Spanish War Veterans; Mrs. Annie Collins, president of the Legion Auxiliary; Mrs. Willis Caulkins, president of the Sons of Veterans' Auxiliary; and Mrs. Blanche Damon, president of the Woman's Relief Corps, was appointed to confer with Comrade Johnson regarding the possibilities of a suitable Lincoln Memorial.



The town has a Legion Home and Legion Field for athletics, as a memorial to the soldiers, sailors and marines who served the country in war. The memorial trustees are William J. Coughlin, William G. W. Halloway, Arthur H. Gillis and John Shanahan.

A company from Abington was one of those that within twenty-four hours after the first call for 75,000 men, were on their way to Fortress Monroe. More than a full regiment, 1,138, from this town enlisted during the war. The town furnished more than its quota of officers: Two lieutenant-colonels, three majors, twelve captains, seven first lieutenants, twelve second lieutenants.

**Churches in Early Times**—The records of the first church, earlier than 1724, cannot be found. At that time there were 46 members. The first house of worship stood in front of the old burying-ground. It had neither steeple, bell, nor pews. The second edifice was erected in 1751; the third in 1819; and another in 1849. The pastors were Samuel Brown, 1714-1749; Ezekiel Dodge, 1750-1770; Samuel Niles, 1771-1814; Holland Weeks, 1815-1820; Samuel Spring, Jr., 1822-1826; William Shedd, 1829-1830; Melancthon G. Wheeler, 1831-1833; James W. Ward, 1834-1856; F. R. Abbe, 1857.

The second parish was formed in 1807, of inhabitants of South Abington and East Bridgewater, after strenuous opposition. The house of worship was dedicated and Rev. Daniel Thomas was ordained in 1808, dismissed in 1842. Dennis Powers was minister eight years; Selden Hayes, and Alfred Goldsmith, one year each. H. L. Edwards, was installed in 1855.

The third church was formed at the house of Samuel Reed, August 27, 1813. Pastors: Samuel W. Colburn, 1813-1830; Lucius Alden, 1832-1834; Horace D. Walker, ordained in 1844.

The first Baptist Church was constituted October 30, 1822, with eleven members. The settlements have been: Willard Kimball, 1824-1826; David Curtis, 1826-1828; Silas Hall, 1830-1834; W. H. Dalrymple, 1835-1837; E. C. Messenger, 1837-1845; W. F. Stubbett, 1846-1852; Nath'l Colver, D. D., 1852-1853; Horace T. Love, 1853-1854; F. A. Willard, 1854-1856; J. C. Wightman, 1857-1858; N. Judson Clark, 1860.

The First Society of the New Jerusalem was organized in 1830, though Rev. Holland Weeks, pastor of the First Congregational Church was the first receiver of the doctrines, and began to preach them in 1820. In 1838, Joseph Pettee was ordained pastor.

The First Universalist Society dates its first meeting April 6, 1836. Thompson Barron was the first pastor, Mr. Hewitt, 1840-1845; Q. H. Howe, 1845-1846; Leander Hussey, 1846-1848; J. Whittier, 1848-1849; N. Gunnison, 1850-1853; E. S. Foster, 1855-1856; V. Lincoln, 1857-1869; J. Crehore, 1860.

The Congregational Church, North Abington, was organized October 3, 1839, with 49 members. Pastors: Willard Peirce, 1840-1850; Isaac C. White, 1850-1869; William Leonard and Benjamin Dodge.

The Baptist Church in East Abington was organized in May, 1854, with 22 members. Pastors: Horace T. Love, William P. Everett, William S. McKensie, Jeremiah Chaplain, D. D., and Sereno Howe.

The Catholic Church was organized in 1854 by Rev. Fr. Roddan. In 1856, Rev. Fr. Roche was appointed. The church edifice, capable of seating more people than any similar building in the county, "was consecrated by the Right Rev. Bishop McFarland, of Hartford, under the invocation of St. Bridget, Patroness of Ireland."

The semi-centennial celebration of the town was held June 10, 1862, at Island Grove, the oration being delivered by Rev. E. Porter Dyer. Fifty soldiers of the War of 1812 appeared in procession, together with Bands, Military, Masonic, Sons of Temperance, and Public School organizations.

**Inventor of Tack Machine**—At its corporation in 1710, the town had probably less than 300 inhabitants, only three times the number Plymouth had, when, ninety years before, the Pilgrims had landed. At the first census in 1726, the number had increased only to 371.

At that period and long afterwards it was for the surrounding country a "lumbering region." Sawmills were erected in 1698, and the settlers looked to Hingham, Scituate, Hanover, Duxbury, Plymouth, where ships were built and commerce and trade prospered, as the old and wealthy towns upon which they depended for a market and supplies. The renowned frigate Constitution, "Old Ironsides," was built in great part of Abington white oak.

"Tacks," still an important item in the business of the town, were early made by hand, and a citizen, Jesse Reed, invented the machine which has given the business such impulse. Melvil Otis of Bridgewater had a share in the invention and later improvements were made by Thomas Blanchard of Springfield and Samuel Rogers of East Bridgewater. The patent rights of these inventions were sold to Elihu and Benjamin Hobart, for a considerable sum for those days, said to be \$30,000. One man could make as many tacks in a day as fifteen men by the old hand method.

About this time the invention was stolen by some people who had it patented in England and tacks sent back here for sale. Complaint was made to the government and a protective tariff fixed, the importation of tacks being taxed at five cents per thousand, up to sixteen ounces to the thousand; after that at five cents per pound. Without this protection the business in this country would have been ruined, as iron and labor were cheaper in England.



The industrious inhabitants early engaged in boot and shoemaking and it has been an important industry in the town ever since.

**First Pastor Owned Pious Slaves**—The ecclesiastical history of the town, in its earliest time, is not known with certainty, beyond the fact that the first pastor was Rev. Samuel Brown and that he arrived December 8, 1711, and was ordained November 17, 1714. There were eight original members: Rev. Samuel Brown, William Hersey, Andrew Ford, William Tirrell, Ebenezer Whitmarsh, Joseph Josselyn, William Reed and Joseph Lincoln, among the men, and presumably as many women. This is not known, but in 1724, when the church membership numbered forty-six, more than half of them were women.

In accordance with the custom in those days, Rev. Samuel Brown was a slave owner, five of them, Tony, Cuff, Kate, Flora and Betty, all living to be eighty or more years of age. Tony is said to have lived more than one hundred years and, after the death of Rev. Mr. Brown, became the property of Josiah Torrey. Mr. Torrey married the widow of the Rev. Mr. Brown and Tony was a part of her estate. Many stories are told of this slave's strength, also his piety. He and Flora were admitted as members of the church.

Abington had several men in the French and Indian War. There is a record of the General Court under date of December 28, 1763, which reads: "There was presented a petition of Elisha Hersey and sixty others, all of Abington, who had been in His Majesty's service in the late wars, praying for a grant of land for a township, eastward of the Penobscot River, in consideration of their services rendered."

Among others who died in the service in that war was David Dwight, son of Tony, the slave of Rev. Samuel Brown already referred to. Another Abington boy, Job Tirrell, son of Samuel Tirrell, was killed by the Indians while crossing Lake Ontario in a bateau.

Resolutions were passed at a town meeting March 10, 1770, which show that the people of Abington were early aroused against the tyranny of the mother country. These resolutions were drawn up by Joseph Greenleaf and published in the "Boston Gazette." Among officers from this town in the Continental Army were Captain Jacob Poole, Captain Luke Bicknell, Lieutenant John Ford and Surgeon David Jones, Jr.

The spirit of '76 survived in the descendants of Revolutionary stock and was equally apparent in those who were later arrivals on these shores and their descendants. The town gave a good account of itself in the War of 1812, and was especially responsive at the outbreak of the Civil War, as might be expected from a town in which were staged so many of the gatherings of abolitionists. Island Grove Park was the scene of many such gatherings, long before the general public was ready

to accept William Lloyd Garrison, Charles Sumner, Wendell Phillips and many others heard there, as any better than dangerous agitators.

Island Grove Park was purchased by the town as a park in 1882. It contains about fourteen acres. The present park commissioners are Thomas F. Lydon, William H. Nash and Raphael McKeown.

**Casting of Meeting-house Bells**—It is believed that the first meeting-house bells cast in this country were cast at the foundry of Colonel Aaron Hobart in Abington. A bell founder was employed by Colonel Hobart. He was a deserter from the British Army. An advertisement appeared in a Boston newspaper in 1769, in which Colonel Hobart offered the services of his foundry for casting bells. The editor of the paper commented upon the offer, saying that it was "a very fortunate circumstance that bells could now be cast in this country, and that we need not be obliged to send to England for them." The time was at hand when sending for England for things was becoming vexatious.

When Colonel Hobart gave up the business of casting bells, one of his sons and a blacksmith taught Paul Revere to mould and cast the first bell which became a product of the work of that noted character in Revolutionary history.

There was a demand for cannon for merchant ships to go out as privateers. Pig iron and coal were furnished by the government and, after some experimenting and the assistance of a Frenchman who had worked in a cannon factory in France, a product was turned out which was effective. The business was later taken over by the government and removed to Bridgewater, under care of Colonel Hugh Orr.

In addition to boot and shoemaking which Abington, in common with many other towns in the country, had made its chief industry from the days of the factory system, the making of overshoes and moccasins was an important industry in the early forties. Major Joseph Hunt began making overshoes from buffalo-skin in 1840. They were long-legged boots, with the hair on the inside and no leather sole. Later a sole was added, also leather foxing. About 30,000 pairs a year were manufactured by Major Hunt and his brother, Colonel Thomas J. Hunt. The boots were warm and much in demand, especially for those who rode horseback.

In 1852 Albert Chamberlain improved the making of the boots by machine sewing and in 1853 he received an award from the Massachusetts Charitable Mechanics' Association for the greatest improvement made in manufacture and for the best fur-lined boots, shoes and overshoes.

Buffalo robes were made in Abington and in some other towns in Plymouth County. Half a century ago many of the robes were still in existence, much the worse for wear, but they are as scarce in this vicinity now as Navajo blankets.



Lasts were first manufactured in this town about 1850. Leonard P. Arnold and Captain Bela Smith were pioneers in that industry, which became an important one hereabouts, in spite of efforts to control the wood-turning business, making it necessary for a time to send to Canada for turned blocks.

**Ship Outlived Live Oak Forests**—When, in 1927, it became necessary to replace some of the ribs of "Old Ironsides," it would have been a matter of much satisfaction to the people of Abington if the "live" oak timbers had again been supplied from the same forests which served the "Constitution" so many years. Abington and vicinity is no longer renowned for its "ship timber" and for its sawmills and lumbering, as was the case when the American Navy was an infant. The shots from the British Frigate "Guerriere" in the War of 1812 were unable to damage the Abington "Live" oak, out of which the "Constitution" was constructed, to keep up the traditions of the British Navy, but it made history for the new American nation.

The rebuilding of the famous war vessel was with specially prepared timber, sent from the Naval Air Station at Pensacola, Florida. It was selected from fifteen carloads which were brought to Boston on one of the Boston & Maine fast freight trains.

Captain Clayton M. Simmers, U. S. N., officer in charge of the work of restoring the "Constitution," received the shipment from Harrison Brown, general agent of the Boston & Maine. The railroad took unusual care of these timbers on the trip north. The lumber had been submerged in water at Pensacola for many years as a means of retaining for ships of the American Navy the special qualities of the live oak. It was essential that the wood should not be allowed to dry before it was shaped on the sides of the frigate "Constitution" and accordingly the Boston & Maine and participating railroads saw to it that the timbers were wet down at least every three days en route.

Then they were put in place beside other live oak, grown in the Abington forest, which had passed through two wars and withstood the ravages of time for one hundred and thirty-four years.

Commodore Isaac Hull, commander of the "Constitution" in the battle with the "Guerriere," was in command of the Charlestown Navy Yard eighty-five years ago. Charles F. Read, clerk of the Bostonian Society, is a near relation of the commodore. He recalled recently, for the benefit of the society that Commodore Hull was accustomed, when dances were held at the Navy Yard, to request Mr. Read's mother to send a good-sized delegation of young women over there, with the warning: "Don't send any men; we have enough of them already."

There is a tradition that, before the battle with the "Guerriere," following a custom of those days, grog was served to the crew of the "Con-

stitution," but that the crew refused to partake until after the anticipated victory, declaring that "Americans don't need no rum to enable them to fight Britishers."

**Sliced to Form Other Towns**—Fifty years ago a part of the description of Abington, written by Rev. Elias Nason, in "A Gazetteer of the State of Massachusetts," referred to it as "an important and flourishing boot and shoe-manufacturing town in the north-westerly part of Plymouth County, having an area of about twenty-five square miles, with Holbrook, Weymouth, and Hingham on the northwest; South Scituate, Hanover and Hanson on the east; the latter and East Bridgewater on the south, and North Bridgewater on the west. It is twenty miles south-east of Boston by the Old Colony Railroad, which accommodates three villages, North Abington, the Centre, and South Abington; while the Hanover Branch Railroad affords communication with East Abington."

Perhaps as many changes have taken place in that small area of Massachusetts as in any which might be selected, so far as changes in names are concerned. A part was established as Rockland, once East Abington, March 9, 1874. March 4, 1875, the new town of South Abington was set apart, and May 3, 1886, the name was changed to Whitman. South Scituate changed its name to Norwell, March 5, 1888. North Bridgewater changed its name to Brockton, May 5, 1874. The Old Colony Railroad is seldom referred to now by that name, as it is being operated under a ninety-nine year lease by the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad Company. The Hanover branch is operated by electricity and with fewer trains than half a century ago.

There has been no change in the elevation of Beech Hill, however. It is still the highest land in the town. The water from Beech Hill Meadow on its east side flows through Scituate into the Atlantic Ocean, while from the pond on the west side of the hill, the water flows into Narragansett Bay. Abington forms the water shed between the North and Taunton rivers. The geological formation is sienite and carboniferous, with bog iron ore, blue slate and peat found in some localities. There are some two hundred farms in the town, with considerable fertile soil. The town is noted for its excellent strawberry crops.

**Blackbirds, Wild Cats and Women**—Some of the votes passed by the town years ago sound very quaint now. In 1716, Voted, "That every man sixteen years old, and upwards, shall kill twelve blackbirds or pay two shillings to the town charge, more than their part." In 1737, any person killing a wild cat was entitled to twenty shillings. In 1775, "That it was an indecent way, that the female sex do sit in their hats and bonnets, to worship God in his house, and offensive to many of the good people of this town." In 1793, all persons who allowed their dogs to go to meeting, were fined for breach of the Sabbath.



The principal streams are French's Stream, Hersey's River, Stream's River and Beaver Brook. In the angle between Abington, Norwell and Hingham, is Accord Pond, so called because of the amicable settlement of the boundaries between the towns. The bounds between Abington and Hingham were established March 21, 1861. Island Grove Pond, named for the historic Island Grove, is a beautiful sheet of water in the centre of the town; and more about it and the grove on its bank for which it was named is mentioned elsewhere.

About 6,000 acres of the town were in woodland in 1875, the principal growths being oak, maple, birch and pine. There were 14,000 apple trees in the town half a century ago. The soil is favorable for the growth of fruit trees and some celebrated nurseries have been located in the town for many years. Noted nurserymen, now doing business in other States, got their first start in Abington.

The Abington Mutual Fire Insurance Company was incorporated May 30, 1856, and was the second company of the kind in Plymouth County. The Hingham Mutual Fire Insurance Company insured buildings and household furniture but did not insure stock in trade, hay, grain or merchandise included in the buildings which it assumed as risks.

The first president of the Abington company was Baxter Cobb. John Newton Noyes was secretary. The directors were Asaph Dunbar, Thomas J. Hunt, William Brown, Zophar D. Ramsdell, Baxter Cobb, Jenkins Lane, Washington Reed, Joseph Cleverly and William P. Corthell.

The Abington Bank was incorporated April 8, 1850. Asaph Dunbar of Abington was president and J. N. Farrar of Boston, cashier. In July, 1865, it ceased to do business under the State laws and reorganized under United States laws and became the Abington National Bank.

The Abington Savings Bank was organized April 18, 1853, with Ezekiel Thaxter, president; Zibeon Packard, vice-president; and J. N. Farrar, treasurer.

### BRIDGEWATER

**Bridgewater an Iron Town**—Bridgewater, one of the handsomest residential towns in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, contains two important State institutions, the State Farm, and the Bridgewater State Normal School. It is the home of the Plymouth County Agricultural Society, which was organized in 1819, and, until the Brockton Agricultural Society started in 1874, was the largest agricultural organization and carried on the largest and most important outdoor fair in this part of the country.

It is a town with an interesting industrial history, especially in the iron industry, which early was introduced in the town and which was retained much longer than in most of the towns in this vicinity. It is the

parent town of Brockton, once the North Parish of Bridgewater, West Bridgewater, East Bridgewater and of the town of Bridgewater, as it now stands and which has for two hundred years frequently been referred to, for purposes of distinction as South Bridgewater, although no such name was actually adopted.

Ancient Bridgewater was formerly a plantation granted to Duxbury in 1645, on account of the fact that Marshfield was set apart from Duxbury and the men of Duxbury were entitled to some compensation, in the wisdom of the men of the Plymouth Colony.

The Bridgewater of the year of our Lord, 1927, doesn't differ substantially in general appearance from the neat, dignified, well shaded, thrifty, well-kept, prosperous town of half a century ago. It has kept pace with new inventions and improvements and has not lacked for enterprising, clear-thinking, straight-forward citizens. It should not be inferred that its remaining true to the same prominent characteristics denotes any lack of conformity to progressive ideas. Rather, the town is one of those in New England still "unspoiled," possessing a real character and entitled to congratulatory mention.

The living expenses of Bridgewater are somewhat over half of a million dollars a year and this sum furnishes the inhabitants considerable of the joy of living. The taxable property for the year 1926 amounted to \$5,350,912, the total real estate value being \$4,275,765, and the personal estate \$1,075,147. The gain in valuation during the year was \$288,830. The town assesses 14,900 acres of land, 2,341 voters and 1,328 dwellings.

The appropriation for schools for 1927 was \$114,000; for highways \$22,000; fire department, \$14,000; general government, \$11,000; speaking in round figures. The health work is well administered, the streets well lighted, the poor well cared for, there is an excellent public library, for which an appropriation of \$5,000 is made, and the town manages its affairs capably and harmoniously. These few facts give a general idea of what manner of town lies about equal distance from Boston on the north and New Bedford on the south, with Middleboro joining it on the south and Brockton, the nearest city, ten miles to the north.

The Fire Department of the town has been a popular branch of the public service for eighty-three years and some of the most useful citizens in the generations which have come and gone during those four-score and three years have "run with the machine" and been proud to take their part in protecting their own lives and property and those of their neighbors. The men chosen to have charge of the department October 7, 1844, the first year of the department, were: Chief engineer, Artemus Hale; clerk, Artemus Hale, Jr.; assistant engineers, Philip D. Kingman, Eli Washburn, Axel Dearborn and George W. Bates. Mr.



Hale had served the town as town clerk and treasurer, representative in the General Court, had been moderator at town meetings and was a representative citizen generally, and the other men were also men accustomed to doing their full share as good citizens.

In the days of hand engines the "Veto" and the "Ousamequin" did good service for many years and occasionally took part in the firemen's musters, which furnished a great deal of sport in the old days.

The first steam fire engine was purchased in November, 1883. A brick engine house, with accommodations for two engines and with a convenient hall for meetings and social purposes was provided and the department has kept up to date as new improvements in equipment have come along. The present apparatus consists of a White auto combination chemical and hose truck, one Maxim auto triple combination pump and hose truck, one combination and ladder truck, one chief's car, one hose sled and 3,000 feet of two and one-half inch hose, and all other appliances required by law and necessary to make the equipment effective. These are housed in the two-story brick building with a one-story addition and hose tower situated on School Street.

There are three companies of twelve men each, under Chief Engineer Frederick Waite, and Assistant Engineers Charles E. Marshall and Robert A. Price. There are thirty-one fire alarm boxes and 156 hydrants.

**Bequest for a Hospital**—If the town accepts the conditions incidental to the gift, it will have a modern hospital, with ample funds to operate the same, through the munificent gift of William H. Conant. According to the board of selectmen for 1927, Roland M. Keith, Leo F. Nourse and Walter E. Rhoades, as stated in their annual report, "The main bequest is now valued, as per the statement of the Boston Safe Deposit and Trust Company, at \$272,000, under the first indenture and a second one of \$162,000, which will not be available until after the last annuitant has passed on, but the first and main indenture of \$272,000 will be available on the death of William H. Conant's son.

"Under the provisions of the indentures above named the management of the hospital devolves upon the town, which will select a board of trustees for this purpose, but the handling and investing of the funds will be entirely in the hands of the Boston Safe Deposit and Trust Company."

For a town of the size and importance of Bridgewater, with its industries, a considerable distance from hospital service available in other cities and towns, such a munificent gift is greatly appreciated by the inhabitants.

The Conant family has contributed much to Bridgewater and this section of the country in general. The progenitor of the family in America, Roger Conant, landed at Plymouth from the ship "Ann," in 1623. His-

torians refer to him as a "pious, sober and prudent gentleman," but he was not of the communion of the Pilgrims, and found more congenial atmosphere in the vicinity of Cape Ann, and had charge of a settlement located on several islands in Gloucester Harbor. In 1626 he became the founder of Salem. He was the governor of the colony until the arrival of John Endicott, late in 1628.

The first of that family to come to Bridgewater was William Conant, a grandson of the progenitor of the family. In 1706 he bought land on the north bank of Satucket River, in what is now East Bridgewater, and built a house there which remained in use until it was taken down in 1811. He came here with his family from Beverly. One of his sons who lived in the house after the decease of William Conant, was David Conant, who had married the daughter of Benjamin Hayward, a grandson of Thomas Hayward, who came from England and was one of the original proprietors and first settlers of Bridgewater. This record of the family shows that the Conants were prominently connected with the beginnings of Bridgewater.

In later days, one of the family, Elias Conant, served in the Revolutionary War from this town. His son, Martin Conant, a farmer and shoemaker, moved to Lyme, New Hampshire, but Marcus Conant of the next generation (son of Martin Conant), although born in Lyme, New Hampshire, moved to the home of his ancestors in Bridgewater, engaged in the trades of wheelwright, millwright and carpenter, became connected with the important cotton gin manufacturing industry and helped make it a Bridgewater institution. His tombstone in Mount Prospect Cemetery in Bridgewater recites the fact that he died at the age of ninety-five years.

**Public Welfare and Water**—The public welfare work of Bridgewater, like most towns, is partly carried on at a town home or farm, and partly dispensed in the homes of those needing assistance or elsewhere in homes where they can be properly cared for. The town farm is valued some over \$6,000 and is under the care of Mr. and Mrs. Myron Amber, as superintendent and matron, respectively. They are successors to Mr. and Mrs. Frank R. Chadwick, who were in charge several years but resigned in 1926. At the time of the change in the management, extensive repairs were made to the home, making it a pleasant place for the small number of inmates. At the beginning of 1927 they numbered six, one less than were at the farm the previous year when outside aid was given to twenty-four who had settlements in Bridgewater, and thirty-five who had settlements elsewhere.

Bridgewater has one of the best equipped and most efficient water supply plants of any town of equal size in the State. The plant was purchased a few years ago from the Bridgewater Water Company by







ENTRANCE TO PARK, BRIDGEWATER



PUBLIC LIBRARY, BRIDGEWATER



the town and the pumping station was rebuilt during the year 1926. Old oil-burning engines were replaced by electric motors and a gasoline engine for auxiliary power. An addition was made to the building for a repair shop. During 1926 the water system was submitted to many tests to prove its efficiency and, as a result, it received the approval of the Board of Insurance Underwriters, and a considerable saving in insurance rates was gained.

The total water debt at the end of the year 1926, according to the report of the town accountant, including \$75,000 bonds of the Bridgewater Water Company, assumed by the town in the purchase of the plant, and a temporary loan in anticipation of a future bond issue, was \$422,000.

**The Bridgewater Public Library**, with its 23,500 volumes, is housed in a handsome memorial building dedicated May 30, 1883, "to express with reverence our gratitude that we are still a nation; to declare our conviction that the names of those whose lives were sacrificed should be held in respect forever; to teach coming generations that patriotism is honored in America."

The above quotation is taken from a letter which was sent out by the Memorial Day Committee in 1878, asking that a meeting be held for such a purpose. The meeting adopted a resolution favoring the erection of a memorial building. The same year public-spirited citizens interested themselves in bringing together some private libraries and raising money for the purchase of others for a public library. Temporary quarters were secured for nearly three thousand volumes which were secured and, when the memorial building was completed, they were moved in.

The building is centrally located, constructed of brick with freestone trimmings. There is a central entrance with open vestibule, in the walls of which are placed tablets of Tennessee marble bearing the names of deceased soldiers. In addition to the space devoted to books, there is a museum, containing many articles of historic value and interest. The total circulation for the year 1926 was 41,936 volumes, and 572 volumes were added that year. A steadily increasing number of students are making use of the library in connection with their school work and supplies of books are sent to the outlying schools to make their use more convenient for them.

The children's department is very popular, 14,987 books being taken out in 1926 and 2,336 children used the reading room.

The Public Library trustees are: President, Charles P. Sinnott; vice-president, Gustavus Pratt; secretary, Katherine Prophett; treasurer, Herman F. Wheeler; other trustees, Margaret A. Crane, Mary R. Flynn, James H. Dickinson and Martha M. Burnell.

The Public Library trust funds aggregate \$19,475, and are in memory of the following: Mary A. Wilbar, Francis A. Parker, Dr. Lewis G. Lowe, Sarah L. Alden, Sarah F. Bates, Anna C. Thompson, Ellen Markham, Harriett M. Gilbert, Rev. Theodore F. Wright, Susan A. Goodrich, Mary A. Dunbar, Samuel P. Gates, Lorin Keith and Pamela Wright. Rev. Theodore F. Wright was at one time president of the trustees and rendered many generous services in behalf of the library in its early days.

Samuel Pearly Gates was prominently connected with industrial, banking, educational and civic interests of the town for half a century, although not a native of the town, coming here from Ashby in Middlesex County. Silas Gates, one of his ancestors, was a member of that famous Revolutionary War Fourth Middlesex County Regiment belonging to the alarm list of Captain Benjamin Monroe's Sixth Company. Samuel P. Gates enlisted in the Regular Army of the United States and was detailed as a clerk in the War Department at Washington, serving there till the close of the war. He was one of the trustees of the Public Library many years. The others represented by memorial trust funds were honored residents of Bridgewater, keenly interested in the work of the library.

The first librarian was Miss Lucia L. Christian, and she had as assistant, Charles H. Sampson. The present librarian is Miss Edith M. Ames, who is much devoted to the work and has succeeded in bringing into close relationship the educative influences of the public schools and the library to a remarkable degree. The annual appropriation for the library in recent years has been approximately \$5,000.

**Babies and Other Assets**—The State Farm represents a value of \$1,307,205, and the State Normal School a value of \$760,050, both of which are exempt from taxation by law. Churches, cemeteries and organizations exempt from taxation have an aggregate valuation of \$133,261. In fact the total value of property in the town exempt from taxation amounts to \$2,223,266.

The assets of the town are worth \$512,056, the principal items being \$190,450 for schoolhouses, land and equipment; \$123,625 for water department, real estate buildings and equipment; fire department buildings and equipment worth \$27,500; \$48,473 in trust funds, \$40,000 in public land, \$30,000 in sewer department property, a public library worth \$12,000, a town hall worth \$21,000, a town farm worth \$6,700 and the equipment of various other departments.

In 1926 there were 110 babies born in the town, sixty-four marriages and ninety-four deaths, exclusive of one hundred and twenty-seven deaths at the State Farm, within the town limits, of inmates sent from all parts of the State.



**The Town Officers** who served Bridgewater in 1927 were: Town clerk, Edwin Keith; town treasurer, Herbert E. Reed; accountant, Charles H. Bixby; selectman, Herman F. Wheeler, Robert G. Clark, Jr., and Leo F. Nourse; assessors and overseers of the poor, same as selectmen; collector of taxes, Herbert E. Reed; school committee, Albert F. Hunt, P. Percival Dorr, Clarence B. Fuller, Jr., Agnes Devine, Fred L. Hasey and George C. Richmond; trustees of Public Library, Margaret A. Crane, Charles P. Sinnott, Herman F. Wheeler, Katherine C. Prophet, James H. Dickinson, Martha M. Burnell, Gustavus Pratt, and James J. Gorman; Board of Health, Albert F. Hunt, Charles R. Smith and Henry A. Gow; constable, James R. Moore; tree warden, Francis C. Worthen; sewer commissioners, George S. McNeeland, George J. Alcott and John Reardon; water commissioners, William H. Bassett, Joseph W. Keith and Samuel B. Cholerton; town physician, Dr. William E. Hunt; inspector of cattle, Ernest Leach; chief of police, James R. Moore; superintendent of streets, Roscoe W. Sanders; registrars of voters, Thomas Hourahan, George T. Frawley and Louistone H. Dyke; field driver, Frank R. Chadwick; pound keeper, Frank R. Chadwick; surveyors of wood and lumber, Benjamin F. Ellis, Wendell P. Hutchinson, L. Melvin Leach, Rosario Wood, Wayne S. Atwood, Elijah B. Gammons, Frank D. Reed and Edmund W. Merritt; fence viewers, Marcus A. Pierce and Walter E. Rhoades; forest fire warden, Frederick Waite; deputy forest fire warden, Francis C. Worthen; superintendent of moth extermination, Francis C. Worthen; night patrolmen, E. Frank LeBaron and William McAnough; town house committee, Roland M. Keith, Leo F. Nourse and Walter E. Rhoades; sealer of weights and measures, Charles R. Smith; superintendent of town farm, Myron E. Amber; dog officer, Henry A. Gow; inspector of slaughtering, George F. Weston; fire engineers, Frederick Waite, chief; Charles E. Marshall, first assistant; Robert A. Price, second assistant; superintendent of water works, Roscoe W. Sanders; advisory committee: Herbert K. Pratt, chairman; Annie M. Keith, secretary; Mrs. Walter S. Little, Samuel J. Kingston, Arthur R. Tinkham, Mrs. Thomas Carroll, Wayne S. Atwood, Edward F. McHugh and Benjamin E. Ward.

**Early School Days**—The home of the first normal school in Massachusetts and with a high regard for the advantages of education, Bridgewater has always taken an advanced place in the instruction of youth. It is uncertain just when the first school was established but Nathaniel Willis, one of the original proprietors of the town, was the first schoolmaster, and records show that his estate was settled in 1686. It is probable that his instruction began very shortly after 1663, when the Plymouth Colony courts "proposed to the several townships in its jurisdiction, as a thing that ought to be taken into serious considera-

tion, that some course be taken in every town that there be a school-master set up to train children in reading and writing."

In 1694 Nathaniel Brett was chosen schoolmaster and two years later the town made an arrangement whereby the school be kept in the meeting-house. In 1698 the town provided four school-dames for the outlying districts.

From records, it appears that among the early school teachers were Thomas Martin, "who came out of England;" Joseph Snell, a graduate of Harvard College, schoolmaster in 1735; Nicholas Henabry, hired March 1, 1721, at a salary of twenty pounds a year and his board; Dr. Abiel Howard, chosen in 1756 "to teach all grammar school scholars at the expense of the town that shall be sent to him," John Porter (3), a graduate of Yale (1770), son of Rev. John Porter of the North Precinct; Sarah Brett, in 1753; Beza Howard, graduate of Harvard College in 1772; Joseph Snell, in 1772, graduated from Harvard College in 1735; William Snell, employed in 1773 as grammar schoolmaster; and so on through a list of men apparently well qualified.

In 1717 "the town passed a clear vote to raise forty pounds the ensuing year, upon the whole town, for a schoolmaster's salary, and, what is required more, to procure a preaching schoolmaster." In many of the towns in those days the preacher, school teacher and physician was the same person, and usually considered practically infallible in all three professions. Evidently something had occurred to bring dissatisfaction in 1746 for in that year the town voted to "choose a committee, of which Captain Josiah Edson was one, to consult what method may be most beneficial to the town in improving of the school for the future."

Beza Howard, referred to as one of the early teachers, also represented the town in the General Court as representative and senator, was register of probate, a preacher and teacher.

Rev. John Porter and twenty other citizens petitioned the selectmen November 15, 1763, that Joseph Snell might be delegated to teach the North Precinct scholars the part of the year in which the school should be kept in that division of the town. Joseph Snell evidently was a school teacher several years to the satisfaction of all concerned, as there is a record under date of 1767 to the effect that Benjamin Edson and twelve others petitioned the selectmen "that William Snell and Jedediah Southworth, who were nominated to do the service of schoolmaster, neither of whom are likely to be satisfactory to them, be dropped, and that Joseph Snell be allowed to keep the grammar school."

The schools were taught for a generation by George Chipman, and he was the author of a textbook. He continued in service until about 1840. Thomas Cushman was another who had a service continuing from twenty to thirty years. Another was Leander A. Darling and still





NORMAL SCHOOL BUILDINGS, BRIDGEWATER





another Philander D. Leonard, who also served as a member of the school committee.

**Original Deed from Massasoit** — Bridgewater was originally a plantation granted to Duxbury by the Old Colony Court in the year 1645, "four miles every way from the place where they shall set up their center." This being a mere right to purchase of the natives, afterwards in 1649, a tract of land usually called Satucket, which extended seven miles each way from the weir at Satucket, was granted to Myles Standish, Samuel Nash and Constant Southworth, in behalf of the town of Duxbury, by Ousamequin, who afterwards styled himself Massasoit. In June, 1656, this plantation was incorporated, by an order of Court, into a separate and distinct town under the name of Bridgewater.

In 1668, upon a petition praying for an enlargement "the whole six miles from the center, east, west, north and south" was granted, provided that grants of land formerly made by the Court be not molested. This was known as the two-mile additional grant and the first as the old four-mile grant. By this grant were secured two additional miles on the north towards the Massachusetts Colony line, and part on the south, but little if any on the east and west, as on the east six miles from the center would interfere with an earlier grant called the Major's Purchase.

On the south six miles would extend into the Indian settlement of Titicut, and all of the land on the north side of Titicut River was within the six miles. In or about the year 1672, Nicholas Byram, Samuel Edson and William Brett were appointed to purchase, and did purchase, by a deed from Pomponcho alias Peter, all the lands lying on the north side of Titicut River and within the bounds of Bridgewater, excepting two parcels afterwards purchased of the Indians by individuals.

In 1685 all of these grants were confirmed by deed under the hand of Governor Hancock, and the seal of the government. About the same time another deed, confirming the deed of Ousamequin, was made by Josiah Wampatuck to Samuel Edson, John Howard and John Willis, agents for the town of Bridgewater. Thus the greater part of the town was twice purchased of the Indians, once of Massasoit and again of Wampatuck.

With a small tract of land on the north, along the Colony line, purchased by individuals after the union of the Colonies, and annexed to Bridgewater in October, 1730, these several grants and enlargements constituted all the territory ever belonging to Bridgewater in its greatest extent. In this location, containing about ninety-six square miles, the town remained without diminution in its territorial limits until June 10, 1712, when the town of Abington was incorporated. Again on the 7th of June, 1754, a large tract of land, now forming part of Hanson, was taken from Bridgewater and annexed to Pembroke. Thus the town remained for nearly one hundred years, containing about seventy square

miles. There were of course divisions in reference to church matters made from time to time, five parishes being formed, the North, South, East, West, and Titicut. These parishes or precincts constituted the ground work of the subsequent divisions of the town.

As early as 1719, the South, only three years after its incorporation as a parish, applied to the General Court, to be made a distinct town. This although agreed to by the remainder of the town and granted by the House, was not concurred in by the Council. Again, in 1738, the North precinct petitioned to be incorporated as a town; the remainder of the town at the same time consented and voted that the South and East should become separate and distinct towns—all these applications were, however, resisted and it was not until June 15, 1821, that any change was made. At this time the North, the youngest, but most populous parish, was incorporated by the name of North Bridgewater. The West (the old town) was incorporated February 16 of the next year, by the name of West Bridgewater, and the East, by the name of East Bridgewater, was incorporated June 17, 1823. Thus the South Parish, although the first to move in the matter, was left with Titicut to retain the old name.

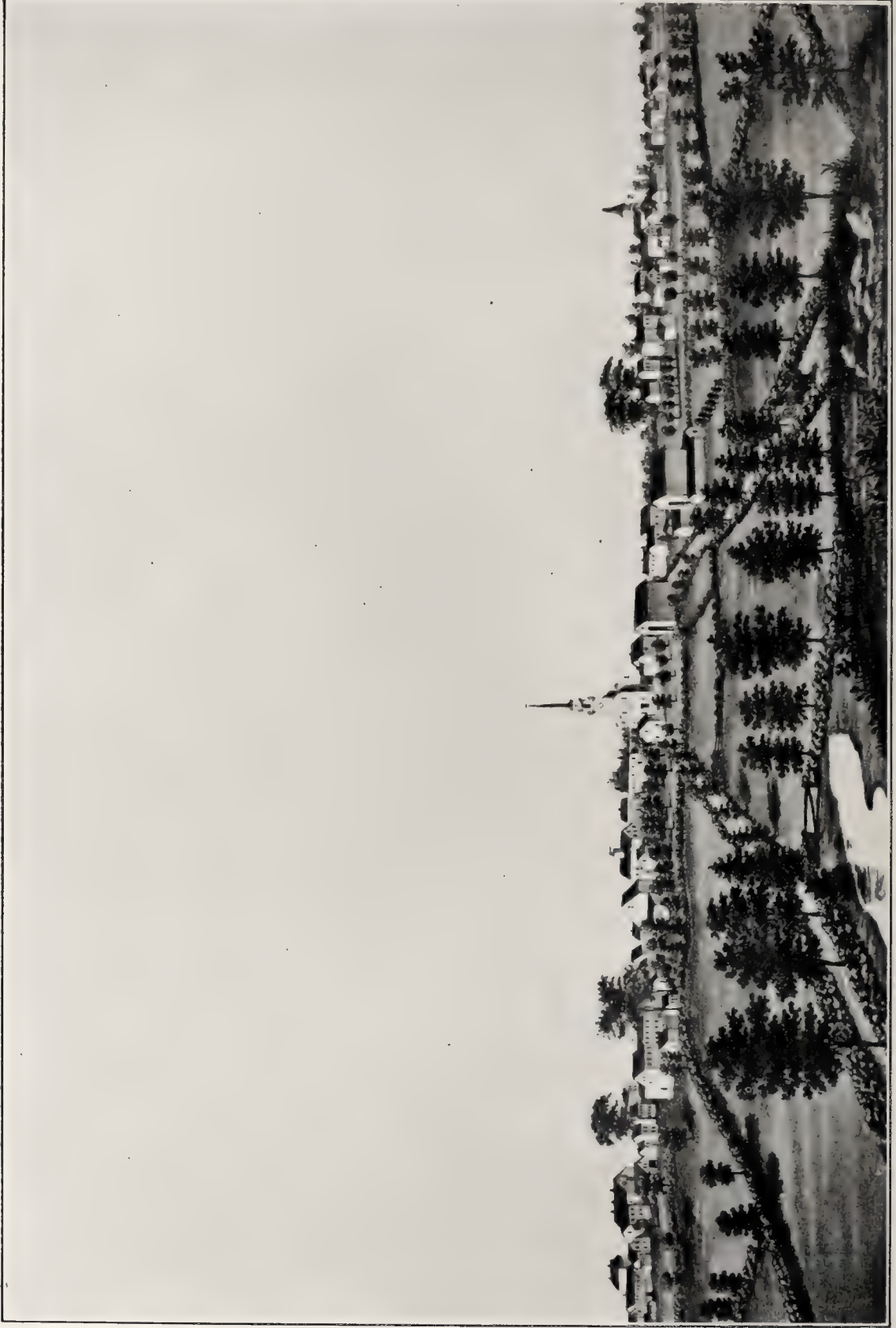
The first settlements in this town, also the first in the interior of the Old Colony, were commenced in the year 1650 upon the Town River, which flows from Nippenicket pond, principally by inhabitants from Duxbury. House lots of six acres were granted these first settlers. The house lots were contiguous, and the settlement compact, to serve as a protection against the Indians. Among the names of these first settlers we find those of James Keith, the first minister, Deacon Samuel Edson from Salem, who built the first mill; and Bassett and Mitchell, who were among the forefathers. The adjoining towns of Marshfield and Taunton were also represented in this settlement.

**First Meeting House a Fortress**—The first meeting-house in the old town was built as early as 1663. Here also was built, in 1853, a State Almshouse, situated in the southern part of the town.

In its military history, Bridgewater has nobly sustained the honors it gained in its infancy, during the struggle with the Indians, particularly King Philip's War. Then, although removed from their friends, situated in the midst of the Indians' country, and numbering not more than fifty capable of bearing arms, urged by every possible inducement to retire to the seashore, they still resolutely held out. They were the first to take up arms. The meeting-house was converted into a fortress by means of palisades. In 1676, the Indians, about three hundred strong, having made an attack upon the easterly part of the town, were repulsed and overcome by the inhabitants issuing from the garrison. Nearly all the houses on the border of the town were burned.







VILLAGE OF NORTH BRIDGEWATER (NOW BROCKTON), 1844



In the Revolution, too, it stands forth as patriotic and as true to liberty as any of its neighbors. At the time of the Revolution the male population capable of bearing arms did not exceed one thousand. In the Continental service, exclusive of the Province and State service, during three years of war it furnished four hundred and twelve men, more than three thousand dollars, besides contributions of supplies for the army. Among the number of killed are the names of Capt. Jacob Allen and Abner Robinson who were killed at Saratoga, at the capture of Burgoyne, in 1777.

**Honor Roll of Civil War**—In the Civil War, the town stands forth in all the strength of its riper years, furnishing forty men more than were required to fill its quota. Company K, of the Third Massachusetts Regiment, was mainly composed of men from this town. Also a large portion of this company reënlisted in the Fifty-fourth Regiment and there did good service at the battles of the Wilderness and before Petersburg.

### BROCKTON

**County's Only City**—Shoes and the Brockton Fair have already received mention in this history. They are the two things which immediately leap into thought when the word Brockton is spoken, and to consider Brockton without either of these two, as is the intention, will seem to most people like considering Sampson with his hair bobbed, Hamlet with the melancholy Dane playing the rôle of a cheer leader, or something else equally incongruous. As the English say, "It isn't done." But these two distinctions associated with Brockton are not confined to Brockton but are internationally famous. They do not belong to Brockton alone but to New England and beyond and more especially to Southeastern Massachusetts, Brockton and the South Shore District; and in that larger connection they have been disposed of. They did not make Brockton but Brockton made them what they are.

In the beginning was the Brockton spirit. It is, perhaps, the only town in Plymouth County which was neither founded on fish nor agriculture. It had no brooks through which the historic herring wriggled its economic way and the land was too unproductive to coax corn to grow. There was a grim determination on the part of early residents of that part of the county now called Brockton to take the least promising natural material on which to build a home and there make a success. This spirit has made of Brockton the only city in the county, a municipality of workers and winners.

Even when a part of old Bridgewater, the North Parish had different characteristics than the other villages. March 28, 1874, North Bridge-

water was authorized to change its name. On May 5, 1874, Brockton was adopted as the new name. The following year, on April 24, a part was annexed to South Abington, and parts of East Bridgewater and South Abington were annexed. Brockton was incorporated as a city, April 9, 1881, and May 23 of that year, the act of incorporation was accepted by the town. On May 8, 1893, part of West Bridgewater was annexed to Brockton, if Brockton saw fit to accept the act, and this was done November 7, 1893. It took full effect March 1, 1894.

After this give and take, the area of Brockton consists of twenty-one and a half square miles. Using the statistics of 1927, there are one hundred and thirty-mile miles of accepted streets, one hundred and thirty-five miles of water mains, through which flow as pure water supply as can be found in the country.

There are thirty-one school buildings, and the schools rank among the best in Massachusetts, with the highest percentage of pupils graduating from the high school. There are 2,673 high school pupils, 9,153 grade school pupils, 911 parochial school pupils. The public school maintenance figures are \$948,585.69. There are 98,170 volumes in the Public Library.

There are thirty-six Protestant churches, seven Catholic churches, two Jewish synagogues, three hospitals, two national banks, two savings banks, two trust companies, three coöperative banks, one Morris Plan bank, five postoffices, three railroad stations, six fire stations, two police stations, two daily newspapers, two hundred and ninety-six acres of public parks, sixty acres of public playgrounds, large fraternal buildings housing the Masons, Odd Fellows, Knights of Pythias, Knights of Columbus, Eagles and Elks; also buildings for the Young Men's Christian Association, Young Women's Christian Association, Young Men's and Young Women's Hebrew associations.

The valuation of the city is \$72,610,050, the revenue payments \$6,135,551, non-revenue payments \$425,680. There are 4,984 individuals who pay a Federal income tax. There are 20,500 poll tax payers. The population is 65,343.

Brockton is located twenty miles south of Boston on the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad. It is a trolley line and motor bus centre for fifteen neighboring towns. There are over thirty-four miles of street railway tracks within the city limits, thirty-one miles of permanent sidewalks, fifty-seven miles of permanent roads, in addition to the one hundred and thirty-nine miles of accepted streets. The sewer mains extend ninety-seven and one-half miles and the city is served by the renowned intermittent downward filtration sewerage system.

Brockton is one of the healthiest cities in New England. The city won the State silver cup for three successive years, for having the best





CENTRAL METHODIST CHURCH, BROCKTON



COURT HOUSE, BROCKTON





milk supply in the State. The laboratory in City Hall is acknowledged to be one of the foremost and best equipped municipal laboratories in Massachusetts. The average yearly precipitation is 40.56 degrees and the average temperature fifty-one degrees.

"Greater Brockton," a city and fifteen surrounding towns, includes in its population 30,000 of the most skilled and highest paid shoe workers in the world, employed in sixty plants. They turn out \$100,000,000 value of shoe output annually. Three of the largest shoe manufacturing corporations in America are located in Brockton; also several of the largest shoe findings manufacturing plants in the country.

Brockton was the first community in Massachusetts to abolish grade crossings, at a cost of several million dollars when there were less than 40,000 inhabitants. This was in 1896. It was a pioneer in lighting its streets by electricity. The first central power station in the United States from which current was distributed through three-wire underground conductors, was the present Edison Electric Illuminating plant. It had the first electric street railway especially built for the use of electric power and Thomas A. Edison came to Brockton to see the first car run over the line. Brockton solved the sewage disposal problem for inland cities, and investigating committees have come from many countries to learn the system and arrange for its adoption. In the early days of its municipal life, Brockton decided upon a police signal system by electricity and sent a committee from the city council to New York to familiarize itself with the system there. The committee returned after finding out that New York had no such system.

Brockton is one of the pioneer cities in the country to have a community chest, a peace-time adoption of the war chest idea, which was put over with remarkable success.

For many years the city has held an enviable position among the cities of the country because of its low death rate. An efficient Board of Health and volunteer health agencies have contributed their intelligent efforts, as well as the pure water supply and unsurpassed sewage disposal system. The American Public Health Department and the American Child Health Association have made surveys and placed Brockton in an advanced position among the leaders.

The greatest universities, technical and professional schools, as well as the State Normal School at Bridgewater are within easy access from Brockton. There are numerous women's clubs and fraternal organizations, three service clubs, a Commercial Club and Chamber of Commerce, all working together harmoniously for the common good. The city has two unusually good golf courses in connection with country clubs, and a municipal golf course as a part of a new D. W. Field Park, covering four hundred and fifty acres and connecting the most sightly

bodies of water. There are more than 3,000 home and school gardens conducted in connection with the Brockton High School Agricultural Club, the Grade Schools, and encouraged by scholarships furnished by the Brockton Agricultural Society. For many years Brockton has led all other cities and towns in Massachusetts in this regard.

If it were the purpose of this history to devote adequate space to annals of the towns, a volume might well be written about Brockton. Rather is it the intention to give mention from each town, concerning those matters which relate to the county as a whole or, at least, have general interest throughout the county.

Brockton has a wonderfully pure water supply but it secures that supply from Silver Lake, twelve miles away, passing through several towns in bringing the water to twin reservoirs in Avon. The water is shared with these neighboring towns.

The same is true of electricity. Brockton has been electric from the first. The first fire station ever lighted by incandescent lamps was the Central Fire Station in Brockton. An automatic switch was so arranged that the sounding of an alarm lighted lamps in the building and at the same time liberated the fire horses. This was an advanced arrangement in fire fighting. The city was one of the first to have its entire fire-fighting equipment motorized. The Edison station, from which the first Sprague electric motor ever built, distributed power, now furnishes light and power for several Plymouth County towns. The Brockton Electric Station was formally opened for commercial service October 1, 1883. Since that time it has steadily increased its service to Whitman, East Bridgewater, Bridgewater, West Bridgewater, Halifax and disposes of its surplus through other companies to many other towns, extending its influence and commercial supremacy.

It has been the same with the Brockton Gas Light Company, succeeding the North Bridgewater Gas Light Company, chartered in 1859. The trolley-car service, for which the county has been noted, started in Brockton and steadily made its way into the other towns, Brockton proverbially sharing its good things with its neighbors after the pioneering was over.

**Promotion of the Brockton Idea**—Something decidedly unique in connection with Brockton is the way in which the foreign-born persons seeking citizenship and the advantages of a real American is received and assisted. The organization of a citizens' committee, fostering a progressive program for the development of better citizenship, culminated in a patriotic meeting at the High School Auditorium, April 22, 1927. Its purpose was recognition, welcome and reception to new American citizens. The speaker of the evening was Governor Alvan T. Fuller and, at the close of his address, there were presented to more



than two hundred newly-naturalized American citizens, small American flags. It was one of a series of gatherings "to promote real Americanism and better understanding among all peoples regardless of racial, religious or other affiliations; to help preserve our institutions for posterity and develop a genuine spirit of fraternity, brotherhood and goodwill," to quote from the acknowledged purpose of the Cosmopolitan Club. This club, consisting of representatives from twenty-six nationalities resident in Brockton and vicinity, takes an enthusiastic part in the promotion of what is called the "Brockton idea."

The movement attained commendable impetus in preparations for "Citizens' Day," which was observed on the Brockton Fair Grounds, June 30, 1925, with Hon. James J. Davis, United States Secretary of Labor, one of the speakers. Over 30,000 people were on the grounds and the speeches were broadcasted by radio throughout the country. There was a central committee of two hundred and thirty men and women which was organized into thirty-two sub-committees. Over five hundred committee meetings were held and over one thousand served on individual organization committees. The movement registered itself in public recognition as the forward movement which exceeded any other undertaken for the purpose in the United States.

Concerning the movement, Secretary Davis said:

Your city of Brockton is one of the bright spots in the work of making real Americans out of the strangers who come to us from foreign lands. Here you are well organized for the education of the foreign-born in the institutions and ideals which make America great. In that you are making easy the way of the alien on the road to citizenship. No community can find a better way to serve the aliens who have come to it, or to serve the interests of the whole nation. This work of providing education in true Americanism for those who come to us from abroad means practical patriotism.

It is to be regretted that this work is not being pursued on a greater scale in every community from the Atlantic to the Pacific, where are found scattered groups of the more than 6,000,000 aliens who go to make up our great un-naturalized alien population. It has been estimated that no more than twenty per cent of this alien population is reached by such efforts at education in Americanism as you have undertaken with such great success here.

It is with profound satisfaction that I find so many different organizations engaged in this work. Here your patriotic, civic, religious, fraternal and service groups have joined in patriotic coöperation to forward this movement that means so much to the America of today, and the America of the future. This coöperation, which you have found so successful here in providing educational facilities for the alien in America, I should like to see organized upon a national basis under the guidance of the federal bureau of naturalization, in order that every alien in this country might have his opportunity to learn and know America as America is. If this education in true Americanism is good for a few, and you have clearly demonstrated here that it is, surely it is good for all.

It is all too true that we have long neglected the alien who comes to America seeking American opportunity and American liberty. We admit him to this country, and from the day he leaves the immigration station of his arrival we completely

lose track of him. He is truly a stranger in a strange land, in most cases ignorant of our language, our customs, our mode of life.

It is small wonder that he naturally seeks the companionship of those who are here from his native land, that he clings to his old language and his old customs. The time has come to give to every alien admitted to the United States the means of knowing his new country, its history, its traditions, its ideals. If we can do this we will make sure of better Americans for America, and of a better America for Americans.

He complimented Brockton for being the first city in the country to set aside a day for such an occasion and stated that within a short time he expected that every city in the country would be doing the same thing.

**The Brockton Chamber of Commerce**, successor to the Brockton Board of Trade, has headquarters on Legion Parkway, and is an active organization for the development of the municipal progress and excellence. Harry C. Briggs is the president and Joseph F. Reilly executive secretary of the 1927 organization. It is the representative commercial body of the city, well organized to take advantage of an opportunity in the forward movement.

**Community Chest**—Beginning with 1922 the best recognized charities of the city have been assisted by the Community Chest, as it is popularly called, funds voluntarily contributed by charitably-disposed people and corporations, and placed in the hands of the Brockton Social Service Council for distribution. At the annual meeting of this organization in February, 1927, officers were elected as follows: President, George H. Leach; first vice-president, George N. Gordon; second vice-president, Stephen P. Alden; treasurer, Joseph C. Crocker, Jr.; secretary, John J. O'Reilly. The executive committee consists of George W. Alden, Mrs. B. Milo Burke, Robert C. Fraser, Harold C. Keith, Judge C. Carrol King, C. A. McLaughlin, John F. Scully, Albert G. Smith and Mrs. George W. Sprague.

The Community Chest plan was adopted because it was the concensus of opinion that it was superior to the old method of individual drives in the interest of various charitable organizations.

The Community Chest has trustees-at-large, consisting of Stephen P. Alden, John M. Bosch, Mrs. B. Milo Burke, George N. Gordon, Alton B. Hastings, Jr., S. Ernest Hinckley, Harold C. Keith, Preston B. Keith, Isaac Kibrick, John M. Long, Morton L. C. McCrillis, Daniel W. Packard, Fred L. Packard, Lester Packard, Albert G. Smith, Mrs. George W. Sprague, Max Wind and Mrs. Joseph Hewett.

The beneficiary trustees are: American Legion, Michael A. Caffrey, Loring Hall; Boy Scouts, William L. Merrill, George H. Leach; Brockton Hospital, George W. Alden, Herbert L. Tinkham; Catholic Charities, Clement L. McCann, Rev. Dr. Irving L. Gifford; Day Nursery, Mrs. Ellis B. Ford, Mrs. Charles Wadleigh; Family Welfare Associa-



tion, Ernest A. Burrill, William B. Nash; Girl Scouts, Miss Miriam B. Swift, Miss Vesta L. Crocker; Jewish Charities, A. B. Yaffe, Dr. D. L. Butler; Red Cross, John F. Scully, Mrs. Walter H. Gilday; Salvation Army, Commandant J. T. Parkin, Captain Charles Drew; Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, Clarence C. Reed, Charles A. Parris; Visiting Nurse Association, Mrs. Perley G. Flint, Mrs. Fred Drew; Wales Home for Old Ladies, Norman W. Sampson, Carleton R. Blades; Young Men's Christian Association, Evan W. Thomas, C. A. McLaughlin; Young Men's Hebrew Association, Louis Hollman, Miss Esther Pollen; Young Women's Christian Association, Mrs. George W. Sprague, Miss Vesta M. Little.

In four years since the Community Chest was established, the total amount pledged has been \$610,671.92 and, up to the time of the annual meeting in February, 92.2 per cent of the pledges had been collected. Campaign expenses have amounted to 3.07 per cent, and administration expenses 4.5 per cent.

**The Brockton Hospital**, the most notable institution of its kind in Plymouth County, is in this year 1927 carrying on its thirty-second year of activity. The late George Clarence Holmes was called the "Father of the Brockton Hospital." As a newspaper man, he advocated its establishment in his correspondence to the Boston "Sunday Globe" and worked persistently to get the movement started and bring it to success.

The Brockton Hospital provides a service for medical and surgical treatment for other towns in the county, which are without hospital facilities, and is one of the institutions which are justly the pride of the county. An average of approximately 6,000 patients have received treatment annually in recent years. Until 1926, an organization which had been of great assistance to the institution, was the Brockton Hospital Ladies' Aid Association. Much to the regret of the trustees, it decided that its work was done, and disbanded after thirty-six years in which it had assisted materially in raising the institution from among the minor hospitals of the State to its present position of stability and importance. The president of the Brockton Hospital Company in 1926 was Herbert L. Tinkham, and in his annual report he recommended the employment of a social service worker, which had been suggested by the American College of Surgeons, as the next important step.

There has been a School of Nursing in connection with the hospital for thirty-one years, and the graduates have invariably been a credit to the institution. The Superintendent of Nurses and Principal of the School of Nursing is Bertha A. Hunt, R. N.

The hospital is located on Center Street, Brockton, a little over a mile east of the Brockton Railroad Station. There are fourteen acres in the hospital grounds. The general management and control are in the hands

of a corporation consisting of the persons named in the original articles of the association, practicing physicians of Brockton, who are members of the Massachusetts Medical or the Massachusetts Homœopathic Medical societies, those who contribute annually to the hospital, the mayor of the city, president of the Board of Aldermen, president of the Common Council. The Brockton Hospital Corporation was organized in 1890 and the hospital opened for service in 1896. The hospital has a capacity of over 125 beds and a daily average of 100 patients. The School of Nursing, established in 1907, offers a three years' course.

The present officers, trustees, and committees are as follows: President, Herbert L. Tinkham; vice-president, Robert W. Laird; treasurer and business manager, Geo. W. Alden; auditors, Horace A. Keith, Mrs. Perley G. Flint; clerk, Dr. Frederick M. Hollister; trustees, George W. Alden, Dr. Arthur L. Beals, John M. Bosch, Harry C. Briggs, Dr. Frank H. Burnett, William T. Card, Davis M. DeBard, Miss M. Sylvia Donaldson, William E. Doyle, Fred Drew, Fred F. Field, Jr., Mrs. Perley G. Flint, Dr. Walter W. Fullerton, Mrs. Joseph Hewett, Arthur M. Keith, Mrs. Eldon B. Keith, Horace A. Keith, Isaac Kibrick, John S. Kent, Jr., Robert W. Laird, Dr. Joseph H. Lawrence, Miss Lillian D. Leach, Merton L. McCrillis, Sven Moberg, Dr. Frederick W. Murdock, Daniel W. Packard, Dr. A. Elliott Paine, Lars Peterson, Clarence C. Reed, Fred D. Rowe, Mrs. Abbie S. Savage, Warren S. Shaw, Evan W. Thomas, Herbert L. Tinkham, F. Harold Tolman, Max E. Wind.

Friendship Committee, Horace A. Keith; Endowment Fund Committee, Stephen P. Alden, chairman; George H. Leach, Isaac Kibrick; School of Nursing Committee, Dr. Arthur A. Beals, chairman; Stephen P. Alden, Mrs. Annie Caswell, Lewis E. Rye, Dr. Frederick M. Hollister, Miss Bertha A. Hunt, Clarence A. McLaughlin, Miss Lillian D. Leach; Executive Committee, Dr. Arthur L. Beals, John M. Bosch, Harry C. Briggs, Dr. Frank H. Burnett, Dr. Walter W. Fullerton, Lars Peterson, Daniel W. Packard, Merton L. McCrillis, Dr. Joseph H. Lawrence, Evan W. Thomas; ex-Officio, Herbert L. Tinkham, Robert W. Laird, Geo. W. Alden, Mayor Harold D. Bent.

Finance Committee, Daniel W. Packard, chairman; Herbert L. Tinkham, Robert W. Laird, George W. Alden.

Hospital Committee, Dr. Arthur L. Beals, chairman; Dr. Frank H. Burnett, Dr. Wallace C. Keith, Dr. Joseph H. Lawrence, Dr. Walter W. Fullerton.

Welfare Committee, John M. Bosch, chairman; Merton L. McCrillis.

House and Grounds Committee, Evan W. Thomas, chairman; Lars Peterson, Harry C. Briggs.

Surgical staff, Dr. M. Francis Barrett, chief; Dr. George A. Buckley, associate; Dr. Charles D. McCann, assistant.



Medical staff, Dr. William Gordon Walker, chief; associates, Dr. Henry J. Lupien, Dr. John J. McNamara, Dr. John A. Pettey.

Obstetrical, Dr. Charles D. McCann, chief; Dr. Alphonse F. Budreski, associate.

Pediatric, Dr. Walter E. Caswell.

Eye, Ear, Nose and Throat, Dr. John F. Callahan, Dr. John R. Noyes, Dr. Andrew J. Sullivan.

Anesthetist, Dr. Helen M. Haynes.

Laboratory Director, Dr. Frederick M. Hollister.

Registrar of Records, Dr. Arthur L. Beals.

Radium Service, Dr. George A. Moore.

Roentgenologist, Dr. Loring B. Packard.

Cystoscopist, Dr. Harrison A. Chase.

Out-Patient Department, Dr. Charles D. McCann, surgeon; Dr. Joseph E. Brady, asthma clinic; Dr. Walter E. Caswell, children's clinic.

Venereal Disease, Dr. George A. Buckley, chief; Dr. Helen M. Haynes, associate.

House Officers, Manuel M. Glazier, M. D., April, 1926; Valmore A. Pelletier, M. D., August, 1926; David William Pope, M. D., August, 1926.

Staff Organization, Dr. Frederick M. Hollister, chairman; Dr. William Gordon Walker, secretary.

Efficiency Committee, Dr. Frederick M. Hollister, chairman; Dr. M. Francis Barrett, Dr. Loring B. Packard, Dr. Arthur L. Beals, Dr. William Gordon Walker.

Special Consulting Staff: Surgeons, Dr. Daniel F. Jones, Dr. Horace Packard, Dr. Charles F. Painter, Dr. Geo. W. W. Brewster; Physicians, Dr. W. W. Gannett, Dr. Joseph H. Pratt, Dr. Frank H. Carlisle, Dr. Bradford H. Peirce; Neurologist, Dr. Oscar J. Raeder; Dermatologist, Dr. Austin W. Cheever; Pediatricist, Dr. Paul W. Emerson; Urologist, Dr. John H. Cunningham; Proctologist, Dr. Ralph W. Jackson; Roentgenologist, Dr. George W. Holmes; Bacteriologist, George E. Bolling; Dentist, Dr. J. E. Ganley.

Honorary Consulting Staff: Surgical, Dr. N. C. King, Dr. J. H. Lawrence, Dr. T. H. McCarthy; Medical, Dr. J. E. Bacon, Dr. A. L. Beals, Dr. W. W. Fullerton, Dr. W. C. Keith, Dr. J. P. Shaw.

Officers of the Hospital and School of Nursing: Superintendent, Frederick M. Hollister, M. D.; Business Manager, George W. Alden; Principal and Superintendent of Nurses, Bertha A. Hunt, R. N.; Assistant Superintendent of Nurses, Winnifred E. Cameron, R. N.; Instructor, Eunice M. Logue, R. N.; Night Supervisor, Alice E. O'Neill, R. N.; Supervisor Operating Rooms, Mary MacGillivray, R. N.; Assistant Supervisor Operating Rooms, Viva E. Johnson, R. N.; Supervisor

Obstetrical Department, Adele M. Burton, R. N.; Supervisor Out-Patient Department, Mary E. Forbes, R. N.; Head Nurse Male Ward, Anna Leland, R. N.; Dietitian, Gladys A. Cole; Statistician and Bookkeeper, Jennie F. Palmer; Record Clerk, Sara E. Ginrich; Supervisor Women's and Children's Wards, Helen A. Grogan, R. N.; Head Nurse Wales Private Ward, Anna L. Strand, R. N.; X-Ray Technician, Christine MacR. Helm, R. N.; Laboratory Technician, Edith H. Kelley, B. S.; Housekeeper, Josephine G. Robinson.

### Chronological List

#### Presidents of the Brockton Hospital

Hon. Ziba C. Keith, 1890-1892.	Mr. Kenneth McLeod, 1907-1912.
Mr. Robbins B. Grover, 1893-1897.	Mr. George H. Leach, 1913-1919.
Mr. Oliver A. Miller, 1898.	Mr. Stephen P. Alden, 1920-1921.
Mr. William Rapp, 1899-1901.	Mr. Davis M. DeBard, 1922-1925.
Mr. George C. Holmes, 1902-1904.	Mr. Herbert L. Tinkham, 1926.
Hon. John S. Kent, 1905-1906.	

#### Treasurers of the Brockton Hospital

Fred B. Howard, 1890-1897.	William G. Allen, 1911-1917.
Fred R. French, 1898-1899.	Davis M. DeBard, 1918-1920.
Albert H. Fuller, 1900-1903.	George W. Alden, 1921.
Dr. Samuel J. Gruver, 1905-1910.	

**Brockton Shoe Workers Well Paid**—According to the records at the Bureau of Labor Statistics at Washington, District of Columbia, obtained as the result of a survey, the average full time earnings per week in Brockton in 1926 was \$33.17. The average for the State of Massachusetts was \$28.44 and in the shoe industry for the United States, \$25.28. This brings the Brockton average earnings for shoe workers \$7.89 per week above the national average and \$4.73 above the State average.

As compared with other shoe cities, the number of hours averaged a week in Brockton for full time was forty-eight. For all Massachusetts the average was forty-seven and eight-tenths hours and for the shoe industry in the United States forty-nine and one-tenth hours.

The average earnings per hour for the Brockton shoe worker was sixty-nine and one-tenth cents. For the State it was fifty-nine and one-half cents and for the United States in shoe industries fifty-one and six-tenths cents per hour.

According to the records of the Massachusetts State Department of Labor and Industries for 1925, the total number of manufacturing establishments in Brockton was two hundred and sixty-five. Forty-five were engaged in the manufacture of boots and shoes, and sixty-five in the



manufacture of cut stock and findings. The total value of all products manufactured in the city was \$69,692,575. The boot and shoe value of manufactured products was \$41,783,163, or sixty per cent. The value of cut stock and findings was \$12,842,934, or eighteen and four-tenths per cent, and these figures do not include the value of lasts, nails, blackings, stains and dressings, models and patterns and adhesives.

The average number of wage earners employed in the two hundred and sixty-five manufacturing establishments was 13,148. The total amount of wages paid was \$15,732,922.

**Million Dollars for Charity Fund**—A check for \$1,000,000 was deposited in the Brockton National Bank February 7, 1927, bearing the signature of Edgar B. Davis, once a poor boy in Brockton. The city was his birthplace and was always considered his home until, a few weeks before the date given, he transferred his residence to Luling, Texas. Back of this million-dollar check, another one of similar size deposited for the benefit of Texas orphans and farmers, others of substantial amounts, a fortune in each instance as regarded by the average man, lies a romance which would require a volume rather than mere mention to tell deservingly. The biographical sketches connected with this history tell something of this present-day Christian philanthropist, who recognizes the leading hand of Providence in his remarkable career, regarding himself merely the instrument of the Divine Power in doing all the good he can to his fellow-men.

The income of the million dollar fund in Brockton is used for general charitable and educational purposes, with special reference to needy orphans and children, and for the alleviation of suffering and distress, all without distinction as to race, party, sex or creed.

The name given by Mr. Davis to his benefaction is the Pilgrim Foundation. The incorporators are Mr. Davis and his secretary, Carleton R. White; George H. Leach, vice-president of the George E. Keith Company; Charles P. Holland, president of the Plymouth County Development Company; Walter F. Stephens, attorney for Mr. Davis; Ralph W. Copeland and Rev. Joseph Machin of West Bridgewater. The working organization of the foundation consists of three trustees, chosen by and from a board of seven directors, who are: Mr. Davis during his lifetime, and three to be appointed annually by him; George H. Leach, Charles P. Holland, Rev. Joseph Machin; one to be appointed annually by the mayor of Brockton, H. Lawton Blanchard being the first appointee; one to be appointed annually by the president of the Brockton Central Labor Union, who named John P. Meade, director of industrial safety for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; and one to be appointed annually by the president of the Brockton Chamber of Commerce who has named Dr. Pierce H. Leavitt.

Mr. Davis acquired his present fortune from the oil wells of Texas. It is well to call it his present fortune as he made a previous one in rubber, passing it out here and there where it would do the most good, until there was nothing left. He is following the same general program with the present fortune and will continue to do so with as many fortunes as are given into his hands. It is his financial philosophy, and doing good his religion.

Mr. Davis is passionately fond of music, and gets a great deal of spiritual uplift from it. Consequently he decided to secure some of the best musical talent in America, bought out the largest theatre in Brockton for Good Friday in 1926, and invited everyone who could find a seat to attend. The following year he repeated the concert in the same way. He has a magnificent summer home on Buzzards Bay, and nationally known musicians give a concert every Sunday afternoon in the house, to which everyone is invited. Mr. Davis may be in the Philippines or in any other part of the world, as he is a frequent visitor wherever his desire for unselfish service calls him, but the concert at The House on the Sands at Wareham goes on for the enjoyment of whoever wishes to attend. Mr. Davis carefully selects the talent from his wide knowledge of the best in the musical world, makes up the programs and pays the bills.

Realizing the inadequate swimming facilities for the youth of Brockton, he established two swimming pools, with bath houses, playground equipment and attention given to every necessary detail, one at the north and one at the south end of the city. He then named this particular benefaction in honor of his old school teacher and friend, John I. Rackliffe, and went on to the next good work.

It is surely not the province of as permanent a record as a historical volume to attempt to make a list of the major benefactions of Edgar B. Davis. While one list was being made—even if anyone could know how to make such a list—Mr. Davis would make another necessary, as he receives his income and passes out his bounty as a continuous process and as a part of the day's work. He stated when he wrote the million-dollar check for the benefit of charitable and educational work in Brockton: "Believing, as I do, that the funds for the foundation about to be created for the benefit of humanity came from God Himself, I sign these papers to the honor and glory of God."

**Plymouth County Development Company**—An organization created by Mr. Davis for the benefit of the city of his birthplace and others is the Plymouth County Development Company, Inc., which has acquired several valuable properties for investment in the center of Brockton. Among them are the Amglim Building, Brockton's first eight-story business building; the Kennedy Building, Daniel S. Block, and the



former Thomas White factory. Shortly after acquiring the latter property, the company sought a shoe-manufacturing concern to locate in Brockton and help solve the economic problem by manufacturing a grade of shoes seemingly more in demand at that time than the higher priced product for which Brockton was famous. None of the Brockton manufacturers appeared to be willing to demonstrate the practicability of engaging in the manufacture of the middle grade shoes, and the Plymouth County Development Company showed its desire to coöperate in such an experiment.

Following out the purpose in life of Mr. Davis which he has demonstrated to be service to his fellow-men, absolutely independent of the ordinary limitations or prejudices which actuate most people, the Plymouth County Development Company can be depended upon to be of great benefit to the city.

**Other Trust Funds and Donors**—There have been a few gifts to the city of Brockton to be held in trust. All of the donors were citizens of Brockton.

Frederick Perkins of North Bridgewater, by his will gave to the inhabitants of the town, then under that name, a tract of land on the west side of North Main Street for a public common and pleasure ground. This was in January, 1863, and is the tract known as Perkins Park, on which was erected the soldiers' monument.

Under the will of Charles Stone, the city received in 1892 the Charles Stone Fund of \$1,000 "the same to be invested and the income used by the overseers of the poor in furnishing clothing or other necessary articles to poor children outside of the almshouse."

Under the will of Abby W. Ford the trustees of the Public Library received, in 1903, the Henry A. Ford Fund of \$3,000 "for the general uses and purposes of the library."

The sum of \$1,000 was received for the Public Library under the will of Abby Baker Kingman in 1904.

In 1910, the Public Library received \$3,000 by the provision of the will of Mary E. Perkins.

The sum of \$75,000 was received by the city of Brockton in 1911, under the will of Clara Snow, to be divided: \$25,000 "for excursions during the hot weather of the poor children of the city of Brockton;" \$25,000 "in giving Christmas dinners to worthy poor people;" and \$25,000 "in giving Christmas presents to poor children of the city." The provisions called for each to be known as "The George G. Snow Fund" and the money to be invested and re-invested, the annual income to be devoted to the purposes stated.

Mrs. Eva M. S. Wright deeded to the city July 1, 1914, the James Edgar Playground, on Winthrop and Brooks streets, in memory of

her father, the late Colonel James Edgar. The land is to be forever used as a public playground.

A tract of land on the north side of Teele Street, to be always used as a public playground, was conveyed to the city as a gift from Dr. Loring W. Puffer and his son, Clarence C. Puffer, February 28, 1916.

The Benjamin F. Battles Park, at the intersection of Battles and Richmond streets, was conveyed to the city by deed dated November 21, 1921, by the heirs of Benjamin F. Battles. They were ex-Mayor David W. Battles, George F. Battles, Mrs. L. Jennie Neal, Mrs. Hazel Gammon and Fred B. Gammon, all of Brockton.

The Eldon B. Keith Athletic Field, on West Elm Street near the High School Building, was deeded to the city December 5, 1921, by Harold C. Keith, and Lulie H. Keith, trustees under the will of George E. Keith. In a letter dated January 8, 1920, George E. Keith had given notice of his intention to give the city the land as a memorial to his son, who had been a member of the school committee and had died in London, in connection with World War duties. Under provisions of the deed the school board has "sole charge of the management and use of said field for athletic games and other entertainments and purposes of a public nature as well as for school purposes."

The city of Brockton, in 1922, received the David G. Swain Fund of \$5,000, under the will of the late David G. Swain, a real estate operator and appraiser, the income "to be used for the poor children's shoes and clothing fund of the city of Brockton."

**City Learning to Drink More Milk**—There are two hundred and sixty-eight dairy farms, on which are 3,058 cows furnishing Brockton with the bulk of the milk consumed by the municipality, according to the latest report. In 1926 Brockton consumed 26,563 quarts of milk daily, an average of six hundred and sixty-three quarts over the average of the previous year. A high degree of cleanliness and freedom from adulteration characterizes the milk supply, owing to the watchfulness on the part of the board of health and the bacteriological department superintended by City Bacteriologist George E. Bolling. All dairy farms are subjected to rigid inspection.

**Municipal Housekeeping Fund**—The city budget for 1927 carried a net appropriation of \$2,486,778, using as a gross appropriation \$3,292,470 and deducting the estimated revenue of \$805,691. The general school appropriation was \$849,501, one-third of the whole net total. The police appropriation was \$193,176, the fire department \$258,797, regular health department \$25,800, ash removal department \$45,555, contagious diseases fund \$54,084, Public Welfare \$143,419, Water Department maintenance \$140,961, sewer maintenance \$76,311, Street Department \$179,941, street lighting \$71,540, and Public Library \$37,466.



**Conduct of the Fire Department**—The fire loss in Brockton in 1926 was \$167,383. There are one hundred and thirty-one employees in the fire department which is one of the best in the country for a city of the size of Brockton. The estimated value of the property where fires occurred in 1926 was \$6,458,270. In responding to the 1,069 alarms the motor apparatus covered 3,304 miles.

**Since North Bridgewater Became Brockton**—The population of North Bridgewater in 1870 was 8,007. In 1875 there were 10,578, and of this number 5,242 were males and 5,336 females. There were 2,434 voters, 3,063 ratable polls, 2,166 native voters, and 268 naturalized voters. According to the 1875 directory there were ten clergymen, eight physicians, four lawyers, twelve teachers, eleven barbers, one hundred and sixty-three farmers, eighteen bakers, fifty-eight farm laborers, nine whose occupation was given as servants, and several saloon keepers, for it was a license town.

In 1880 the population was 13,608, an increase in ten years of 5,610. The increase in population from 1875 to 1885 was the largest percentage of any ten years, and much larger than any of the other twenty-three cities in the Commonwealth. This increase in percentage was 96.47. Brockton's population in 1885 was 20,783, an increase of 7,715 in five years.

Brockton was the first city in the country to have electric street lights but there was none in 1873, the year before the Brockton Fair started. Neither was there a street railway or a water system. A coach line was run from Campello to the center of the town by Charles Cole, a Campello stable keeper, but, in 1873, he disposed of it. April 24, 1875, a portion of Brockton was annexed to South Abington (now Whitman), and portions of East Bridgewater and South Abington were annexed to Brockton, changing the map lines slightly, to the advantage, it was believed, of many people concerned.

The first telephone wire was stretched in Brockton February 1, 1877, from the office of D. T. Burrell, photographer, in the Bryant Building, corner of Main and Centre streets. The heaviest snowstorm of that winter came later the same day, blocking the railroad and testing the telephone wire, but its great convenience in times of storm could not be demonstrated because there were no telephone connections in readiness. It was on February 12th that Professor Dolbeare experimented with the public telephone for the first time.

St. George Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons, of Campello, held its first communication February 14, 1877. It was the second Masonic lodge in Brockton, Paul Revere Lodge having been instituted February 5, 1856.

Ground was broken for laying the first water pipes in Brockton in

August, 1877. The start was made in front of Charles R. Ford's factory. The work was completed for that year December 6, 1877, when the trial of hydrants took place at Campello.

Getting the water system in operation and running smoothly and popularly, was not occasioned suddenly or without interruptions and controversies. Isaac Kingman and four hundred and fifty-four others sent a remonstrance to the Legislature February 7, 1878, against authorizing the completion of the water works. The water committee was not permitted to take formal possession of the lands for the proposed reservoir at Stoughton or Avon until March 2, 1880. The first water from this basin was discharged through the hydrants November 12, 1880. The reservoir is still in the possession of the city and frequently is called upon, during some temporary repairs or other interruption of the service from Silver Lake.

The first attempt to have a street railway in Brockton was December 2, 1880, when a public hearing was held before the selectmen in the interest of a horse railroad. The first car was started on the horse railroad July 6, 1881, from Clifton Avenue, Campello, and was drawn by horses driven by Porter Richmond, in a style which few other drivers were ever able to command. Mr. Richmond was a resident of Halifax and had been proprietor and manager of a summer hotel in that delightful country town until it burned about 1880. He drove the motive power of the street car as far as the residence of Enos Reynolds in Montello, receiving the plaudits of the people all along the three or four miles. Strangely enough, the second driver was also a Halifax man, Amasa Soule, and these two became among the best-known men.

Brockton had become a city when the horse railroad was in operation, with Hon. Ziba C. Keith as its first mayor and DeWitt Clinton Packard its first city clerk. Brockton was incorporated as a city April 9, 1881. The first meeting of the new city government was held January 2, 1882.

**Petition for City Charter**—In December, 1880, a circular letter was sent out which read as follows:

Dear Sir: In view of the interest which is being manifested in the question of a city charter for Brockton, it has been deemed advisable to hold a meeting of those more prominently identified in the business of the town for consultation on the subject. You are notified to attend such a meeting to be held in E. L. Brown's office, Clark's Block, on Tuesday evening, December 1st, at 7:30 o'clock.

Balis Sanford  
Henry E. Lincoln  
F. B. Washburn  
A. T. Jones  
J. J. Whipple  
Preston B. Keith  
S. Franklin Packard.



The meeting was held and, after talking things over, another meeting was arranged, which took place in the Opera House, December 29, at which A. T. Jones presided and Baalis Sanford acted as secretary. The number in attendance was about three hundred. A motion was made by C. W. Sumner that the town petition the Legislature for a city charter. Among those who spoke to this motion were Francis B. Gardner, Patrick Gilmore, Rev. Samuel L. Beal, Henry W. Robinson, John J. Whipple, C. R. Ford, Lyman Clark, Hon. Jonathan White and George M. Copeland.

A town meeting was held January 10, 1881, in the Opera House, and a vote was taken which resulted in 631 votes in favor of applying for a city charter. Those opposed numbered 124. Owing to the majority vote, the selectmen were instructed to prepare a petition and submit it to the Legislature, to be assisted by a committee composed of C. C. Bixby, Preston B. Keith, D. W. C. Packard, Enos H. Reynolds, William Rankin, C. W. Sumner, A. T. Jones, John J. Whipple, Rufus P. Kingman, Francis B. Gardner, Ziba C. Keith and David Hervey. The population of the town was about 14,000 at that time. Little did anyone realize when the committee was appointed that the list contained the names of two who were to serve the city as mayor in years to come, another as city clerk for many years, another as one of the water commissioners for a quarter of a century, and others as aldermen or otherwise prominent in municipal life.

The license and no license issue entered decidedly into the first municipal campaign for the choice of mayor, the candidates being H. H. Packard who had nominations from the Democrats and Citizens' groups, and Ziba C. Keith, Republican and Prohibition candidate. The latter was elected as Brockton's first mayor, having received 1,368 votes against 1,060 for his opponent. The no-license forces had a voting strength registered of 1,231 and the license voters 986. Thus Brockton started as a no-license city and, with few interruptions, continued in the no-license column as long as the local option law continued, or until the passage of the Volstead Act.

The first city council was probably made up of the ablest men who have ever constituted the council. Many of them are well enough remembered by older residents of the present day to have their names recall to mind their virtues and abilities. They were, in the board of aldermen, Henry E. Lincoln, Rufus P. Kingman, George Churchill, George E. Keith, Ward Thompson, Enos H. Reynolds, and Henry B. Packard; in the common council, Francis B. Gardner, William H. Tobey, William H. Savage, William L. Douglas, Sanford Winter, Isaiah A. Beals, H. A. Monk, G. A. Knapp, L. P. Churchill, Patrick McCarthy, John S. Hayward, Nathan Keith, Martin Packard, Elbridge G. Hale, Daniel

Connolly, John W. Porter, Charles H. Cary, Elbridge L. Brown, A. T. Jones, Edward Crocker, George A. Packard.

There was one man living in the town on that election day who was a voter at the time of the inauguration of the town of North Bridgewater, Deacon Simeon Packard. He was given the honor of being the first man to vote in his ward, and he was on hand when the polls opened, perhaps the first to vote in the city. He made no secret of the fact that his vote was for Ziba C. Keith for mayor, and for no-license.

It seems as if everyone turned out to see the first city government inaugurated. There had been a heavy snow and the street cars were out of commission. The train from Cape Cod was delayed on account of the storm. Consequently the Campello contingent was half an hour late in arriving at the Opera House. Henry H. Packard, chairman of the last board of selectmen, presided at the beginning of the exercises and prayer was offered by Rev. H. L. Kelsie of the First Congregational Church. Other prominent men on the stage, with the officers-elect, were Henry A. Ford, clerk of the retiring board of selectmen; Judge Jonas R. Perkins, who administered the oath of office; Governor John D. Long of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; Judge Benjamin W. Harris of East Bridgewater, Councillor Matthew H. Cushing of Middleboro and Bradford Kingman, the Bridgewater historian.

**How Improvements Came Along**—The cornerstone of City Hall was laid May 30, 1892. The cut stone men began their labor February 11, 1892.

The sewerage system was constructed in 1893-4. The sewage flows by gravity to the south end of the city into a receiving reservoir. It is pumped from there to the filter beds on the west side of the city and purified by intermittent downward filtration.

The gigantic task of doing away with grade crossings commenced at the Howard Street crossing, shortly after passage of the Massachusetts Grade Crossing Act, which was approved June 21, 1890. Brockton was the first city in the United States to abolish all its grade crossings at the same time. Erecting new passenger stations and constructing new freight yards were part of the general plan. Previous to that time the city had no freight yards and switching was over grade crossings, which made the street and railroad intersections especially dangerous. This condition had been tolerated since the railroad was built in 1846, connecting with the Old Colony Railroad from Boston to Plymouth, at South Braintree.

The post office was opened in 1816 with Charles Packard the first postmaster, an appointee of President Madison. Postage to Boston was six cents, to New York eighteen and three-quarter cents. How



much mail was sent can easily be imagined when it is known that the yearly income for several years averaged \$40.

The Public Library was established in 1867. There had been a "social library" purchased by a fund raised by subscription just after the Revolutionary War; also several association libraries housed in private houses. Locations for the Town Library were in the Studley Building, Main and High streets; in the Puffer Block on Green Street, in Satucket Block on Main Street, and in City Hall, previous to the erection of the present Carnegie Library.

The fire protection dates back to 1827, when an engine was purchased by subscription. It was "Union No. 1," and operated by a private company. It was a bucket tub, filled by hand, and with a hook and ladder vehicle, constituted the fire department until two engines were purchased by the town in 1846.

The town had a disastrous fire in 1853 which destroyed the South Congregational Church, shops and dwellings at Campello, with a loss of \$50,000.

The name Brockton was given to the town, which had been North Bridgewater, in 1874. The name was suggested by Ira Copeland. Several other names had been suggested and it was at a town meeting May 5, 1874, that the names "Brockton," "Allerton" and "Avon" were before the voters for adoption of one of the three. "Brockton" secured 1,080 votes out of the 1,491 cast.

When the town of North Bridgewater was incorporated the population was 1,480. Just before the Civil War the population numbered 6,584. The 1870 figure was 8,007 and the succeeding ten years the population increased to 5,601. There was at that date, 1880, an enrollment of 2,267 pupils in the public schools. In 1880 the town valuation was \$6,876,427.

The First Congregational Church, the parent church of the town, was indeed the "meeting-house" of the town, and nearly all town meetings were held in that edifice until City Block was erected in 1880. The municipal offices were located in that building, Main and Ward streets, until the completion of the present City Hall. The cornerstone of the City Hall was laid May 30, 1892, by the Grand Lodge, Free and Accepted Masons, of Massachusetts. The building was erected at a cost of approximately \$315,000. It was dedicated September 24, 1894.

**Concerning the Growth of the Religious Movement** in North Bridgewater and Brockton, as represented by its churches, Rev. Warren P. Landers, in his memorial volume prepared for the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the city, wrote as follows:

While for a half century one church seemed practically sufficient for old North Bridgewater, with growth and diversity of population, religious life rapidly expanded. In 1837 the First Parish Church gave twenty-three members to form South Church. In 1850 another group organized Porter, named after the first minister. The Church of the New Jerusalem was established in 1827; the present house of worship dedicated in 1857. With this society, the Rev. Warren Goddard served in a notable ministry for a quarter of a century. Methodism began in town with the Pearl Street Church in 1830. Central was formed in 1842 and for many years worshipped on Church Street before building the beautiful and commodious house on Elm. South was organized in 1879, Franklin in 1887, Swedish in 1890. The Lutheran Church was formed in 1854. Baptist faith came in continuous corporate form as early as 1850, building on Warren Avenue, corner of Belmont, 1881, and later erecting its attractive edifice at the junction of Elm and the Avenue. At Campello, Warren Avenue Baptist Church was organized in 1886, Swedish in 1883; at the North, services were begun in 1886. St. Paul's Episcopal Church commenced its strong ministry here in 1871, opening its early Chapel in 1877 out of which has grown the stone edifice on Pleasant Street. Unity, organized in 1881, dedicated its House in 1884. The Free Will Baptist was formed in 1884, and the Universalist Church in 1857. Supplementing church life, the Young Men's Christian Association organized in 1887, erecting its present finely-equipped building in 1914. The Young Women's Christian Association, formed in 1906, dedicated its modern plant on Main Street in September, 1918.

The Roman Catholic Church began its present vigorous service here in 1856 under the direction of the Rev. Thomas B. McNulty. In 1859, it dedicated the church so long used on Main Street. The foundations of the present stately edifice at the corner of Bartlett Street were laid in 1910. The Church of the Sacred Heart (French) was dedicated in 1893. St. Margaret's at Campello, St. Edward's at the North, and St. Colman's at the East Side, established at a later period, are rapidly growing.

The United Presbyterians, the Church of Christ, Scientist; the Advent; Latter Day Saints—as well as undenominational groups—hold regular services in churches or halls. The Hebrew Synagogues minister to large assemblies. There are both Congregational and Baptist churches for the colored population.

There are about one hundred and twenty fraternal organizations in the city. Massasoit Lodge, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, the oldest Odd Fellowship organization in the city, named in honor of the Indian sachem from whom the town was purchased, was instituted in 1845. Paul Revere Lodge, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, the parent Masonic body in the town, was instituted in 1855. Damocles Lodge, Knights of Pythias, the first of that order in Brockton, was instituted March 30, 1886. Nearly all fraternal organizations in existence in America have branches in Brockton, as both men and women of Brockton have been appreciative of such affiliations from early days.

**The Worst Disaster Which Ever Befell the City** was in March, 1905, when the explosion of a steam boiler at the shoe factory of R. B. Grover & Company, Main and Calmar streets, and the resulting fire, caused the deaths of fifty-six persons on that day. Two others died later from injuries received in the fire. Thirty-six bodies were burned beyond



identification and were buried in a memorial lot provided for the purpose in Melrose Cemetery. A suitable monument was erected by the city. More than one hundred thousand dollars was raised for the families of the victims and final payments to beneficiaries were made in 1921. A history of the relief fund, written by Rev. Dr. Albert F. Pierce, is at the Public Library.

**The Youth of Brockton has Volunteered Readily** whenever the dread call to arms has sounded for the several wars. More than one hundred men enlisted at the war meeting held in the Church of the New Jerusalem at the outbreak of the Civil War. Company F of the Twelfth Regiment, was made up largely of men from this town. The total number of men furnished by the town in that fratricidal struggle was approximately seven hundred.

Concerning the Twelfth Massachusetts Regiment, of which Colonel Fletcher Webster, in honor of whom the Brockton Grand Army Post is named, was organizer and commander, much should be remembered. At the battle of Antietam, September 17, 1862, there were present in line nine companies of the Twelfth Regiment, including two hundred and sixty-two officers and men. Of this number forty-nine were killed, one hundred and sixty-three wounded, ten missing, a total of two hundred and twenty-two. The percentage of loss was eighty-four and seven hundred and thirty-two one thousandths. This is the highest percentage of loss sustained by any organization, Union or Confederate, in any one battle of the Civil War.

The patriotism and valor of the "Boys of '61" is recognized by the memorial rotunda at City Hall, paintings of battle scenes in which men of North Bridgewater took part, a soldiers' monument on Perkins Park, and by patriotic organizations. Among the latter are Fletcher Webster Post, No. 13, Grand Army of the Republic, organized July 1, 1867; the Woman's Relief Corps; and Captain R. B. Grover Camp, Sons of Veterans.

Just as patriotic was the response to the call for the Spanish War in 1898, when Battery I, the local militia company, entrained and went to Fort Warren in Boston Harbor, the same station from which was organized the Twelfth Massachusetts Regiment in 1861 by Colonel Webster. Major Charles Williamson was captain of the battery during the war. He had previously served as mayor of the city.

Returning from the war, the veterans organized the Spanish War Veterans' Association. There is a soldiers' lot in Melrose Cemetery, the property of this organization.

Brockton was represented in the World War by its quota of officers and men, distributed in many units and regiments. In Salisbury Park is a memorial boulder with two bronze tablets commemorating the

supreme sacrifice of ninety-nine young Brocktonians, whose names appear elsewhere in this volume. Their names and deeds are further perpetuated by Post No. 35, American Legion, the Veterans of Foreign Wars, American Legion Auxiliary and Veterans of Foreign Wars Auxiliary.

Other patriotic organizations include the Daughters of Veterans, Sons of Union Veterans' Auxiliary, Spanish War Veterans' Auxiliary, Spanish War Veterans.

**War Assistance Back Home**—In all the wars, the people back home have liberally cared for the families of those who went to the front. During the World War more than \$625,000 was donated to the Brockton War Chest. A wonderful organization was perfected for the campaign and the Armory became its headquarters. The close of the campaign came just as the plague of influenza became especially severe in the city and immediately the same organization turned its attention to the new duty of caring for those, and their families, stricken with the disease. A volume, telling how this work was carried on, with the outdoor camp in connection with the Brockton Hospital and the unselfish responses made to every call upon the citizenship, was written by Ernest A. Burrell and can be found at the Public Library.

The drives to raise money in the various Liberty Loan campaigns went "over the top" handsomely.

The success of the War Chest suggested the adoption of a Community Chest as the best means of providing for local charities.

#### MAYORS OF BROCKTON

1882—Ziba C. Keith	1899—Emery M. Low
1883—Henry H. Packard	1900—Charles H. Coulter
1884—Ziba C. Keith	1901—Charles H. Coulter
1885—Ziba C. Keith	1902—David W. Battles
1886—John J. Whipple	1903—Charles H. Coulter
1887—John J. Whipple	1904—Edward H. Keith
1888—Albert R. Wade	1905—Edward H. Keith
1889—Albert R. Wade	1906—Fred O. Bradford
1890—William L. Douglas	1907—John S. Kent
1891—Ziba C. Keith	1908—John S. Kent
1892—Ziba C. Keith	1909—John S. Kent
1893—Ziba C. Keith	1910—William H. Clifford
1894—John J. Whipple	1911—Harry C. Howard
1895—John J. Whipple	1912—Harry C. Howard
1896—Charles Williamson	1913—Charles M. Hickey
1897—Charles Williamson	1914—Harry C. Howard
1898—Henry E. Garfield	1915—John S. Burbank



## MAYORS OF BROCKTON (Continued)

1916—John S. Burbank	1922—Roger Keith
1917—Stewart B. McLeod	1923—Frank A. Manning
1918—William L. Gleason	1924—William A. Bullivant
1919—William L. Gleason	1925—William A. Bullivant
1920—William L. Gleason	1926—Harold D. Bent
1921—Roger Keith	

## CITY CLERKS

1882-1912—Dewitt C. Packard	1915-1920—Calvin R. Barrett
1912-1915—Clinton F. Packard	1920—J. Albert Sullivan

## CITY TREASURERS

1882-1886—Henry R. Ford	1907-1913—E. Francis Pope
1887-1894—Augustus T. Jones	1913-1922—John J. O'Reilly
1894-1907—William H. Emerson	1922—Calvin R. Barrett

## CARVER

**Town of the First Tea Kettle**—Motoring into Carver from Plymouth, Middleboro or the Cape Cod towns, one feels that he has arrived in an especially beautiful New England town, with numerous lakes, smooth, well-kept roads and a general air of prosperity and hospitality. It is a town of two hundred and eighty-four cranberry bogs, having a valuation of \$1,553,904 to show for the 2,629 acres given to this culture. The average valuation of bogs per acre is \$590.95 but over two hundred acres are valued at more than one thousand dollars an acre.

The valuation of the taxable land in Carver in 1926 was \$1,928,990 and of buildings \$632,955. The value of personal property was \$274,685. The number of resident property owners was three hundred and eighty-five and of non-resident property owners one hundred and seventy. The town is built on 19,834 acres of land, on which are six hundred and seventy-eight dwellings.

The town spends \$29,000 for the support of its schools, out of an aggregate appropriation list of \$68,525, showing that it runs true to tradition in being exceedingly appreciative of the advantages of education, and liberal in its support. For the protection of persons and property Carver spends \$2,000; and the overseers of the poor found good use in 1926 for an expenditure of \$2,674. The town has a reputation for being especially prompt and generous in removing snow from the highways after storms in winter. To sustain this reputation in 1926 required an expenditure of \$4,362.

All of the towns in the Plymouth Colony were much concerned in the

early days in fostering the herring or alewives industry and in suppressing animals and birds which interfered with the processes of agriculture. In the early history of Carver, for instance, the year following its incorporation as a town, Joseph Vaughan, Isaac Cushman and Abijah Lucas were made a committee "to take charge of the fish called alewives." At the same meeting Meletiah Cobb and Joseph Ransom were elected hog-reeves, and a vote was passed that swine might run at large, being yoked and ringed according to law; voted to pay from the town treasury eight pence for the head of each crow brought to the selectmen before the first of June. The following year it was voted to pay Robert Waterman two pounds and eleven shillings to build a pound for the impounding of cattle. Soon after the pound was built near the centre of the town, according to vote, Joseph Vaughan was chosen pound keeper.

Hogs running at large caused a vote some years forbidding the practice and in other years it was voted to allow them such liberty, provided they were suitably ringed and yoked. In 1801, it was voted that both swine and cattle might run at large. About this time the town was paying bounties for killing crows, crow blackbirds, red-wings, blue-jays and red-birds. The same was true in the neighboring towns, and we are led to believe that the numerous birds and the practice of allowing hogs and cattle to run at large caused much annoyance and considerable losses to the people engaged in agriculture.

While today the subject of prohibition seems to be a close runner-up with that of the weather as a topic of conversation, and it is blamed for everything from bobbed hair to the Mississippi overflowing its banks, it is nothing new. Way back in 1824 the town of Carver voted to instruct the selectmen to use their influence and exertions to suppress the evil of intemperance in the town. Nearly every year, the records show that more pressure was brought to bear on the retailers of spirituous liquors to keep within due bounds. In 1829 it was "Voted to recommend to all persons who may be called upon to officiate at funerals to abstain entirely from the use of spirituous liquors on such occasions." It was a custom in those days to have liquors served on all occasions where neighbors and friends gathered for any purpose, not excepting funerals. Some happening occurred about that time in Carver which made it advisable, in the opinion of the voters, that those who officiated on such occasions should be total abstainers that day.

There was another day when the use of liquors was especially frowned upon, as it was in recent years when saloons were in vogue. That was on "town meeting day." In 1844, the town voted "to disapprove of anyone selling ardent spirits in or around the meeting-house on town meeting day." It was voted on another occasion "that the selectmen post up the names of all such persons who misspend their time and



property by the excessive use of intoxicating liquors. It does not appear on the records just where this social register was published but presumably on the door of the meeting-house, on the "town tree" or possibly in the meeting-house itself, to be perused with interest on "Thursday lecture" nights.

The custom was for town paupers to be placed in the hands of someone who would "agree with the town" to support him or her at a low figure. In 1790 James Vaughan made such an agreement with the town and received one shilling and four pence per week. Intemperance was considered one of the principal causes for pauperism.

A committee consisting of Ezra Thompson, Samuel Shaw and Thomas Adams, was appointed by the town in 1827 to inquire into the matter and this committee rendered a written report which read: "We have viewed with grief the increased progress of dissipation in the town of Carver, and feel anxious that some arrangement might be made which will come within the limits of the authority of the town to check the progress of that evil, which in our opinion is the principal cause of the multiplied crime and poverty which the inhabitants of this town are becoming noted for, and your committee are of the opinion that these evils are promoted by a want of due observance of the laws by the licensed houses and stores in town."

**Education and Defence** were provided for immediately upon Carver being incorporated as a town in 1790, and interest in these two branches of the public welfare has never lagged. One of the first votes of the town was to appropriate thirty pounds for the support of schools. A committee was appointed "to Moddle the School Districts and to proportion the Money to each district, and provide a school in each district." The committee was composed of Captain Benjamin Crocker, Consider Chase, Samuel Lucas (3), Captain William Atwood, Benjamin White and Caleb Atwood. At the next annual town meeting in March the appropriation was raised to forty pounds and this was the appropriation in 1792 and 1793. In 1794 it was raised to sixty pounds but this proved a burden and forty pounds became the appropriation in 1795. The following year sixty pounds again appeared on the records and it continued that figure or a larger one, until 1804 when the amount was given as two hundred dollars, the English term no longer being used.

The schools began to be regularly assisted in 1859 by a voluntary pledge of William Savery to give one hundred dollars each year toward the support of the Carver schools, as long as he should feel able and willing. He also presented suitable libraries to each of the schools. Mr. Savery was born in Carver, and supplemented his common school education received here by terms at the Bridgewater Academy and Pierce Academy at Middleboro.

The first church was organized in Carver in 1733, the same year one was organized in Halifax, a neighboring Plymouth County town. Rev. Othniel Campbell was ordained as the first pastor in 1734. The town was incorporated and took the name of the first governor of Plymouth Colony June 9, 1790. Carver is bounded on the north by Plympton, on the east by Kingston and Plymouth and Wareham and on the west by Middleborough.

There are twelve pretty ponds in the town, among them Sampson Pond, which was named for an Indian sachem who showed commendable industry and had a good business sense, for one of his nationality. In 1705 he secured the privilege of fishing and hunting, making tar and turpentine and cutting poles and bark in a cedar swamp, the whole reservation allotted to him with these concessions numbering two hundred acres.

The names of the other ponds are Wenham, Crane, Mohootset, Cooper, Muddy, Vaughan, John, Flax, Clear, Barrett and Wankonquog. The Commonwealth maintains a game reservation in the town and allows camps to be built and the land occupied on a rental basis. The principal streams are Beaver and Cedar brooks, which are useful in draining the town and also are converted to cranberry culture.

Lumbering was formerly an important industry and 9,000 acres were covered with woodland a generation ago, with six sawmills assisting in reducing them to building material.

The first iron tea kettle cast in this country was made in this town in 1762 at the "Charlotte Foundry," established about 1757. The foundry was later called the Ellis Foundry and became famous for the quality of its hollow ware.

Some of the earlier ministers of the old Congregational Church were Othniel Campbell, 1734-1743; John Howland, 1746-1804; John Shaw, 1807-1815; Luther Wright, 1821-1825; Plummer Chase, 1828-1835; Paul Jewett, 1836-1839; Jonathan King, 1839-1846; Ebenezer Gay, 1846-1851; Stillman Pratt, 1851-1854; William C. Whitcomb, who afterwards served as chaplain in the army, where he died; Henry L. Chase.

Of the other old churches, the Baptist, at the Centre, was organized in 1791, the Methodist Church in 1831; the Union Society, composed of various denominations in 1853.

When the town was incorporated in 1790 the most numerous names of the inhabitants were Shurtleff, Cobb, Atwood, Shaw, Cole, Ransom, Dunham, Lucas, Vaughan, Sherman, Barrows, Savory, Hammond, Tillson, Murdock, Crocker, and Ellis. At that time there were about one hundred and fifty families, which included about eight hundred and forty-seven persons, twelve of these being colored.

The first burial in the town was in 1776.



## DUXBURY

**Commander of Pilgrim Army Lived Here**—Duxbury is one of the most attractive towns in Plymouth County for summer residential purposes, and also has an interesting history and has contributed much in industrial achievement. It is one of the oldest towns in the State, having been incorporated June 7, 1637. It is bounded on the north by Pembroke and Marshfield, east by Marshfield and the Atlantic Ocean, south by Kingston and Plymouth and Kingston harbors, and west by Kingston, Plympton and Pembroke.

Captain's Hill in South Duxbury is the highest land and at the foot of this hill was the home of Captain Myles Standish, commander-in-chief of the first army in the Plymouth Colony. For him the hill is called Captain's Hill. At its summit is a monument of granite, erected in his honor, and surmounted by a statue of the Pilgrim warrior. A few years ago lightning struck the statue and the head and right arm of Standish fell to the ground, an achievement which the Indians are believed to have plotted on numerous occasions, three hundred years before, unsuccessfully.

The cornerstone of the monument was consecrated with imposing ceremonies October 7, 1872. A memorial plate enclosed in the cornerstone bears the following inscription:

The corner-stone of the Standish memorial, in commemoration of the character and services of Captain Myles Standish, the first commissioned military officer of New England. Laid on the summit of Captain's Hill in Duxbury, under the superintendence of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts, in presence of the Standish Monument Association, by the M. W. Grand Lodge of the Free Masons of Massachusetts, M. W. Sereno D. Nickerson, Grand Master, on the seventh day of October, A. D. 1872; being the two hundred and fifty-second year since the first settlement of New England by the Pilgrim Fathers. Site consecrated August 17, 1871; association incorporated May 4, 1872; association organized, and ground broken, June 17, 1872; corner of foundation laid August 9, 1872.

The monument is one hundred and ten feet in height, surmounted by the statue. There is an octagonal base twenty-eight feet in diameter and twenty-five feet high, above which is a circular tower.

Captain Myles Standish lived in Duxbury with his second wife, Barbara, who survived him. His first wife, Rose, died during the first winter after the arrival of the "Mayflower" at Plymouth. This town was also the home of John Alden; Thomas Prence, afterward a resident of Eastham on Cape Cod; William Bassett, afterward a resident of Bridgewater; George Soule, Joshua Pratt, William Brewster and others.

Duxbury Harbor is a beauty spot, with a narrow strip of beach extending seven miles, the north end being at Marshfield, near Brant Rock, and the south end at the Gurnet, past which the "Mayflower"

sailed into Plymouth Harbor. Powder Point is a part of the mainland nearest to the long line of Duxbury Beach. The two were connected some forty years ago by a bridge, with a draw in that part over the channel. The bridge is somewhat over a mile in length and it was expected that the whole stretch of Duxbury Beach would become sites for summer homes, with such easy means of access. Not long after the bridge was erected, however, an unusual storm caused the ocean to cut through the beach and, while this break was afterwards filled in, the beach has not been in demand for building lots and the bridge has failed to supply the need which it was believed existed.

Blue Fish River flows into Duxbury Bay near Powder Point and at this point there were in earlier years a shipyard and a tide-mill. At the mouth of Blue Fish River is the terminus of the Atlantic Telegraph or French Atlantic Cable. The terminal point of the cable was laid July 23, 1869. There was an appropriate celebration of the event July 27, with numerous prominent men participating.

Captain Myles Standish was one of the four principal men of Plymouth in its earliest days. The other three were William Bradford, the governor and historian; William Brewster, for a long time the spiritual leader of the colonists; Edward Winslow, governor of Plymouth three years and the one whose diplomacy with the great sachem, Massasoit, made possible the treaty which prevented the annihilation of the Pilgrim settlers at the outset. We of the present generation owe much to him for writing his history of the early days, which has been titled "Winslow's Relation."

Captain Myles Standish had been commissioned a captain by Queen Elizabeth for bravery in her service. He was essentially a soldier and was placed in full charge of the defence of the colonists. How he happened to join the Pilgrims no one knows but many suspect it was to gratify his love of adventure. If so, he had plenty of it all the years he lived after landing on Plymouth Rock. He was never a member of the Plymouth church.

His wife, Rose, died one month after the arrival in Plymouth. He took up his residence in Duxbury and Captain's Hill in the South Duxbury section, overlooking Duxbury, Kingston and Plymouth bays, was a part of the large amount of land which was allotted to him. He left four sons, when he died October 3, 1656.

The town of Duxbury was first settled about the year 1632 by the people of Plymouth, although it is probable, according to the records, that there were some settlers in Duxbury before this period. These, however, returned to Plymouth in the winter, to insure their better attendance at church service, and also to protect themselves from the attacks of the Indians.



The town was incorporated June 7, 1637. It received its name out of respect to Captain Myles Standish, from Duxbury Hall, the seat of the Standish family in England.

The first tavern license was granted Francis Sprague in 1638. In 1678 the town licensed Mr. Seabury "to sell liquors unto such sober minded neighbours as hee shall think meet, soe as hee sell not lesse then the quantitie of a gallon at a time to one person, and not in smaller quantities by retaile to the occasioning of drunkenness."

In 1643 there were 82 persons capable of bearing arms, thus indicating that the population was about 400. In 1800 there were 1,664 inhabitants.

Among the earlier settlers of Duxbury were some of the ablest men in the Colony, among them being John Alden, William Brewster, Thomas Prence, George Soule, Joshua Pratt, Samuel Eaton, Joseph Rogers, Henry Sampson and Love Brewster.

Inseparably connected with those early days will ever remain the story of the "Courtship of Miles Standish," so beautifully told by Longfellow, where the old warrior sent his fair-faced, stripling assistant, John Alden, to plead his case with Priscilla Mullins.

"If the great Captain of Plymouth is so very eager to wed me,  
Why does he not come himself, and take the trouble to woo me?  
If I am not worth the wooing, I surely am not worth the winning."

. . . . .

"Archly the maiden smiled, and with eyes overrunning with laughter,  
Said, in a tremulous voice, 'Why don't you speak for yourself, John?'"

**Churches and Schools**—Rev. Ralph Partridge was the first minister; he was settled as early as the incorporation of the town, and continued in the ministry until his death, in 1658. He had been a minister in the Church of England; but "being hunted," as he expressed it, "like a partridge upon the mountains, at last he resolved to get out of there and take his flight to New England." He was a man of superior abilities, and suffered much on account of the poverty of his flock, but he did not forsake them. He was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Holmes, who was succeeded by Rev. Ichabod Wiswall, who continued pastor about thirty years. The next minister was Rev. John Robinson, who was settled in 1700, and continued in the ministry nearly forty years; after him was Rev. Samuel Veazie, who was pastor about eight years. Mr. Veazie was succeeded by Rev. Charles Turner, who continued in the ministry seventeen years. Rev. Zedekiah Sanger, the next minister, was settled in 1776, but on account of ill health, his pastoral relation was dissolved in 1785. The eighth minister, Rev. John Allyn, was ordained in 1788.

The famous Partridge Academy, sharing the Green with the First Church, was organized shortly after the settlement of the town, its age corresponding to that of Harvard College. Among famous people

who taught at Partridge Academy was the late Mary A. Livermore, as related elsewhere. The academy was conducted as a separate institution of learning until 1927, when more consistent arrangements were made for schooling in the town and the Partridge fund was converted to scholarships.

The Powder Point School, conducted many years by Francis B. Knapp, is delightfully located on Powder Point, not far from the French Cable terminal. It is conducted as an exclusive school for boys during the school year and as a summer hotel during the vacation season. Many eminent men have been graduates of this school. The Knapp family also conducted a boys' school in Plymouth some years ago, and it was this school which furnished the setting for Louise Alcott's famous book, "Little Men."

There were 236 Duxbury men in the Civil War and thirty-seven of them died in the service. The monument erected in their memory in the cemetery near Partridge Academy, is a granite shaft bearing the inscription, "Memoria in Eterna; The Soldiers and Sailors who Gave Their Lives for Their Country in the War of 1861; Honor to the Brave."

The old burial ground, where sleep Captain Myles Standish and other members of the Standish family, and many old residents of the town, is on the highway between the turnpike passing the First Church and Partridge Academy, and South Duxbury. Among the old epitaphs which appear on headstones in this old cemetery is one which reads: "Here lyes ye body of Deacon William Brewster, who departed this life Novbr ye 3d, 1723, aged nearly 78 years." There are other headstones erected in memory of early mariners who were lost at sea.

In the cemetery containing the Soldiers' Monument is a headstone on which is chiseled:

"Aseneath Soule. The chisel can't help her any."

**Ideal Summer Homes**—These are historical facts which come readily to the mind of whoever guides one into the old town of Duxbury, taking it for granted that the visitor first sees the most conspicuous memorial in the town and wants to hear the Pilgrim history before looking about Duxbury of today. But there are as interesting people above ground in Duxbury as there are buried beneath the sod. There are 1,787 persons who pay property taxes, live in 1,135 houses, on 14,257 acres of land and represent a total valuation of their possessions to the figure of \$6,049,757. Of the property owners, eight hundred and fifteen are residents, and seven hundred and seventy-two, non-residents. As there are only five hundred and sixty-six poll taxes assessed it shows that there are many summer residents. It is as a place for summer homes that Duxbury has an enviable reputation.





ST. JOHN'S CATHOLIC CHURCH, EAST BRIDGEWATER



FORGE POND FROM SOUTH SHORE DRIVE, EAST BRIDGEWATER





Duxbury does not live in its glorious past nor in its pleasant present alone. It looks forward to the town of tomorrow, as evidenced by the fact that it has a planning board to consider the best method of developing the natural beauty of the town, with measures for the protection of health as well as property. The problem of sewage disposal for the town is under consideration.

In 1926 Duxbury spent \$8,209 for public welfare, largely outside poor. The school department expended \$46,561, exclusive of the special loans authorized of \$110,000 and an appropriation of \$20,000 for the new High School building. The school plant of Duxbury is modern and consists of three buildings: the new High School building, the Village School and the Tarkiln School. It is believed by the superintendent of schools to have been a progressive step by which the number of school buildings were reduced from nine to three, permitting better grading. In 1926 there were three hundred and fifty-seven pupils enrolled, two hundred and seventy-seven in the elementary schools and eighty in the High School.

The Duxbury clam which was a life-saver in the earliest days of the Plymouth Colony and now a delicacy enjoyed far and near, is having the careful oversight of the Board of Health, in coöperation with the Engineering Department of the Massachusetts Board of Health. The emptying of sewage into Duxbury Bay has been stopped, thereby eliminating danger, and the Duxbury clams are enjoying greater prestige than ever.

Every visitor to Duxbury wants to sample the clams and see the Standish Monument. The Sunday before July 4, 1927, 3,000 visitors climbed Captain's Hill, on the Fourth 2,500 and the following day 2,000. In 1926, visitors to the monument numbered 105,000, and of these 10,000 climbed to the top. The registry shows tourists from all over the United States, Canada, England, Holland, Egypt, Palestine, India and Australia.

Among many famous people who have made their summer homes in Duxbury in recent years were Melbourne MacDowell and his famous wife, Fannie Davenport, William Seymour and his equally famous wife, May Davenport. The residence of the MacDowells was called "Melbourne Hall" and that of the Seymours "Clamavi Towers." Mrs. Seymour passed away in New York early in the summer of 1927. The body was cremated and the ashes buried at the summer home in Duxbury.

**East Bridgewater, Once Satucket, Bought of Indians**—Glide into a parking space along-side of any of the well-kept streets in East Bridgewater, many of them bordered by handsome elm trees which form a veritable bower of beauty and haven of shade in the good old summer time, and you will be the guest of 1,091 poll tax payers, or 1,029 resident individuals assessed on property. The slight difference in these figures

denotes that it is a prosperous community with wealth fairly evenly divided. The valuation of taxable real estate in the town is \$2,996,419, and the value of personal estate taxed \$1,485,242. There are 10,042 acres of land assessed.

East Bridgewater in 1926 spent for support of schools \$58,374, out of total disbursements for the year of \$203,259. The East Bridgewater Public Library is an important aid to education. On December 31, 1926, there were 11,727 books in the library. The circulation for the year was 19,579, a daily average of one hundred and seven. The enrollment in the High School this year is approximately one hundred and ninety pupils. In the eighteen schools of the town, including the High School, in 1926, there were seven hundred and twenty-five pupils, instructed by twenty-seven regular teachers and three special teachers.

On the 23rd of March, 1649, the Indian chief Massasoit deeded to Captain Myles Standish, Samuel Nash, and Constant Southworth, commissioners appointed by the Colonial government at Plymouth, a tract of land which now includes the Bridgewaters, a part of Abington, and a part of Hanson, for seven coats, a yard and a half in a coat; nine hatchets, eight hoes, twenty knives, four moose skins, and ten yards and a half of cotton. This contract was made and executed on a small hill in East Bridgewater, a little distance southeast of where the Carver Cotton Gin Works have stood for years past. This territory was called Satucket.

The settlement of East Bridgewater, began in 1660, when Samuel Allen, Jr., son of Samuel Allen, of Braintree, built a house a few rods from where the old Bridgewater branch of the Old Colony Railroad crossed the Matfield River. The next settlers were Nicholas Byram, Thomas Whitman, William Brett, Jr., and Robert Latham. These were the only inhabitants previous to 1676, the time of King Philip's War, when the dwelling houses of all the residents were burned by the Indians, except that of Nicholas Byram.

On December 14, 1723, the east end of the North Parish of Bridgewater, which then included West and old North Bridgewater, together with nine persons of the South Parish, viz.: Barnabas Seabury, Thomas Latham, Charles Latham, Nicholas Wade, Nathaniel Harden, Thomas Hooper, William Conant, Isaac Lazell, and Joseph Washburn, was made by the General Court, the East Parish of Bridgewater. The first meeting-house was built before the parish was formed, having been raised March 14, 1720.

East Bridgewater was taken from the old town of Bridgewater and incorporated June 14, 1823, with Abington for its northern boundary, Hanson and Halifax on the east, Bridgewater on the south, and West Bridgewater and Brockton on the west, using the present name of North



Bridgewater, as it was called when the division took place. The geological structure of East Bridgewater differs somewhat from other towns in the county, inasmuch as there is more clay suitable for brickmaking. Therefore, the making of bricks has for many years been one of the important industries. The deposit of clay is about thirty feet deep and of excellent quality.

There are no large ponds in East Bridgewater, but Robbin's Pond, of about one hundred and forty acres, is partly in East Bridgewater and partly in Halifax. It has an island near the centre, has a well wooded shore and there are numerous summer camps and cottages nearby.

There are several streams large enough to furnish valuable water power, which has always been utilized in the town industries, lumbering, making nails, cotton gins, boots and shoes, and other useful things. Black Brook and Poor-Meadow Brook unite in the southerly part of the town to form the Satucket River. Beaver Brook and Snell-Meadow Brook unite in the westerly part of the town and form the Matfield River. Both rivers join at Elmwood and flow into the Winnetuxet River, which flows through Halifax and empties into the Taunton River and thence into the sea.

Hon. Hugh Orr, who was born in Scotland in 1717, came to reside in the town at the age of twenty-one, constructed the first trip-hammer in this part of America, and began the manufacture of scythes. He was the first manufacturer of edge tools in this section. About 1748 he made five hundred muskets for the use of the Province of Massachusetts, and early in the Revolution he manufactured and furnished for the Colonies a great number of iron cannon and several of brass. These guns were cast solid in Titicut, the first of the kind in America, and then taken and bored out at Mr. Orr's manufacturing plant, which stood on the Matfield River. Here, too, under the supervision of Mr. Orr, were made the first machines ever used in America for the carding, spinning, and roping of cotton.

The first nails ever made by machinery in this country were manufactured in this town. "Probably the first nail completely cut and headed by machinery at one operation, in the world, was made by Samuel Rogers" of this town.

To the inventive genius of Hugh Orr, Samuel Rogers, and Melville Otis, all residents of East Bridgewater, the civilized world is under lasting obligations.

### HALIFAX

**Halifax Strong for Education and Poultry** — Situated in the geographical centre of Plymouth County, although one of its smallest towns, Halifax maintains nearly all the departments of a city of moderate size,

having that civic consciousness which makes it a wide-awake town, taking just pride in its past and present and having no fears for its future. It is one of the important poultry-raising towns in the county. The population of the town is less than five hundred persons and taxes were collected in 1926 on 12,302 fowl, valued at \$18,560, exclusive of a million or more day-old chicks, sold before they were hatched and delivered within twenty-four hours after.

Fifteen miles from salt water, too far to be a salt water resort and too near to escape its competition, Halifax is a place of summer residence for many people who admire its scenery and cordial atmosphere. There are four hundred and thirty-seven non-residents owning property in Halifax, against one hundred and ninety-seven residents. Monponsett Lakes are bordered by attractive summer homes. The shore of West Lake, one of the Monponsett twins, is the recreation ground for the Boston Young Men's Christian Association, which maintains a summer camp there on seven hundred acres of land.

Many years ago, the late Ira L. Sturtevant, a native and resident of the town more than fourscore years, suggested doing away with a large number of neighborhood schoolhouses, each with a mere handful of pupils requiring a teacher. He suggested, in place of this plan, establishing one graded school in the centre of the town, furnishing transportation at the expense of the town for pupils who lived outside of walking distance, employing well qualified teachers. He further advocated sending advanced pupils to High schools in Kingston, Whitman, Bridgewater or other neighboring towns, the town paying the tuition and transportation. The plan was adopted and has been in vogue with much success ever since. John H. Parker, superintendent of schools, said in his report for 1926: "The people of Halifax should take pride in their school plant, as very few towns in the State, of its size, furnish as adequate school facilities." The enrollment of pupils in 1926 numbered one hundred and nineteen.

Aside from the instruction given in the public school, there are a large number of boys and girls enrolled in the Four-H clubs of the Plymouth County Extension Service, by means of which they receive instruction in gardening, poultry raising, home economics and various projects which fit them for good citizenship and financial independence. Ralph Sturtevant, a young man of this group, has several years been county champion in poultry raising. In July, 1927, Howard Waterman was selected as the most worthy representative from Plymouth County to go to the National Boys and Girls Camp of the Department of Agriculture at Washington, District of Columbia.

The Halifax Garden Company has a large plant near the Halifax railroad station and produces some of the best roses grown in America,





TOWN SQUARE, HALIFAX  
Geographical center of Plymouth County showing Congregational Church,  
and old Town Hall, erected in 1733



FIRST CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH, ORGANIZED 1728, HANOVER





sending them to the most exclusive and highest-priced markets.

Some years ago when the Old Colony Railroad Company maintained flower beds around all of its stations, the late George W. Parker was the florist in charge of the system, and the home nurseries and greenhouses, from which the shrubs and plants were supplied, were located in this town, near the present Richmond Park. The park was a gift to the town by the heirs of Andrew Richmond, the wife of George W. Parker being one of them.

Halifax was taken from Plympton, Middleboro, Pembroke and Bridgewater when incorporated July 4, 1734, one year after the first church was built, with Rev. John Cotton as pastor. The Indian name for the territory occupied by Halifax was Monponsett, the name by which the twin lakes in the town have always been known. They are two miles long by half a mile broad and a highway runs between them, over a bridge which marks the place where the forty-second parallel of latitude crosses.

The early residents of Halifax, Sturtevents, Thompsons, Bosworths, Briggs and Watermans principally, named the town in honor of the Duke of Halifax.

The town is bounded on the north by Hanson and Pembroke, on the east by Plympton, on the south by Middleborough and on the west by Bridgewater and East Bridgewater. It is famed for its patriotism and one of the towns in which the wealth has always been remarkably evenly distributed. The principal stream is the Winnetuxet River which flows into the Taunton River, having on its banks several sawmills.

In the Civil War, Halifax furnished ninety-six volunteers and of that number twenty-four were killed in action or died in the service.

Graywacke and granite is the geological formation of Halifax, and it is recorded that nearly 100 years ago Prof. Hitchcock said, "It is capable of being made some of the best land in the State."

Halifax is located 28 miles from Boston. It was here in 1676 that Captain Benjamin Church "captured the Monponsetts and brought them in, not one escaping."

According to tradition, Mr. Sturtevant was the first settler. In 1733 a house of worship was built.

John Cotton, a man of distinction, and author of the "History of Plymouth Church," was first pastor, and others of the early pastors were William Patten, 1757; Ephraim Briggs, 1769-1801; Abel Richmond, Eldridge G. Howe, Rev. Howland, Kimball and Brainard, and William A. Forbes, the last-named being installed in 1866.

**Early Episode with English Soldiers**—The people of Halifax were uncompromising patriots. Shortly before the Revolution, a soldier named Taylor deserted from the British company stationed at Marsh-

field and fled to Halifax, to the house of Thomas Drew. Three of the company were detailed to take the deserter back. In effecting this a ruse was resorted to, and one of their number was sent in advance to pretend that he, also, had deserted, hoping to detain him until his two comrades in arms should arrive. Mr. Drew saw through their arts and advised Taylor to flee for his life into the woods, which was quickly done. When the other two had joined their comrade, and found to their chagrin that the bird had flown, they became exceedingly exasperated. They then went to the house of Noah Thompson, who was sick in bed, and threatened to shoot him if he did not reveal the hiding place of the deserter, Taylor. Thompson rose up in bed, and taking down his gun, which hung above his head on wooden hooks, and bringing it to his shoulder, while the fire flashed from his eyes, said, "You are dead men, or leave my house."

They started on their way and by the time they reached the meeting-house, two minute-men, Bradford and Bartlett, belonging to a company then organized in expectancy of trouble with England, ordered them to stop and surrender. Their guns, however, being *hors du combat*, the British soldiers ordered the minute-men into the road and marched them down to the house of Daniel Dunbar, who was a Tory, and placed them in the house as prisoners.

It was not more than an hour before the house was surrounded by the entire company of minute-men, who demanded the surrender of their comrades. This demand being refused, they threatened to break in and take them by force. The British soldiers retaliated by saying that if they did so, they would instantly kill the two prisoners, who entreated their friends not to molest them as they felt sure the threat would be carried out. It was finally decided upon to send for Josiah Sturtevant, who was a Justice of Peace, under the king, and he decided to bind the prisoners, Bradford and Bartlett, over to the court, to be tried for breaking the law upon the king's highway. Sturtevant subsequently was driven away.

The house of Daniel Dunbar, in which the prisoners were detained by the British, was destined to play an interesting part in several episodes before the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. It was one of the old Colonial taverns. This historic, large, well-preserved house was still standing twenty-five years ago somewhat back from the main road leading from Bridgewater to Plymouth. For three-quarters of a century it had been the home of the late Ira L. Sturtevant, a prominent citizen of Halifax, who moved to that house as a boy of eight years. Mr. Sturtevant was blind some few years before his death at the advanced age of eighty-five, and, on account of being able to make the frequent repairs necessitated on a house built before the Revolution, sold it to the late



J. Levering Jones, of Philadelphia. The Sturtevant acres, about the old house, were added to other farms adjoining, which Mr. Jones had purchased.

As a small boy, Mr. Jones had been cared for by Mr. and Mrs. Eldridge Morton, in the house on the lot now occupied by the Standish Manor School. As a matter of fact the old Morton house, built of brick, is, for the most part, still standing, but the Standish Manor School was built around it, the original brick house being added to but not destroyed, as Mr. Jones had a great affection for the place and wished to preserve the house, with its old fireplaces and mantles, so filled with happy boyhood recollections.

The Morton house, now Standish Manor, stood on a high bank on the opposite side of the road from the Sturtevant House and, after the purchase of the latter by Mr. Jones, the road was changed to go over practically the site of the Sturtevant house, torn down for that purpose. Mr. Jones' other purchases in Halifax included White's Island, between the Monponsett Lakes; Orchard Point on West Lake, now owned by the Boston Young Men's Christian Association and used by that organization as a summer camp; also the summer settlement on West Lake known as Halifax Beach.

The Ira L. Sturtevant house, previous to the Revolution, was a tavern conducted by Daniel Dunbar, a Loyalist or Tory as those who took sides with the king were commonly called. As a tavern-keeper Dunbar was one of the jovial sort, well suited to the business in which he was engaged. Aside from his Toryism he was well regarded as a good citizen of Halifax and the records show that he was chosen to represent the town in some matters of importance from time to time.

Taverns had been instituted following close upon the settlement by the Pilgrims at Plymouth. They were a recognized need. No one thought of them as otherwise than respectable, useful institutions for the comfort and entertainment of travelers and sojourners. Halifax had more than one tavern as soon as it became a considerable village, and Daniel Dunbar was licensed by the General Court to draw wine and beer and furnish good fare and sleeping accommodations for those in need of such comforts.

An inn-keeper in those days was fined for selling any one person an immoderate quantity of liquor, and there was a period when he was responsible for the good behavior of his guests and required to furnish bonds accordingly. Among the curiosities of Colonial legislation was a law prescribing how much should be paid for a morning dram. In 1634 sixpence was the legal charge for a meal, and a penny for an ale quart of beer, at an inn, and the landlord was liable to ten shillings fine if he made a greater charge. He was also liable to a fine if he refused to sell the quantity allowed to be drank on the premises.

Rev. Dr. Dwight, the eminent scholar and divine, visited every part of New England, and frequently said he often "found his warmest welcome at an inn." He also said: "The best old-fashioned New England inns were superior to any of the modern ones. There was less bustle, less parade, less appearance of doing a great deal to gratify your wishes, than at the reputable modern inns; but much more was actually done, and there was much more comfort and enjoyment. In a word, you found in these inns the pleasures of an excellent private house. If you were sick you were nursed and befriended as in your own family. To finish the story, your bills were always equitable, calculated on what you ought to pay, and not upon the scheme of getting the most which extortion might think proper to demand."

**Dunbar's Ride a Community Affair**—It is fair to presume that Daniel Dunbar's tavern was of this sort and a place in which the people of Halifax took pride, up to a certain time when the inn-keeper differed in political convictions with his neighbors. The way they met that issue will be related later.

To finish a description of the taverns or inns in Halifax and other towns in Plymouth County, most of which were larger than Halifax, as is the case today, they were places where the jovial sought entertainment and the gathering places of the people of importance in the neighborhood. Drinking at funerals, weddings, church-raising and even at ordinations was sanctioned by custom. The person who refused to furnish liquor on such occasions would have been guilty of breach of ordinary politeness. So long as the Sturtevant house existed, the bar room, the floor of which was raised a step above the floor of the entrance hall, remained as it had been when the house was a Colonial tavern.

Daniel Dunbar, the proprietor in 1774, was an ensign of Militia in Halifax that year and was forty-one years of age. He had held meetings with others who disagreed with the colonists who favored revolution and his manner became offensive to the people of Halifax who were distressed that a man of such prominence in their community should be a Tory. One night nearly all the men of the town and no doubt a large number of the boys and perhaps some women went to the tavern and demanded of Dunbar his Militia colors. He refused and they forced him out of the house, placed him on a fence rail, where for three hours, he was held and tossed up and down until he became exhausted. He was then compelled to sign a confession that he had used language offensive to his neighbors in his conversation about the struggle for liberty which was imminent and had given aid and comfort to the King's soldiers. He was allowed a limited time to get out of town.

In 1776, he went to Halifax, Nova Scotia, with the Royal Army. In 1778, he was proscribed and banished.



Dunbar was born in Hingham, March 8, 1733. He had a nephew, Jesse Dunbar, also born in Hingham, June 26, 1744, who was also a Tory, a resident of Bridgewater.

When Dunbar signed his confession, he was given a brief time in which to leave town. Knowing the disposition of those with whom he had to deal, he busied himself in packing such belongings as he could take with him and check out properly. Years afterward, some strangers called at the house, asked permission to go into the attic, as they said one of their ancestors formerly lived there, and they wished to examine the way in which the house was constructed. The request was allowed and, later, when the new owner went to the attic, he found that one of the wide boards in the floor had been taken up, replaced but not renailed. Lifting the board, he was greatly surprised to find a secret chamber, next to the huge chimney. The chamber was empty but what it contained a few hours before and whether Dunbar had secreted property there which the strangers came after, is one of the matters of conjecture connected with the house.

A few years ago, when Mr. Jones had the house torn down, there was another surprise when it was found one of the lower corner rooms was walled with brick, hidden by boarding outside and plastering inside.

**Military Responses Prompt in All Wars**—June 7, 1777, the town voted to give \$150 for men to fill the quota, provided they enlisted for three years, or during the war. Among the Revolutionary soldiers was a slave owned by Caleb Sturtevant. Among the "Halogonians" who served in the Continental Army were Nathaniel Holmes, James Tillson, Josiah Thompson, Prince Witherel, Consider Pratt, Home Sears, Zebediah Thompson, Joshua Former, Elisha Faxon, Joseph Tillson, Richard Bosworth.

In 1812, the town furnished an entire military company, which was commanded by Captain Asa Thompson, popularly known as the "tall Captain," who was six feet, six inches in height, and it is said that people would collect around South Boston Bridge to see him march his company over. This company was the oldest in the State, chartered by John Hancock in 1792, also serving in the Civil War. It was one of the first organizations to respond to the call of President Lincoln, April 16, 1861.

Halifax suffered severely in the Civil War, losing twenty-four men out of a population of 739, of ninety-six volunteers. The same spirit was shown in the World War.

The early manufacturing interests of the town were destroyed by fire on July 5th, 1848. One woolen mill and three houses were destroyed, thus compelling about 50 workers to seek employment elsewhere.

Since that time the industries of the town have been largely lumber-

ing and agriculture, especially poultry-raising. While shipbuilding was an important industry in Kingston and Duxbury, cutting ship timber and carting it to the shipyards furnished profitable employment for many. Sawing lumber and manufacturing shoe boxes for the manufacturers of Brockton and other shoe towns has also been carried on.

Halifax has had a hotel in the centre of its summer colony on the Monponsett Lakes forty years, open throughout the year and doing a good business. The present proprietor, Robert F. Shindler, is a son of Maurice Schindler, who started the hotel twoscore years ago and conducted it until his death.

**Sturtevant Murder in 1874**—There have been only two murderers executed in Plymouth County, although there have been more than that number pay the death penalty for taking human life. Since making electrocution the method of execution, all death penalties are administered at the State Prison at Charlestown.

The first execution in Plymouth County was that of William Everett Sturtevant, a veteran of the Civil War, who killed Thomas and Simeon Sturtevant, two elderly residents of Halifax, and their housekeeper, Mrs. Mary Buckley. A stake, stolen from an ox sled belonging to a farmer a mile away from the scene of the murder, was the instrument of death.

Sturtevant was a nephew of Thomas and Simeon Sturtevant and it is supposed went to the house, about a mile from the center of Halifax, and informed Mrs. Buckley that her services were needed by a neighbor. Simeon Sturtevant had retired and Thomas Sturtevant was in the barn making everything comfortable for the stock before retiring. The murderer evidently followed Mrs. Buckley out of the house, killed her with the stake, used the same instrument to kill Simeon by striking him in the face as he lay in bed, encountered Thomas in the kitchen and killed him by crushing in his skull by blows on the back of the head.

No one knows in what order the murders were committed or under what pretence the housekeeper was induced to leave the house. The motive was robbery, as the murderer searched the premises for money which was hidden in numerous places. One of the first uses to which he put some of this money was paying a long-standing grocery bill at a neighboring store.

The murder was committed Sunday, February 15, 1874. Sturtevant was placed on trial June 29 for the murder of Simeon Sturtevant. Counsel for the government was Charles R. Train, attorney general; and Asa French, district attorney. Counsel for the defence was J. B. Harris of Rockland, Jesse E. Keith of Abington and Arthur Lord of Plymouth. The trial lasted five days and Sturtevant was found guilty of murder in the first degree.







TOWN HALL, HANOVER



JOHN CURTIS LIBRARY, HANOVER



He was executed, according to law, by hanging, in the yard of the jail at Plymouth. Attempts were made to have him confess the crime but he answered that he was leaving his children a bad enough legacy without leaving a statement from him regarding participation in a murder.

One of the deputy sheriffs who assisted at the execution of William E. Sturtevant was the late George A. Wheeler of East Bridgewater, later of Brockton. Referring to the matter in a conversation with the writer some years ago, Mr. Wheeler said: "When William Sturtevant was arrested charged with the murder of Simeon Sturtevant we carried to Plymouth jail as undesirable a person as could have been found in any county. When I helped lead him to the gallows, I helped lead a good citizen of Massachusetts. So far as I know he had not 'experienced religion,' as the saying is, but he responded to humane treatment while a prisoner at the jail and I believe would have been an entirely different man if allowed to live. I have no excuses to make for William Sturtevant. I merely tell you my convictions after observing the change which came over him."

Halifax has the distinction of erecting the first soldiers' monument in Massachusetts in honor of the soldiers of the Civil War. The base is four feet square, the second section three feet square and the shaft twenty-eight inches at the base and sixteen inches at the top, with a total height of twenty feet. On a raised shield are the words: "Our Patriotic Soldiers." On a bronze plate are the names of all the volunteer soldiers from the town, not only the twenty-four who were killed or died in service, but the entire ninety-six who offered themselves that the Union might survive. There were no drafted men from Halifax, the quotas being filled as fast as a call came for more men.

The monument is on the square in front of the Congregational Church, opposite the site of the original church, erected in 1733, in which was organized by Rev. John Cotton the first Sunday school in America.

## HANOVER

**Town of the Anchor and Plough**—The seal of the town of Hanover shows an anchor and an iron plough, typical not only of the shipbuilding and agricultural industries in which the town has engaged from earliest times, but it was in Hanover that the anchors for the "Constitution,"—"Old Ironsides"—were forged, and the first iron ploughs made in America were cast. So Hanover has a firm hold on both sea and land and has duly impressed both. There are good farms, orchards and green-houses in Hanover and all three produce profitably and creditably. Like most Plymouth County towns, poultry farming is also prosecuted profitably and the assessors' books show that the assessed value of fowl is \$9,845.

Hanover's acreage is 9,094, the number of dwellings 768, property owners 1,025, number of male residents, twenty years or older, 893; total valuation of the town \$2,668,792. The population of the town, according to the State census, taken in 1925, was 2,755.

The town spends for the support of its schools, \$37,000; for highways, \$32,000, and support of poor \$9,000, according to round figures of 1926. In that year a new Junior-Senior High School building, the Edmund G. Sylvester Building, was erected, and, in the language of the official report of the school committee, "the town of Hanover turned its back on the old order of things and took its rightful place among the progressive towns of the State." The school enrollment in 1926 was 539.

The new High School Building was erected by an appropriation from the town of \$134,000, and the gift of \$50,000 for the purpose from Edmund G. Sylvester, a highly respected citizen of the town, one of the trustees of the Public Library.

Hanover has several pretty villages contained in the township, known as Hanover, South Hanover, West Hanover, the Four Corners and Assinippi. The boundaries of Hanover are Abington and Norwell on the north, Norwell on the northeast, Pembroke and Hanson on the southwest and Abington on the west. Third Herring Brook forms a part of the boundary between Hanover and Norwell, formerly South Scituate. Near the Four Corners, Third Herring Brook and the North River join and nearby is the Pantooset Inn, one of the pleasant present-day inns catering largely to the motoring public. The North River and Indian Pond form the divisional line between Hanover and Hanson. The town is unusually level, Walnut Hill, in its northwestern section being the only prominent eminence. It is a good farming country. The underlying rock is sienite and carboniferous.

Among the prominent apple orchards in the town, of which there are several, is that belonging to Edward H. Tindale, who has a well-earned reputation as a portrait painter, the only artist to have a studio in the Boston Art Museum. His orchards are among the most extensive in New England.

It is claimed for Hanover that the first sawmill erected in America was built in this town and it was before one had been erected in England. Lumbering has always been one of the important industries and for many years shipbuilding was carried on with the North River as the place for prosperous shipyards. Hanover was one of the early towns to engage in shoemaking, forging anchors, ploughs and other useful implements.

The first settlement was at the Four Corners and along the North and Indian Head rivers, William Barstow, shipwright, being a pioneer. His grandson, Benjamin, had a family of twenty-one children. The first bridge was built over North River in 1662. Shipbuilding was com-



menced as early as 1660 by the Barstow family, some of whom afterwards moved to Mattapoisett and carried on the same business. Barstow's forge was erected in 1720. The Curtis forge was erected in 1704 by the Burdens, who came from Scotland.

There were seven Indian nations in New England. The Wampanoags, divided into thirty-two tribes, with 3,000 warriors, under Massasoit, occupied Southeastern Massachusetts. The Massachusetts, with 3,000 warriors, under Chickatabut, occupied the territory from Duxbury mill to Titicut, then to Nippenicket Pond, Bridgewater, and then in a straight line to Whitney's Pond in Wrentham. It was from the latter sachem that Scituate and Hanover were purchased in 1653. Joseph Barstow's house, in 1674, was garrisoned by twelve men. Indian burying-grounds existed on Pine Island and back of Assinippi Hill.

Religious services were held at private residences in 1727. A building, 48 by 38 feet, was erected in 1728. At this time common schools were kept in private houses.

Benjamin Bass was the minister of the First Parish, from 1728 to 1756; Samuel Baldwin, 1756-1780; John Miller, 1784-1805; Calvin Chad-dock, 1806-1818; Seth Chapin, 1819-1824; followed by Ethan Smith, Abel G. Duncan, and Joseph Freeman.

The Episcopal services were first held in Scituate, 1725. St. Andrews Church was established at Hanover "Corners" in 1810. Rectors, Joab G. Cooper, 1811-1816; Calvin Wolcott, 1818-1834; Samuel G. Appleton, 1835-1838; Eleazer A. Greenleaf, 1839-1841; Samuel Cutler.

In 1812 the Universalist Society was incorporated. The Baptist Church came in 1806.

The First Church was rededicated in 1927 at the time of the celebration of the hundredth anniversary of the town, having been refinished and enlarged. Organized forty-eight years before the Revolution, it had been in continuous service. The first edifice was plain, unpainted and devoid of steeple. The pulpit was a high affair with sounding board above. Into this the "powdered wigged and much begowned minister" would climb to deliver a two-hour sermon.

A larger building was built in 1765 and, as "it was thot a shame to let it go without a churchly mark," money was raised to surmount the plain edifice with a steeple. This was built so slim that it was afterward rebuilt to provide a belfry for the first bell which ever summoned the townspeople to worship. A room just beneath the belfry was set apart as a "powder room." The first minister, Rev. Benjamin Bass, was a noted exhorter of "Minute-Men" and was appointed a chaplain in the army. So intense was his devotion that his mind became disarranged and his death occurred one year after peace was declared, in 1784.

The first communion service consisted of two pewter cups. Some years later the number was increased to four. Still later two of the

cups were silver plated. In 1907 Mrs. Margaret Olivia Sage of New York, gave the church a large and valuable solid silver communion set in exchange for these cups of pewter, wishing to preserve them as relics.

Hanover observed its two hundredth anniversary in June, 1927, with appropriate exercises, some of which were held in the auditorium of the new High School building, which seats 500 and has a generous stage. A letter of congratulation was received from Dr. Menge, Oberbergemeister of Hanover, Germany, believed to have been the first letter of that nature from Germany to the United States since the late unpleasantness.

In 1807 the first Hanover Academy was erected.

Hanover soldiers did their share of good service in the Revolution, the well-known Artillery Company being formed in 1798.

In 1754 there were eight male and nine female slaves in Hanover. Not only were blacks, but Indians held in bondage. Tradition says Job Tilden raised slaves for the market. Cuffee Josselyn, a slave of Colonel Joseph Josselyn, died in the almshouse in 1831, aged 103.

David Prouty commenced in Hanover the manufacture of the first cast-iron ploughs.

Among the prominent military and naval men whose homes were in Hanover were Colonel John Bailey, a Revolutionary officer who was conspicuous in the campaign against General John Burgoyne; Joseph Smith, rear-admiral in the United States Navy, who was born in Hanover, March 30, 1790. One of his sons was killed on "The Congress," when it was destroyed by the "Merrimac," near Fortress Monroe, in March, 1862.

Although Hanover was settled as early as 1649, the town was not incorporated until June 14, 1727. It was named in honor of the Duke of Hanover, who was afterwards King George I of England.

Hanover was among the towns in the county which had good academies in the academy days. Hanover Academy was incorporated in 1861. There were one hundred and eighty Civil War soldiers credited to Hanover and forty of them were killed or died in the service. It was one of the towns pronounced in its protest against slavery when the Civil War was approaching, although, in 1754, there were seventeen slaves in the town, owned by a previous generation.

### HANSON

Hanson is the home of the Plymouth County Tuberculosis Hospital and the Outdoor Camp for children afflicted with the white plague. It is also the location of Gordon's Rest, a summer home for women who need rest away from the busy affairs of the world. This institution is maintained by the King's Daughters and is on a hill, overlooking the residence of the first minister in Hanson, Rev. Dr. Gad Hitchcock.



Wampatuck Pond is between, a pretty body of water with a small island. It is one of many ponds which help make the attractive scenery for which the town is noted.

Several years ago Albert C. Burrage was attracted to the town and had a summer home on the high bank of Maquam Pond. He was instrumental in building the factories on the railroad, erecting a hotel, stores and railroad station called "Burrage" and adding much to the industrial life of the town. While the industries flourished about the time of the World War, a considerable village grew up around the factories. Some of the business is still carried on at "Burrage."

In the days of P. T. Barnum, a resident of Hanson became its most traveled and exploited citizen, known as "Barnum's living skeleton."

The Cape Cod Cranberry Company and other owners have extensive cranberry bogs in the town, and large quantities of the yield are shipped to the West.

Lumbering, and manufacturing wooden boxes are counted principal industries.

Hanson, like Halifax, was incorporated on an historic date. The date of Hanson's birth was February 22, 1820, and it was until that time the west parish of Pembroke. Halifax was incorporated July 4, 1734, but July 4 meant nothing at the time, although everything twoscore years later.

The first church was organized in Hanson in August 31, 1748, and Rev. Gad Hitchcock, D. D., concerning whom much more appears in the general history of this county in this volume, was ordained pastor. Major Josiah Winslow purchased from the Indian sachem, Josiah Wampatuck, on July 9, 1662, practically the same extent of territory embraced in the town of Hanson, bounded on the north by Abington and Hanover, on the east by Pembroke, on the south by Halifax, and on the west by East Bridgewater. The Old Colony Railroad runs diagonally through the town, with two stations, one at North Hanson and the other at South Hanson. The Hanover Branch Railroad has a station at the northeastern angle of the town, and in recent years another station, Burrage, has been convenient for the residents of the southern part of the town.

Indian Head Pond and the Indian Head River which drains it form the boundary line between Hanson and Hanover, and on the stream are several mill sites, where use is made of the water as it flows over the dam on its way to the North River. Indian Head Pond is a beautiful sheet of water, covering one hundred and fifty-six acres. One of the industries in the town fifty years ago was braiding straw and there is a record that, in 1874, 31,740 yards of straw-braid were plaited by women and children. It was used in making straw hats. The principal industries at present are box making, farming, cranberry growing, manu-

facture of tacks, shoe nails, electrical equipment, and lumbering. Beds of iron ore in the ponds were taken with considerable profit in earlier days.

Hanson was formerly the "West Parish" of the town of Pembroke. Its size is comparatively small. Like all other towns in Plymouth County, it contains many relics of Indian settlements, such as remains of old orchards, cellars, etc., rude implements of war, and articles for domestic use, etc. Nearly all its territory is embraced in the purchase of Major Josiah Winslow of the Indian sachem, Josiah Wampatuck, as by deed, dated July 9, 1662, known as the "Major's Purchase." There is a reserve made in said deed, of 1,000 acres about the ponds at Mattakeset (lying in Pembroke and Hanson), to his son and George Wampy.

Among the first settlers of Hanson was a family by the name of Bourne that located in the south part of the town as early as about 1725, as the name of Josiah Bourne is found in the records of the Proprietors of the "Major's Purchase," in May, 1732, and from circumstances mentioned in the record, he must have resided there some years before. In the north part of the town a family by the name of Thomas located, and the name of Edward Thomas, as being the clerk of the "Proprietors" is found in their book of records as early as May 28, 1759.

No whole company was raised in this town during the Civil War, but a part of Company A, Third Regiment, went out to Fortress Monroe, April 16, 1861, for three months, and again to Newbern, North Carolina, for nine months, September 23, 1862. These all safely returned and most of them again enlisted for three years.

Hanson raised for the Union service, 188 men; six for one hundred days, fourteen for three months; twenty-two for nine months; thirty-five for one year; and one hundred and thirteen for three years, at an expense of \$19,502. In addition to this they gave generously of supplies through benevolent missions.

### HINGHAM

**Ever Mindful of Its Ideals**—Hingham has been the home of many people of note and has about it a winning atmosphere to those who have appreciation of the better things of life. It has always been attractive and retains that quality of responsiveness to beauty and a community spirit from generation to generation. There is being erected at the present time (1927) a soldiers' memorial in the new park, an equestrian statue to cost \$23,000, exclusive of the foundation, to be provided by the town. The memorial will be completed in the summer of 1928. The foundation is eight feet in height, constituting part of a mound which will eventually, with the memorial, become one of the chief beauties of the reservation.





BOULEVARD FROM OTIS HILL, HINGHAM



"OLD SHIP CHURCH." HINGHAM





The model chosen represents a youth on horseback, bearing aloft a torch emblematic of Liberty, Hope and Progress, with the sword of the soldier at his left side and a shield slung over his shoulder. "The whole figure is designed to perpetuate in bronze of heroic size the memory of the men of Hingham who consecrated themselves to the service of the country, and to noble ideals, and to serve as an inspiration to the generations yet to come."

There is a town planning board which is at present giving considerable attention to zoning, encouraging the erection of the right kind of buildings in the right places, that each owner use his property in such a manner that his neighbor may successfully do likewise.

A new High School building, properly located, equipped and furnished, is one of the problems of the town soon to be solved. An appropriation of \$375,000 has been made for the purpose.

In 1926, a town forest on South Pleasant and Charles streets was set out with 60,000 small pine and spruce trees.

Hingham has 11,971 acres of land assessed to 2,126 residents and 627 non-residents. There are 1,884 dwelling houses in the town. The total valuation is \$13,973,150. The maintenance of schools costs the town about \$113,000, and about 1,200 pupils are enrolled. The cost per elementary pupil is \$73.83 and per high school pupil \$114.15.

Hingham has had a municipal electric lighting plant thirty-four years. It has been maintained in first-class condition and there are few municipal lighting plants showing greater actual cash value for the money furnished by the taxpayers.

Hingham is one of the towns in Massachusetts which has made a serious attempt to deal with the mosquito nuisance. According to the Board of Health, "wonderful results have been derived from the methods taken to do away with this pest."

The expense of the town for general improvement is \$19,460, for protection of persons and property \$58,129, health and sanitation \$10,851, highways and removal of snow \$103,774, charities \$13,338, education \$139,645, recreation and unclassified \$45,303, public service enterprise \$82,967.

**"Dish Timber" and Coopering**—Coopering industries were the pride of Hingham in the last of the eighteenth and early years of the nineteenth centuries. The Hingham bucket was famous for its workmanship and undoubtedly it was a Hingham bucket, moss covered and iron bound, which hung in the well at Greenbush and inspired the famous poem, "The Old Oaken Bucket." Equally entitled to fame were the tubs, hoop and nest boxes, dumb-bettys, wash tubs, keelers, pig-gins and other wooden products. Home manufacture of these articles in the long winter evenings caused them to accumulate and they were

frequently the wares of enterprising peddlers, who went about exchanging them for other things, if not for the established coin of the realm.

Woodenware of many kinds was manufactured in this vicinity and the skill of the Yankee whittler became proverbial. The Jack-knife or Barlow knife was handled with the skill or artistry, and rolling pins, butter moulds, wooden bowls, spoons, bread knives and forks were turned out and in much demand. White ash was frequently referred to as "dish timber," as white oak was looked upon as ship timber. There was a popular song in this vicinity about 1799 called "Come Buy My Woodenware."

Wooden household ware was greatly in use, because most of the cutlery sold in this country was imported from England.

Many articles of furniture were manufactured in the homes and backyard shops, some for home consumption and others to be sold to neighbors, or bartered. Nearly everyone in those days was mechanical and could produce an honest article to serve a definite purpose, strangely in contrast with most people of today. Many of the country chairs have lasted two hundred years or more and are eagerly purchased from dealers in antiques. The Windsor chair first came into being in Philadelphia but soon spread over the Atlantic seaboard. It was one of the type which found a wide market.

**Physical Characteristics and Early Residents**—Hingham has as its nearest neighbor Cohasset in the northeast, Norwell and Abington on the southeast, and Weymouth on the west. A part of the circuitous northern boundary of the town is Boston Bay. Weir River flows between the town and Hull and "Downer Landing," Hingham Harbor and the Peninsula called "World's End" are on the Boston Bay side. The harbor is well protected and permits of navigation for small vessels.

In the southeastern angle of the town is the highest land, Prospect Hill, overlooking the harbor two hundred and forty-three feet below. Other good views of the pleasant harbor and the bay beyond are obtainable from hills carrying the names Otis, Planters, Turkey, Bakers and Squirrel.

Weymouth Back River separates Hingham and Weymouth and is one of the principal streams. Accord Pond, drained by the Weir River, covers about ninety acres. There is another smaller pond, called Cushing's, which contains about thirty acres. This is at Glad-Tidings Plane.

This pleasant combination of natural advantages attracted as early settlers emigrants in 1633 who were mostly from Hingham, county of Norfolk, England, and they gave to their new place of abode the name of the town from whence they came. Previously what is now called



Hingham had been called "Bear Cove." Among those to whom land in Hingham was granted in 1635 the records disclose Thomas Lincoln, a weaver; Peter Hobart, William Hersey, Thomas Loring, Henry Rust, Henry Tuttle, William Walton, Richard Osborne, and John Fearing. There were twenty-nine to whom lands had been granted, among them being Rev. Peter Hobart, who became pastor of the church. He continued in that capacity until his death in 1679. He kept a journal from which are learned many interesting things about the first settlers.

Rev. Peter Hobart left four sons who became ministers.

The old Congregational Meeting House was erected in 1689 at a cost of \$2,150 and the old building in which they had been meeting.

The Second Church was organized in 1745 and the Third Church in 1805. The Methodist Church was organized 1818.

The First Baptist Church was organized March 9, 1828, with twenty members.

First Universalist Society organized November 1, 1823.

Evangelical Congregational Church was organized December 21, 1847. First pastor, Rev. E. Porter Dyer, installed January 4, 1849. House of Worship dedicated January 4, 1849.

The Derby Academy was incorporated June 7, 1797. President, Rev. Joseph Osgood, of Cohasset; trustees, Ebenezer Gay, of Hingham; Benjamin Cushing, M. D., of Dorchester; John Q. Adams, of Quincy; Solomon Lincoln, Jr., of Salem; Henry A. Clapp, of Dorchester; Rev. Joshua Young, of Hingham; Henry C. Harding, of Hingham; Charles C. Tower, M. D., of Weymouth.

**Old Ship Meeting-House Still in Use**—The first meeting-house is still in use, the oldest in New England. It is seventy-five feet one way by fifty-five feet the other, has a pyramidal roof, surmounted by a belfry of curious design and a steeple. It has been continuously occupied by the society since January 8, 1682. In 1869 the old pews were removed and replaced by new ones, but much of the original remains.

From the journal kept by Rev. Peter Hobart it is known that "On the 19th of April, 1676, John Jacob was slain by the Indians near his father's house." The following day the Indians burned the dwellings of Nathaniel Chubbuck, Israel Hobart, Joseph Jones, Anthony Sprague and James Whiton. These were occurrences in King Philip's War which began in 1675. In that war the town was protected by three forts, one at Fort Hill, one at the cemetery and the other "on a plane about a mile from the harbor."

Since 1827 one of the best weekly newspapers printed in Plymouth County has been the "Hingham Journal," now owned and published by Heman Eldredge. It was started by Jedediah Farmer and Simon Brown and has, through successive ownerships, mirrored the hap-

penings and progress of the beautiful town, which combined rural and suburban life to a charming degree.

Among the many men of distinction whose homes have been in Hingham have been Colonel John Otis, one of the first lawyers and judges in the Plymouth Colony, born in 1657 and deceased in 1727; Rev. Noah Hobart, Dr. Ezekiel Hersey, a famous physician, whose span of life was from 1709 to 1770; General Benjamin Lincoln, 1733 to 1810, a distinguished officer in the Revolutionary War who was from 1781 to 1784 secretary of war, and from 1789 to 1808, collector of the port of Boston; Levi Lincoln, who was acting governor in 1809; Andrews Norton, 1786 to 1853, a scholar and writer of much distinction; Henry Ware, Jr., D. D., an able clergyman and editor; Dr. John Ware, M. D., physician and author; William Ware, clergyman and author; Joseph Andrews, 1806 to 1873, one of the best line engravers in the country; James Hall, geologist for the State of New York; Winckworth Allan Gay, a noted landscape painter; Charles Henry Bromedge Caldwell, an efficient captain in the United States Navy following the War of 1812; Richard Henry Stoddard, the eminent poet and prolific prose writer; Hon. Solomon Lincoln, able writer of numerous books and articles, among his works being a "History of Hingham," published in 1827; John A. Andrew, governor of Massachusetts during the Civil War; Hon. John D. Long, an able lawyer, Congressman, member of President McKinley's cabinet, serving as Secretary of War during the Spanish War in 1898.

Hingham has always taken a forward step in education and has included among its residents men of learning and liberality. It had an agricultural and horticultural society which became a permanent organization November 10th, 1858, with Albert Fearing president and Edmund Hersey recording secretary. For several years an annual fair was held, the first one taking place September 28 and 29, 1859.

The public library was founded by Hon. Albert Fearing. Colonel Benjamin Loring built a hall at which public lectures were given in the interest of education. This was named Loring Hall. Derby Academy was incorporated June 19, 1797, and was endowed by Madam Sarah Derby.

The industries in which Hingham has been engaged have included manufactures of cabinet-ware, jute cloth, boots and shoes, woodenware, cordage, upholstery trimmings, worsted goods, iron castings, leather, hatchets and building materials. Fishing and coasting in schooners has been carried on in decreasing number of vessels. Following the Civil War ten vessels owned in Hingham were engaged in cod and mackerel fishing but it has become an industry of much less importance in recent years.

Major-General Benjamin Lincoln, of Revolutionary fame, was born



in Hingham, January 23, 1733. He was second in command of the army under General Gates that captured Burgoyne's forces. He afterwards served as Secretary of War, lieutenant-governor, and held other important offices, dying in 1810 in the house in which he was born.

The first fire engine in town was purchased in 1802 and was located at the Centre. It was private property and owned by a company of fifteen men, who christened it "Precedent." During the War of 1812, when fire company membership exempted men from the draft, the owners of the engine made money out of it by selling rights to persons liable to draft. Shortly after the purchase of this first one, another engine was bought at the lower part of the town. The town first took control of the engines in 1819.

In 1865 Hingham had several vessels employed in the mackerel and cod fisheries, with small craft also engaged in the coasting trade.

### HULL

**Political Barometer on Five Hills**—Go to Hull—here the sympathetic coöperation of the linotyper and proofreader is fervently solicited—and you will find the greatest little town which makes the most noise for its size, has the oddest history, the smallest town territorially in the State, except Newburyport; and not many years ago the smallest in population, except Gosnold. That is not all its distinctions. It is built on five hills, connected by very narrow necks of land, contains Nantasket Beach, the salt water playground of the Commonwealth; has been regarded as a political barometer, and has breathed defiance to conservatism as naturally as its native salt air. For many years the vote of Hull indicated the relative political parties in Massachusetts elections, and the proverb came into circulation, "As goes Hull, so goes the State."

It is not a very long look from Hull to Commonwealth Pier in Boston, the outposts of Plymouth County and Suffolk County.

The population of Hull has increased in recent years and there are now nearly eight hundred male residents above the age of twenty years. Territorially, the town is still small, having only 1,400 acres. There were 2,803 houses assessed in 1926. The town now has an efficient police department calling for an appropriation of \$34,000, a school department costing \$70,000, fire department costing \$37,000, and tuition of high school pupils in Hingham and their transportation calling for \$22,000. The total expenditures of the town, according to the report of the treasurer for 1906, were \$1,122,570.

Hull occupies the extreme northwest corner of Plymouth County, is only nine miles by water from Boston and twenty-two miles by land. The peninsula of Nantasket, which runs from Hingham north to Point Allerton, and the land to the west, forming the southern line of Boston

Harbor, is contained in the town of Hull, which is picturesque and in every way a most attractive place of residence. It is especially rich in summer homes, and connected with Boston by steamer service.

The town was incorporated May 29, 1644, and at that time had twenty dwelling houses, a fort and a church. The church was blown down in the famous gale of September, 1815. In 1776 the people of Hull were driven from their homes by the British. During the early part of the Revolution Lieutenant William Haswell had his home in Hull.

In the Civil War the town furnished, out of a population of about two hundred and fifty, twenty-four men. Those who died in service were Sergeant A. P. Loring, N. R. Hooper and J. M. Cleverly.

The first mention of the area called Hull in the records of the State was under date of May 29, 1644, Old Style. It was then the plantation called "Nantascot." The first-comers were John Oldham, John Lyford and Roger Conant. Oldham was "expelled from Plymouth Colony for seditious practices." John Lyford was a minister and also expelled from the Plymouth Colony. Conant was, according to one record, "a pious, sober and prudent gentleman, a man of great worth."

According to the State records, Hull was first mentioned as a town in May, 1647. The Brewster Islands were granted to Hull in 1663.

### KINGSTON

**Building of "Independence" and "Mars"**—To Kingston must be given the credit of building the first war vessel launched for use in the Revolutionary War. Captain Simeon Sampson, a native of Kingston, was commissioned by the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts the first naval captain in the service. He was placed in command of the brig "Independence" and later of the "Mars." Both ships were built at Kingston Landing at the Drew shipyards.

The town was one of importance in shipbuilding in early days and remained so for many years. A generation or two ago there were many retired ship masters residing in Kingston and fishing schooners were sent to the Grand Banks cod fishing which hailed from Kingston Landing. The last of these schooners were the "Mary Baker" and the "Fisher," owned by the late Edward Holmes. There is little left in the town to remind one of the shipping days, except a figurehead standing in a front yard on Main Street, which originally belonged to one of the famous Kingston vessels. Even one hundred years ago ship timber had become practically exhausted in Kingston and was brought from Middleboro, Halifax and Plympton.

Kingston, like other Plymouth County towns, is now finding poultry raising an industry well worth adopting. Just over the line in Duxbury is one of the largest plants from which broilers are shipped to the New



York market. This is one of the largest broiler-producing plants in the East.

The town observed its two hundredth anniversary in August, 1926. At that time the total number of male residents in the town, twenty years of age or over, was 832. The town appropriations amounted to \$110,315, of which \$40,000 was spent for schools, \$12,000 for highways, and \$17,474 for special highway work on Main Street and Wapping Road. In 1927 an excellent piece of highway through Stony Brook, was built, with the coöperation of the State Highway Commission. This was, before the street was rebuilt and widened, one of the most beautiful streets in Plymouth County, with towering elm trees on both sides, nearly overlapping when in full leaf in mid-summer, furnishing shade, comfort and beauty. They were all ruthlessly sacrificed to furnish more width for motor car traffic which is especially heavy throughout that street.

There were 969 dwelling houses in the city in 1926 and 9,372 acres of land assessed. The number of residents taxed on property was 738 and the number of non-residents 511, including summer residents who have built up pretty villages of summer homes at Rocky Nook and elsewhere.

The Frederick C. Adams Public Library contains approximately 12,000 books and a large number and selection of magazines, weekly and daily newspapers. The total circulation is nearly 10,000, which shows that the library is used and appreciated.

Included in the program of the two hundredth anniversary celebration of the town on June 27, were an oration by Hon. Herbert Parker and three rousing cheers for Mr. and Mrs. Edgar P. Reed of Worcester who donated a beautiful community house, erected on the Kingston Playground. The playground itself was completed in the anniversary years, after four years of community work.

The principal observance of the anniversary was on August 20 and 21, with an excellent parade, addresses by Governor Alvan T. Fuller, Lieutenant-governor Frank T. Allen, Senator William M. Butler and others. The orator of the day was ex-Governor Channing H. Cox. Alexander Holmes was president of the day.

A pageant was given on the grounds of the Bradford House which was built by Major John Bradford on land which had belonged to his grandfather, Governor William Bradford. In that house had been preserved through many years the priceless Bradford manuscript, giving intimate details concerning the Pilgrims and their experiences in the Plymouth Colony. The house was erected two hundred and fifty-two years before the celebration. A Colonial ball took place in the Community Building in the evening.

The pageant, representing the history of the Bradford House, was

repeated the following day and three ball games were given on the newly completed playground, with a band concert and fireworks in the evening.

An exhibit of objects of historic interest took place in the "Spencer Cushman House," one of marine interest redolent of the shipbuilding days in the Centre Primary School Building; and an industrial exhibit showing the work of the present day at the Town Hall, during the week of the celebration.

Two books were published in connection with the celebration, "Ships of Kingston," written by Henry M. Jones; and "The Civic Progress of Kingston and a History of Her Industries," by Miss Emily F. Drew and Mrs. Sarah Y. Bailey.

Captain Fred L. Bailey was chairman of the celebration committee.

In 1926 a World War Memorial was erected on the triangular piece of ground on Patuxet Hill. There are three panels of Westerly granite mounted on a base of Deer Island granite. In the central panel is a bronze plate bearing the names of one hundred and thirty-two men and women of Kingston engaged in service during the World War. Above the plate bearing the names, is a bronze decorative medallion.

A substantial addition to the High School building was completed in 1926. In arrangement and availability for high school purposes the building is one of the best in the State. The Kingston School Department spends \$40,000 annually, a cost of \$73.80 per pupil, the number enrolled being 542. The valuation of the town in 1926 was \$3,065,777.

**Historic House Moved to Duxbury**—In Colonial days, when the Governor Bradford House, near Kingston Landing, was attacked by the Indians, the men, fearing for the safety of women and children, formed a plan of conveying them to the Gray Homestead, a substantial house, the home of the wealthiest man in the colony, sometimes used as a fort in times of Indian warfare. The Bradford House was set afire by the Indians, but after the women and children had been safely provided for at the Gray house, the men drove the Indians away and extinguished the fire.

The Gray Homestead remained in the possession of the Gray family several generations. The last owner by that name, Edward Gray, was the last man living in a house in Kingston which had never been out of the possession of the original family. In recent years it had been owned by Nicholas Schilling. In July, 1927, he sold it to Albert S. Geiger of Cambridge, who had the house torn down and rebuilt on Duck Hill, Duxbury, for his summer residence.

The old historic towns which witnessed the beginnings of Colonial life in America have for many years been the abiding places in summer months for wealthy people who have been interested in relics, antiques



and associations and frequently lived in houses which were the homes of early colonists, but it is seldom that a house of such marked historic interest had been demolished and reërected in another historic town.

The old timbers which the Indians attempted to set on fire, when the fearful war-whoop instead of the honk of a motor car were common in this vicinity, appeared able to resist the strain of another two or three hundred years when put together in their new location.

Concerning the incident of the plundering and setting on fire of the Governor Bradford House, and the transferring of women and children to the Gray house, it is related that Deputy Governor Bradford was a major in King Philip's War. The house of his son, John, who was doubtless in the service with him, was at the Landing, but for the protection of his wife, to whom he had just been married, he temporarily removed to the guardhouse at Plymouth town.

One day as he was returning to his house, with several soldiers, for the purpose of taking some of the goods he had left, he discovered it to be on fire, and saw an Indian standing on the brow of Abraham's Hill, stationed as a sentinel to warn his comrades of the approach of the white man, waving his blanket and crying, "Chockway, Chockway," (the white men are coming), but so intent were the Indians on plundering that they heeded not their sentinel's cry and were not aware of their danger until Bradford rushed among them.

They instantly fled and made their way into a dense swamp at the foot of Abraham's Hill, where the town playground and Community House are now located, and were pursued by Bradford, who fired at one of them and supposed him killed, as he saw him fall. On reaching the spot, he was greatly surprised not to find the body of his enemy. He was at a loss how to account for the circumstances until after the war, when an Indian made known to him the fact that he was the one fired at, giving evidence of this by marks of the bullet shot through his side, and declaring that he had crept behind some logs to escape the notice of the pursuer.

After the war, Mr. Bradford rebuilt on the same spot, in which for a long time was preserved his grandfather's manuscript history of New Plymouth; but which, a short time before his death, in 1736, he loaned to Thomas Prince, who kept his library in the steeple of the Old South Church at Boston. The manuscript, with other books, was carried to England during the Revolutionary War, and lodged in the Fulham Library, where, until 1855, it was concealed from the public, and for many years was supposed to be irrevocably lost. It has since been published by the Massachusetts Historical Society, and is a most authentic and valuable contribution to the history of the first settlement.

**Kingston Much Liked By the "First Comers"**—For more than a

hundred years Kingston was "The North End" of Plymouth. Twice it narrowly escaped being the most famous locality of the Old Colony. The day after the company from the "Mayflower" first landed, a party went, some by land, and some in the shallop, to look for a more desirable place for settlement. They reported "a great liking to plant" at Jones' River, but after prayer and reflection "the most voices" fixed upon Plymouth. In March, 1635-6, a project was set on foot and was earnestly advocated by a viewing committee of the court, consisting of some of the chief men in the colony, to remove from both Plymouth and Duxbury, and to unite in a new town at Jones' River; but after long debating and a reference to the two churches for a final decision, the matter was silently dropped.

Though at the time of the landing all the region about was temporarily deserted of the natives, two burial grounds, one where the Patuxet House was later located, and the other, in the ridge north of the Evergreen Cemetery, together with the frequent discovery of arrow-heads, mortars, and hearth-stones, show that Kingston was a favorite resort of the Indians. The last one of the tribe dwelling in the town, as handed down by the "oldest inhabitant," was a woman, whose wigwam was at Blackwater, and who was famed the country around for her superior cooking.

The earliest road from Plymouth to Duxbury was nearer the shore than the present one, crossing Jones' River at the "Wading Place," near the almshouse, and thence, passing over Abraham's Hill, through Stony Brook, meeting another road which started near the Plymouth line and crossed the river, at its mouth, by a ferry. Later, the main road passed by a bridge near the Landing. A later highway and bridge were opened in 1708.

Both the ancient ferry and bridge were subjects of frequent legislation. At one time Captain Myles Standish was ordered by the court to repair the bridge, even if he had to press men into the service. For a time, Governor Bradford had his residence on Stony Brook Hill, the place now marked by a boulder, suitably inscribed. His son, Deputy Governor Bradford, lived and died upon the same spot. Joseph Bradford, another son of the governor, settled a little southeast of the Landing.

Isaac Allerton, for several years the governor's sole assistant, and afterwards the enterprising agent of the Pilgrims, and his son-in-law, "that precious servant of God," Elder Thomas Cushman, whose wife, Mary, was the last survivor of the "Mayflower" band, lived a few rods northeast from the house of "Grandfather Cobb," who died in 1801, aged more than 107 years. John Howland and Elizabeth, his wife, ended their long pilgrimage at the Nook, near the road to the old ferry. Samuel Fuller, the "beloved physician" and deacon of the church, and Francis Cook, the progenitor of an extensive race of Cooks, dwelt



near Smelt Brook. John Billington, the discoverer of the "Sea," has left his name to the rocks in the bay near the town line, and Edward Gray, "the merchant," who came some years later, settled a little to the north of where his descendant and namesake later resided.

**Bradfords Prominent in the Old World**—So much that is historically true was recorded by Governor William Bradford, that would have been lost to the world without his faithful writings, that his early ancestry becomes especially interesting. The Lewis Historical Publishing Company of New York, in one of a series of genealogical volumes, makes the following mention of the Bradford Family:

While the name Bradford has been one of the most notable in the history of New England since the founding of Plymouth Colony three hundred years ago, it has been equally prominent in the annals of the Old Dominion. There is perhaps no single one among the hundreds of prominent American family names which has been made the subject of more extended mention in genealogical works than that of Bradford, or has produced a greater quota of distinguished public characters. From the time of Governor William Bradford to the present day men have not been lacking in practically every department of American affairs to carry on the tradition of the name.

Bradford as a surname is derived from a local source, *i. e.*, from towns and parishes of the name which are found in the West Riding of Yorkshire, in Wilts, Dorset, Somersetshire and Devonshire, and in Northumberland in Old England. The family in England dates back to the twelfth century, when one Alexander de Bradeford was a resident of Northumberland in the year 1197. From that date onward the family was one of considerable importance in various parts of England. One of the first martyrs burned at the stake during the reign of Queen Mary was John Bradford, prebend of St. Paul, and a celebrated Protestant preacher. John Bradford was born in Manchester, Lancashire, about 1510, and was executed July 1, 1555, at Smithfield; he was a friend of and fellow-martyr with Rogers, Hooper, Saunders, Latimer, Cranmer and Ridley, who suffered death by burning about the same period. Still another Bradford was Lord Bishop of Rochester and dean of Westminster. The coat-of-arms of the Bradford Family is as follows:

*Arms*—Argent, on a fess sable three stags' heads erased or.

*Crest*—A stag's head erased or.

*Motto*—*Fier et sage.*

**Kingston Furnished Two Revolutionary War Generals**—When a Committee of Correspondence was chosen for Kingston, in 1774, John Thomas was the leader and Peleg Wadsworth also prominent. The latter became Captain Wadsworth, in command of a company of minutemen, in 1775, when the town provided "firearms and accoutrements to

equip thirty-three soldiers completely." When word of the battle of Lexington and the Concord fight was received, this company marched to join Colonel Cotton's regiment and attack a body of British soldiers stationed at Marshfield. Lieutenant Seth Drew of the company was at work in the Drew Shipyard at Kingston Landing, burning the refuse from the bottom of a ship, with a lighted tar barrel, when informed of the shooting at Lexington. He passed the burning barrel to another workman, joined his company, in the same haste that Israel Putnam had left his plough in the field. Major Drew (the title he won later in the war) did not return until the war was over.

John Thomas was one of the selectmen at the outbreak of the war and became a general in the army. He was in command of the American forces at Dorchester Heights, which compelled the evacuation of Boston by the British troops. He later became major-general in command of the army in Canada. He died early in 1776.

Captain Peleg Wadsworth rose to the rank of brigadier-general and had command of the District of Maine. When the war was over he was a member of Congress eight years and a prominent merchant in Portland. His daughter became the mother of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, the poet, and it was he who built the "Wadsworth-Longfellow House" as it is called, in Portland. General Wadsworth had two sons in the American naval service in the War of 1812, Alexander Scammel Wadsworth, second lieutenant on board the "Constitution" when she defeated the "Guerrière," and Henry Wadsworth, lieutenant under Commodore Preble at the siege of Tripoli. Lieutenant Wadsworth was killed at Tripoli at the age of twenty.

**Commander, Inventors, Author, Scholars**—In time of the Adams-Franco War Commodore James Sever commanded the frigate "Congress." The first anchors for the navy were made in Kingston by Deacon Jedediah Holmes. Jesse Reed invented the first nail and tack machines. John Washburn invented the screw augers which brought to an end "the old pod-auger days." Samuel Adams gave to the world the first mowing machine, taking a good share of the backache out of agriculture.

Hon. John Holmes, a native of Kingston, was a United States Senator, born in Kingston, in March, 1773, emigrated to Maine, was author of the Constitution of Maine, and died in Portland, Maine, July 7, 1843. Joseph R. Chandler, editor, member of Congress, scholar, was born in Kingston in 1792.

One of the most precocious scholars was Samuel B. Parris, son of Rev. Martin Parris, one of Kingston's early schoolmasters. Before he was eighteen months old, Samuel B. Parris had learned the Hebrew alphabet and was proficient in that sacred language before he learned



English grammar. At the age of six he began to keep a diary in Latin. He entered college at nine, after passing a successful examination in the classical languages and higher mathematics, while being held in the lap of one of the professors who marveled at his knowledge. Many writings came from his pen, among them a poem on "Anticipations and Recollections." This and other writings were published after his death at the age of twenty-one. The following is a quotation from "Anticipations and Recollections:"

Scenes of early pleasure! years may pass,  
In life's united tragedy and farce;  
But, with oblivion's "Besom," ne'er shall they  
Sweep thy remembrance from my thoughts away.

**Whitefield Caused Change in Ministers**—The first minister of the church was Rev. Joseph Stacey, a graduate of Harvard College. Rev. Daniel Lewis of Pembroke preached the ordination sermon November 2, 1790. He had in his parish nine grandsons and one great-grandson of Governor Bradford, with their families; Wrestling Brewster, a great-grandson of Elder Brewster; Francis Cook, a great-grandson of Francis Cook of the "Mayflower," and many others one or two generations removed from the first-comers in the "Mayflower," the "Ann" and the "Fortune." Major John Bradford, on January 5, 1721, made a deed of gift to Rev. Mr. Stacey of two acres of land for his house lot. This was at the fork of the roads, Summer and Main streets; and in front of the house, until the town water system was put in, the "Old Point Well" was regarded as common property from which people from considerable distances were wont to receive refreshment.

The second minister, Rev. Thaddeus Maccarty, succeeded the first minister when Rev. Mr. Stacey died, August 25, 1741. He was ordained November 3, 1742, when he was twenty-one years of age. He had been on several sea voyages with his father, Captain Thaddeus Maccarty, a master mariner. Rev. Mr. Maccarty was a great admirer of George Whitefield, the early evangelist, but his congregation was not. Consequently Rev. Mr. Maccarty preached his farewell sermon on the third anniversary of his Kingston pastorate, moved on to Worcester and continued to preach there until his death in 1785.

In Worcester he preached a sermon at the execution of James Buchanan, William Brooks, Ezra Ross and Bathshua Spooner, for the murder of Josiah Spooner, husband of Bathshua. She was a granddaughter of Rev. Timothy Ruggles, minister at Rochester in this county. She conspired with the three executed at the same time as herself for the murder of her husband by plunging him into a well. Buchanan, Brooks and Ross were British soldiers, prisoners of war, quartered at Brookfield, where the murder took place March 1, 1778.

It is interesting to know that the third minister in Kingston, Rev. William Rand, was forced to leave his former pastorate at Sunderland because his congregation was attracted by George Whitefield and he was not. In this way Whitefield's influence took away a Kingston minister and supplied another. Rev. Mr. Rand was one of sixteen clergymen of Hampshire County who met at Springfield and drew up an address telling Whitefield that his coming to that part of the country was offensive to them.

It might be said that, until George Whitefield took part in the great awakening in 1745, clergymen of the Congregational fold had things pretty much their own way in secular as well as religious affairs. The coming of Whitefield was exceedingly offensive to most of them but it had a decided effect in creating a more liberal spirit in contrast to the severity and uncompromising attitude of the Puritans and, in a lesser degree, the Pilgrims and their early descendants.

**Some Interesting Epitaphs**—Over the resting place of Kingston's third minister, in the old burial ground in the rear of the First Church, appears on the memorial stone:

In memory of the Revd. Mr. William Rand, died March ye 14th 1779, aged 79 years wanting 7 days.

Here's one who long had ran the Christian Race;  
Kindly reliev'd reclines his hoary head,  
And sweetly slumb'ring in this dark embrace  
Listens the welcome sound, "Arise ye dead."

One of the prominent names in the history of Kingston has been that of Sever. Nicholas Sever, pastor of a Congregational church in Dover, New Hampshire, while on a horseback journey to Cape Cod, halted at the home of a Widow Little in Kingston. The widow became the wife of Rev. Nicholas Sever November 21, 1728. Three sons were born of this marriage. One of them, William Sever, later Judge Sever, married Sarah Warren of Plymouth and the present Sever house near Kingston Landing was built for them in 1760.

Concerning the Sever and Little families, there are two old grave-stones on the old burial ground on which are epitaphs reading as follows:

Here lies deposited what was mortal of Ann Warren Sever, daughter to the Hon. William Sever, Esq., & Sarah his wife, who died Jany. ye 19th, 1788, Anno Etatis 25.

"How oft I gaz'd prophetically sad,  
How oft I saw her dead while yet in smiles!  
In smiles she sunk her grief to lessen mine,  
She spoke me comfort, & increased my pain."

Miss Lucy Little, deceased Sept. 29, 1756, aged 37 years 5 months.  
Reader! Beneath this monumental pile is laid



What once was beauty and a spotless maid.  
Here was each virtue and each Grace combin'd;  
Fair was her form, but fairer was her mind.  
So bright in her the sex's virtues shone,  
They seemed all center'd in this maid alone.  
The harmony of life thus kept intire,  
She joined at death the fair angelic quire;  
The fair angelic quire with joy confest  
They ne'er had welcom'd a more charming guest.  
Led by th' admiring throng, she takes her seat,  
And half an Angel Here, now shines above compleat.

**Boundaries, Lakes, Rivers and Hills**—Kingston was named in honor of Evelyn Pierrepont, first Duke of Kingston. It is bounded on the north by Pembroke and Duxbury, on the east by Duxbury and Kingston Bay, southeast by Plymouth, southwest by Carver, Plympton and Silver Lake. The latter separates it from Halifax. Possessed of a good harbor for small vessels and pleasure craft, the town is ideal as a summer residence for those who are devoted to boating and the rides, walks and scenery are unsurpassed in the county. There are several lakes in Kingston, the largest being Smelt Pond, which covers ninety-two acres. Muddy Pond is near Smelt Pond in the southerly section of the town, and its area is sixty-one acres.

The Jones River flows from Silver Lake through the town to Kingston Bay and furnishes potential motive power for numerous mills and factories. Some of the mill privileges have been abandoned since Silver Lake became the source of the water supply for Brockton and several towns in the vicinity of the county's only city, as the municipality purchased the mill privileges to protect its supply. Affluents of the Jones River are Mile Brook, Tusseck and Pine Brook, flowing into it from the north, and Jones River Brook and Smelt Brook from the south.

There are veins of volcanic rock thrown up in the town, notably at the "Devil's Stair" at Rocky Nook. The principal rock is granite and sienite. The soil is a red loam, with sand, gravel and round stones, and not especially productive for agriculture. The highest land is Monk's Hill, the highest point of land in Plymouth County. It is three hundred and thirteen feet above sea level and commands a magnificent view of the harbor of Plymouth, Captain's Hill, Duxbury Beach and the emerald sweep of the Plymouth woods. Another high hill is Pine Hill, which overlooks Indian Pond.

Twoscore years ago Kingston was the wealthiest community in the county and the home of numerous retired sea-captains. Having few industries in which the rising generation found employment, several of the younger generation sought employment and established homes elsewhere. Much of the wealth passed down by inheritance became owned elsewhere, so that the town lost its distinction as one of the

wealthiest towns. The shipbuilding industry was once important in the town, as was the making of thread, shipping tools, tacks, rivets, hollow ware and many other things. Some of these industries still remain but most of those formerly connected with shipbuilding and the fisheries have declined. On the site of one of the principal anchor forges, on the Jones River, is a prosperous woolen mill, established several years ago.

**Deserved Honor to a Kingston Nurse**—In the Civil War, Kingston furnished one hundred and fifty-four men and, strangely enough, the Grand Army Post has the number 154 in the Department of Massachusetts. This post is the only one in the United States named for a woman. Martha Sever Post, No. 154, Grand Army of the Republic, was named for a volunteer nurse who died in the service of her country, a Kingston young woman, whose body is buried in Evergreen Cemetery. There is at present writing (1927) only one living member of the post, Amasa Lincoln, but the charter has not been surrendered. Comrade Lincoln has it hanging on the wall in his home, and occasionally goes through the ritual, coming as near as he can to holding a post meeting.

Of the one hundred and fifty-four Union soldiers, sixteen were killed in action or died in the service. Their names appear on a monument erected in their honor on the Village Green, in front of the Town Hall and adjacent to the ancient cemetery in the rear of the First Church. This monument was a gift to the town in 1884 by Mrs. Abigail Adams.

Records show that the Kingston Anti-Slavery Society was formed in November, 1834.

The one hundred and fifty-four men who served from Kingston in the Civil War, were thirty-three more than the quota required of the town to answer all calls.

**Some Works of Progress in Half a Century**—The shipbuilding industry, for which Kingston was noted for many years, was founded in 1810 by Joseph Holmes. Previously vessels had been built, at practically the same location at Kingston Landing, for the Revolutionary War and between that war and the second war with the British. Between the two wars about two hundred and fifty tons of shipping were built annually, according to a record made by Rev. Zephaniah Willis, pastor of the First Church forty-eight years and later serving with a colleague until he died at the age of ninety years. He took the first census of the town and in 1815 prepared a sketch of Kingston for the archives of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He numbered the inhabitants of the town in 1815 as 1,250.

Some of the marks of progress during the past fifty years should include the following:



Street railway established from Cobb's Store at Rocky Nook to Plymouth in 1894 and later extended.

Gift of \$5,000 from Frederick C. Adams for free lectures, awards to worthy scholars, and books.

Beginning of street lighting in 1906.

Establishment of the water system in 1886.

Bequest of \$24,000 under the will of Frederick C. Adams, in 1898, for a free Public Library, the building lot a gift from Mrs. George T. Adams and Horatio Adams.

Gifts of \$5,000 to the Public Library and \$1,000 to the Frederick C. Adams Free Lecture Fund, from Mrs. Rosa A. Cole; \$1,000 to the library and \$5,000 to the lecture fund from Mrs. Annie C. Thomas; \$500 to the library from Byron C. Quimby.

Two free beds to the Jordan Hospital at Plymouth, "preference in the use of said beds to be given at all times to patients residing in Kingston," from Mrs. Annie C. Thomas; \$6,878, under the will of William H. Willis, in 1912, to establish a fund which should be used for the benefit of poor children in the town; \$8,000 for the upkeep of the Old Burial Ground, given by William Ames in 1920 as the Lucy Ames Fund, in memory of his mother; \$4,374, under the will of Thomas Prince of Oregon, received in 1924 for upkeep of the Old Burial Ground; \$21,000 from the same donor, received in 1925, known as the Thomas Prince Benevolent Fund; \$1,000 received in 1925 under the will of Arthur F. Wadsworth for general town purposes.

Evergreen Cemetery was remembered in recent years with a gift of \$5,000 from Edgar L. Reed of Worcester, donor of the Community Building also; \$5,000 by will of Mrs. Rosa A. Cole and the "George Mabbett Holmes Memorial Park," from Dr. and Mrs. Arthur B. Holmes. During the first fifty years of the town's history the development of the iron industry was important. The making of nails, tacks and anchors furnished employment for many of the townspeople. There was a time when there were more tack factories in Kingston than in any other place in America.

In earlier days water furnished power for most of the factories. On Jones River and its tributaries there have been twenty-four water privileges furnishing power for more than eighty separate industries. Steam gradually took the place of water as motive power and, in 1926, the water privileges in operation numbered five.

Details of the occupations and industries and a survey of conditions in Kingston since its incorporation in 1720 forms interesting reading, as presented in one of the books published in connection with the two hundredth anniversary celebration of the town in 1926, written by Miss Emily F. Drew.

### LAKEVILLE

Previous to May 13, 1853, the territory now known as Lakeville was a part of Middleboro. The bounds between Lakeville and Taunton were established June 1, 1867. Lakeville is one of the youngest towns in the county, having had only seventy-five summers and wintered well. The valuation of the town in 1926 was \$1,393,140. There were 579 dwelling houses and the total acreage of the city was 17,365. The town is the home of the State sanitorium for tubercular patients, a well-appointed institution ideally located and having flower beds, broad lawns and pleasant and healthful environments.

Lakeville takes just pride in its schools, and for those wishing vocational and agricultural tuition provides transportation and tuition. There were nine pupils from Lakeville in the New Bedford Vocational School in 1926, at a cost of \$1,468 to the town.

The Lakeville Free Public Library is an institution of great helpfulness. It contains a well selected lot of books, many of them gifts. Mrs. Benjamin Phillips is among the summer residents who has contributed generously from her personal library.

At the time of the Civil War, Camp Joe Hooker was situated in Lakeville and it was from there that many Plymouth County men marched to battles in the South.

The first postoffice for the old town of Middleboro was located not far from the present Lakeville Town Hall in 1804. It was a distributing office for several adjacent towns.

**Monument to a Revolutionary Indian**—In the westerly part of Lakeville is a monument erected "in memory of Ben Simonds, the last male of the native Indians of Middleboro. He was a Revolutionary soldier. Died May, 1831, aged eighty years." The words quoted appear on the monument, a small granite obelisk, erected by Levi Reed, a prominent citizen.

Benjamin Simonds is especially recollected as a noble specimen of his race; he was of fine physical proportions, weighing about two hundred pounds. After the Revolutionary War, receiving a pension of \$96 a year, he moved to the north side of the pond, where he lived at a place known as "Ben's Island." He died in 1836 and was buried in the cemetery, about a mile west of Lakeville Depot.

The murder of Sausaman, a friendly and Christian Indian, on the Assawampsett, hastened King Philip's War. During that war, the famous Captain Benjamin Church had a severe skirmish with the Indians on the west side of the same pond, resulting in their flight.

As nearly as can be determined, there was no settlement in the town until about 1700. A man by the name of Peirce came from Scituate and built near Myrickville in 1705. His descendants are numerous. The



Nelsons were the first white settlers on Assawampsett Neck in 1717. The Southworths settled the part near Middleboro; and Strowbridges, Richmonds, Canadys, Horrs, Sampsons, and Pickenses were all early comers.

Lakeville was incorporated May 13, 1853. Most of its territory was embraced in the West Precinct of Middleboro. The chain of ponds or lakes, parts of which are in Middleboro and Rochester, have an area of about 6,000 acres, being by far the largest lake region in the State. They give to the vicinity fine natural scenery, and have a perceptible influence on climatic conditions, especially in the prevention of early autumnal frosts. Middleboro, before the division, was the largest township in the State, having a surface of nearly one hundred square miles. Its large territory was one of the main causes of the separation of Lakeville.

The borders of its ponds were famous resorts for the Indians. Here was a fine place to raise their maize and beans, to chase the deer, and catch their fish, and this was one of the last places they abandoned.

The first white settler of Lakeville, Thomas Nelson, had a farm between Long Pond and Assawampsett Lake. The land on the other two sides was owned and occupied by Indians.

Sampson's Tavern, a hostelry from Revolutionary days to within the memory of old inhabitants, was a place where "something for man and beast" could be had, with good cheer for those who came by stage on the journey from Boston to New Bedford. It was the last stop before reaching New Bedford. Some of Hezekiah Butterworth's stories were written at this tavern.

Lakeville was that part of Middleboro in early days which contained residences of the men of wealth and distinction. Many of these houses of Colonial type remained for many years and a few are still in existence. One of them was that of Major Peter Hoar, who served at the battle of Lexington. He was major of the Fourth Regiment of Militia of Massachusetts. He was one of the selectmen of Middleboro more than fifty years and served in the General Court three years.

The houses of Samuel Doggett and Lemuel Ransome, Loyalists, were also in Lakeville; and that of General Ephraim Ward, the oldest house in town. A part of the house is boarded with two and a half inch oak planks, spiked on the sills and beams to form a garrison house against attacks by the Indians. The house once had a secret chamber.

The first church in Lakeville was organized October 6, 1725. Rev. Benjamin Ruggles was ordained pastor.

Rev. Hugh Montgomery, the noted Methodist preacher, was a native of this town. He gave to the Christian Church, which was organized in 1842, the nucleus of a public library. There were three hundred and fifty volumes included in the gift and the presentation was in 1866.

Lakeville furnished ninety-one men in the Civil War and nine of them were killed in action or died in the service.

From earliest times, especially before Lakeville was set apart from Middleboro, a large number of the young men residing in the territory now known as Lakeville took unusual interest in the militia. Abiel Washburn, one of the natives of this part of the old town, was commissioned a brigadier-general, to rank from September 4, 1816. Eliab Ward was commissioned brigadier-general to rank from April 8, 1850. Ebenezer W. Pierce entered into militia duty for a long time, while a resident of the Lakeville territory, and, after he moved to Freetown, was commissioned a brigadier-general, ranking from November 7, 1855.

The student of Indian history and traditions of King Philip and the Wampanoags can easily find plenty of legends, some of which can be substantiated as facts, connected with Lake Assawampsett, Pocksha, Great and Little Quittacus, Long Ponds and the other bodies of water and streams which abound in this town.

### MARION

Marion is one of the many beautiful towns in Massachusetts, bordering on the ocean, in which are summer homes of people who have due appreciation of the wealth of charms which such towns possess. There were, in 1926, two hundred and eighty-seven non-residents assessed on real estate in the town of Marion. Many of them own summer homes. This town was the home of the late Richard Harding Davis and his marriage took place here, with a large number of his literary friends in attendance. Former Governor William L. Douglas had a summer home in Marion many years, although his legal residence at that time was Brockton.

The most magnificent summer home of all those in the town was erected several years ago by the late Galen L. Stone of Brookline. His estate is on Great Neck, which rises one hundred and twenty-seven feet above sea level. The magnificent granite castle which Mr. Stone erected is one of the show places of the United States.

The real estate valuation for Marion in 1926 was \$3,546,164 and personal estate \$632,372, making the total valuation \$4,178,536. The town includes 8,565 acres which are assessed, a few other acres being included in the property, valued at \$756,427 which is exempted from taxation. It is a town of six hundred and seventy-six dwelling houses. The number of resident taxpayers is five hundred and eighty-three and the number of men, twenty years or more of age, four hundred and seventy-seven.

It is a prosperous town, with good roads, well-kept houses and lawns, everything presenting a neat appearance and such a town as attracts visitors instinctively. Investigation into civic affairs, shows that the



town expends for schools \$31,000, exclusive of \$2,200 which it pays for the benefit of boys and girls who choose to go to agricultural and vocational schools in other places. Each year more pupils from Marion are entering the vocational school in New Bedford, and those having taken the course are always in demand.

At the annual town meeting in March, 1927, a planning board was chosen to take into consideration such plans as are most likely to maintain for the town its residential character, future attractiveness, beauty and value.

The Marion harbor is becoming more beautiful each year. There are over one hundred moorings in the harbor, according to the report of the harbor-master and wharfinger.

In addition to its natural beauty and the encouragement which is given to induce summer residents to enjoy themselves, the town has an interesting early history, which adds to its attractiveness.

**Captain Church's Important Date With Awashanks**—King Philip once included among his personal possessions the territory now included in the town of Marion. During the King Philip War, Captain Benjamin Church met Queen Awashanks and her tribe, then on their way to Sandwich to arrange terms of peace with the governor, at the Great Hill, near the beach. The queen entertained him cordially with "fried eels, bass, flat fish, and shell fish and then, around a huge bonfire of pine knots, herself and warriors pledged their allegiance to the English, and thus sealed the fate of Philip." Captain Church reported that he found the remnant of the tribe having a good time "running races on horseback, playing at football, catching eels and flat fish or plunging and frolicing in the waves."

The first white settlement was made in Marion in 1680, at Little Neck. The first minister was Rev. Samuel Shiverick, who served from 1683 to 1687. In the vicinity of a great rock, around which the Indians were accustomed to hold their pow-wows, the first worship took place.

Marion was incorporated May 14, 1852, and the early residents, under the town government, were farmers, mariners or manufacturers, for the most part. The Indian name for the territory was Sippican. Marion is bounded on the north by Wareham, on the east by Buzzards Bay, on the south by Buzzards Bay and Mattapoisett and on the west by Mattapoisett and Rochester. It was formerly a part of Rochester. The town is very irregular in outline. The north and east boundaries are the Sippican and Weweantit rivers. The town extends at the south into Buzzards Bay in three peninsulas. Sippican Harbor runs far into the town and almost divides it into equal sections. Considerable of the territory is covered by Bear, Great and Lawrence swamps.

The name of Marion was selected because it would be an easy one

to use in hailing vessels at sea. One source of industry with the early settlers was the manufacture of tar. Each resident was allowed by the proprietors to make ten barrels, from the undivided forest, and if he made more, he must pay a tax of one shilling per barrel to the proprietors. Later the manufacture of salt and of boxboards and firewood was taken up.

"The imports from three whalers and two fishermen for the year 1866 were, for the former, \$65,000; and the latter, \$12,000."

The town contributed forty soldiers for the Civil War, four of whom died in the service, also twenty-three seamen, three of whom were officers.

**Conveyances From the Indians**—The territory now called Marion, the greater part of Rochester, the westerly part of Wareham, and in many instances Mattapoissett, was called Sippican, or, as it is more frequently spelled in the ancient records, Sepecan. It belonged to the territory of Massasoit and afterwards of his son and successor, Philip (Metacomet), sachem of the Wampanoags. In 1662 Philip entered into an agreement with the English not to dispose of any part of his territory without their consent. In 1666 he confirmed the title of the lands of Sepecan to two subordinate chiefs, Watahpoo and Sampson; with the provision in the deed corresponding with the above agreement.

These lands had been held in the line of Watahpoo's ancestors, for at least six generations. On the 24th of December, 1668, Philip gave his consent to Watahpoo to sell his lands, or a portion of them, to the English. July 11, 1667, two sachems of Sepaconit (probably Agawam Neck in Wareham), sold the westerly part of the present town of Marion, to an Indian chief named Pompmunet, alias Charles of Ashimmit, "with libertie of Comanage for cattle and likewise to make use of any timber for fencing or building that is without this neck, with libertie of fishing or fowling or whatever privilege is belonging thereunto as necessary." The price was eight pounds—\$26.67.

The northern portion of Sepecan, including the northwest portion of Wareham, and nearly the whole of Rochester, was granted to Thomas Besbeck and others, January 22, 1638 or 1639. On June 6, 1649, "Libertie is granted unto the townsmen of Plymouth to make use of the land at Sepecan for the herding and keeping of cattle, and wintering of them there as they shall see cause." For many years before and after this grant, herdsman, with their herds, tenanted temporary habitations erected for their use, where the rich pasture lands and extensive salt marshes afforded ample pasturage. June 5, 1651, the above grant was confirmed, and limited to the citizens of Plymouth; "and the bounds thereof to extend itself eight miles by the sea-side and four miles into the land."



July 2, 1655, "At this Court libertie was granted to the town of Plymouth to purchase lands of the Indians at Sepecan to winter cattle upon."

June 3, 1679, an Act was passed preliminary to the sale of these lands to certain persons, which was confirmed at the next Session of the Court in July, and the settlement commenced in 1680.

The first house was erected by Samuel Briggs, who had as some of his companion settlers, Samuel Arnold, John Hammond, Moses Barlow, Samuel White, Samuel Hammond, John Wing, Aaron Barlow, Joseph Dotey, Jacob Bumpus, Joseph Burgess, John Haskell, a man by the name of Sprague, Abraham Holmes, and Job Winslow.

The first settlement commenced near the entrance to Little Neck and soon after extended to Great Neck and towards Rochester Center. Their first minister was Samuel Shiverick, from 1683 to 1687. He was succeeded in the latter year by Samuel Arnold, who died February 11, 1707. Timothy Ruggles was ordained in 1710, and held the pastorate fifty-seven years. The church was organized October 13, 1703. The first meeting-house was a building constructed for a "corn-house" by Samuel Briggs and moved on to Little Neck near a huge rock, around which the Indians used to perform their noisy demon-worship, sometimes at the same hour when the Christian worshippers were engaged in their service.

The first burial place was laid out, according to their usual custom, in the rear of the meeting-house. The first person buried there is said to have been Eliza Briggs, aged twelve years.

The next church was built in Rochester Center, not far from 1730.

The first house built on Great Neck was by John Allen, near the head of the cove.

The first house in the lower village was built by John Clark, about 1760, and in the upper village John Keen built the first house, this being swept away by the great tide in 1815.

The Sepecan Indians do not appear very prominent in the history of Massachusetts. They were, at some remote period, more numerous.

### MARSHFIELD

**Present View of the Town**—Marshfield, the town of the first public school and of three centuries of controversy over the Green Harbor dike and reclamation of land; the town of Daniel Webster and Brant Rock; the first town set apart from Plymouth, and the home of McFingal; in 1926 appropriated \$205,055 and of that amount spent \$38,000 for schools. The population in 1925 was 1,776. The town is included in the Sixteenth Congressional District, the Second Councillor District, Norfolk and Plymouth Senatorial District and Second Plymouth Representative District.

As a town of summer homes, Marshfield counts 1,876 non-residents

who pay taxes on real estate, while the residents who pay real estate taxes number eight hundred and twenty-five. There are 1,900 dwellings assessed and 15,900 acres of land.

Not only is the number of non-resident taxpayers more than one thousand greater than the number of residents, but the non-residents are assessed for \$3,126,850, while the residents are assessed for \$2,518,301. The total valuation is \$5,645,151. The number of male residents twenty years of age or older is six hundred and forty-eight. The figures are those of 1916.

There have been several water companies which have supplied the rapidly growing summer resorts at Brant Rock, Humarock Beach, at Fieldston and Rexham, but one of the problems before the town has been to provide adequate water works to supply the interior of Marshfield and provide suitable fire protection. Upon petition of the town, an act was passed in 1920 authorizing the town to issue bonds to build water works, the amount of the bond issue not to exceed \$350,000. The water commissioners are working on a plan for a general water supply.

**Something About Early Settlers**—Twenty years after the landing of the Pilgrims, Marshfield was incorporated, the date being March 2, 1640. The place was called by the Indians Missaucatucket. By the English the southwest part of the town was called Rexham or Green Harbor. The latter name is still given to a part of the town in the vicinity of Brant Rock. The North River furnishes the northern boundary of the town and separates it from Norwell and Scituate, while its eastern boundary is the Atlantic Ocean. Duxbury is on the south and Duxbury, Pembroke and Norwell on the west.

The North River and the South River, the latter flowing through the central part of the town, unite near the centre of its coast line and form a pleasant harbor. Green Harbor is where Cut River, which rises in Duxbury, meets tide water at Marshfield Beach. One of the hills of the town is called Cherry Hill and it was on this high ground that Daniel Webster made his last public address July 24, 1852.

Of the two hundred and ten men whom Marshfield furnished in the Civil War, twenty-five were lost, among them Colonel Fletcher Webster, son of Daniel Webster.

Marshfield was the home of Peregrine White, the first child of the Pilgrims; Susanna Winslow, the first mother, also the first bride, as she married Edward Winslow after the death of her first husband, the father of Peregrine, before any of the Pilgrim maidens were wedded; Josiah Winslow, the first native governor, son of Edward Winslow; John Winslow, grandson of the governor, born in Marshfield, May 27, 1702, famous in connection with the expulsion of the Arcadians from Nova Scotia in 1755, major-general in the expedition against Canada,



1758-59, and founder of Winslow, Maine, in 1766; John Thomas, major-general in the Revolution, born in Marshfield in 1725, died in Chamblee, June 2, 1776; George Little, captain in the United States Navy, 1799, born in Marshfield in 1754, died in 1809; and many other early citizens; Daniel Webster, of more recent date; and distinguished residents of the present and preceding generations, as worthy in their day and generations as any before them.

The name Marshfield indicates the nature of a considerable portion of the soil. Its three rivers, North, South, and Green Harbor, are navigable to some extent. Small vessels were built in Marshfield a century and a half ago, when shipbuilding was an important business on the South River. Agriculture is a leading occupation of the inhabitants.

Marshfield was occupied twelve years after the landing at Plymouth. The first church was organized in 1632. The first settlement of the town was made in its southwest part, then called Green's Harbor, and afterwards Rexham. The town was incorporated in 1641, and the Second, or North Parish was organized in 1739. The Indian name of the place was Missaucatucket.

In 1658 a man was killed by lightning and again in 1666 three more were killed in the same manner, which events at the time made a deep impression upon a generation which regarded all such occurrences as direct manifestations of the wrath of God.

Edward Winslow was the leading man among the first settlers. He called his place Careswell, in memory of the land of his birth. Governor Winslow, who married for his second wife, Susanna Fuller White, mother of Peregrine, was buried at sea, after years in the service of the colony, both in the Old and New World. The event occurred while he was on his way to the West Indies with a commission from Cromwell.

For several generations the Winslows were a prominent family. A house, built about 1696, known as the Winslow House, is a familiar one to historians. Josiah Winslow, son of Edward, was the first governor of Plymouth Colony born in this country.

General John Winslow, noted in connection with the removal of the Arcadians, commemorated by Longfellow, was of this family.

The ancient Winslow Burying Ground contains the remains of the first child of the Pilgrims, the first mother, also the first bride, and the first native governor.

Peregrine White settled near the joining of North and South River, and lived to an advanced age.

John Bourne, who died in 1859, a man of sterling worth, was a soldier of the Revolution, dying at the age of one hundred years.

General John Thomas, who fortified Dorchester Heights, was also a native of Marshfield.

The most distinguished name connected with Marshfield is that of Daniel Webster. He came for recreation to the place which he afterwards made his home, in 1827, and became a resident of the town about 1832. He purchased the residence erected by Nathaniel Ray Thomas, the noted Royalist, adjoining the Winslow estate. He remodelled the house, his daughter Julia designing the part containing the library. He greatly enlarged the grounds, the Winslow estate comprising a part of them. By setting out trees and enriching the soil, he changed the place from a waste of sandy hills to a charming landscape of fertility and beauty. The tomb was built by himself in the Winslow Burying Ground, in a lot abutting on his estate.

William Carver, grandnephew of Governor Carver, died October 7, 1760, nearly one hundred and two years old. On one occasion it is said he worked in the field with members of three generations, while another was in the house in the cradle—five generations living at one time.

Colonel Fletcher Webster, before his father's death, had a residence which he called Careswell, but afterwards occupied the Webster mansion.

Though at the time of the Revolutionary War there was an influential Tory element in Marshfield, giving occasion for the stationing of a company of British Regulars on the farm since associated with Webster, the town was active and outspoken on the patriotic side.

In the Civil War Marshfield furnished for the Army and Navy in 1861, for three months, one man; 1861, for three years, forty-three men; 1862, three years, twenty-six men; 1862, nine months, thirty-three men; 1864, three years, nine men; 1864, one year, nineteen men; 1864, one hundred days, five men.

**First Marshfield Farms Owned by Non-Residents**—All matters of government, whether colonial, municipal or parochial, were for many years concentrated in Plymouth, although many of the "first-comers" had taken up farms far from Plymouth Rock and the common house on Leyden Street. All freemen were required to be church members and to attend religious services regularly. Consequently it was a severe hardship for John and Priscilla Alden to journey in from Duxbury, the Winslows, Fords and Thomases from Marshfield, John Thomson from Halifax, and other worthies from settlements which are now individual towns in Plymouth County. All were obliged to perform important political and religious duties, whatever the sacrifice. A few precincts were formed which developed into towns, with a church as a centre, and provision made for land and a living for the clergyman. This was one of the first provisions. Numbers did not count for so much in those days and it was necessary to have some "people of importance" in every settlement before the men of Plymouth gave attention to any suggestions that a separate town be incorporated.



There was no intention on the part of Plymouth itself to have many of its valued settlers move elsewhere, allured by the prospect of getting more land. Consequently a plan was decided upon by means of which some of the men of quality were granted land at a distance if they would agree not to transfer their residence from Plymouth. They might have the distant farms tilled by servants in their employ.

Such grants were made of land in what was known as Green's Harbor about 1632, when the vicinity was known to the aborigines as Mis-saucatucket.

On March 2, 1640, Josias Winslow was "sworne to execute the office of Constable" at Rexame, as the Plymouth people called it. His commission was to continue "untill June come twelue months." The name was soon changed to Marshfield, as that name appears in the records as early as March, 1641. Thomas Bourne and Kenelm Winslow were chosen as deputies to represent the town in the colonial government in 1641. Their assistants named were Edward Winslow and William Thomas. These names appeared in the earliest list of freemen, taken about 1644, and there were seven others, Thomas Burne, Edward Buckley, Robert Waterman, John Dingley, Thomas Shillingsworth, John Russell and Nathaniel Thomas.

**Controversy Over Encouragement for Minister**—The first pastor of the church was Rev. Richard Blinman, a Welchman, whose coming to New England was at the solicitation or recommendation of Governor Winslow. His admission to the freedom of the Massachusetts Colony was in 1641, having been previously propounded at Plymouth March 2, 1640. He remained at Marshfield a short time, then took other brief pastorates, and finally returned to Wales.

An order had been passed by the court at Plymouth, March 3, 1639-40, for suitable land for the encouragement of a minister, also taking into consideration a controversy with the town of Duxbury, as appears from the records as follows:

"Whereas there is a controversy betwixt Greens harbour & Dux-burrow about the lands betweene the fresh of Greens Harbour riuer and the South Riuer It is ordered and graunted by the Court of freemen to Mr Edward Winslowe & the rest of the Neighbourhood of Greens Harbour a competent 'con of vplands and meddowe betwixt the said Riuers for a farme for a minister and one other competent porcon of land nere vnto the said lot for the minister either for Nehemiah Smyth or some other as the said inhabitants of Greens harbour shall place in."

Evidently Nehemiah Smyth was not sufficiently impressed with the chances for a living in the new town as his name does not appear in the list of early ministers. After Rev. Mr. Blinman came Rev. Edward Bulkeley. He was settled about 1642, and left in 1658 for Concord and succeeded his father, Rev. Peter Bulkeley, in that town.

Rev. Samuel Arnold came from Sandwich in 1658 and Rev. Edward Thomson in 1696.

There were forty-nine inhabitants of Marshfield enrolled as able to do military duty, between the age of sixteen and sixty, in August, 1643. Among them are found the names of Winslow, Sprague, Bourne, Waterman, Bradford, Howland, Dingsley, Russell, Weston, Eames, Holmes, Adams, Snow, Sherman, Williamson, Truant, Chillingsworth, Carver, Rouse, Barker, Beesbee, Bisbee, Beare, White and Ford.

There were twenty-seven in "the names of such as have taken the Oath of Fidelity of the Towne of Marshfield in the year 1657."

### MATTAPOISETT

The Indian word Mattapoisett is said to signify the place of rest. The Indians living five or six miles north of the village, used frequently to come down to the shore for the purpose of obtaining clams and fish; one or two miles north of the village, they used to stop at a spring and rest. From this circumstance, it is said, the river and place derived their names.

Many people of the present day find in Mattapoisett a place of rest, if that is what they need; or a place for delightful recreation in the summer, if they wish to have a combination of sylvan beauty, country and seashore, and dwell among interesting and generous-hearted people.

Mattapoisett was a Civil War baby; as the anti-slavery sentiment was beginning to become popular when Mattapoisett was set apart from its mother town, Rochester. This was May 20, 1857, when the town was incorporated. It had been a part of Rochester one hundred and seventy-five years. The first town meeting was held in Purrington Hall, June 20, 1857.

At one time Mattapoisett was famous for its extensive shipbuilding industry. It was in Mattapoisett that Frank D. Millett, the noted American artist who was lost in the sinking of the "Titanic," was born.

The whale fisheries was an important industry in Mattapoisett territory when it was a part of Rochester. Roger L. Barstow was a successful merchant who was also largely interested in whaling. In 1842 he was instrumental in organizing a company of light infantry, and became its captain. He became major of the Third Regiment of Light Infantry, of which Stephen Thomas of Middleboro was colonel and Ebenezer W. Pierce of Lakeville lieutenant-colonel. At the time the light infantry company was organized in the village of Mattapoisett, it was believed to be especially exposed to the approach of an enemy in barges from Buzzards Bay. The militia roll of the village at that time contained one hundred and ten men and the petition to have a volunteer company authorized by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts was allowed.



When the Civil War came, Mattapoisett furnished two hundred and fifteen men, eighteen of whom died in the service.

It was while Mattapoisett and Marion were parts of Rochester that the original town was engaged sufficiently in shipbuilding to furnish employment for two hundred and fifteen workmen at one time. Whaling was also carried on and the making of salt from the evaporation of salt water. About sixty merchant and sailing vessels hailed from Mattapoisett and vicinity.

Rev. Thomas Robbins was an early minister in that part of the original town now called Mattapoisett. He possessed what was believed to be the most valuable private library in Massachusetts. It consisted of about three thousand volumes and four thousand pamphlets, and a large collection of valuable manuscripts. Rev. Mr. Robbins was also a collector of rare coins.

### MIDDLEBORO

**Middleboro, Under a Town Manager, Prospers**—Two stories, side by side in a Brockton daily paper in July, 1927, set one's thoughts running about Middleboro. One told of the problem which faced the town owing to the automobile traffic through the town to and from Cape Cod. In addition to Cape Cod routes, the town is situated on a direct line from Rhode Island points and gets the heavy traffic from that State which is attracted to Plymouth and the South Shore or Boston and the North Shore. On the previous Sunday it was estimated that ten thousand motor cars had passed through streets which were originally built in the days of yokes of oxen and horses and buggies.

The other newspaper story concerned the recently organized Middleboro Historical Society and steps which it was taking to mark, with suitable tablets, many of the historical spots within the limits of the town. Among the sites which were being considered for marking were the location of the old town hall on South Main Street, Judge Oliver's residence at Muttock, which was sacked and burned by indignant townspeople; the site of the First Church, the old court and the place where the decisive battle of King Philip's War was fought, along the brook connecting Long Pond and Lake Assawampsett. It was recalled that there was a white man living in Middleboro earlier than anywhere else, Captain Thomas Dermer, who had command of the ships in one of Captain John Smith's expeditions.

Middleboro is one of the towns in Plymouth County which has an interesting past, is a delightful town in which to live at present, and has all the conditions to make it a successful town and city of the future.

As for the present, it is a town which requires an income of substantially half a million dollars to keep it going. The town appropriations in 1926 were \$373,304, exclusive of State and county taxes and

some other things. There were 2,680 male residents in the town above the age of twenty years. The population, according to the 1925 census, was 9,136. A few additional facts about the town, to give them the briefest mention, are that it has an elevation of one hundred feet above sea level, was settled in 1660, incorporated as a town in 1669, has a valuation at present (1927) of \$9,400,946, has municipally-owned water, gas and electric lighting plants, an area of 68.1 square miles, one hundred and fifty miles of streets, a motorized fire department, well equipped hospital.

Middleboro is thirty-five miles from Boston, twenty-two miles from New Bedford, thirty miles from Providence, Rhode Island; twelve miles from Brockton, is at the "head of the Cape," the centre of the cranberry industry, and has direct rail connections with Fall River, New Bedford, Taunton, Providence, Provincetown, Brockton, Boston and New York. In this railroad centre, the most important of any in Plymouth County, the principal industries are the manufacture of fire apparatus, shoes, boxes, brass goods, varnishes, worsteds, jewelry, drug sundries and thirty other important products.

Middleboro is one of the few towns in this vicinity which employs a town manager.

The year 1926 was one of unusual activities. The town appropriated \$175,000 for a new High School building, a new fire station was completed and dedicated December 30, on which date the motorized fire department moved into its new quarters. A new concrete bridge was built over the Nemasket River on East Main Street, a high pressure gas main was laid, a high tension electric line started and other major problems solved or given a good start.

**The Middleboro Memorial High School**, as it is called, is in honor of those who were a part of the army and navy in the World War, who were residents of this town. In the building is the "Walter Sampson Auditorium," named in honor of the man who was the efficient principal of the school nearly thirty-three years, and brought the standard of the school to a high state of excellence. The science department is called the "Leonard O. Tillson Science Department," in honor of the man who was, at the time of the completion of the building, in his twenty-eighth year of service in the school, as an efficient and conscientious science teacher. Both Walter Sampson and Leonard O. Tillson were graduates of the school.

The building is of Colonial architecture. The exterior is of high grade red water-struck brick; the roof of slate. The stairs are of fireproof steel and concrete construction and the vestibule walls are of brick. The finish throughout the building is North Carolina pine, and around all the doors and window openings are metal corner beads, known as the hospital type. In angles of all floors and walls, the base is finished



with a sanitary cove. All the classrooms and recitation rooms are in accordance with the standard as approved by the National Board of Education, and the appointments and equipment are worthy of the town which takes a just pride in its highest institution of learning. In 1926 there were three hundred and forty scholars enrolled in the High School. The whole number in the public schools was 1,866. The school appropriation in 1926 was \$114,425.

Middleboro has always held an important place in educational circles. The Pierce Academy was one of the fine old educational institutions in the academy days of New England, and from it were graduated many men of distinction, and a wealth of good citizens. More about the Pierce Academy appears elsewhere in this history.

The Pierce family has taken the part of good citizenship and generous benefactors for generations. There are at present three funds for the benefit of the town, under trusteeship. The trustees under the will of Thomas S. Pierce, for the use and benefit of the town of Middleboro and of the Middleboro Public Library, at the close of business December 31, 1926, reported assets of \$592,219. The trustees offered to lease to the town, the eighteen acres of cleared land in the rear of the new fire station and new High School building, extending to the Nemasket River, for a public park and playground, for the sum of one dollar a year, for a term of not less than ninety-nine years. The offer was accepted at the annual town meeting in March, 1927.

There is a trust fund of \$4,190, "The Maria L. H. Pierce Fund," for inmates of the Town Farm, which brought additional comforts to the seven women and fourteen men who were inmates of that institution in 1926.

**The Middleboro Agricultural Society** held its first annual fair in the early summer of 1927, at the Camp Joe Hooker race-track. The intention is to take its place with other societies in this vicinity, some of them organized one hundred or more years ago, in holding annual fairs. The officers of the new society are: President, Dr. Leonard A. Baker; vice-president, Ezra F. Shaw; secretary-treasurer, Norman C. Smith; board of directors, B. G. Brown, Benjamin W. Shaw, Merrill A. Shaw, Andrew F. Sisson, Thomas F. Mahoney, Elton L. Pratt, John A. Pratt, E. H. Stafford, Jr., Levi O. Atwood, Frank M. McGowan, George E. Doane, Fred A. Shockley, Alden Sisson, Roland Rand, Frank Noyer, R. E. Bassett, William Egger, W. J. Cromwell, Bartlett Perkins and Ralph M. Bassett. The officers are also included in the board of directors.

**Nemasket a Place of Fish**—Middleboro has always been one of the important towns of the county. A few years ago it contained nearly 20,000 acres of woodland and there were thirty sawmills engaged in reducing the forests to building material which was shipped away on

the railroad from Boston to Provincetown, or the other from Middleboro to Taunton and direct to New York. Middleboro is at the junction of the two lines mentioned and in more recent years has been connected by the Plymouth & Middleboro Railroad, through Carver.

On the southeast Middleboro is bounded by Carver, Plympton and Halifax. The Weweantit River separates it from Carver a part of the distance. Rochester borders Middleboro on the south, Lakeville and three of the chain of Lakeville ponds on the west and southwest, Raynham is on the west and Bridgewater on the northwest. The Taunton River marks the boundary line of Bridgewater. Middleboro is drained by the affluents of the Taunton, Mattapoissett and Weweantit rivers and these streams have furnished power for considerable development of industries from the earliest times.

Shoemaking, paper box manufacturing and other industries of the present day have followed the manufacture of fine cassimere and broadcloth, straw hats, shovels, wooden boxes and casks, which were made many years ago in large numbers. There was a cotton mill for many years with 2,000 spindles in use.

There are several handsome ponds in the town and on one of them, Tispaquin, is located a large Young Men's Christian Association boys' camp, which is a very popular place in the summer. Tispaquin Pond had one hundred and seventy-five acres. It was named for one of the Indian chiefs who had local jurisdiction previous to King Philip's War. Wood's Pond of forty-five acres has Fall Brook for an outlet. About 30,000 acres are devoted to agriculture, including poultry raising.

There are five postoffices at Middleboro, North Middleborough, East Middleborough, South Middleborough and Rock. In addition to villages in the town bearing these names, there are the villages of Titicut, near which the State Farm in Bridgewater is located; Eddyville and Waterville in the northeast section; the Green, near the centre.

The town suffered destruction in the King Philip War, inasmuch as the mill and about twenty dwellings were burned by the Indians but the only white man killed was Robert Danson. He was warned by John Tomson of the beginning of the war but attempted to get some of his property together and started for the fort the next morning after the warning, instead of accompanying Tomson and his family the previous evening. He was killed on the banks of a stream which has since been called Danson's Brook.

When the town was incorporated in 1669 it was given the name of Middleberry. The first church for the English was formed in 1694 but the Indians had two churches as early as 1665. Rev. Samuel Fuller was the first pastor of the English church. Like Lakeville, the territory occupied by Middleboro was a favorite hunting and fishing locality for the Indians, situated half way between Mount Hope, the home of

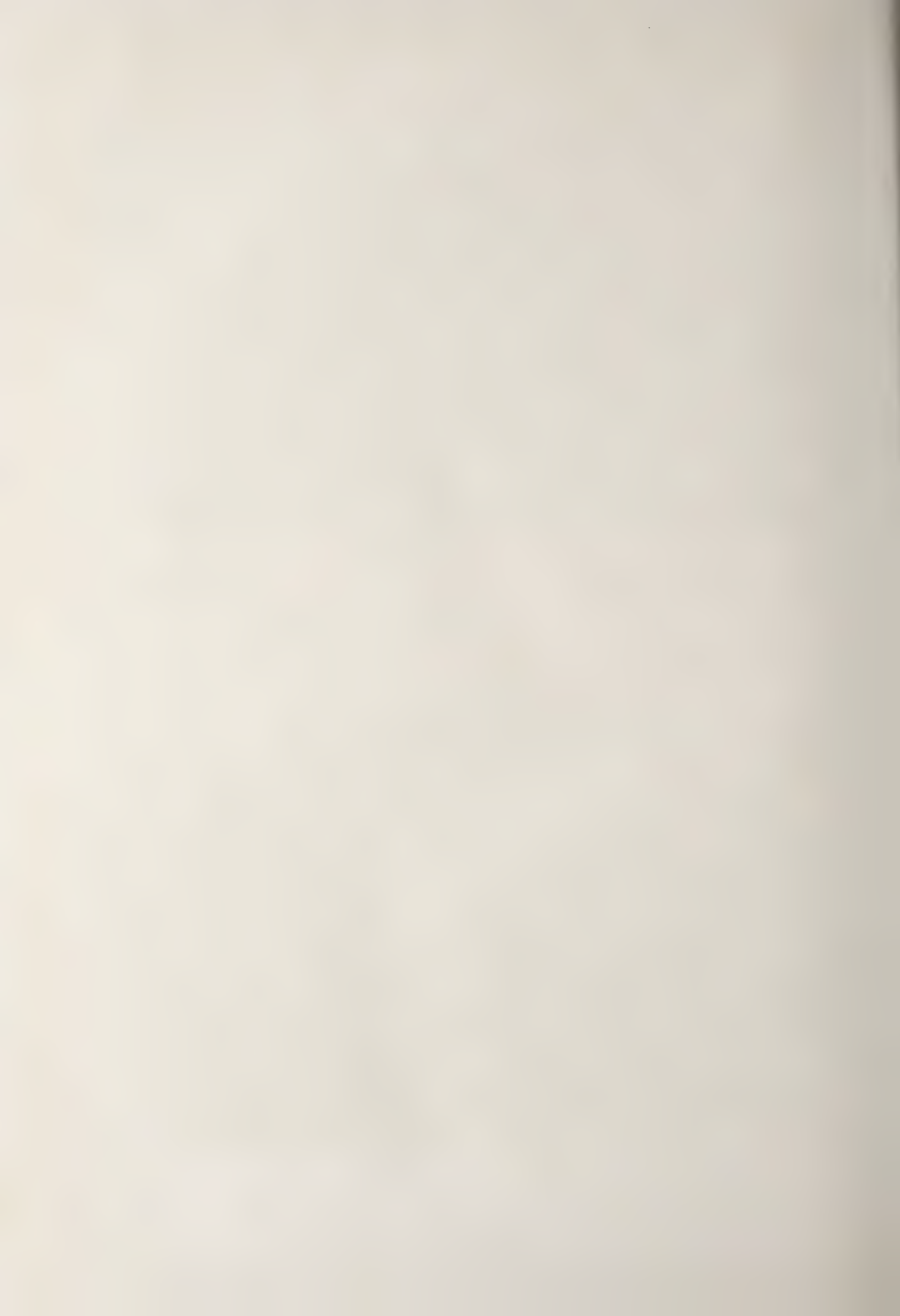




PUBLIC LIBRARY, MIDDLEBORO



ST. LUKE'S HOSPITAL, MIDDLEBORO





Massasoit and his successors, Alexander and Philip, and Plymouth. The Indians called Middleboro Nemasket, "a place of fish," and Plymouth was called Patuxet, Accomack, Apaum or Umpaume, each Indian name having some signification and each one having members of the tribe favoring the respective names. There were several Indian burying grounds in the town, one of them, a knoll on the farm owned by Major John Shaw in 1825, giving up eighty Indian skeletons.

**"Pond" Thomas and "River" Thomas, et al**—About the year 1690 several families came to the Plymouth Colony from Salem, to escape the consequences of the witchcraft delusion. Two brothers named Thomas had been drawn to serve on a witch jury in Salem and, as they did not believe in witchcraft and knew well the penalty in store for them if they did not find guilty whoever was charged with being a witch, they fled from the Massachusetts Bay Colony to Middleboro. They became known in Middleboro as "Pond" Thomas and "River" Thomas, since one had settled on the pond and the other on the river. In addition to the Thomases, other families who fled from Salem were named Bennett, Smith, Morse and others. After their coming the population of Middleboro was about two hundred. The following year Plymouth was annexed by royal charter to the colony of Massachusetts.

Middleboro figured largely in Indian history and was the stronghold of numerous sachems and chiefs, among them Massasoit, Corbitant, Chicataubut, Wampatuck, sachem of the Monponsetts; Tispaquin and many others, concerning whom much appears in many places in this history.

Prominently mentioned among the first settlers were John Tomson, Isaac Howland, Francis Coombs, Samuel Fuller, John Morton, Nathaniel Southworth, Ephraim Tinkham, Henry Wood, William Nelson, David Thomas, John Cobb, Jabez Warren, Edward Bump, Moses Simmons, Samuel Barrows, Samuel Eaton, Francis Billington, George Soule, Obadiah Eddy, Samuel Pratt, George Vaughan, John Shaw, Jacob Thompson or Tomson, Francis Miller, John Holmes and John Alden. According to Thomas Weston who wrote a "History of Middleboro" which was published in 1906: "John Tomson, the most prominent of the first settlers, was a carpenter, and lived on land which was afterwards set off to form a part of Halifax. He came to Plymouth, a lad of six years, in the month of May, 1622. He, with Richard Church, built the first meeting-house in Plymouth in 1637. Before settling in Middleboro he had purchased land in Sandwich."

Among the noted men in the early life of Middleboro were Rev. Peter Thatcher, 1716-1785, an able writer as well as a clergyman; Ezra Sampson, author of several theological works, among them "Beauties of the Bible" which he published in 1802, and the "Brief Remarker," published

in 1820; Colonel Ebenezer Sprout, a Revolutionary officer who was called by the Indians "the Big Buckeye;" Oliver Shaw, musical composer, who wrote among other compositions, "Mary's Tears," and "Arrayed in Clouds," both very popular in his time, 1778 to 1848; Rev. Enoch Pratt, 1781-1860, author of a "History of Eastham" and one of the gifted preachers previous to the Civil War; Cephus G. Thompson, a portrait painter who won considerable fame; Enoch Pratt, who liberally endowed the Pratt Free School at Titicut; Rev. Isaac Backus, who was the first Baptist pastor at Titicut and concerning whom much appears on other pages in this book. Luke Short passed away in Middleboro in 1746 at the advanced age of one hundred and sixteen years.

Middleboro was the birthplace of Lavinia (wife of General "Tom Thumb") and Minnie Warren, internationally-known dwarfs, and was their home as long as they lived.

The territory now embraced in the town of Lakeville was incorporated July 19, 1710, as the West Precinct, with a part of Taunton also included.

The parish of Titicut was incorporated in 1743. It included that part of Bridgewater on which the State Farm is located.

The parish of North Rochester was incorporated in 1783. It included all that part of Middleboro south of Pocksha Pond, due east to the town of Carver, with a part of Rochester and a part of Freetown.

The first mill in the town was for grinding corn. It was located in the Star mills neighborhood previous to King Philip's War. Two saw-mills were early industries and were located on Bartlett's Brook.

A slitting mill was built, with the permission of the town, on Nemas-ket River in 1734, but strong objections were made, as it was believed it would be an injury to herring fisheries. The herring were used as fertilizer, as well as for food, and much attention was paid to them, every property owner in the town being entitled to a given number. In 1706 the price for a load of herring was six pence but, in after years, when the loads increased much more, in an endeavor to get much for the money, the town voted to limit a load to 8,000 fish, as the reasonable number to expect for six pence.

Middleboro was one of the early shoe towns in Plymouth County. The Star Woolen Mills and the Bay State Straw Works furnished employment for many previous to and following the Civil War.

The population of Middleboro in Revolutionary War times was 4,479 (in 1776). The following winter there were 1,066 males above the age of sixteen, when the military strength of the town was recorded. This number included five Indians and eight negroes.

### NORWELL

**Most Recently Acquired Name in County**—The history of Norwell, under that name, only dates back to 1888, when, on February 27, South



Scituate was authorized to take on a new name. The name itself was not adopted until March 5. The last change in the town was April 30, 1897, when bounds between Norwell and Hingham were established.

As South Scituate there was much interesting history made in this same territory and some reminders of the olden times are easily distinguishable as one rides through the town, which has a total taxable valuation of approximately \$2,000,000 at present. There are 1,070 persons assessed in the town and four hundred and eighty-seven of them are male residents twenty years or older.

Norwell has considerable area, 12,896 acres in fact, and there are five hundred and sixty-eight dwelling houses, most of them surrounded by neat lawns, and many of them pretentious residences which help make the town present an appearance of unusual prosperity, even in thrifty New England. The per capita valuation is \$1,188 and the per capita tax, \$50.90. The town engages considerably in poultry raising and is doing its part to demonstrate the fact that a lucrative future lies in store for Plymouth County people who engage in poultry raising intelligently and industriously.

According to the State census taken in 1925 the population of Norwell was 1,466. Commendable generosity is shown in conducting the public schools, which contained in 1926 two hundred and sixty-two pupils. The expenditure for support of schools from all sources per pupil in net average membership is \$105.13.

#### **Demand for Ships Too Big for North River Hurt Local Industry—**

The town now called Norwell was taken from the southwesterly part of Scituate and incorporated February 14, 1849, under the name of South Scituate. Its name was changed to Norwell March 5, 1888. The town is bounded on the north by Hingham, on the east by Scituate, on the south by Marshfield, with the North River between, and by Pembroke, and on the west by Hanover and Abington.

In the days when shipbuilding on the North River was a big industry in Plymouth County, South Scituate men engaged in the business owned yards known as Stetson's, Curtis', Foster's, James', Taylor's, Tilden's and Delano's. Native white oak was used in building these vessels and they won considerable fame. When the demand changed to larger vessels some of the ship builders established yards in East Boston, Medford and Chelsea and continued to meet the new conditions, where there was more water for the launchings. Two of the sons of William Delano, an early ship builder, were Edward Delano, naval constructor at Charlestown; and Benjamin Delano, naval constructor at Brooklyn, New York, many years ago.

Among industries in this town have been shoemaking, the manufacture of tacks, trunks and wooden boxes.

The highest land in Norwell is Mount Blue in the north part of the town and Wild Cat Hill in the south part. There are several extensive swamps, Valley Swamp, Dead Swamp, Hoop-pole Swamp and Old Pond Swamp or Meadows, the latter in the southwest part of the town.

Cornet Robert Stetson was the first person who permanently settled in South Scituate. He selected a beautiful plain near the river and received a grant of a large tract of land as early as 1634. History speaks of him as possessed of considerable wealth, an enterprising and valuable man in the plantation, a deputy to court, a cornet of the first light horse corps raised in the Colony, a member of the Council of War, a Colony Commissioner of settling the patent line, and several other posts of importance. In 1656, he, with others, erected a sawmill. This mill was burned by the Indians, May 20, 1676, who came into Scituate from Hingham, where the day before they had created great havoc.

South Scituate may well be called the "nursery of shipbuilders." North River ships were considered first class, both as to beauty and durability. Many of the whale ships of Nantucket and New Bedford were built here. The industry flourished until the demand came for ships too large to be launched in the limited depth of North River.

### PEMBROKE

**Defiance to the King**—George Bancroft, in his "History of the United States of America," said: "The first official utterance of revolution did not spring from a congress of the colonies, or the future chiefs of the republic; from the rich who falter, or the learned who weigh and debate. The people of the little interior town of Pembroke in Plymouth County, unpretending husbandmen, full of the glory of their descent from the Pilgrims, concluded a clear statement of their grievances with the prediction that 'if the measures so justly complained of were persisted in and enforced by fleets and armies, they must, they will in a little time issue in the total dissolution of the union between the mother country and the colonies.' "

Pembroke is today, as it was before the Revolutionary War, "a little interior town." As a matter of fact the population in 1927 is not much greater than it was when "the shot was fired heard round the world," the shot which the people of Pembroke predicted. When we of the present day read of the utterances of those of the past who took decided positions in regard to weighty matters, we sometimes wonder how well they backed up those positions. The answer in regard to Pembroke is that the town sent more men in proportion to its inhabitants than any other town in this vicinity, perhaps in all the colonies. About five hundred men served with honor and distinction, a ratio of one to every three inhabitants, men, women and children.



When Benjamin Franklin appeared before Wedderburn and was given that most scathing examination, he used the attitude of the little town of Pembroke as an example in citing an instance of fearlessness and loyalty to principles possessed by the colonists. Old England heard the defiance of Pembroke as well as the guns of Concord and Lexington. Solicitor-General Wedderburn of the Privy Council, referring to the "incendiary" efforts of Samuel Adams to stir up the colonists and the replies, declared that "those of Pembroke and Marblehead are particularly curious."

In 1774, when the tea tax was imposed the town of Pembroke voted entire approval of the resolves of the town of Boston "to prevent the landing and vending the tea sent here by the East India Company," and "that we will at the risk of our lives and fortunes in every justifiable method assert and defend our just rights and privileges as men and as colonists." It was an uncompromising attitude which the people of Pembroke took and, after the war, in May, 1783, they instructed their representative to use his "best endeavors to prevent those bitter and implacable enemies of America, the Tories, from gaining admittance into the country, so far as may be consistent with the engagements of Congress."

The attitude mentioned by Bancroft, the historian, and Benjamin Franklin before Solicitor-General Wedderburn, was two years before the battle of Lexington and three years before the Declaration of Independence, but it was no sentiment of sudden arising in this community. Even as early as 1740 the town protested against the efforts of the Prince to suppress the emission of bills of public credit, which had become depreciated on account of the large export of silver. The following is a very brief extract from the protest: "Which instructions from the Crown are we presume a manifest infraction of our charter rights and privileges as well as that of our invaluable national constitutions, so long enjoyed as well as so dearly obtained, whereby the people have a right of thinking and judging for themselves, as well as the Prince. And the representative shall be directed at all times strictly to adhere to the charter rights and privileges which we are under, as also that of our English rights, liberties and constitutions, any royal instruction from his Majesty to the contrary notwithstanding."

Pembroke was noted for its patriotism. There was scarcely a Tory in the town. The town records are full of patriotic resolves passed by the town all along through the "Times that tried men's souls."

December 28, 1772, the following was passed among other resolves: "That this Province and this town as part of it, hath a right whenever they think it necessary, to give their sense of public measures, and if judged to be unconstitutional and oppressive, to declare it freely and to remonstrate or petition as they may deem best."

Conspicuous among the leading men of those times were Josiah Keen, Dr. Jeremiah Hall, John Turner, Eleazor Hamlen, Seth Hatch, Josiah Smith, Captain Freedom Chamberlain, Abel Stetson, Aaron Soule, Israel Turner, Captain Ichabod Thomas, Asaph Tracy, Consider Cole, Asa Keen and Nathaniel Stetson.

**Purchase From Indians; Garrison House Erected**—Previous to 1712, all the territory that the limits of Pembroke now embraces was Duxbury, except a small portion below what was known as Robinson's Creek. The western part of what is now Pembroke was called Namat-takeeset.

In March, 1641, the bounds of Duxbury were fixed at a court. It was "Ordered," That the bounds of Duxburrow Township shall begin where Plymouth bounds do end, namely at a brook falling into Blackwater, and so along the Massachusetts path to the North River." This path was the regular line for travel between the Plymouth and Massachusetts colonies.

That portion of Pembroke below Robinson's Creek was included in the Two Mile Purchase made by Mr. Hatherly and his associates of Scituate, of the Indian chief Josiah Wampatuck. In 1661, a grant was made to the town of Duxbury and Marshfield, of a tract of land between Jones' River and Indian Head River. This was known as Marshfield upper lands. The "Major's Purchase," an earlier grant to the town, included the Great Cedar Swamp, now in the limits of Hanson. Both these grants were included in the limits of Pembroke, at one time.

The tradition of the Barker family is that in 1628, or 1630, Francis Barker and his brother, who were among the Plymouth adventurers, took a boat and coasted along the shore until they came to the North River, which they ascended as far as it was navigable, that they landed on a rock near the site of the herring weir and went in pursuit of a good place to locate. They built a house of brick, containing one room, and one story high. This, with the additions that have since been made, is the old garrison house, said to be the oldest house in the United States. In 1679 this dwelling house was converted into a garrison and was a place of refuge for those who feared their savage neighbors.

At the time of its incorporation Pembroke had two places of public worship, one on the site of the later Unitarian Church, and the peaked meeting-house erected by the Friends.

The first Congregational meeting-house was erected in 1703, the Friends meeting-house in 1706.

The Indians that lived in this vicinity belonged to the Massachusetts, at one time a powerful tribe, numbering 3,000 warriors and occupying the whole country from Neponset to Duxbury, and extending back from the shore to Bridgewater and Middleboro.



A large portion of this tribe were converted to Christianity and were known as the Praying Indians. At the breaking out of King Philip's War many of them were conveyed to Clark's Island, where they might be secure from their hostile brothers. Chicatawbut was their sachem. His father, Josiah Wampatuck, sold Scituate to Mr. Hatherly and his associates for fourteen pounds.

In 1684 there were about forty residents at Namattakeeset. The particular sub-division of this tribe that lived near the Indian ponds was called Mattakeeset, and from these are descended Joseph Hyatt, Martin Prince, and William Joel.

Pembroke was in early days thought to be the very hub of Plymouth County, for in 1726 and for a number of subsequent years, endeavors were made to effect the removal of the county buildings to the town, and constitute it the shire town.

Pembroke was the home of fifty-four families when it was set apart from Duxbury and incorporated as a separate town March 21, 1711. It took the name of a town in England, from which some of the early settlers in the vicinity emigrated. Pembroke is bounded on the north by Hanover and Norwell, east by Marshfield and Duxbury, south by Plympton and west by Hanson. It is the only town in Plymouth County never touched by a steam railroad.

The town is separated from Hanover by the North River, upon which numerous ships were built in early years. The first sawmill and the first furnace for smelting iron in the county were built in Pembroke. The Garrison House is one of the oldest structures in the State. The first church was erected in 1703. The first pastor was Rev. Daniel Lewis who was ordained as such in 1712.

One of the smallest towns in the State, its proportion of volunteer soldiers in the several wars has been near the highest. General James Wolfe recognized the bravery of one of the early residents of Pembroke, publicly thanking him for running the blockade of the St. Lawrence to get much needed supplies to General Wolfe's army. This early hero was Captain Seth Hatch. Colonel Nathaniel Cushing was a captain in Rufus Putnam's regiment from 1777 to the close of the Revolutionary War. He was born in this town April 8, 1753, and died at Marietta, Ohio, in August, 1814. Jeremiah Hall (2nd) died while a soldier in the Revolutionary War service at Cambridge. His father, Dr. Jeremiah Hall, was a friend of General Joseph Warren of Bunker Hill fame and was a member of the Provincial Congress from this town.

Pembroke furnished one hundred and sixty-seven men in the Civil War, of whom twenty-one were killed in action or died in the service.

When the Spanish War came in 1898, and again in the World War, Pembroke responded to the call, as was to be expected. Only one

Pembroke boy died in the service during the World War. Leonard Raymond Turner enlisted April 23, 1917, and was assigned to the Naval Training Station at Newport, Rhode Island. He was an apprentice seaman in the United States Navy and died at the Newport Naval Hospital May 30, 1917, of pneumonia.

Among men of distinction in recent years, natives of Pembroke, was the late Willard Howland, for many years chairman of the Massachusetts State Board of Conciliation and Arbitration.

### PLYMOUTH

**Aside from Historical Glories**—Bare mention of the name of Plymouth awakes thoughts of historical action to such an extent that few realize that this town of 14,000 inhabitants, twenty churches and over fifty social organizations, is a town of industrial importance, independent of its historical connections. For the early history of Plymouth, fragments appear all through this history, as it has been linked with the early courts, the setting apart of all the other towns, inter-relationships with places near at hand and places which, in Colonial days or even before railroads and good roads, were far away.

In some ways, Plymouth does not present today as much an appearance of commercial activity, at the water front, as it did previous to 1921, when the vicinity of Plymouth Rock, with its wharves, coal pockets and other water navigation conveniences, were cleared away to make a Federal holiday. Even the historic canopy over the rock, pictures of which had been familiar to public school pupils of three or four generations by being printed in histories and geographies, was demolished, although cemented into its structure were bones of some of the Pilgrims. Some of the stones of the canopy were dumped into the harbor, used as filling. A new memorial, more ornate, more modern, satisfying the ambition of those who wished to have the honor of erecting it, was placed over the rock, after that historic boulder had been lifted from its position and lowered into tide water, in a location where somebody thought it might have been originally left after its joy-ride from the North, a captive of some monster glacier.

Plymouth Rock stood its ground for three hundred years after acting the part of Sir Walter Raleigh to the Pilgrims, but what will be left of it three hundred years hence after being given to the tide and waves, can more easily be imagined than asserted.

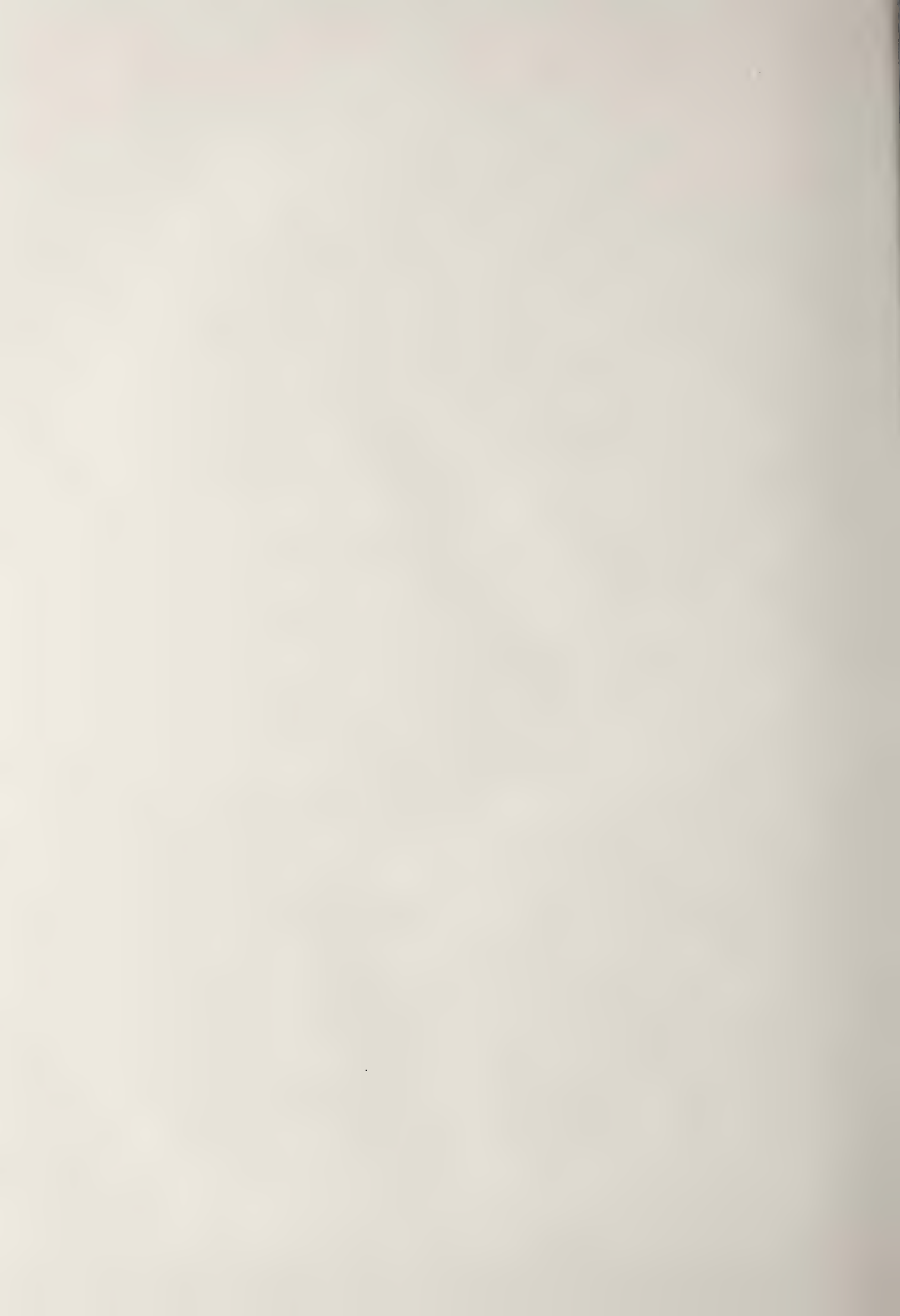
The observance of the three hundredth anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims took place July, August and September, 1921. The Commonwealth of Massachusetts, with the aid of the Federal Government, created a park adjacent to Plymouth Rock, and on this park was enacted a pageant recalling the scenes and events in Pilgrim history both in the Old Dominion and in America. The pageant, "The





Photo by courtesy of A. S. Burbank

THE SQUARE, PLYMOUTH





Pilgrim Spirit," was written and staged by Professor George P. Baker, of Harvard University. One thousand costumed actors and a trained chorus of three hundred voices took part in five episodes and some twenty scenes.

President Warren G. Harding, vice-President Calvin Coolidge, and other prominent persons were guests of honor August 1, when an immense crowd filled the old Pilgrim town and witnessed a wonderful civic, military and naval parade. President Harding came on his official yacht, the "Mayflower," with an escort of naval vessels.

Special days for fraternal organizations were observed during the summer of celebration and the whole district, notable in Pilgrim history, was visited by many thousands of people every day from all parts of the United States and Canada, by land and water transportation. The town's accommodations were mobilized for the accommodation of the countless guests and the whole affair was conducted with remarkable success.

Just how much the visitors were impressed by Plymouth as a town of today, with its industrial life, with its present population of numerous nationalities, descendants of Pilgrims of recent as well as former days, one cannot say. The Tercentenary Committee prepared maps and guides for the accommodation of visitors in seeing historic Plymouth. It was a time for recalling the past, rather than stressing the present problems and how they were being met, and facilities which make Plymouth a residential town filled with delights for those with leisure, and with industrial plants which furnish opportunities for those whose mission it is to create the future rather than revel in those things built up by workers of the past.

In place of the wharves which were destroyed by the Tercentenary Commission in December, 1920, there is now a town wharf on Water Street at which the first cargo of coal arrived and was unloaded in February, 1927. The new wharf is equipped with a modern coal handling tower with high speed machines capable of discharging one thousand tons of coal a day. The new wharf is a valuable asset to Plymouth.

The mainstay of Plymouth's prosperity is manufacturing, although catering to summer visitors is by no means unimportant. In recent years the manufacturing reports show a substantial increase, likewise wages per employee. In 1925 there were twenty-four industries with one thousand or more employees which changed their locations in the United States, showing that a Chamber of Commerce or any such organization which attempts to persuade industries to locate in the town must be content to secure small industries, if any. Many commercial organizations have discovered after costly experience that an industry which is helped into town usually soon gets into a condition where

someone else has to help it out of town. Better results are obtained by starting an industry and helping it grow in the same place. This has been the experience in Plymouth and many present-day manufacturing plants which are the mainstay of the town started small. The Plymouth Chamber of Commerce is organized to keep present industries supplied with such assistance as can legitimately be rendered and foster new ones as opportunity presents itself.

The Plymouth Mills were discontinued some time ago and on its property on Town Brook there are four water power sites which are taken into consideration with plans for future use.

The expenditures of the town in 1926 were approximately \$800,000. There are 2,500 children enrolled in the public schools. There are Senior and Junior High schools and seventeen buildings devoted to the grade schools. In the summer the residences or hotels for vacationists contain about six thousand people. The steamboat between Boston and Plymouth brings an average of five hundred visitors in the summer months. The Plymouth Country Club has one of the best eighteen-hole golf courses in New England.

Plymouth is well supplied with parks. The earliest was Morton Park, named in honor of Nathaniel Morton who was the first to strive persistently for an early start in this direction. He gave a large tract of picturesque land which he called Forest Park, but the name was changed to Morton Park later. It now contains one hundred and sixty acres. There are numerous other parks and playgrounds and about \$20,000 is devoted annually to their upkeep and improvement. One of the latest is the Veteran Field on Standish Avenue, dedicated in 1926 to the service men of the World War who went from Plymouth.

In 1926 the town erected a Memorial Town Hall on Court Street as a memorial to the soldiers and sailors of all the wars. In it are quarters for the various veterans organizations. Grand Army Hall on Middle Street, the home of Collingwood Post, Grand Army of the Republic, since 1912, was taken over in 1927 by the Plymouth Boys' Club which has a membership of three hundred and fifty and has been in existence fifteen years.

Plymouth has an excellent Public Library which, in 1926, had a circulation of 76,309 books. The attendance at the library that year was 42,737. The library received a gift of \$10,000 from the late Miss Anne P. Appleton, with the wish expressed that it might be especially helpful to the children's department. The total number of books in the library is nearly 20,000. More than one thousand volumes were added in 1926.

There is a town forest which increases the number of trees each year. The Town Forestry Committee caused 28,000 trees to be planted in 1926, making a total of 55,000 for 1924-5-6.



**Some Physical Beauties**—The boundaries of Plymouth are Kingston, Duxbury Bay and the Atlantic Ocean on the north, the ocean on the east, Sandwich and Wareham on the south, and Carver and Kingston on the west. The date of incorporation is December 11, 1620. It has a seacoast of about sixteen miles and extends about ten miles into the country, making it the largest town in the county, in area. Granite, together with drift and alluvium make up its geological formation. Plymouth Rock is a solitary sienite boulder, geologically considered, and was itself a Pilgrim, coming from somewhere up north as a passenger on a glacier before the days of rapid transit. But of this rock DeTocqueville said: "This rock has been an object of veneration in the United States. I have seen bits of it carefully preserved in several towns of the Union. Does not this sufficiently show that all human power and greatness is in the soul of man? Here is a stone which the feet of a few outcasts pressed for an instant, and the stone becomes famous; it is treasured by a great nation; its very dust is shared as a relic. And what has become of the gateways of a thousand palaces? Who cares for them?"

The Manomet Hills add much to the picturesqueness of the shore line of Plymouth. This hill or hills are a beautiful wooded eminence, three hundred and ninety-six feet above sea level, and two miles or more south of Plymouth Rock and the centre of the business section of the town. Burial Hill, which forms the background for the village as seen from the harbor, is one hundred and sixty-five feet above the low water in the harbor. On this hill are buried many of the Pilgrims and "first-comers." It was on the site of the original fort, with Captain Myles Standish in command. The National Monument to the Forefathers, commonly called "Faith Monument," was erected on this hill. Nearer the harbor, at the foot of which is Plymouth Rock, stands Cole's Hill, on which were buried those of the Pilgrim company who died the first winter. There is a monument on this hill to the memory of Massasoit, sachem of the Wampanoags, erected by the Improved Order of Red Men, as a tribute to the faithfulness in which he kept his treaty with the Pilgrim Fathers.

Watson's Hill, on the opposite bank of Town Brook from Burial Hill, is another distinct rise in the center of the town, on the way to Manomet.

The town has some 40,000 acres still in woodland and the numerous ponds and lakes cover 3,000 acres, including Billington Sea, a picturesque body of fresh water, of which Town Brook is the outlet to the sea. Great South Pond is drained by Eel River, flowing into the sea at the point where the long stretch of Plymouth Beach northwesterly joins the mainland. Behind this stretch of naked sand lies Plymouth Harbor, separated from Massachusetts Bay. A similar

stretch of narrow land from Marshfield forms Duxbury Beach, and between these unusual peninsulas the "Mayflower" sailed into Plymouth Harbor.

Half Way Pond is where the Agawam River rises. In this pond is a curious little island. Great Herring Pond extends into Sandwich and its waters overflow into Monument River. South Pond is the body of water from which the town obtains its water supply. Long Pond is another sheet of water of considerable size and Bloody Pond has upon its shore a Boy Scouts' camp. Many of the Plymouth ponds have summer homes erected upon their shores.

Beyond Eel River from the center of the town is Chiltonville, where there was formerly a large factory for manufacturing cotton duck. The industries have included the manufacturing of cordage, nails, rivets, cotton and woolen materials, iron ware, insulated wire, boots, shoes, and many other products, and some of the same industries are still in operation. The Plymouth Cordage Works is the largest in the world. In early days there were many vessels engaged in cod and mackerel fisheries and in the coastwise trade, but Plymouth, like all the other towns on the coast, has had the business connected with the sea largely get away from it, as water transportation has been carried on by larger vessels, of steel construction.

Of eight hundred men from Plymouth in the Civil War, seventy-three were lost.

The first sermon ever printed in America was preached by Elder Robert Cushman to the congregation at Plymouth, December 12, 1621. It was on "The Sin and Danger of Self Love," was republished in 1785 by John Davis and is an interesting sermon to read at the present day. Elder Cushman died in 1625 and his resting place on Burial Hill is marked by a monument of Quincy Granite twenty-seven feet in height, which was consecrated September 16, 1858.

Before the ministrations of Elder Cushman, the church, founded in Holland with Rev. John Robinson as pastor, was under the care of Elder William Brewster, who preached twice every Sunday but refused to administer the ordinances. The first regular pastor of the church in Plymouth was Rev. Ralph Smith, settled in 1629.

There was no newspaper in Plymouth at the time of the Revolutionary War and few in the country. The "Plymouth Journal" was, however, established by N. Coverly in March, 1785. The "Old Colony Memorial" was established in 1821, and is still in existence, with no number missing from the files.

The Pilgrim Society was organized in 1820 to commemorate the deeds of the Pilgrims. Daniel Webster delivered the first oration before that society, December 22, 1820. The cornerstone of Pilgrim Hall was laid September 1, 1824. The population of Plymouth in 1800 was



3,524. Some of the distinguished men born in the town previous to that time were Colonel Benjamin Church, the Indian fighter; Josiah Cotton, preacher to the Indians; General James Warren, Revolutionary patriot; Elkanah Watson, noted agriculturist; John Davis, LL.D., jurist and author; Joseph Bartlett, poet and editor; Isaac Goodwin, lawyer and author; Oakes Ames, member of Congress, distinguished manufacturer, financier, philanthropist; Charles Thomas Jackson, M. D., geologist and scientific discoverer; Thomas Russell, collector of the port of Boston, son of Hon. Thomas Russell, at one time treasurer of the Commonwealth.

**The First Celebration of the Landing of the Pilgrims** took place half as many years ago as the landing itself,—in 1769. Dr. Thatcher's "History of Plymouth," published in 1835, gave the following account of it:

Friday, December 22, (1769.)—The Old Colony Club, agreeably to a vote passed the 18th instant, met, in commemoration of the landing of their worthy ancestors in this place. On the morning of the said day, after discharging a cannon, was hoisted upon the hall an elegant silk flag, with the following inscription, "Old Colony, 1620." At 11 o'clock, A. M., the members of the club appeared at the hall, and from thence proceeded to the house of Mr. Howland, innholder, which is erected upon the spot where the first licensed house in the Old Colony formerly stood. At half after two a decent repast was served, which consisted of the following dishes, viz.

1, a large baked Indian whortleberry pudding; 2, a dish of saquetach (succatash, corn and beans boiled together); 3, a dish of clams; 4, a dish of oysters and a dish of codfish; 5, a haunch of venison, roasted by the first jack brought to the colony; 6, a dish of sea-fowl; 7, a dish of frost-fish and eels; 8, an apple pie; 9, a course of cranberry tarts, and cheese made in the Old Colony.

These articles were dressed in the plainest manner, all appearances of luxury and extravagance being avoided, in imitation of our ancestors, whose memory we shall ever respect. At 4 o'clock, P. M., the members of our club, headed by the steward, carrying a folio volume of the laws of the Old Colony, hand in hand marched in procession to the hall. Upon the appearance of the procession in front of the hall, a number of descendants from the first settlers in the Old Colony drew up in regular file, and discharged a volley of small-arms, succeeded by three cheers, which were returned by the club, and the gentlemen generously treated. After this, appeared at the private grammar-school, opposite the hall, a number of young gentlemen, pupils of Mr. Wadsworth, who, to express their joy upon this occasion, and their respect for the memory of their ancestors, in the most agreeable manner joined in singing a song very applicable to the day. At sunset a cannon was discharged and the flag struck. In the evening the hall was illuminated, and the following gentlemen, being previously invited, joined the club, viz.

Col. George Watson, Col. James Warren, James Hovey, Esq., Thomas Mayhew, Esq., William Watson, Esq., Capt. Gideon White, Capt. Elkanah Watson, Capt. Thomas Davis, Dr. Nathaniel Lothrop, Mr. John Russell, Mr. Edward Clarke, Mr. Alexander Scammell, Mr. Peleg Wadsworth, Mr. Thomas Southworth Howland.

The president being seated in a large and venerable chair, which was formerly possessed by William Bradford, the second worthy governor of the Old Colony, and presented to the club by our friend Dr. Lazarus Le Baron of this town, de-

livered several appropriate toasts. After spending an evening in an agreeable manner, in recapitulating and conversing upon many and various advantages of our forefathers in the first settlement of this country, and the growth and increase of the same, at 11 o'clock in the evening a cannon was again fired, three cheers given, and the club and company withdrew.

**Starting of the Pilgrim Society**—While there was one surviving member of the Old Colony Club the Pilgrim Society was organized to carry on the commemoration of such historical events. How this society came into being is related in "Barber's Historical Collections," a few copies of which are still in the possession of people in the Old Colony. As it is set down in that volume:

In 1820, a society was instituted at Plymouth, called the Pilgrim Society, and was incorporated by the Legislature of the State. The design of this association is to commemorate the "great historical event" of the landing of the Pilgrim Fathers, "and to perpetuate the character and virtues of our ancestors to posterity." The centennial celebration of the landing of the Pilgrims this year was of uncommon interest, and the concourse of people was far greater than on any former occasion. "A procession was formed at 11 o'clock, soon after the business of the Pilgrim Society was transacted, and, escorted by the Standish Guards, a neat independent company, lately organized, and commanded by Captain Coomer Weston, moved through the main street of the town to the meeting-house, and, after the services of the sanctuary, were attended by the same corps to the new courthouse, where they sat down to an elegant though simple repast, provided in a style very proper for the occasion, where the company was served with the treasures of both the land and sea. Among other affecting memorials, calling to mind the distresses of the Pilgrims, were five kernels of parched corn placed on each plate, alluding to the time, in 1623, when that was the proportion allowed to each individual, on account of the scarcity. John Watson, Esq., respectable by his years, and dignified by his gentlemanly manners, and the only surviving member of the Old Colony Club, presided during the hours of dinner."

In 1834, Colonel Sargent, of Boston, presented to the Pilgrim Society his valuable painting, representing the landing of the Fathers from the "Mayflower" in 1620. This painting, which decorates the walls of the Pilgrim Hall, is valued at \$3,000. It is about 13 by 16 feet, and represents all the prominent persons in the colony who first landed, being a most valuable and interesting acquisition. Among the antiquities in the cabinet of the Pilgrim Society, there is an antique chair, said to have belonged to Governor Carver, the identical sword-blade used by Captain Myles Standish, the identical cap worn by King Philip—and a variety of implements wrought of stone by the natives, such as axes, tomahawks, arrowheads, etc.





PLYMOUTH COUNTY COURT HOUSE, PLYMOUTH

Photo by courtesy of A. S. Burbank





**Pilgrim Hall**, in which are deposited many relics of the "First Comers," was completed in 1834, although the cornerstone was laid ten years earlier. For many years a representation of the welcoming of the Pilgrim Fathers by Samoset adorned the front of the building. The building was considerably improved in time for the Tercentenary Celebration in 1921.

When the cornerstone was laid, an excavation in the stone was made and the following articles deposited:

Sermon delivered at Plymouth by Robert Cushman, December 12th, 1621.—First newspaper printed in the Old Colony, by Nathaniel Coverly, at Plymouth, in 1786.—Coins of the United States, and of Massachusetts.—Odes composed for the Anniversary.—Constitution of the Pilgrim Society, and the names of its members.—Daniel Webster's Century Oration for 1820.—Massachusetts Register.—Old Colony Memorial, begun in May, 1822, by Allen Danforth.—Columbian Sentinel, by Benjamin Russell, containing an account of the entry of General Lafayette into the city of Boston.—Plate—"In grateful memory of our ancestors who exiled themselves from their native country for the sake of religion, and here successfully laid the foundation of Freedom and Empire, December xxii. A. D. MDCXX, their descendants, the Pilgrim Society, have raised this edifice, August xxxi, A. D. MDCCCXXIV. A Parris, Architect. J. & A. S. Taylor, Builders. H. Morse, Sc."

**Some Old Places of Burial**—The "Mayflower" Pilgrims who died in the winter of 1620-21 were buried on the bank a little distance from Plymouth Rock on what is now called Cole's Hill. It is related, that the graves were leveled, instead of following the English custom of erecting a mound of earth above them, that the Indians might not know of the great mortality and the consequent deplorable state of the Colonists as regards defense. The grave of Governor Carver was on Cole's Hill and the spot has not been designated. According to an old record: "About the year 1735, an enormous freshet rushed down Middle Street, by which many of the graves of the Fathers were laid bare, and their bones washed into the sea."

When the historic old canopy was placed over Plymouth Rock, replaced by a memorial erected by the National Society of the Colonial Dames of America to commemorate the three-hundredth anniversary of the Pilgrims' landing, the bones of some of the Pilgrims were sealed in the construction. These were bones found very close to the spot in 1855 and fittingly preserved in the top of the old canopy.

During the observance of the Pilgrim Tercentenary in 1921 the General Society of the "Mayflower" Descendants erected a \$25,000 memorial on Cole's Hill and it was appropriately dedicated. In a crypt beneath the monument lie the bones which had previously been preserved in the top of the old canopy. In 1927 it was learned that the monument had suffered depredations from the vandalism of souvenir hunters. A number of the bronze letters had been defaced or broken.

Cole's Hill, in the Revolutionary War and again in 1812, was fortified.

Burial Hill, formerly Fort Hill, is at the end of the first street built and used by the Pilgrims. It consists of about eight acres. On this hill the Pilgrim fort was erected under command of Captain Myles Standish. In 1675, in preparation of King Philip's War, a fort one hundred and fifty feet square, strongly palisaded, ten and a half feet high, was built.

This hill was later appropriated as a burial place for the dead. It was not until sixty years after the first interments that a gravestone was erected. Some of the oldest are of English slate stone. The oldest monument is that of Edward Gray, who died in June, 1681, aged fifty-two years. The house which he erected in Kingston was moved in July, 1927, to Duck Hill, Duxbury, to be reërected as a summer residence.

Among the many memorials on Burial Hill, there are some interesting epitaphs, and books have been printed giving nearly all of them. Two of the gravestones are especially interesting as they mark the resting place of leaders in the Colonial life whose names appear in many of the more important affairs of the Plymouth Church and town. They are:

Here lyes ye body of ye Honorable William Bradford, who expired February ye 20, 1703-4, aged 79 years.

He lived long, but was still doing good,  
And in his country's service lost much blood.  
After a life well spent he's now at rest;  
His very name and memory is blest.

Here lyeth buried ye body of that precious servant of God, Mr. Thomas Cushman, who after he had served his generation according to the will of God, and particularly the church of Plymouth, for many years in the office of the ruling elder, fell asleep in Jesus, December ye 10th, 1691, and in the 84th year of his age.

### PLYMPTON

The Indians had a way of selecting some distinguishing characteristic of a locality and giving it the name appropriate for its situation. It was for that reason that the town now called Plympton was called, by the Indians, Winnietuxet, as that was, and still is, the name of the river which flows through the southerly part of the town, thence through Halifax into the Taunton River. The Winnietuxet has had various spellings as various references have been made to it in writings, but, by whatever name, it has remained a beautiful stream, turning wheels of industry, and a community asset.



Plympton is bounded by Kingston on the northeast, Carver on the southeast, Middleborough on the southwest, and Halifax on the northwest. The town is thirty miles southeast of Boston and was some forty years ago best known as the town which contained Silver Lake Grove, a beautiful place for holding picnics, outings and sporting events. The grove comprised about twenty-seven acres of towering pines, the whole area carpeted with pine needles and presenting a most inviting and suitable place for the celebrations conducted there on holidays and at various other times. The grove was owned by the Old Colony Railroad Company and excursions were run from Boston whenever gala days called out the traveling public. The explosion of a small steamboat on Silver Lake on one of these occasions and an accident to one of the excursion trains filled with Boston people returning from the grove on another occasion, were reasons for the place losing its popularity.

A generation ago the railroad company converted the tall pines into logs and fire wood, removed the bowling alleys and other pleasure-making appurtenances, and its connection with the pleasures of the people of Boston have since had only one link, a mammoth ice house in which is harvested chilling material, forwarded by freight to the "Hub." So, while the people of Boston no longer go to Silver Lake for their pleasure, Silver Lake goes to them, and still distributes health and comfort.

The railroad accident referred to was on October 8, 1878. There was a boat race at Silver Lake, and on the return trip from Boston, the excursion train carrying many Boston sportsmen, was wrecked at Wollaston. Nineteen were killed and fifty injured. Among the killed was Patsey Reagan, one of the oarsmen, who raced that day.

**Election Held No Contests**—The New England town meeting is an institution which has brought about good government since the Pilgrims adopted the method but it has not always been without its contests and "town meeting oratory," sometimes of a lurid hue and much given to personalities. The town meeting which was held at the Plympton Town Hall, March 6, 1927, however, passed off without a contest. All the town officials were elected or reelected without competition.

At the meeting the following were given the unanimous endorsement of their fellow-townsmen: Selectman for three years, Minot P. Bradford; town clerk, John S. Robbins; town treasurer, Minot P. Bradford; tax collector, Zina E. Sherman; highway surveyor, Lewis E. Billings; assessor for three years, Martin W. Keevey; tree warden, Clifton A. Bricknell; school committee for three years, Mrs. Hope Keevey; trustee of the public library for three years, Roy L.

Keith; constables, Lewis E. Billings and Arthur Lobdell; auditor, Alfred Bonney.

**Two Living George Washingtons** — On February 22, 1927, two Plympton veterans of the Civil War, both born February 22, 1843, and both named George Washington, observed their eighty-fourth birthdays. George Washington Thomas, born in Plympton in the same house in which he still lived and which was his home the greater part of his life, was one of the "Boys of '61" who enlisted in Company G, Thirty-eighth Massachusetts Infantry, under command of Captain Charles C. Doten of Plymouth, at the first call for volunteers; and George Washington Lewis, born in New York, a volunteer, with the minute-men in Company C, Tenth Rhode Island Volunteer Infantry. He had made his home in Plympton since 1914. Both were members of the Grand Army of the Republic.

**Some Town Statistics**—The town of Plympton is one of the small members of the Plymouth County family, having only one hundred and fifty-six male residents above the age of twenty years, and eighty children enrolled in the schools. The appropriation for schools is \$13,000. The Public Library has about 3,300 books.

There are 9,025 acres of land in Plympton, according to the assessors' records, and the number of dwellings is one hundred and ninety-four. There are four hundred and twenty persons assessed on property and of this number one hundred and ninety-two are residents and one hundred and sixty-eight residents.

Poultry raising, as well as agriculture in general, are important industries in Plympton.

Elsewhere in this volume is a story of Deborah Sampson who enlisted from Plympton and served in the Revolutionary Army. The cause of independence was constantly and earnestly supported by the town, meetings being frequent to raise money and men. At a meeting held May 25, 1776, the town voted unanimously "independence of Great Britain."

In the Civil War, under several calls made by the government, the town was credited with eighty-two enlistments of three-years' men, thirteen nine-months' men, and four men in the naval service. Ninety residents of the town volunteered and, of this number, fifteen were killed in battle or died in service. Many Plympton men served in Company H, Third Massachusetts Volunteers.

There was the same patriotic response in the Spanish War and again in the World War. In the latter John F. Shaw gave his life and the Shaw school was named in his honor.

**Early Settlers and Industries**—Before the incorporation of the town



of Plympton it was called the Western Precinct of Plymouth. The Indian name was Wenatuxet. The territory was incorporated as a precinct on November 26, 1695, "for the setting up of the worship of God, and the support of a learned and orthodox ministry," and Rev. Isaac Cushman began to preach to the inhabitants of the precinct the same year. He was ordained in 1698 and held the ministry for thirty-seven years. Before the precinct was incorporated, the first settlers attended church at Plymouth, and generally had to walk. Settlements were made in Plympton as early as 1680, and probably some years earlier. Some of the first settlers were John Bryant, who came from Scituate and settled near John Bryant, son of John Bryant, of Plymouth; Stephen Bryant, Isaac King, William Bonney, William Churchill, Thomas, Elkanah, and Eleazer Cushman, brothers of the Rev. Isaac Cushman; Benjamin Soule; Joseph King, and Nathaniel Harlow.

Plympton was incorporated as a town June 4, 1707. It then included the town of Carver, about three-quarters of Halifax, and a strip of Kingston. The territory of the town was afterwards, of course, reduced, by the incorporation of Kingston, in 1726; of Halifax in 1734; and of Carver in 1790. The census of 1866 listed the town as having 924 inhabitants.

A few rudely constructed mills were built by the first settlers. The first grist-mill was erected by Adam Wright soon after he settled here. The water wheel, with an upright shaft, turned horizontally and the millstone was attached to the upper end of the shaft and turned no oftener than the water wheel did. The mill was called a gig mill and ground four or five bushels a day, but as the inhabitants increased, it was found to be insufficient to meet their wants, and the owner built another mill, on a different construction.

Iron works were started in Plympton about the year 1720. Two forges were erected, one being partly owned by Joseph Scott, of Boston. Scott was a Tory and during the Revolutionary War the town took possession of his property and the forge was fitted up and used to make cannon shot. After the Revolution, for a period of twenty-five years, the water power of the town was not much employed except in sawing lumber and grinding grain, and manufacturing was confined chiefly to the domestic purposes of the inhabitants. But the War of 1812, by stopping the importation of foreign goods, gave manufacturing a start, and in that year a cotton factory was built, and during the fifteen years succeeding 1812, a woolen factory and rolling-mill, and factories for the manufacture of cut nails were also built.

Rev. Jonathan Parker was the second minister of Plympton. He was the son of Judge Daniel Parker, of Barnstable, and was ordained as colleague with Rev. Isaac Cushman in 1731, preaching for forty-four years.

Dr. Caleb Loring was the first physician who settled in Plympton. He came from Hull in 1703 and bought a farm in the north part of the town.

### ROCHESTER

Rochester was one of the largest towns territorially in Plymouth County up to April 9, 1836, when a part was annexed to Fairhaven and bounds established. Since that time sections have been taken away and established other towns or parts of towns. Previous to the date mentioned the township contained about sixty square miles, the principal industry was making salt from sea water and about sixty merchant and coasting vessels were owned in the town. The present area is 18,546 acres and, in 1926, there were three hundred and fifty-two male residents above the age of twenty years. There were three hundred and seventy-five dwellings and the valuation of the town was \$1,211,399.

A part of Rochester was established as the town of Marion, May 14, 1852. Another part was established as the town of Mattapoisett, May 20, 1857.

Rochester has five grade schools with an enrollment of two hundred and twelve pupils. Those attending high school go to the Wareham High School by arrangement with that town, the town of Rochester paying tuition and transportation.

**Town Sold by King Philip**—A sketch or draught made by King Philip in 1668 is preserved in the records of Plymouth Colony. The land described seems to fall within Rochester, on the seashore.

This may inform the honorable court, that I, Philip, am willing to sell the land within this draught, but the Indians that are upon it may live upon it still; but the land that is mine may be sold, and Watashpoo is of the same mind. I have put down all the principal names of the land we are now willing should be sold.

From Pacanaukett, the 24th  
of the month, 1668.

Philip: P: his mark.

Know all men by these presents, that Philip has given power unto Watashpoo and Sampson and their brethren, to hold and to make sale of to whom they will, by my consent, etc. etc. Witness my hand that I give it to them.

John Sassamon is a witness.

The mark P of Philip, 1668.

**First Service On Ministers' Rock**—Rochester, called by the Indians Menchoisett, was settled by persons from Scituate, Marshfield, Plymouth and Sandwich, who, in 1638, obtained a grant from the Provincial Court at Plymouth "to locate a township and organize a religious Society in Sippican," an Indian locality near the head of Buzzards Bay. They named the settlement Rochester, from the town of that



name in Kent County, England, whence many of them emigrated. These settlers did not, however, actually take up their residence in Rochester until 1651, when Rev. Samuel Arnold, John and Samuel Hammond, Moses and Aaron Barlow, Samuel White, and others, established themselves and erected their church in that part of the present town of Marion, known as Little Neck.

Tradition is that until their church was done, they worshipped upon and around a large flat rock, since known as Ministers' Rock. About this time a few families from the old town of Dartmouth, now Acushnet, who were friendly to the Indians in this vicinity, came and built a village between the Indian settlements of Sippican and Mattapoisett. Here lived an old chief by name Totosin, a friend of King Philip, who frequently visited here.

Radiating from these centers the population spread to the North and West, making the next village at Rochester proper. Here the first corn-mill in this part of the county was erected by the town in 1704, attended by Peter Blackmer, who was appointed to that office as well as that of town clerk. Each year people settled in the villages from Boston, Salem, and Plymouth, and in 1709 Rev. Timothy Ruggles was ordained the first minister. In 1733 the settlers in Mattapoisett were set off as a distinct parish, under the pastoral care of Rev. Ivory Hovey.

Still another religious society in the North Village, or Snippatuit, was formed in 1748, under the ministry of Rev. Thomas West. These four precincts agreed in 1670 to hold their town meetings in the central village, thereafter to be known as Rochester town, the other villages retaining their Indian names. In 1685 the town was incorporated by the Provincial Court.

In 1775 Rochester voted to sustain the Continental Congress whenever they might see fit to withdraw their allegiance from the crown, and in the succeeding struggle for independence, this town furnished more men in proportion to territory or inhabitants than any other town in the Old Colony.

In 1816 the population of the entire town was 2,800, and in that same year the yellow fever made fearful ravages in the village of Mattapoisett, and the western part of the central village.

Of the volunteers in the Civil War four were killed in battle, one died on board the receiving ship, three died in hospitals, and one died at home of disease contracted in service.

### ROCKLAND

Until March 9, 1874, Rockland was a part of Abington, hence the early history of the two towns as they are now incorporated was identical. During more than half a century, however, Rockland has main-

tained an independent and prosperous existence. March 23, 1878, bounds between Rockland and Hanover were established and part of each town was annexed to the other town. Since that date the town fences have remained the same and the population inside has occupied itself diligently in making the town one of the energetic members of the Plymouth County family.

The area of the town consists of 5,831 acres, the number of dwellings, according to the annual report of the assessors in 1926, 1,690; and the number of residents twenty years of age or older, 2,396. The running expenses of the town are a trifle short of \$300,000, although the total tax collections, including the town's share in the State and county taxes and fire prevention tax amounted in 1926 to \$324,510.

Rockland presents to the casual visitor a well-kept, well governed, neat and prosperous appearance, and all of these things are found to be true upon investigation. Much interest is taken in educational matters and at the time of this writing there are two hundred and twenty-five pupils of the Junior High classes holding afternoon sessions at the high school building, waiting for the town to build a new high school building for both High and Junior High pupils.

A new fire station and better health conditions are problems under present consideration. The rock and clay formation of the soil of Rockland makes proper drainage a difficult matter. A plan of sewerage system was adopted in 1911 and a special act of the Legislature authorized the town to borrow outside the debt limit and install a system.

In 1926, seventy-five marriages, one hundred and thirty births and one hundred and twenty-nine deaths were registered in Rockland.

The town has several parks and playgrounds and a sterling citizen who was tireless in the acquiring and developing of the parks was the late Judge George W. Kelley who passed away in 1926. He was a member of the park commission and, to quote from the report of the park commissioners, "Every inch of Memorial Park was hallowed ground to him. . . . He was intensely interested in creating a memorial to those who had made the supreme sacrifice in the making of the history of our country and believed that we could not do enough to show our appreciation of all that our soldiers and sailors, both living and dead, had done for our welfare."

Work was begun in 1925 in preparation for the soldiers' memorial, on the north side of Goddard Avenue. There is to be a bronze memorial at the centre with three bronze tablets, one bearing the names of the unreturned for each of the three wars. The monument will be surrounded by lawns dotted with trees in groups of three, one group for each unreturned soldier, each group bearing a marker with the name of the soldier in whose memory it was planted, making about one hundred and forty trees in all.





CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH, MIDDLEBORO



MEMORIAL LIBRARY, ROCKLAND





There are small parks in various parts of the town, affording recreation centres with playground equipment and supervision. The present park commissioners are B. L. Cushing, Thomas A. Reardon and Harry Fihelly, the latter having been elected at a joint meeting of the park commissioners and selectmen to fill the vacancy caused by the death of the late Judge Kelley.

Rockland has a public library, established forty-nine years ago. The number of books in the library, December 31, 1926, was 16,146. The average daily circulation for that year was one hundred and sixty-three.

The school department is maintained at an annual expenditure of about \$114,000. There were in 1927 two brick buildings and nine wooden buildings in commission, with the Jefferson Building a model edifice, newly erected, accommodating one hundred and twenty pupils. This building was erected in memory of Thomas Jefferson who wrote the Declaration of Independence. The building was begun in 1926 on the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of his birth. The plan is to gradually do away with all the wooden and frame school buildings and have new ones, like the Jefferson building, as nearly fireproof as possible.

The high school enrollment for 1926 numbered three hundred and sixty-five. The total number of pupils in the schools numbered 1,425.

Rockland is prominent industrially, including shoemaking, some of the most prosperous shoe manufacturing firms of the county having their locations in the town. One of them is the E. T. Wright Company. Alfred W. Donovan, president of that company and a member of the New England Council, is capable of speaking with authority concerning the shoe industry in this part of the country. In an article which he wrote for the Brockton and South Shore Magazine in July, 1927, he stated: "New England is the cradle, the home, the centre of the shoe industry. Shoes are made all over New England but very few realize that the output of the city of Boston alone is over 50,000 pairs daily, while more good shoes are made in Brockton and the South Shore District than anywhere else in the world. With this background, experience and ideals, plus quality and inherited craftsmanship, I feel the supremacy of New England industrially is secure for years to come. The self complacency as the result of maturity has vanished. The new New England spirit is at the helm. . . . The span of mass production and the greatest New England prosperity has been since 1900."

**Separation from Abington in 1874**—Before the name Rockland was given to the town in 1874, two-fifths of the town of Abington composed the industrious village of East Abington, as it was called. Ezekiel R. Stydley was a member of the board of selectmen of Abington

before the separation and, at the first town meeting of Rockland, was elected town clerk, treasurer and collector. He was one of the early diplomats to whom both towns owe much gratitude. Rockland started with a population of a little over 4,000. The town valuation was about \$1,900,000. The first child born in Rockland was George Rockland Hunt, son of Samuel A. and Mary E. (Tucker) Hunt, and his advent into the world came the day after the incorporation of the town.

The shoe business in which all this section is engaged began in Rockland in 1793, when Captain Thomas Hunt located in East Abington (Rockland) near the Weymouth line. He learned shoemaking of a Mr. Webb in Quincy, returned and taught his six brothers and others in the vicinity. As fast as they made shoes for sale, they carried them to Boston on horseback, returning with another stock of leather. This was the beginning of Rockland's principal industry but was not its first industry.

The first industry was a sawmill erected in 1703 by one of the original proprietors from Hingham named Thaxter. There was a small house west of the mill in which lived a slave who tended the mill. The first frame house was built a few rods south on what is now known as East Water Street.

From 1820 to 1835 Loud & Hunt manufactured shoes extensively. The New Orleans market became an extensive one and several firms in this vicinity took advantage of it. A profitable trade sprang up in Cuba and Abner Curtis who succeeded Loud & Hunt specialized in making shoes for that island. One of the first shoe factories to employ steam power was the Jenkins Lane factory, which was eighty feet long and half as wide, four stories high and in which were employed seventy-five hands.

From these small beginnings Rockland has forged ahead in the shoe industry wonderfully. The largest firms engaged in the industry at present started insignificant in appearance but with determination and knowledge to make their ventures grow. The E. T. Wright Company started in its original shop which measured twelve by twelve feet. This was as late as 1875, when Mr. Wright started with the assistance of his wife and father.

The Hurley Brothers Company started at No. 12 Foundry Street, Brockton, in 1893, in a room eight by twelve feet. The firm moved to Rockland in 1900, manufactured high grade shoes and made the first women's shoes ever manufactured in the town.

**Pioneer Probation Advocates**—The probation system in Massachusetts which spread to nearly all the States in the Union, owes much to the late Judge George W. Kelley and the late Edwin Mulready, two Rockland men. Mr. Mulready was appointed probation officer for the





HIGH SCHOOL, ROCKLAND



UNION STREET, ROCKLAND





Southeastern Massachusetts district for Plymouth and Norfolk counties in November, 1898. In 1901, he was appointed deputy probation commissioner and became secretary of the Massachusetts Probation Commission, having charge of all the probation offices of the State, with offices in Boston. He was secretary-treasurer of the Massachusetts branch of the American Institute of Criminal Law and Criminology.

The probation system started in Massachusetts in 1891. Mr. Mulready was largely responsible for its adoption in many other States, until nearly all copied the Massachusetts probation laws. Then the probation system was adopted by thirty-seven countries at a meeting of the Prison Congress held in Washington, District of Columbia, in 1912.

Judge George W. Kelley succeeded Judge Jesse N. Keith as judge of the Second District Court, December 12, 1883. He was one of the first to put the probation system into practice in his court. He was much interested in the preparation of this history and was a member of the advisory board, but passed away, in 1927, when the work was hardly started.

### SCITUATE

Scituate is one of the Plymouth County towns which is possessed of about the same number of inhabitants at present as at the time of the Civil War. Its growth has not been in the number of people but it has kept up-to-date, one of the unusually attractive towns on the South Shore, a favorite resort for vacationists in the summer and a good town in which to live at any time. According to the census of 1865, the population numbered 2,269. The population for 1925 was 2,713. The town is a part of the Sixteenth Congressional District, the First Councillor District, Norfolk and Plymouth Senatorial District, Second Plymouth Representative District. It is in the Norfolk-Plymouth District of the Income Tax Division.

There were 1,029 polls assessed in 1926 which shows there was that number of male residents twenty years of age and older. The non-residents outnumber the residents in listing property owners, owing to the large number of summer homes for those whose legal residence is elsewhere. The resident taxpayers number 1,293 and the non-resident taxpayers 1,380.

The value of the assessed property in 1926 was \$11,792,169, the real estate being \$10,383,785. The number of acres of land was 9,696 and the number of dwelling houses 2,209. The estimated expenses for 1927 were \$341,848. The financial condition of the town is excellent and, at the annual town meeting in March, 1927, the voters for the first time

in a long period, defeated all sections carrying long-term serial notes, and the spirit prevailed to adopt a pay-as-you-go policy.

For a long time there have been inadequate facilities in the municipal building to meet the needs of the various departments, in the opinion of the selectmen, and for two years they had advocated a new building. At the town meeting in March, 1927, the article calling for a \$90,000 building was defeated.

The enrollment in the public schools of Scituate in 1926 numbered five hundred and seventeen, of which the grade schools had three hundred and ninety-four and the high school one hundred and twenty-three. For several years past private individuals or agencies at the north end of the town have provided an evening school for groups of foreign-born residents, many of whom have become citizens after their courses. It is likely that the work will be incorporated as a part of the public school system. The annual expenses of the school department are approximately \$67,000.

**Miles of Charming Beaches**—Some of the handsomest summer homes on the South Shore are located at North Scituate; and included in the summer population are many noted persons. There is another Scituate beach which is especially beautiful but until the summer of 1927, has been considered exclusive, as prohibitive signs were numerous. That is the section known as Humarock. The attitude of some of the property owners at Humarock led to the selectmen sending a painter to paint out all such misleading signs and the public was informed that Humarock was not a private beach but open to the world, under restrictions similar to those governing the use of any beach. The conviction that the attitude of exclusiveness assumed by some of the summer residents was injuring the reputation of Scituate as an open-hearted town led to officially putting an end to the apparent snobbishness.

The beaches in Scituate help make it an altogether charming town, in harmony with the cordial attitude of the townspeople.

One of the assets of the town of Scituate is its eight miles of seacoast, with a harbor formed by Cedar Point on the northeast, and Crow Point on the southeast. There is a lighthouse at Cedar Point. The town is bounded on the north by Cohasset, on the east by the ocean, on the south by Marshfield and Norwell and on the west by Norwell. There is a brook with especially cold spring water running into the ocean and this "cold brook" was called by the Indians Satuit, which was corrupted into the name Scituate when the town was incorporated October 5, 1636. The town is in the northeast part of Plymouth County, twenty-five miles southeast of Boston. The North River separates Scituate from Marshfield and this stream formerly had numerous busy



shipyards in connection with it. Considerable fishing was carried on from Scituate Harbor in days gone by, and coasting trade was a source of employment and profit.

The principal street of the town is called Kent Street, which serves as a reminder that the first comers were Englishmen from Kent, England. They arrived in 1628. Timothy Hatherly associated himself with Robert Stetson and Joseph Tilden in building a sawmill on Third Herring Brook in 1656, which was one of the first sawmills in the colony. The mill was burned by the Indians May 20, 1676, when they made their savage visitation to Scituate in King Philip's War and burned no less than nineteen houses and barns.

One of the industries in which Scituate has always had the lead is gathering sea moss from the rocks in the vicinity, curing it on the shore and marketing it to be made into food products which are much in demand.

Scituate, like many of the towns in Plymouth Colony, had been nearly depopulated of natives by the smallpox a few years before the English made a permanent settlement on this coast. These natives were the Matakeesetts and controlled by the chief or sachem of the Massachusetts.

The name of the town is the aboriginal name, derived from the brook that falls into the harbor. It was called in the earliest records in 1633 Satuit; shortly after it was written Seteat, then Cittewat, and about 1640, the present name of Scituate was settled. The settlers at Scituate extinguished the Indian title by purchase as by deed dated June, 1653, from the chief of the Matakeesetts, signed by Josias Wampatuck and given to Mr. Timothy Hatherly, Mr. James Cudworth, Mr. Joseph Tilden, Humphrey Turner, William Hatch, John Hoar, and James Torrey, for the proper use of the inhabitants of the town of Scituate. Prior to 1640 there was a deed given which was subsequently destroyed. In the year 1727, a part of Scituate was incorporated by the name of Hanover.

In 1849 the southern part was incorporated by the name of South Scituate, since named Norwell.

The following is a list of the first freeman in Scituate, from 1633 to 1649: Mr. William Gilson, Anthony Annable, Humphrey Turner, William Hatch, Henry Cobb, Samuel House, Mr. James Cudworth, Isaac Robinson, Samuel Fuller, John Cooper, Henry Rowley, George Kendrick, Edward Foster, George Lewis, Bernard Lombard, Mr. John Lothrop, Henry Bourne, Thomas Besbedge, Samuel Hickley, John Lewis, Richard Sillis, Edward Fitzrandle, Robert Linnet, John Williams, Thomas Dimmack, John Twisden, Thomas Chambers, John Hewes, Charles Chauncey, William Parker, Walter Woodworth, Tim-

othy Hatherly, William Caseley, Edward Eddenden, Thomas Clapp, Edward Jenkins, Isaac Stedman, John Allen.

Charles Chauncey was minister of the first church of Scituate, for thirteen years, from 1641 to 1654, when he was chosen president of Harvard College.

The first church, Unitarian, in Scituate, was regularly gathered in January, 1634. Some of the earlier pastors were: Giles Saxton, 1631 to 1634; Rev. John Lathrop, ordained 1634; Rev. Charles Chauncey, 1641; Rev. Henry Dunster, 1659; Rev. Nicholas Baker, 1660.

The Baptist Society was formed in 1825, the church built the same year and dedicated August 17th.

The First Trinitarian was formed 1825, with a church built in 1826 and dedicated November 16th.

The Methodist Episcopal Church was formed in 1825, and the edifice built in 1826.

In the early days, going to church was a serious matter, and staying away still more serious. There were punishments galore likely to be visited upon one, whichever course he pursued. An early resident of Scituate named Bryant entered the church after the service had begun. Parson Wetherell's eagle eye was upon him instantly and he interrupted himself to say: "Neighbor Bryant, it is to your reproach that you have disturbed the worship by entering late, living as you do within a mile of this place; and especially so since here is Goody Barstow, who has milked seven cows, made a cheese, and walked five miles to the house of God in good season." Evidently it was less sinful to make a cheese on the Sabbath than to enter the meeting-house a trifle late.

In addition to Samuel Woodworth, author of "The Old Oaken Bucket," who was born in Scituate in 1785, the town has been the birthplace of Rev. Thomas Clap, president of Yale University; William Cushing, LL. D., associate justice of the United States Supreme Court until his death, September 13, 1810; Samuel Southworth, eminent portrait painter; Rev. Charles Turner Torrey, advocate of human freedom, born here in 1813, and died in prison in Baltimore May 9, 1846; Rev. Charles Chauncey, chosen president of Harvard College in 1653; Samuel Deane, who wrote a history of Scituate, among his writings, in 1831, and others of contemporary fame.

## WAREHAM

The town of Wareham is situated at the head of Buzzards Bay and is noted for many interesting things, historically and otherwise. It includes in the township Onset, Point Independence, the village of Buzzards Bay and other localities famous as shore resorts. Some handsome and valuable summer homes have been erected in Wareham in



recent years. The number of non-residents who are assessed for property taxes is 2,088. The number of residents assessed on property is 1,976, the balance being on the side of non-residents, as is the case in numerous instances where towns have a large summer population during the vacation season which migrates elsewhere when the school bells begin to ring.

The total valuation of the town of Wareham April 1, 1926, was \$11,768,735. The real estate valuation was \$9,435,485, and the number of acres of land assessed 20,603. The number of dwelling houses was 3,184. There were 1,828 male residents twenty years or more of age. The town appropriations totalled \$252,603. These figures give some idea of the size and importance of a town which has given a good account of itself since the days it was sold by the Indians to the town of Plymouth and later transferred to town proprietors, largely from Hingham.

It is always interesting, when one views such handsome buildings, parks and playgrounds as the tourist encounters in Wareham to know the value of the public property. It is \$357,450 in real estate and \$40,100 in personal property. The Commonwealth of Massachusetts owns an experiment station, engine house, upland and cranberry bog, the total value of which is \$8,875. The Wareham Fire District has a fire station, pumping station, stand pipe and land valued at \$57,100. The Onset Fire District has a hook and ladder building, stand pipe, office building, store house, hose house, pumping plant and land, totalling \$85,150, and the church, charitable and literary societies have property which inventories \$168,405. Some idea of the tourist business is shown in the fact that there are nineteen innholders and the number of common victuallers was, in 1926, seventy-five.

In the town in 1926 the total number of marriages was seventy-two, the births numbered one hundred and thirteen and the deaths eighty-nine.

There are several small parks in the town and more will undoubtedly be added in the near future. A recent bequest to the town was under the will of Albert A. Ball, giving \$10,000 for the improvement of the parks at Onset. The town maintains a Red Cross Life Saving Station and life guards on the beaches at Wareham and Onset and conducts a recreational beach program for the inhabitants, under supervision of the Red Cross life-saving corps.

There are approximately 1,300 children of school age in the town and four hundred and thirty-one are transported at the town's expense to the various schools. There are sixty-five pupils in the Wareham High School from surrounding towns who pay tuition fees amounting to \$6,000. The grade schools also accommodate a few pupils from other

towns, paying \$800 in tuition fees. The school appropriation for 1927 was \$106,300.

One of the most interesting acts of the town meeting in March, 1927, was voting \$600 for the encouragement of the shell fisheries. It was asserted that that amount, paid to gather seed of scallops and distribute them down the bay would mean a greatly increased yield in 1928. The plan was privately carried through a few years ago and resulted in greatly increased profits to the fishermen.

The town has been lighted for several years by a privately owned company and a municipal plant is under consideration, with a committee appointed by the town to make investigations.

A water system was installed early in 1927 to serve Cromesett Park, one of the rapidly growing summer resorts, the supply coming from artesian wells.

Among the large corporations doing business in Wareham are the New Bedford and Agawam Finishing Company at East Wareham, the largest taxpayer in 1926; the Tremont Nail Company, Henry S. Brown Corporation, United Cape Cod Cranberry Company, Cape Cod Ship-building Corporation, Maple Springs Company, and Standard Horse-shoe Company.

**Old Town Hearse Sold as Relic**—In earlier days all towns in this vicinity owned a town hearse, which was available for use whenever a citizen of the town passed away. Until last March the old Wareham hearse, unused for many years, reposed in a shed at the Agawam Cemetery. It was said to be two hundred years old, and was a one-horse rig, painted gray. It was purchased to add to the collection of old vehicles owned by Henry Ford.

**Veteran Court Crier**—Deputy Sheriff James W. Hurley of this town has called "Hear ye, hear ye—" and the rest of the formal warning as court crier in Plymouth County so many years that he has outlived every judge, lawyer, court clerk or officer who was attached to the Plymouth County bar when he received his first appointment in 1882. In 1927 Court Crier Hurley was seventy-eight years of age and still on the job.

**New Industry Making Steel Castings**—In the summer of 1927 the United Shoe Machinery Corporation sold the Tremont steel mill at West Wareham to the Washington Steel Company of Washington, Pennsylvania, a concern organized early in 1927. The Tremont mill will be used for manufacturing special steels and electric steel castings.

About one hundred and twenty acres of land, a hydro-electric plant, three open hearth furnaces with a total capacity of one hundred and fifty tons of steel per day, a blooming mill and other equipment were included in the sale. The concern plans to put out a line of charcoal

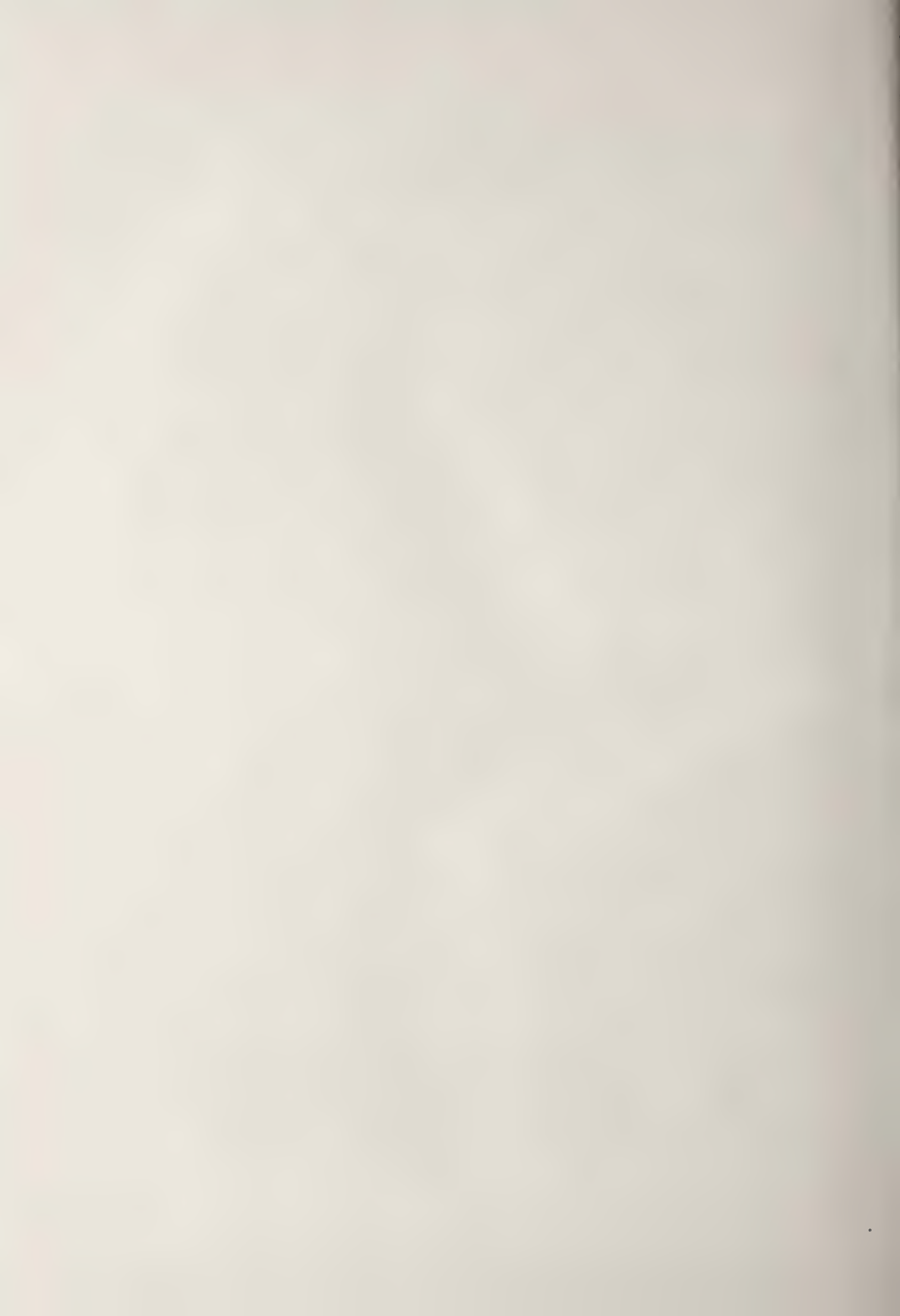




MAIN STREET, WAREHAM



GEORGE OAKES TOBEY, JR., MEMORIAL LIBRARY, WAREHAM





iron sheets, tin plate and special alloy sheets; also a non-corroding and rust resisting steel under a special process controlled by the company.

**Search for Pirates' Gold**—There are several islands in Onset Bay which belong to Plymouth County, as they are parts of the town of Wareham. The largest is Onset Island which contains eight acres, situated near the southerly point of Long Neck. This island is supposed, according to tradition, to have been a burial place for pirates' gold and a generation or two ago there were still living men who, when boys, had made attempts to unearth some of this hidden treasure.

There was a tradition concerning the spot where a part of the loot was carefully hidden, watched over by the devil, as the gold had been obtained in an evil manner. According to tradition those who dug for it must utter no word if they hoped for success. On one occasion, so the story goes, a group of boys met there by appointment one dark and stormy night, and succeeded in uncovering the top of a pirate's treasure chest. This excited one of the number and, in his zeal for quick and effective work, he struck a companion with his pick-axe. The companion uttered an oath and immediately the treasure chest sank from view and, dig as rapidly as they could, the young men could not again strike it with their implements.

Wickett's Island, containing five acres, is off shore from the once celebrated Onset Camp Ground, and derived its name from an Indian who retained possession of it long after most of the land in that vicinity had gone into the possession of the white men.

Hog Island, Little Bird Island and other smaller islands are used at times for camping purposes or in shooting wild fowl, and all add to the picturesque appearance of a section of Plymouth County which is most beautiful.

**Agawam Purchase Laid Out as a Separate Nation**—The town of Wareham is about sixteen miles south of Plymouth, which brings it fifty miles from Boston. Originally it was a part of Plymouth and a part of Rochester, which joins it on the west. That part which formerly belonged to Plymouth was called Agawam Purchase. Wareham was incorporated in 1739 and consisted of the two tracts mentioned until 1827 when Tihonet, a locality partly in Plymouth and partly in Carver was added, to make up the town of Wareham as it exists at present.

Herring fishery rights, ministry lands and church interests figured largely in many of the affairs in the early history of all localities in this section, including the Agawam Purchase. In 1682 the town of Plymouth wanted a new meeting-house and the inhabitants decided that the easiest way to pay for it was to sell Agawam, which had been purchased

from the Indians in 1666 "in consideration of the full and just sum of twenty-four pounds and ten shillings."

The deed, conferring title to this land, extending from an arm of the sea which connects the head of the bay with Buzzards Bay, to the rising of Red Brook, crossing White Island Pond and Oliver's Neck Bay, is still on record at the Plymouth Registry of Deeds.

Agawam Purchase was laid out by the first proprietors as though it were a separate nation. There was a water privilege set apart for the use of the community with a site marked for a mill on the Agawam River, a graveyard, pound for restraining runaway domestic animals, lots of land for the use of the ministry, providing for a meeting-house and schoolhouse. Every municipality in those days had its whipping post and pillory, and undoubtedly these improvements would have been added in carrying out the scheme of things if the town of Plymouth had not purchased the village from the proprietors and provided for jurisdiction of the territory.

The original proprietors of Agawam laid it out with a main road through the centre, running east and west and crossing five brooks. Until a generation ago, when the keeping of sheep in Plymouth County—and largely in Massachusetts—was for the most part given up, there was a tract of land on the north side of this main road, used as a sheep common. Anyone possessing sheep was allowed to pasture them on that land, which contained over 5,000 acres of light, sandy soil on which grew vegetation so meagre that other domestic animals found it poor pasturage, but sheep were able to crop the grass so closely that the sheep owners were glad to be allowed to use it.

**How Name of Tihonet Originated—**Tihonet is a part of Wareham which many people believe possesses an Indian name and some have wondered what the name signifies. An early settler had a small land right in that vicinity and was accustomed to cut timber wherever he found that which would be most marketable, regardless of whatever rights might belong to someone else, according to the tradition.

Another man who was aware that valuable timber came from that section sought to find who owned it, and wanted to take a look at the wood lots to satisfy his curiosity concerning their value and the facilities for hauling the logs to mill when they were cut. Accordingly he engaged the early settler to show him around in the vicinity. Whenever he saw an especially valuable area he asked the guide who owned it and the invariable reply was: "I own it." Later, when asked where he had spent the day, he said "At I—Own—It," and the name has stuck ever since, with a slight variation in the spelling.

Through Tihonet flows the Wankinco River, on the banks of which Daniel Hunt built a forge and a sawmill many years ago, putting them





CHURCH OF THE GOOD SHEPHERD, EPISCOPAL, WAREHAM





a mile apart. The forge and mill eventually passed into the hands of the Wareham Iron Company and this company petitioned the Legislature to have Tihonet become a part of Wareham. It had previously been owned jointly by Plymouth and Carver. The Legislature passed an act in 1827, in accordance with the prayer of the petitioners. An attempt had been made to have the separation from Plymouth accomplished as early as 1773, which is shown by a record under May 10, 1773, which reads: "Voted not to request Plymouth to set off Tihonet to Wareham."

There was considerable opposition to the move to have Wareham acquire Tihonet in 1827. Among the opponents was Benjamin Bourne, Esq., who insisted that his vote in opposition be entered upon the records. The Wareham Iron Company, however, had the greater influence as the company contemplated carrying on an industry which would furnish considerable employment to those in that vicinity. The water privileges in the Wankinco River constituted the only natural assets the area possessed. There is a fall of twenty-eight feet at Tihonet Dam. The river is fed by spring brooks flowing into it from either side.

**Alewives Saved for Plymouth**—The act of the incorporation of the town of Wareham bears the date of July 6, 1739, and it provided that the "inhabitants be and hereby are vested with all the Powers, Privileges and Immunities that the Inhabitants of other Towns in this Province are or ought by law to be vested with, Saving that the Privilege of Catching Alewives be and remain as heretofore." At that time there was a law in force, by an act of 1692, which allowed towns having more than thirty and less than forty voters to do as they preferred about sending a representative to the General Court. This privilege the town did not exercise for forty years and so it is inferred that the voting population was less than forty and, perhaps, less than thirty during these two decades. In 1769, the town wished to be heard before the General Court and the record shows that they sent an agent and not a representative.

The first town meeting was held August 6, 1739, having been called by Edward Bumpus, upon authority from the General Court. He acted as moderator and town officers were elected, including: Selectmen and assessors, Jireh Swift, Jeremiah Bumpus and Jonathan Hunter; town clerk, Jonathan Hunter; treasurer, Jireh Swift; constables, John Bumpus, Jr., and Joshua Gibbs; surveyors of highways, Joseph Gifford, Isaac Hamblin and Jonathan Bumpus; tithing man, Henry Saunders; fenceviewers, Eneneazer Perry and John Ellis.

**Rallied to Defense of Marshfield**—At the time of the incorporation of Wareham, July 6, 1739, it is not known what its population was. At

that time every town containing forty qualified voters was entitled to a representative, but for forty years after incorporation, the town voted that they were not qualified to send, and when they wished to be heard at General Court, they sent an agent instead of a representative.

In the French War of 1757-58, Wareham sent nine men to assist in the capture of Cape Breton. Samuel Besse lost his life there. Five others joined the Northern army, to capture Canada, besides Jo. Joseph, Sol. Joseph and Jabez Wickett, three Indians who fought against the hostile Indians.

As early as January 18, 1773, a town meeting was held in Wareham to consider grievances of the Provinces under Great Britain. Captain Josiah Carver was moderator. In February, 1774, strong resolutions were adopted, insisting upon the rights of British freedom. In January, 1775, they voted to allow every minute-man 1s 4d per week and refused to make any tax under the King's authority, but to pay the Province tax already made to Dr. Andrew Mackie, with instructions that he keep it until the town should otherwise order. On March 17, they voted to purchase six guns for the town and instructed Nathan Bassett to put the other guns in repair and make bayonets for them.

About the time of the battle of Lexington, it was rumored that the King's troops were at Marshfield laying the country waste. Forty minute-men immediately left for Plymouth under the command of Captain Israel Fearing, Lieutenants Ebenezer Chubbuck and Barnabus Bates. According to a record of those times:

"Eight men served two months; eighteen enlisted for six months, and were stationed along shore. During their term of service they went to Nashuana, rowing themselves in two whale boats. Nine were in the army near Boston eight months, making thirty-six men sent into service the first year, from a town without voters enough to send a representative. In 1776, eighteen men enlisted, and in 1777, fourteen men enlisted for three years, or the war, eight men enlisted for two months to serve in Rhode Island, and in August, nearly every man in the militia went on the secret expedition to Newport.

"In September, 1777, the town voted 33 pounds for 100 pounds of powder, and in November, 100 pounds to supply the families of Continental soldiers with such articles as they needed. In September, 1778, the British burned the shipping craft at New Bedford, and the Wareham militia turned out under Major Israel Fearing, it afterwards being said that the work of these men was of great importance in stemming the havoc. Eighty-six different individuals did service in the army, thirteen of whom died.

"During the Revolutionary War the operations of our patriotic citizens were not confined to the land. Captain Barzilla Besse went out privateering under a commission from the State, in an armed sloop,



and took one prize. He, together with John Gibbs, and some others of his crew, left his vessel at Nantucket and joined Captain Dimmick of Falmouth, as volunteers, in a wood sloop borrowed at that place for the occasion, and running down towards the enemy's vessel, which was a shaving mill mounting six swivels. Dimmick was ordered to strike; he showed submission—but in running under her stern, he put his bowsprit over the enemy's taffrail, and calling upon his men, they sprang on board, killed the English captain, and took his vessel in a few minutes.

"Also a 10 gun sloop named the 'Hancock,' owned by John Carver, Nathan Bassett, and others, was fitted out from this place as a privateer, commanded by James Southard. The first cruise they went to the West Indies and took two prizes. The second cruise they took two Grand Bank fishermen, both brigs, and brought them into Wareham."

"The enemy took from our citizens the schooner 'Lion,' coming from the West Indies, with a load of salt, the schooner 'Desire' going to Brazil, and a sloop which was built for a privateer, and performed one unsuccessful cruise in that capacity, but was afterwards sent to Turks Island for salt, and was taken while returning."

**British Visit to Wareham in 1814**—Previous to the War of 1812, commerce flourished and many vessels were built at the Narrows. John Saunders was killed at the battle of New Orleans.

Thirteen sloops from Wareham were captured by the enemy, among them the sloop "Polly." Captain Barrows was taken on the 9th of June, 1814, off Westport. The captain ransomed her for \$200 and came home to get the money, leaving Moses Bumpus and James Miller with the British until his return.

The same day the sloop "Polly" was re-taken by a party fitted out from Westport; but the two young men, Bumpus and Miller, had been taken on board the brig-of-war "Nimrod," and by their aid, as was supposed, in a few days, she ran up the bay to West's Island. Here they landed and took Samuel Besse on board for a pilot, as he says, by force, and compelled him to pilot the brig up the Bay.

There was great excitement in Wareham, June 13, 1814, when the town was visited by British soldiers who did \$25,000 worth of damage and departed, promising to return and burn the entire town. Those left in defense of the town had no time to offer resistance, and were too few to have done more than kill a few of the enemy at best and have their entire number exterminated and the town burned in retaliation.

On that morning Ebenezer Bourne was at work about 9 o'clock when he saw a British vessel off Mattapoisett, standing up the bay, and come to anchor about four miles south of Bird Island Light. Immediately six barges, forming a line two abreast, put off from the

vessel, under lateen sail, steering for Wareham. Bourne had a boat moored at Crooked River. He put off in this boat, sailed to the lower end of the Neck, and notified the selectmen, who were in session. Major William Barrows was ordered to assemble men and guns, while others were sent to get the store of ammunition, which was in the custody of Wadsworth Crocker. A stranger on horseback was asked to spread the alarm and especially notify Captain Israel Fearing, who was ordered to call out his men and proceed to the east side of the Narrows.

The British landed about two hundred marines and the commanding officer entered into negotiations with William Fearing and Jonathan Reed, representing the town, by the terms of which the British agreed to spare private property. They, however, set fire to the cotton factory, took ammunition which they found at Captain Jeremiah Bumpus' house, set the house on fire, burned four schooners in the harbor, burned a new brig belonging to William Fearing, one of the men with whom they had made the treaty, claiming that the brig was built for a privateer; set fire to a brig and ship lying at the wharf and five sloops off shore. Then they took twelve men as hostages to prevent the others firing upon them, saying they would massacre the twelve men if a shot was fired. It was hard to restrain Captain Israel Fearing and his men who had assembled at the Narrows from firing on the enemy, especially as terms of the treaty had been violated, but they desisted on account of the hostages.

Besse was taken up and examined before a magistrate in New Bedford and acquitted. Miller and Bumpus were examined and committed to prison for further examination and trial; and after being imprisoned about three months, were acquitted, and both shipped on board of a privateer, where Bumpus was killed, and Miller lost a leg by a cannon ball. The whole damage done by the expedition, as estimated at the time, was \$25,000.

**Early Ministers, Schools and Industries**—The first settled minister was Rowland Thatcher, ordained in 1740. Among his early successors were Josiah Cotton, 1774; Noble Everett, 1784-1820; Daniel Hemmenway, 1821-1828; Samuel Nott, 1829.

The first school was held in 1741, and the first Temperance Society was formed in Wareham in 1824.

In 1742, Wareham sent out a colony of more than 100, which settled in Sharon, Connecticut.

The first machinery for the making of nails was introduced into the town in 1822.

The first cotton factory was built in 1812.

The first paper mill was built here in 1824 by Pardon Tabor.



During the Revolutionary War, when salt was in great demand, the people of Wareham manufactured great quantities of it by boiling the sea water in large kettles.

The last native Indians died about 1830. When their ancestors sold the land here, one of the rights reserved was that of cutting broomsticks and basket stuff.

**Wareham Raised Company in '61**—Wareham furnished three hundred and fifty men for the army and navy in the Civil War. Of this number, thirty-nine died in the service. The patriotism of Wareham expressed itself much in the same manner as it was expressed by every town in Massachusetts, more especially in Plymouth County. Wareham furnished a larger proportion for the navy than the inland towns, which was to be expected, as it was the home of so many mariners. Whether on land or sea the boys of Wareham performed valiant service. A few of them remain at this time, octogenarians who can look back to the days from '61 to '65 with remembrance of deeds well performed.

As early as April 27, 1861, it was evident that patriotic impulses would take the heads of families and sons supporting fatherless families or contributing to the support of aged parents from the town, and it would be necessary to provide a fund to be devoted to the families of those who volunteered their services in their country's cause. On that date an appropriation of \$1,000 was made by the town and the selectmen were authorized to pay out of the emergency fund, as needs might require.

At the same meeting it was voted to raise a company of sixty-four men, to be armed, equipped and uniformed at the expense of the town, that each volunteer be presented with a revolver, to be distributed by Lewis Kinney, who was made a committee to purchase them for the town.

Mindful of the visit to the town in the War of 1812 and the damage done by the British, it was voted at the same meeting referred to in the above paragraph, to form a military company of sixty-four persons for a coast guard. A committee, consisting of Darius Miller, Albert S. Hathaway and Addison Alden, was chosen to form the company and it was voted that men over sixty years of age be allowed to enlist in the coast guard, to uniform and equip themselves.

**Youth Again Ready for World War**—When the United States entered the World War, the young men, after the earliest opportunity, were called by selective draft. Wareham was ready with its quotas and the roll of honor is included, with other Plymouth County towns, elsewhere in this volume.

## WEST BRIDGEWATER

Passing through the beautiful town of West Bridgewater, a stranger is likely to have his attention attracted to an unusual building of ornate architecture, situated in the centre of the town, and ask what building it is. The answer will denote the age of the person, as older residents are likely to call it the Howard Collegiate Institute, a later generation the Howard Seminary, and still another the Howard High School. By these names the institution housed in this four-story building, surrounded by an attractive campus, has been called successively and, under whatever name, there has been a school held there continuously which has reflected much credit upon the town and carried out the intention of the generous founder, the late Benjamin B. Howard.

The school, housed in its handsome brick edifice, was opened October 2, 1883, an institution for girls and young women. The first principal was Miss Helen McGill, Ph. D. The donor, Captain Benjamin Beal Howard, a member of the famous Howard family which has always been prominent in the town for good citizenship, was born in the town of Bridgewater, in that part now called West Bridgewater, March 2, 1788. His ancestor, John Howard, the first of the Howards in Plymouth County, kept the first tavern, or "ordinary," in the town. Captain Howard kept the same tavern, the fifth generation to perform that public service, until the ancestral house was destroyed in 1838.

In his will appeared a clause giving to the town of West Bridgewater \$80,000, the income of which is to be used for the "establishment and support of a high school or seminary of learning to be called the Howard School." Ever since the school was founded it has grown in popularity, excellence and influence, as well as in the physical plant. There are at present several dormitories, and pupils come from all parts of the United States. The Howard High School for the boys and girls of West Bridgewater is conducted in connection with it.

Some of the most productive soil for farming in Plymouth County is located in West Bridgewater and several prosperous farms help furnish fruits and vegetables for Brockton and towns in the vicinity. The town is level, well watered, bounded on the north by Brockton, on the east by East Bridgewater, on the south by Bridgewater, and on the west by Easton in Bristol County.

West Bridgewater became a separate town February 16, 1822, previous to which date it was a part of Bridgewater and the central part of that ancient town. Soon after the incorporation of the town, an order of the court at Plymouth established a stone monument in the place where the Centre Tree formerly stood, marking the geographical



centre of Bridgewater. The bounds between West Bridgewater and North Bridgewater (now Brockton) were established January 26, 1825. In 1894 a part of West Bridgewater was annexed to Brockton. The present town has about 9,000 acres of land.

The Public Library was located in the Howard Collegiate Institute, as it was then called, when it was organized October 1, 1879. It is one of the present educational institutions of the town which is duly appreciated by the townspeople.

On the highway leading from Brockton to Cape Cod is the town square, in the centre of which is a handsome soldiers' monument. This was dedicated July 4, 1879. Near the centre, adjoining the campus of the Howard Seminary, is the First Church building. Captain Benjamin Beal Howard, who bequeathed \$80,000 for the establishment of the Howard Seminary, also bequeathed \$20,000, the income of which is applied to the support of Unitarian or liberal preaching in this church. The first meeting-house was erected in West Bridgewater about 1660 and was built of logs.

The Rev. James Keith was the first minister ordained in this town. This was in 1664, twelve years after the first settlement was made. It appears that they found it difficult to support a minister before this time. Mr. Keith was from Scotland, and was educated at Aberdeen. He came to Boston about 1662, and was introduced to the church at Bridgewater by Dr. Increase Mather, an early president of Harvard College. The descendants of Mr. Keith are numerous. He died in 1719, aged seventy-six. He was succeeded by Rev. Daniel Perkins, who was ordained in 1721, and died in 1782. The next minister was Rev. John Reed, D. D., who was ordained as colleague with Mr. Perkins in 1780.

**First Settlement Away from the Coast**—The grant of the Bridgewater plantation was in 1646, as stated elsewhere, and the settlement made in 1650. The following were the first permanent settlers of West Bridgewater: Thomas Hayward, Nathaniel Willis, John Willis, William Bassett, John Washburn, John Washburn, Jr., John Ames, Thomas Gannett, William Brett, John Cary, Samuel Tompkins, Arthur Harris, John Fobes, Experience Mitchell, John Howard, and Solomon Leonard.

The first settlers had a house-lot of six acres each on the town river, and the place was called Nuckatest, or Nuncketettest. The first lots were taken up at West Bridgewater; first houses built and the first improvements made there. The settlement was compact, the house-lots being contiguous, with a view for mutual protection and aid against the Indians. As a further protection from the natives, they erected a stockade or garrison on the south side of the river and fortified many

of their dwellings. From this original home the settlers scattered into other portions of the town, extending their dwellings first into the south part of the town, toward Nippenicket pond, on the road to Taunton, where they were in the habit of going to mill on foot, with the grists upon their backs, a distance of several miles.

The West Parish was never incorporated by an Act of the Legislature, but the parochial affairs were for many years transacted by the old town. It was incorporated as West Bridgewater, February 16, 1822.

On June 3, 1856, the four Bridgewaters united in celebrating the two hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of the old town.

The first interior settlement in Plymouth County was about where West Bridgewater is located. According to an old record, at the time of King Philip's War the inhabitants "were strongly advised and solicited to desert their dwellings and repair down to the towns on the sea-side," but they erected a stockade on the south side of the river, fortified some of their dwellings, and resisted numerous attacks resolutely. On one occasion thirteen houses and four barns were burned. There is a tradition that during the war every house except one in the town of Bridgewater was burned.

According to a record of the Massachusetts Historical Society:

A few weeks previous to the death of Philip, the inhabitants of the town being alarmed at some appearance of the enemy, they immediately pressed Comfort Willis and Joseph Edson to go post to the governor, to give information. Captain Church, with his company, was immediately sent to their assistance. About twenty men from Bridgewater, while on the road to meet Captain Church, came upon the enemy, and fought them, and took seventeen alive, and also much plunder, without losing a man. They joined Captain Church next day, and soon captured and killed 173 Indians. These prisoners were conveyed into the town pound at night, and an Indian guard set over them. They were well treated with victuals and drink, and had a merry night; and the prisoners laughed as loud as the soldiers, not having been so well treated for a long time. The next day Captain Church arrived safe at Plymouth, with all the prisoners. Notwithstanding the many dangers of this war, and the great number of the Bridgewater people engaged in it, it is a remarkable circumstance that not one of the inhabitants was killed.

The first person who fell in battle from this place was John Snell, who was killed in the old French War. The second was Captain Jacob Allen, who was killed at the capture of Burgoyne.

## WHITMAN

**The Town and the Man**—Someone has said of Brockton, the next neighbor of Whitman on the west:

Brockton stands with its back to the wall of Norfolk and Bristol counties and with the town of Whitman as its front yard. The first electric street railway ever constructed connected the centre of Brockton with the edge of Whitman





TOWN HALL, WHITMAN



SOLDIERS' MONUMENT, WHITMAN





and the two towns have been exchanging inhabitants daily ever since. Brockton shoemakers live in Whitman so they can have backyard gardens and raise poultry. Whitman shoemakers live in Brockton so they can be nearer the taxi stands, and moving picture houses. The inhabitants of neither place are satisfied with one town, but are perfectly satisfied with both.

There is considerable truth in the sentiment which is expressed in the above paragraph. Whitman was, for the most part, until 1875, a part of Abington. It was known in the early records as that part of the ancient town, which stands alphabetically at the head of the list of Plymouth County towns, as "Little Comfort." But it has from the start been more like Brockton than the parent town. March 4, 1875, it took the name of South Abington, a part of East Bridgewater coming into the new town as well as part of Abington.

The mixture with Brockton began April 24, 1875, when part of South Abington was annexed to Brockton and part of Brockton annexed to South Abington. The town got along with the name of South Abington until March 5, 1886, when the Legislature authorized it to change its name. The name was changed to Whitman, May 3, 1886.

The town was named in affectionate remembrance of Augustus Whitman, who was born in South Abington, March 16, 1821. He presented the town with eighteen acres of land, on the east side of Washington Street, known as Whitman Park, containing a small pond, elevations, and naturally lending itself to development as a place for the enjoyment of the people for all time.

Although a native of the town which bears his name—territorially considered—Mr. Whitman went away to school when in his fifteenth year, spent one year at home after graduating from Philips-Exeter Academy, and went to Providence, Rhode Island, where he learned the hardware business. He engaged in that business in Worcester, then moved to Fitchburg and made a specialty of manufacturing knives for mowing machines, becoming the first president of the Whitman & Barnes Manufacturing Company. He had a model stock farm at Leominster, with a large herd of imported "short horns" and other pure bred dairy cattle. He was thrown from his carriage October 2, 1880, and instantly killed.

The father of Augustus Whitman was Jared Whitman, for nearly seventy years a much respected member of the Plymouth County bar. At the time of his death, Jared Whitman was the oldest member of the legal profession, so far as known, in New England. He held numerous political offices. He was one of the incorporators of the Plymouth County Agricultural Society in 1819. He was a member of the convention in 1820 to revise the Constitution of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. In 1826 he was appointed by Governor Lincoln commissioner of highways for Plymouth County. When the board of

county commissioners was created he was one of the three original members and continued nine years. This was the first court of the Commonwealth to decide against granting licenses for the sale of intoxicating liquors, for which the commissioners received fierce denunciation.

The Whitman family are descendants of John Whitman, one of the first settlers in Weymouth, who was there made a freeman in 1638. He was the first deacon of the church, and the first military officer of the town. The town is named for a distinguished family.

**Some Beginnings and Present Facts**—The population of Whitman in 1828 was approximately 8,000. About 1880 the town began to grow rapidly and no town in the county had a more rapid growth, with the exception of Brockton.

When the name was changed from South Abington to Whitman, in 1886, Stetson & Coombs were manufacturing fine calf boots to the amount of half a million dollars a year. Atwood Brothers were making wooden boxes, the business amounting to about \$60,000 a year, with about fifty men employed. Cook & Paine, Davis Gurney & Company, Smith, Stoughton & Payne, the Commonwealth Shoe & Leather Company, and other firms were manufacturing boots and shoes. Jenkins Brothers & Company were manufacturing steel shanks, also caskets and coffins. Dunbar, Hobart & Whidden were manufacturing tacks, brads and small nails, also heels and toe plates for boots and shoes.

The South Abington Water Works was built in 1883, and the water was taken from the Hobart Pond and pumped into an iron reservoir, twenty feet in diameter and one hundred and five feet high, located in the centre of the town. It served as the Whitman water supply many years, but at present the supply is purchased from Brockton and taken from the water mains which bring the Brockton supply through the town of Whitman from Silver Lake, Halifax.

The South Abington Fire Department was organized in 1884. It has grown with the town, and fire protection is of the best.

When South Abington became Whitman, the Public Library, started in 1879 with an appropriation of \$500, had about 5,000 volumes. The present circulation is about 55,000 a year.

The total valuation of Whitman in 1926 was \$8,031,665. The total amount appropriated by the town was \$325,446. There were 2,441 male persons of voting age in the town. With a population April 1, 1926, of 7,774, the number of dwelling houses was 1,715, and the number of automobiles, 1,240. The number of acres assessed was 4,054, and the land valuation \$1,486,335. The school maintenance expense was \$105,000. The number of school children in town October 1, 1926, of school age, was 1,922.



**Birth of First Child and Early Industries**—In Mount Zion Cemetery in Whitman is the grave of the first white child born in the ancient town of Abington. He was Christopher Dyer and was born in 1701. He served in the Revolutionary War as a private in A. Washburn's company in Major E. Carey's regiment and was in service from July 30, 1780, to August 9, 1780. This was rather a brief war record but it included marching to Rhode Island and taking part in a campaign in that state. He died August 11, 1786.

When Plymouth County was incorporated in 1665, it contained twenty-one towns, forty Congregational societies and one hundred and seventy-five ministers. Harvard College was largely employed in turning out Congregational ministers in its early years. In fact it was the purpose of the institution. About this time Abington occupied a grant of land given to Peregrine White of Marshfield, the first child born in Plymouth Colony, so Christopher Dyer might be said to have been the first white child born on the grant given to the first white child of Pilgrim parentage, and that in Abington, in that section of it now known as Whitman.

Previous to the incorporation of the town of Abington in 1712, there were three sawmills among the industrial plants. The first was that of John Porter, built in 1693 on the dam near Benjamin Hobart's in Whitman. The second was Nash and Poole's, built about 1700 near where the Gurney tack factory stood in Whitman. The third was in what is now Rockland.

The first tacks were manufactured in Whitman and the Dunbar, Hobart and Whidden tack factory, erected in 1864, at East Whitman, was at one time the largest tack factory in the world.

This locality furnished squared timber for shipbuilding in the seaboard towns from the days of the earliest sawmills, already mentioned, until within the memory of old inhabitants. Captain Obadiah Hersey of South Abington (now Whitman) furnished a large number of white oak planks, called wale planks, several inches thick, at a given width, over forty feet long, for the frigate "Constitution" built at Boston, still in existence, known as "Old Ironsides." The mammoth trees from which these planks were sawed were squared in the woods, to make transportation easier. Three of the logs made a load which required two days to take to Boston and return; and this in the days when a day began before light and was not always done when the time came to light vehicles.

Wooden box manufacturing was a profitable industry in Whitman from 1790. The early manufacturers included the Tirrells, Oak & Isaacs, Lebbus Gurney, Luke Nash and others. In recent times Atwood Brothers carried on the business at East Whitman and the industry did not go out of existence until the summer of 1927.

In connection with this business the name of Benjamin S. Atwood will long be remembered. He was one of the best-known men in Plymouth County for many worthy reasons. He saw notable service as a "minute-man" in 1861, was commissioned first lieutenant by Governor John A. Andrew, recruited a Plympton company in readiness for any call, and served in the Third Massachusetts Regiment in several battles in North Carolina. He and his brother, Elijah H. Atwood, began the manufacture of wooden boxes at North Abington in October, 1866, and removed the business to South Abington in 1872. It became the town of Whitman in 1866. Benjamin S. Atwood became sole proprietor of the box business in 1879, his brother retiring.

The first shoe racks ever manufactured were made at Mr. Atwood's factory. It was on practically the same location that the first cannon balls and the first nails were manufactured and where the first canal in America was built.





















